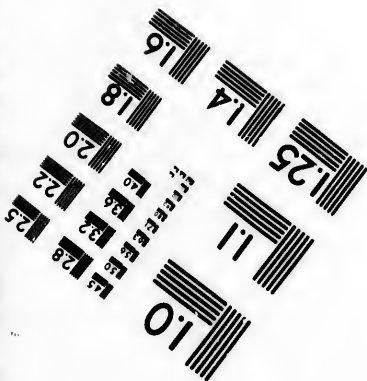
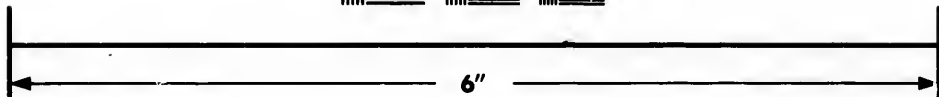
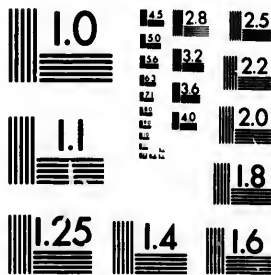


**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1984

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured covers/
Couverture de couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured pages/
Pages de couleur |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers damaged/
Couverture endommagée | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Pages damaged/
Pages endommagées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers restored and/or laminated/
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages restored and/or laminated/
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Cover title missing/
Le titre de couverture manque | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured maps/
Cartes géographiques en couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages detached/
Pages détachées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire) | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Showthrough/
Transparence |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured plates and/or illustrations/
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Quality of print varies/
Qualité inégale de l'impression |
| <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Bound with other material/
Relié avec d'autres documents | <input type="checkbox"/> Includes supplementary material/
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire |
| <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion
along interior margin/
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la
distortion le long de la marge intérieure | <input type="checkbox"/> Only edition available/
Seule édition disponible |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Blank leaves added during restoration may
appear within the text. Whenever possible, these
have been omitted from filming/
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées
lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte,
mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont
pas été filmées. | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata
slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to
ensure the best possible image/
Les pages totalement ou partiellement
obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure,
etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à
obtenir la meilleure image possible. |
| <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Additional comments:/
Commentaires supplémentaires: | Various pagings. |

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	12X	14X	16X	18X	20X	22X	24X	26X	28X	30X	32X
						X					

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

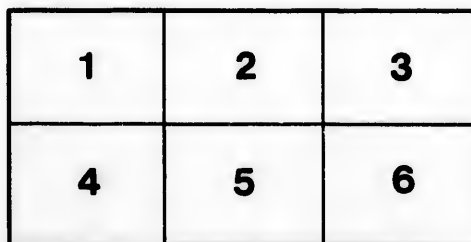
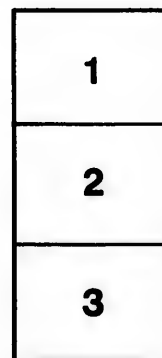
University of Windsor

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol \rightarrow (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

University of Windsor

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole \rightarrow signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ∇ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

re
étails
s du
modifier
r une
filmage

s

rrata
to

pelure,
n à



32X

R E V

AN HIST

SUP

LOND

THE
REVOLUTIONS OF EUROPE:
BEING
AN HISTORICAL VIEW OF THE EUROPEAN NATIONS
FROM THE
SUBVERSION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE IN THE WEST
TO THE
ABDICATION OF NAPOLEON.

BY
CHRISTOPHER W. KOCH

FORMERLY PROFESSOR OF PUBLIC JURISPRUDENCE AT STRASBURG.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH,
BY
ANDREW CRICHTON.

SECOND EDITION.

LONDON: WHITTAKER AND CO., AVE MARIA LANE.

MDCCCXXXIX.

D
105
.K775
1839

THE VIEW OF THE
esteemed on the
rank among pro
of the author's l
and improvement
general history,
fourteen hundr
it were, under o
Roman Empire,
countries which
institutions—the
the origin of inv
ical, to which t
author has restr
discarding from
book has been o
grand and prom
circumstances,
or elucidation o
difficulties and
Geography. H
thought incleg
Men of all parti
suffrages in his
Vice-President
Secretary of th
Instruction at
German; and r
and obtained it
The REVOLU
claims no high
young entering
sequent reading
the Translator h
author, and as
studious of fide
prefixed a short
Schell and We
The first Eigi
is all that our a
to the restorati
of Koch's Wor
uation, howev
so full on othe
amendments as

* M. Schell h
ader will find in

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

THE VIEW OF THE REVOLUTIONS OF EUROPE, by M. Koch, has been long known and highly esteemed on the Continent, as a work of incontestable merit, and entitled to hold the first rank among productions of its kind. It occupied the labours and researches of thirty years of the author's life; and had the benefit of receiving, at different intervals, several additions and improvements from his own hand. As a concise, luminous, and accurate summary of general history, it stands unrivalled. The principal events and vicissitudes of more than fourteen hundred years are here condensed within an incredibly small space; bringing, as it were, under one view, the successive changes and destinies of Europe, from the fall of the Roman Empire, in the fifth century, to the restoration of the Bourbons in France. The countries which the different nations from time to time have occupied,—their laws and institutions—their progress from barbarism to refinement—the revival of arts and sciences—the origin of inventions and discoveries—and the wonderful revolutions, both moral and political, to which they gave birth,—are here detailed at once with brevity and perspicuity. The author has restricted himself as it were to the pure elements or essence of useful knowledge, discarding from his narrative every thing that did not minister to solid instruction. His book has been compared to a sort of chart or genealogical tree of history, where only the grand and prominent events have been recorded, stript of all their secondary and subordinate circumstances, which often distract the attention without adding in the least to the interest or elucidation of the subject. His researches have thrown a new light on some of the difficulties and obscurities of the Middle Ages, particularly with regard to Chronology and Geography. His veracity and precision are unimpeachable; and, though his style has been thought inelegant, his candour, judgment, and erudition have never been called in question. Men of all parties and of opposite opinions, both in politics and religion, have united their suffrages in his praise. M. Fontanes, Grand Master of the University of Paris; M. Levesque, Vice-President of the Class of Ancient History and Literature, and M. Dacier, Perpetual Secretary of the Third Class, in the Institute; M. Fourcroy, Director-General of Public Instruction at Paris; M. Frederic Buchholz, of Berlin, who translated the *Tableau* into German; and many others, have spoken of this book in terms of the highest commendation, and obtained it a place in most of the Universities, Schools, and Libraries on the Continent.

The *Revolutions*, although an excellent digest of the history and policy of Europe, claims no higher merit than that of an elementary work. It was originally designed for the young entering on their political studies, and is an outline that must be filled up by subsequent reading, and from collateral sources. With regard to the present English edition, the Translator has only to say, that he has endeavoured to give a faithful transcript of his author, and as literal as the idiom of the two languages would admit. He has been more studious of fidelity to his original than elegance of style or novelty of expression. He has prefixed a short sketch of the author's life, abridged from two of his biographers, MM. Schœll and Weiss.

The first Eight Periods bring down the History of Europe to the French Revolution, which is all that our author undertook, or rather lived to accomplish. The period from that event to the restoration of the Bourbons in 1815, has been continued by M. Schœll,* the editor of Koch's Works, and author of the *History of the Treaties of Peace*, &c. As the continuation, however, differs a little in some points from the views of the original, and is not so full on others as might be wished, the Translator has introduced such additions and amendments as seemed necessary to complete what was deficient, according as nearly as

* M. Schœll has also interspersed a few explanatory paragraphs, which, in the present volume, the reader will find included within brackets [].

possible with the spirit and design of the author himself. These alterations, as well as the authorities on which they have been made, will be found carefully marked.

LIFE OF CHRISTOPHER W. KOCH.

CHRISTOPHER WILLIAM KOCH, equally distinguished as a lawyer and a learned historian, was born on the 9th of May, 1737, at Bouxwiller, a small town in the seigniory of Lichtenberg in Alsace, which then belonged to the Prince of Hesse-Darmstadt. His father, who was a member of the Chamber of Finance under that prince, sent him to an excellent school in his native place, where he received the rudiments of his education. At the age of thirteen he went to the Protestant University of Strasburg, where he prosecuted his studies under the celebrated Schœpflin. Law was the profession to which he was destined; but he showed an early predilection for the study of history, and the sciences connected with it, such as *Diplomatics*, or the art of deciphering and verifying ancient writs and chartularies, *Genealogy*, *Chronology*, &c. Schœpflin was not slow to appreciate the rising merit of his pupil and wished to make him the companion of his labours. He admitted him to his friendship and became the means of establishing him as his successor in that famous political academy, which his reputation had formed at Strasburg, by attracting to that city the youth of the first families, and from all parts of Europe. Koch devoted much of his time to the Canon Law, and soon gave a proof of the progress he had made in that branch of study, by the Academical Dissertation which he published in 1761, under the title of *Commentatio de Collatione dignitatum et beneficiorum ecclesiasticorum in imperio Romano-Germanico*. This treatise was a prelude to his Commentary on the *Pragmatic Sanction*, which he published in 1789—a work which excited an extraordinary sensation in Catholic Germany, and procured the author the favourable notice of such prelates as were most eminent for learning and piety.

After taking his academic degree, Koch repaired to Paris in 1762, where he staid a year, honoured with the society of the most distinguished literati in the capital, and frequenting the royal library, wholly occupied in those researches which prepared him for the learned labours in which he afterwards engaged. On his return to Strasburg, he wrote the continuation of the *Historia Zaringo-Badensis*, of which the first volume only was drawn up by Schœpflin. All the others were entirely the work of Koch, though they bear the name of the master who had charged him with the execution of this task. Schœpflin bequeathed to the city of Strasburg, in 1766, his valuable library and his cabinet of antiques, on condition that Koch should be appointed keeper; which he was, in effect, on the death of the testator in 1771. He obtained, at the same time, the title of professor, which authorized him to deliver lectures; for the chair of Schœpflin passed, according to the statutes of the University, to another professor,—a man of merit, but incapable of supplying his place as an instructor of youth in the study of the political sciences. The pupils of Schœpflin were thus transferred to Koch, who became the head of that diplomatic school, which, for sixty years, gave to the public so great a number of ministers and statesmen.

In 1779 the government of Hanover offered him the chair of public German Law in the University of Gottingen, which he declined. Next year the Emperor Joseph II., who knew well how to distinguish merit, complimented him with the dignity of Knight of the Empire, an intermediate title between that of baron and the simple rank of noblesse. About the same period he obtained the chair of Public Law at Strasburg, which he held until that university was suppressed at the French revolution. Towards the end of 1789, the Protestants of Alsace sent him as their envoy to Paris, to solicit from the King and the Constitutional Assembly the maintenance of their civil and religious rights, according to the faith of former treaties. He succeeded in obtaining for them the decree of the 17th of August, 1790,

which sanction were not incl placed at the explained by an ratified by the Meantime, that brilliant as beauties of the the career of K to his country. member of the f and ultimately he exerted himu farctold the ca Austria. The r when, on the 20 France. An offi of the Lower R inspired him. which he had th vances. This let mured in a pris spect of escape, him to liberty, w of their provinci measures that wo to prevent the sa with pleasure th the professorshp hen too long int er, he was onc the Tribunal. countrymen, and religion, and its half of religio academy at Stra The Tribunal he offered him himself betw about any soli ued to devote 10, the Grand- ictor of the Ae at temperanc ordered in 18 of October 1813 ment of w Oerlin, which v biographers tice and trut earches, a ren egrity of prin e researches, h eures of the m marked, that a

which sanctioned these rights, and declared that the ecclesiastical benefices of the Protestants were not included among those which the decree of the 1st of November, preceding, had placed at the disposal of the nation. The former decree was moreover extended and explained by an act, bearing date December 1, 1790. Both of these were approved and ratified by the king.

Meantime, the terrors and turbulence of the revolution had dispersed from Strasburg that brilliant assemblage of youth, which the reputation of the professors, and the natural beauties of the place, had attracted from all quarters. These disastrous events interrupted the career of Koch, at a time when he was capable of rendering the most important services to his country. From that moment he devoted himself to public affairs. Being appointed a member of the first Legislative Assembly, he opposed the faction which convulsed the nation, and ultimately subverted the throne. When president of the committee of that assembly, he exerted himself for the maintenance of peace; and in a report which he made in 1792, he foretold the calamities which would overwhelm France, if war should be declared against Austria. The republican faction, by their clamours, silenced the remonstrances of Koch, when, on the 20th of April, he spoke in opposition to a measure which proved so fatal to France. An official letter which he addressed, 10th of August, to the constituted authorities of the Lower Rhine, sufficiently expressed the horror with which that day's proceedings had inspired him. He procured, moreover, the concurrence of his fellow-citizens in a resistance, which he had then some reason to hope would be made a common cause by the other provinces. This letter drew down upon him the persecution of the ruling party. He was imprisoned in a prison, where he languished for eleven months, and from which he had no prospect of escape, except to mount the scaffold. The revolution of the 9th Thermidor restored him to liberty, when he was appointed, by the voice of his fellow-citizens, to the Directory of their provincial department. He endeavoured by all means in his power to defeat the measures that were taken to injure his constituents; and had influence enough, it is said, to prevent the sale of the funds belonging to manufactories and hospitals. He then resumed with pleasure those functions which he had unwillingly accepted; in 1795, he recommenced his professorship of public law, and returned with new zeal to his literary labours, which had been too long interrupted. Six years he spent in these useful occupations; from which, however, he was once more detached by a decree of the senate, which nominated him a member of the Tribunal. This nomination Koch accepted, in the hope of being useful to his Protestant countrymen, and to the city of Strasburg, in obtaining the re-establishment of the reformed religion, and its restoration in the university. He did, in effect, exert himself much in the half of religion, according to the confession of Augsburg, as well as of the Protestant Academy at Strasburg, which was suppressed at this period.

The Tribunal having been suppressed, Koch declined all places of trust or honour which were offered him; and only requested permission to retire, that he might have a short interval to himself between business and the grave. A pension of 3000 francs was granted him, without any solicitation on his part. In 1808, he returned to Strasburg, where he continued to devote himself to letters, and in administering to the public good. About the end of 1810, the Grand-master of the University of France conferred on him the title of Honorary Director of the Academy of Strasburg. His health, which had been prolonged by a life of great temperance and regularity and the peace which results from a good conscience, became ordered in 1812, when he fell into a state of languor, which terminated his life on the 25th of October 1813. His colleagues, the professors of Strasburg, erected to his memory a monument of white marble in the church of St. Thomas, near those of Schœpflin and Gerlin, which was executed by M. Ohnmacht, an eminent sculptor in Strasburg. One of his biographers has pronounced the following eulogium on Koch:—"A noble regard for justice and truth, a penetration beyond common, a diligence unrivalled in historical researches, a remarkable talent in arranging and illustrating his subject, an incorruptible integrity of principle, and unclouded serenity of mind, with a zealous desire of rendering researches, his information, and activity useful to his species—these were the prominent features of the mind and character of this amiable man." In addition to this, it has been remarked, that although professor Koch had not the art of a graceful or even a fluent dlocu-

tion, no man ever possessed in a higher degree the talents and qualifications of a public instructor. Like Socrates, he had a manner peculiar to himself. He was not so much a teacher of sciences, as of the means of acquiring them. He could inspire his scholars with taste for labour, and knew how to call forth their several powers and dispositions. Though a man of the most domestic habits, and a lover of children, Koch never married.

Two lives of this celebrated professor have been written by foreigners. The one is by M. Schweighæuser, junior, a professor at Strasbourg; and the other is prefixed to the new edition of the *Histoire des Traités de Paix*, by M. Schœll, the editor and continuator of several of our author's works. This latter biographer has accompanied his sketch with descriptive catalogue of all Koch's works, the principal of which are the following:—*Tables Généalogiques des Maisons Souveraines du Midi et de l'Ouest de l'Europe*. 2. *Sancti Pragmatica Germanorum illustrata*. 3. *Abrégé de l'Histoire des Traités de Paix entre les Puissances de l'Europe*. A new edition of this work appeared in 1818, enlarged and continued by M. Schœll down to the Congress of Vienna and the Treaty of Paris, 1815. 4. *Tableaux des Traités entre la France et les Puissances Etrangères, depuis la Paix de Westphalie, &c.* 5. *Tableau des Révolutions de l'Europe, &c.* 6. *Tables Généalogiques des Maisons Souveraines de l'Est et du Nord de l'Europe*. This work was published, after the author's death, by M. Schœll. Besides these, Koch left various manuscripts, containing memoirs of his own life, and several valuable papers on the ancient ecclesiastical history and literature of his native province.

A. C.

AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

THE work here presented to the public is a summary of the Revolutions, both general and particular, which have happened in Europe since the extinction of the Roman Empire in the fifth century. As an elementary book, it will be found useful to those who wish to have a concise and general view of the successive revolutions that have changed the aspect of states and kingdoms, and given birth to the existing policy and established order of society in modern times.

Without some preliminary acquaintance with the annals of these revolutions, we can neither study the history of our own country to advantage, nor appreciate the influence which the different states, formed from the wreck of the ancient Roman Empire, reciprocally exercised on each other. Allied as it were by the geographical position of their territories, by a conformity in their religion, language, and manners, these states, in course of time, contracted new attachments in the ties of mutual interests, which the progress of civilisation, commerce, and industry, tended more and more to cement and confirm. Many of them, whom fortune had elevated to the summit of power and prosperity, carried the laws, their arts, and institutions, both civil and military, far beyond the limits of their own dominions. The extensive sway which the Romish hierarchy held for nearly a thousand years over the greater part of the European kingdoms, is well known to every reader of history.

This continuity of intercourse and relationship among the powers of Europe became the means of forming them into a kind of republican system; it gave birth to national law and conventional rights, founded on the agreement of treaties, and the usages of common practice. A laudable emulation sprang up among contemporary states. Their jealousies, and even their competitions and divisions, contributed to the progress of civilisation, and the attainment of that high state of perfection to which all human sciences and institutions have been carried by the nations of modern Europe.

It is these political connexions, this reciprocal influence of kingdoms and their revolutions, and especially the varieties of system which Europe has experienced in the lapse of

many ages, the
the object of
The author
published in
stances. In c
conclude at th
much involved
writers.*

The Work is
which have cha
placed either
which held the
Europe, the wr
have had an im
anguishing cha
has not himself
confidence, the
care, the princ
ism, during his
criticism. With
elementary help
of history.

* In the edition
revised by the Editor
† Nine in the last

many ages, that require to be developed in a general view, such as that which professes to be the object of the present Work.

The author has here remodelled his "View of the Revolutions of the Middle Ages" (published in 1790), and extended or abridged the different periods according to circumstances. In continuing this work down to the present time, he has deemed it necessary to conclude at the French Revolution; as the numerous results of that great event are too much involved in uncertainty to be clearly or impartially exhibited by contemporary writers.*

The Work is divided into eight Periods of time,† according with the principal revolutions which have changed, in succession, the political state of Europe. At the head of each period is placed either the designation of its particular revolution, or that of the power or empire which held the ascendancy at the time. In limiting his treatise solely to the revolutions of Europe, the writer has not touched upon those of Asia and the East, except in so far as they have had an immediate influence on the destinies of Europe. Conscious also that the distinguishing characteristic of an historian is veracity, and that the testimony of a writer who has not himself been an eyewitness of the events he records cannot be relied on with implicit confidence, the author has imposed on himself the invariable rule of citing, with scrupulous care, the principal authorities and vouchers, of each period and country, that have guided him, during his researches, in selecting and examining his materials by the torch of patient criticism. Without this labour and precaution, the Work would have been of no avail as an elementary help to those who were desirous of acquiring a more minute and solid knowledge of history.

* In the edition of 1823, from which the present translation is made, the *Tableau* has been continued by the Editor, M. Schœll, down to the 20th November 1815.—T.

† Nine in the last editions, including the continuation.

ANALYTICAL AND CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE

TO THE REVOLUTIONS OF EUROPE.

	PAGE
TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE	iii
LIFE OF M. KUCH	iv
AUTHOR'S PREFACE	vi

INTRODUCTION.—Use of history, 1. Archives and records, 2. Geography, 2. Genealogies, 2. Chronology, 3. Age of the World, 4. The Mosiac or Sacred history, 4. Julian year, 4. Gregorian calendar, 4. Reformed year or calendar, 4. Old and new style, 4. Birth of our Saviour and Christian era, 5. Epochs or eras in ancient and modern computation of time, 5. Hegira or flight of Mahomet, 6. Vulgar or Dionysian era, 6. Era used in Spanish and Portuguese records, 6. Julian period, according to Scaliger, 6. Cycle of the sun, 6. Lunar cycle, 6. Cycle of indictions, 6. History, how divided and classified, 6. Universal history, 7. The middle ages, 7. The ancient historians, 7. Astronomical science originated in Chaldæa, 7. Ptolemy the first navigator, 7. Early history of Europe unknown, 7. Early monarchies, 7. Vestiges of the Egyptian civilisation and power, 7. Antiquities of the states of Assyria and Babylon, 7. Traditions thereof unsupported by Herodotus, 7. The only certain account of the conquests of Salmanser and Nebuchadnezzar to be found in the Scriptures, 7. Persian monarchy founded by Cyrus, 7. Petty kingdoms of Greece, 8. Powerful republics of Athens and Lacedæmon, 8. Military prowess, love of liberty, learning, art and sciences of the Greeks, 8. Philip, King of Macedon, 8. Conquests of Alexander the Great, 8. Kingdoms established at his death, 8. Egypt and Syria, 8. Kings of Rome, 8. History of the republic of Rome, 8. Roman historians, 8. The Carthaginian power, 8. The Punic wars, or contest of Rome and Carthage, 8. Destruction of Carthage, 9. No vestiges, monuments, or public records, of that maritime city, now extant, 9. Pompey, Cæsar, and Crassus, 9. Destructive ambition of Julius Cæsar, 9. Fall of the Commonwealth of Rome, 9. Death of Cæsar, 9. Triumvirate of Octavianus, Antony, and Lepidus, 9. Death of Marc Antony, in Egypt, 9. Roman Empire founded by Augustus or Octavianus, 9. Extent and population of the Roman Empire, 9. Conquests of Trajan, 9. The Roman Senate loses all real authority under Tiberius, Caligula, Nero, and Domitian, 9. Reigns of the emperors Titus, and the Antonines, 9. Constantine the Great establishes the Christian religion, 10. He transfers the seat of empire to Byzantium, thereafter named Constantinople, 10. Division of the Roman Empire by the will of Theodosius the Great, 10. Honorius Emperor of the West or Rome, 10. Arcadius Emperor of the East or Constantinople, known as the Greek Empire, 10. Origin of the papal power at Rome, 10. Mahomet founds a new religion and an empire, 10. Kingdoms of the Franks and northern barbarians, 10. The Normans, Russians, and Hungarians, &c., establish monarchies, 10. Germany becomes a paramount state and sovereignty, 10. Rise of the House of Capet, 10. Norman conquests, 10. Domination of the Popes, 10. Restoration of Roman jurisprudence, 10. Italian republics, 10. Mogul Empire in the East, 10. Magna Charta and English Liberty, 10. The Inquisition, 10. The Turks under Mahomet II. conquer the Greek or Lower Empire, 10. Fall of Constantinople, 10. Restoration of learning in the West, 10. Renewal of commerce, 10. Revival of the *l'esprit lettré*, 10. The reformation, 10. Discovery of America, 10. Religious wars, 10. Political system of Europe, 10. Federal system, 10. Peace of Utrecht, 10. Libertine and im-polious philosophy, 10. Revolutionary epoch, 10.

	PAGE
PERIOD I.	
<i>From the Invasion of the Roman Empire in the West to the Barbarians, to the time of Charlemagne. A. D. 400—800.</i>	
300 Barbarian nations invading the Western Empire of Rome, enumerated	300
300—375 The Goths embrace Christianity	300
300—400 Confederacy of the Franks	300
300 Confederacy of the Alemanni	300
300 The Saxons and Angles	300
375 The Huns invade Europe	375
412 Ataulphus King of the Visigoths	412
413 Conquests of the Burgundians	413
413 Conquests of the Alemanni and Suevi	413
430 Clodion founds the kingdom of the Franks at Cambrai	430
451 Attila defeated by Ætius, in which constitute battle Theodoric King of the Visigoths, the ally of the Romans, is slain	451
486 Clovis defeats Syagrius and the Romans at Soissons	486
496 Clovis defeats the Alemanni at Tolbiac near Cologne	496
496 He embraces Christianity	496
507 He defeats the Visigoths at Vouillé	507
534 The descendants of Clovis conquer the kingdom of Burgundy	534
409 The Vandals conquer Spain	409
415—584 The Visigoths establish their dominion in Spain and in Africa	415
427 Genseric the Vandal subdues the Romans in Africa	427
455 The Vandals pillage Rome	455
534 Belisarius overturns the Vandal kingdom in Africa	534
410 The Romans retire from Britain	410
450—827 The heptarchy of the Anglo-Saxons	450
827 Egbert crowned King of England	827
476 Augustulus, the last Roman emperor, is dethroned by Odoacer	476
489 Odoacer put to death at Ravenna by Theodoric the Ostrogoth	489
547 Totila takes Rome	547
552 Death of Totila	552
553 Narses defeats Totila the last king of the Ostrogoths	553
568 The Lombards invade Italy	568
572 Pavia taken by king Alboinus	572
572 On the state of Germany	572
400—600 The Slavi establish themselves along the Danube	400
Picts of Germany	Picts of Germany
Customs of the Germans	Customs of the Germans
Laws of the Germans	Laws of the Germans
Influence of the Christian religion	Influence of the Christian religion
The Latin language used by the clergy—modern languages that are derived from it	The Latin language used by the clergy—modern languages that are derived from it
678 Pepin d'Heristal. Kingdoms of Austrasia and Neustria	678
733 Charles Martel defeats the Saracen invaders under Abdrahman of Cordova	733
736 The Iconoclasts. Religious dissensions of the Eastern or Greek empire	736
730 Roman republic temporarily revived in the peninsula of Gregory II.	730
751 Astolphus the Lombard king seizes Ravenna	751
Ravenna ceded by king Pepin to the Roman pontiff	Ravenna ceded by king Pepin to the Roman pontiff
682 The reign of Mahomet	682
713 The Saracens conquer Spain	713
739 Alphonso I. establishes the kingdom of Oviedo in Asturias (subsequently of Leon)	739

90—900 Division of Literature and Commerce of A

From Charlemagne

Accession of Charlemagne

Fall of the Lombards

Charles the Great by Pope Leo I

900—900 State of Italy

Egbert King of Wessex

Successors of Charlemagne

Louis the Bavarian

Treaty of Verdun

877 Reign of Charlemagne

The romance language

Empire of the Visigoths

Empire of France

Navarro, and

929 Reign of Charlemagne

Affairs of Germany

Hoson founder of the Kingdom of

Feodal institution

Power of military

Territorial partition

Interruption of the

Their superstition

Their pirates and

Their conquests

Their invasion of

Normans found a

Rolls, or Robert

Hungarian conquests

Danish invasions

Reign of Alfred the

Norman navigator

Otho the Great to

962 Civil instit

Henry I. surmount

Otho I. Emperor

Anarchy in Italy

1508 The electiv

emperors by the

at Rome

Margraves of the

State of the church

Kingdom of Burg

man crown, by

Power of the Ger

Savoy, the Dan

staries

Conrad, Duke of

1191 The Duke

land

Treaty between

Samuel Abn Ki

Extent of Henry

Empire

Paramount autho

Temporal system

Decline of the em

1100 Picts of the

imperial and pres

Bishops acquire t

Decline of the in

cessors of Otho

Dominate dynast

The Caliph Hane

Rise of petty Ma

of the caliphate

The Spanish prin

cline of the Mar

1512 Sancho the

scendants endit

	PAGE
600-900 Division of the caliphate of the Saracens	13
Literature and science of the Arabians	19, 20
Commerce of Arabia and India	20

PERIOD II.

From Charlemagne to Otto the Great. A. D. 800-962.

Accession of Charles the Great or Charlemagne	20
Fall of the Lombard kingdom	20
Part of the new Roman republic, and of the exarchate of Ravenna	20
Charles the Great crowned emperor of the Romans by Pope Leo III.	21
800-900 State of learning. Foundation of schools	21
Egbert King of England	22
Successors of Charlemagne	22
Louis the Bavarian, King of Germany	22
Treaty of Verdun	22
877 Reign of Charles the Bald, King of France	22
The romance illiom was the origin of the French language	22
Empire of the West is separated into the Kingdoms of France, Germany, Lorraine, Burgundy, Navarre, and of Italy	22
899 Reign of Charles the Simple	23
Affairs of Germany and of the duchy of Lorraine	23
Basoon founder of the Kingdom of Burgundy	23
Rudolph King of Burgundy	23
Kingdom of Navarre	23
Federal institutions of the Franks and Germans	23
Power of military chiefs, and of the nobles	24
Territorial partitions	24
Invasion of the Normans into the Kingdom of the Franks at their superstitious	25
Their piracies and sea-kings	25
Their conquests	25
Their invasion of Ireland	25
Normans found a republic in Iceland	25
Rollo, or Robert, Duke of Normandy	25
Hungarian conquests	26
Danish invasions of England	26
Reign of Alfred the Great	26
Norman navigators, and maritime discoveries	26

PERIOD III.

From Otto the Great to Gregory the Great. A. D. 962-1074.

962 Civil institutions of the German monarchy	27
Henry I. surnamed the Fowler	27
Otto I. Emperor of Germany, conquers Italy	27
Anarchy in Italy. John XII. Pope	29
1056 The elective kings of Germany constituted emperors by the ceremony of a triple coronation at Rome	29
Margravates of Brandenburg, Misnia and Lusatia	29
State of the church in Germany	29
Kingdom of Burgundy, or Arles, united to the German crown, by the Franconian dynasty	29
Power of the Counts of Provence, Champaigne, Savoy, the Dauphin and other hereditary feudatories	29
Conrad, Duke of Zähringen, Regent of Burgundy	29
1191 The Dukes of Zähringen govern Switzerland	29
Treaty between the Emperor Henry III. and I. Samuel Aba King of Hungary	29
Extent of Henry III.'s dominions, or German Empire	29
Paramount authority of the German emperors	29
Temporal system of the popes	30
Decline of the emperor's authority	30
1100 Fiefs of the empire become hereditary	30
Imperial and prefeatorial cities	30
Bishops acquire temporal power in Germany	30
Decline of the imperial authority under the successors of Otto the Great	31
1109 The Almo dynasty in Spain overthrown	31
The Caliph Hasehem, of Cordova, dethroned	31
Rise of petty Mahometan kingdoms on the ruins of the caliphate of the West	31
The Spanish princes obtain kingdoms on the decline of the Moorish power	31
1512 Sancho the Great, King of Navarre; his descendants ending with Jean d'Albret	31

A. D.	PAGE
1474 Ferdinand of Arragon and Isabella of Castille unite their kingdoms in one monarchy, and expel the Moors from Spain	31
947 Hugh Capet establishes a new dynasty in France	31
1017 Canute the Great, Danish monarch of England	32
1066 William the Conqueror defeats Harold II.	32
1033-1080 Tancred, and his sons Robert and Roger, (Normans) conquer a part of Italy, and Sicily	32
1600-1614 The North of Europe receives Christianity	32
1028-1035 Sweyn II. King of Norway, and Harliacutus King of Denmark	33
Religion, customs, and government of Bohemia	33
The Piasts, a Polish dynasty	34
966-988 Christianity introduced into Poland and Russia	34
988 Vladimir the Great espouses the Greek Princess Anne Romanowna	34
City of Kiow, capital of the Russian Grand Dukes	34
1015 Jaroslans, Russian lawgiver	34
1031 Henry I. of France espouses Anne daughter of Jaroslans	34
Christianity introduced into Hungary	34
973 Stephen I. king, lawgiver, and apostle of the Hungarians	34
Political institutions and territorial divisions of Hungary	34
Superstition of the Byzantine Greeks	34
1000 Sects and schisms of the Greek church	34
Schism and breach between the churches of Constantinople and Rome	34
Huns, Avars, and other barbarians, also the Persians and Russians, harass the Eastern Empire	35
680-719 Arabs conquer Sicily, and besiege Constantinople	35
The Lombards, Normans, Arabs, and Turks seize on its provinces	35
570-774 Lombard kingdom of Italy	35
The Greek thro or Fen Gregois	35
720 Leo the Isaurian, Emperor of Constantinople	35
708-1000 The Seljuk Turks conquer Asia Minor	35
1000 Norman conquests in Italy	35
900 The Turks, of Scythian origin, obtain authority in the Caliphate of Bagdad	35
Institution of Emirs of Seljuckians and Arabians	35
935 Rappah, Emir-ul-Omrak, or commander of commanders	35
945 The Howides or Great Emirs	35
Dowfall of the Arabian caliphate	35
1038-1057 Toghrbeg Emir-ul-Omrak	35
1071 Alp-Arslan takes the Greek Emperor Romanus prisoner	35
Turkish conquests in the East	35
1073 Malek Shak, Seljuckian Sultan	35
Is named Commander of the Faithful	35
1092 Death of Malek and partition of his dominions into the states of Irom, Kerman, and Rom	36
1152 Caliphs of Bagdad restored	36

PERIOD IV.

From Pope Gregory VII. to Boniface VIII. A. D. 1074 to 1300.

1073-1300 Supremacy of the Roman pontiffs	36
1050 Pope Nicholas II. forms an alliance with Robert Guiscard the Norman	36
1061 Influence of Cardinal Hildebrand in the election of Pope Alexander II.	36
1073 Hildebrand obtains the tiara under the appellation of Gregory VII.	36
1080-1100 Rome subject to the German potentate	36
1073 Investiture of the ring and crozier	36
1074 Gregory VII. forbids the exercise of the secular right of investiture	37
He proclaims himself independent of temporal authority	37
1074 He renews the law of clerical celibacy	37
The false Decretals forged by Isidore	37
1079 Gregory VII. exacts canonical obedience, fealty and homage to Rome	37
Royal rights of St. Peter	37
Right to convoke general Councils	37
Privileges and power of legates	38
Gregory supreme head of the church, constitutes himself the arbiter of temporal princes	38
1076 He summons the emperor Henry IV. to appear at Rome	38

A.D.		PAGE
1076	That emperor and the German bishops pronounce the deposition of the pope, at Worms	38
	Gregory VII. excommunicates and deposes Henry IV.	38
	He absolves the emperor after a penance	38
1080	New papal sentence formulated against Henry IV.	38
	Gregory VII.'s address to Philip I. of France	39
1076-1080	He claims a jurisdiction over Solomon King of Hungary, Sueno of Denmark and other princes	39
	His scheme of an universal domination	39
1086-1088	His successors Victor III. and Urban II. maintain the object of a papal supremacy	39
	Contest between the emperors of Germany and the popes	39
	Rise of the Guelph, or Imperial, and the Ghibelline, or papal, factions	39
1122	Emperor Henry V. cedes the right of investiture to Calixtus II., at Worms	40
	Decay of the German Empire	40
1198	Innocent III. assumes the temporal government of the city of Rome	40
	The ecclesiastical states	40
	Patrimony of the Countess Matilda ceded by Frederic II. to Pope Honorius III.	40
	Multiplication of religious orders	40
	The Benedictine Order	40
817	Rule of St. Benedict prescribed at the Council of Aix-la-Chapelle	40
1000-1100	The Carthusians and the Order of St. Anthony	40
1198	Innocent III. establishes the Mendicant Orders	40
1271	Gregory X., at the Council of Lyons, reduces the Friars to four orders	40
	The Monks employed as legates and as missionaries	40
1198-1216	Character and ambition of Innocent III.	41
	He appoints legates a latere to preside over the collation to all ecclesiastical preferments	41
	Provisional mandates, and reversions to benefices	41
1265	Reservations instituted by Clement IV.	41
	The Crusades or Holy Wars	41
1075	Pilgrims to Jerusalem oppressed by the Seljuckian Turks	42
1075	Council of Clermont convoked	42
1095	Urban II. preaches the first crusade in the assembly at Clermont	42
	Peter the Hermit excites the Christian princes and barons to take the cross	42
1096	Godfrey of Bouillon and Baldwin lead the crusaders through Hungary and Bulgaria	42
	Hugh of Vermandois, Robert of Normandy, Stephen of Blois, and Robert Count of Flanders, proceed through Italy	42
	Raymond Count of Toulouse, and other crusaders, take the route of Dalmatia	42
1097	They take Nice in Asia Minor, and defeat the Turks in Bithynia	42
1098	Crusaders take Antioch	42
1099	They take Jerusalem from the Caliph of Egypt	42
1099-1187	Kingdom of Jerusalem established under Godfrey of Bouillon	42
1099-1144	Counts of Edessa	42
1100-1188	Princes of Antioch and Counts of Tripoli	42
1268-1289	The Mamelukes reconquer those dominions	43
1191	Richard Cœur de Lion conquers Cyprus	43
1191-1487	Guy de Lusignan and his descendants, Kings of Cyprus	43
1147	The Emperor Conrad III. and Louis VII. undertake a second crusade	43
1183	Saladin and the Saracens take Jerusalem	43
1189	The Emperor Frederic Barbarossa, Philip Augustus, and Richard Cœur de Lion, join in the third crusade	43
1202	Innocent III. instigates to a fourth crusade	43
1203	Conquest of Constantinople by the Latins	43
1217	Andrew, King of Hungary, in obedience to the decrees of the Council of Lateran, leads a fifth crusade	43
1228	The Emperor Frederic II. regains Jerusalem in the sixth crusade	43
1241	The Charizmanian Turks pillage and burn the Holy City	43
1249	Louis IX. conducts the seventh crusade to the Nile, and takes Damietta	43
1250	He is defeated and taken prisoner at Mansourah	43
1291	The Mamelukes take Tyre and Ptolemais	43

A.D.		PAGE
	The aggrandisement of papal power a result of the Eastern crusades	
	Crusades directed against the Moors, the Slavonians, and other infidels	
	Also against Christian princes who disavowed papal supremacy	
	And against the Waldenses, Albigenses, and Hussites	
	Consequences of the crusades on the political condition of Germany, Italy, Hungary, and England	
	They increased the power of the French monarchs, and were the origin of armorial bearings and heraldry	
	Surnames brought into modern use	
	Origin of jousts and tournaments	
1100	Institution of the Religious Military Orders	
	Order of St. John of Jerusalem	
	The Knights Hospitalliers	
1310	They establish themselves in Cyprus, and conquer Rhodes	
1530	Emperor Charles V. grants Malta to the Knights of St. John, or Knights of Malta	
1119	Order of Knights Templars	
1120-1192	The Teutonic Knights of the Order of Jerusalem	
1309	Their history, and conquest of Prussia	
1528	Albert de Brandenburg, Grand Master of the Teutonic Order	
1200-1300	Various military and religious orders, in imitation of the preceding	
	Institutions of chivalry in the feudal ages	
	Learning fostered by the caliphs	
	Magnificence and literature of Constantinople	
	Commerce of Venice, Genoa, and Pisa	
1241	Commerce of Hamburg and Lubec	
	Origin of the Hansatic League	
1200-1300	State of European society	
	The peasantry serfs, and not possessing the rights of citizens	
	Communes or free corporations	
	Italian republics of Naples, Genoa, Venice, Pisa, and Amalfi	
1108	Louis le Gros grants constitutional charters to divers cities	
1120	Barons emancipate the serfs for a pecuniary compensation	
	Increase of municipalities	
1223	The citizens obliged to military service in France under Louis VIII.	
1106	Municipal charters in Germany, under the Emperor Henry V.	
	The principle of the wealth of nations recognised	
1265	The Commons called to Parliament under Henry III. of England	
1303	Philip le Bel convokes the States of France	
1298-1303	Dispute of Philip with Boniface VIII.	
1342	Edward III. calls two Houses of Parliament,—the barons, and knights of the shires and burgesses	
1309	First German Diet held at Spire, under the Emperor Henry VII.	
1344	Diet of Frankfurt	
	Corporate bodies and municipalities	
	Enfranchisement of serfs progressive	
	Fiefs of the Italian republics	
1180-1315	Louis VII. and Louis X. grant freedom to the French peasantry	
	Enfranchisement takes place in Germany	
	Henry II., Duke of Brabant, grants freedom to the cultivators of the soil	
	Roman jurisdiction extended throughout the Kingdoms of the West	
	Principle of civilisation, liberty and good government	
	Code of Justinian taught at Bologna	
	The Canon Law established by the Roman pontiffs	
1145	Eugenius III. encourages Gratian in the compilation of canons, known as the Decretals of the Popes	
1152	He gives the Decretals his sanction	
	Tribonian's Institutes of Justinian, or code of the Roman law	
1285	Gregory IX. publishes another collection of Decretals	
	These strengthen the papal authority	
	And have a salutary influence on society	
	The Peace or Truce of God, explained	
	The Judgments of God and Ordeals abolished	
	The feudal law reduced to order and system	

A.D.		PAGE
	Profession of	
	Universities	
	Rhetorical sta	
1153	Degrees conf	
1158	Habit of the	
	privileges o	
	Extinction of	
1250	The Grand I	
	Germany . .	
1233	The Hunscau	
1273	Rodolph of H	
1180	The Guelphs	
	and Saxony	
	Proscription o	
	City of Ratisb	
	the crown .	
1180	Bernard, son o	
	vested with t	
	Suabia and Fr	
1246	Succession of	
1256	Richard of Cor	
1251	Ottocar II. Ki	
1258	Is slain by the	
	Marehild . .	
1106-1138	Italian r	
	per as the	
	power for the	
1158	Frederic Barba	
1162	He razes the c	
1217	League of the	
1214	Frederic II. ren	
1226	He is opposed	
	Lombardy .	
	Factions of the	
	The Italian mu	
	The institutio	
	The Podestas, or	
	over their citi	
	Commerce of Ve	
1097	Doge of Venice,	
	History of Veni	
	Hereditary arist	
	History of Genoa	
	Account of the r	
	Norman chiefs a	
127	Roger, sovereig	
130	Anacleus II., of	
106	William II., Ki	
	Account of the	
1189	Marriage of the	
	of Naples . .	
1189	The usurper Tai	
258	Mainfroi usurps	
206	Clement IV. in	
	kingdom of N	
266	Mainfroi slain in	
268	Conradin heir to	
	of Austria, be	
	Michael Paleolog	
	stantinople . .	
282	The Sicilian Ves	
282	Ceter II. of Arr	
	Conquests of M	
	Kings of Arra	
231	Count of Champ	
	varre in right o	
274	Philip I. of Fr	
	pagne by his	
	Henry I. of Na	
336	Jouu, daughter o	
	kingdom of Na	
	quishing C	
	Valois	
25	Philip of Valois	
	French throne	
37	Raymond, Count	
	Arragon, by h	
304	His grandson, P	
	III.	
30	James I. of Arra	
	and the kingdo	
76	Dispute of Pope	
	rguson	
85	Alphonse VI. of	
	quers the king	
	Altonbeker, Com	
	erides from A	
89	His son Yousof I	

A.D.	PAOE	A.D.	PAOE
1153	Profession of the law studied 48	1120	Abdalmoumen founds the dynasty of the Almoravides, and overthrows the Almoravides 53
1158	Universities founded in Europe 48	1212	Naser Mohammed attempts the conquest of Spain 53
1158	Rhetorical studies, and sciences 48	1236—1262	The Moors defeated near Ubeda in Spain 54
1158	Degrees conferred on students of the Canon law 48	1236—1262	Moorish kingdoms of Cordova, Seville, and Grenada, conquered by Ferdinand III 54
1158	<i>Habita</i> of the Emperor Frederic Barbarossa confer privileges on universities 48	1156	Spanish Order of Alcantara 54
1250	Extinction of the House of Hohenstaufen 49	1158	Order of Calatrava instituted 54
1250	The Grand Interregnum, a period of anarchy in Germany 49	1161	Order of St. James of Compostella 54
1253	The Hansatic League 49	1090	Henry of Burgundy created Count of Portugal 54
1273	Rodolph of Hapsburg, Emperor of Germany 49	1139	His son, Alphonso I. of Portugal, routs the Moors in the plain of Ourique 54
1180	The Guelphs deprived of the duchies of Bavaria and Saxony 49	1139	Innocent IV. deposes Sancho II. of Portugal 54
	Proscription of Henry the Lion 49	1249	Alphonso III. conquers Algarve from the Mohammedans 54
	City of Ratisbon declared <i>immediate</i> , or holding of the crown 49		Powerful vassals of the Kings of France enumerated 54
1180	Bernard, son of the margrave of Brandenburg, invested with the duchy of Saxony 49		Rivalry between France and England 54
	Sabia and Franconia 49	1087	War betwixt William the Conqueror and Philip I. Louis VII. divorces his queen, Eleanor of Poitou 54
1246	Secession of the duchy of Austria 50	1152	Her marriage with Henry II. of England 54
1256	Richard of Cornwall, emperor 50	1108—1223	Reign of Philip II. Augustus, King of France 55
1251	Ottocar II. King of Bohemia 50		Louis VII., Philip Augustus, and Louis IX., severally took the cross and proceeded to the Holy Land 55
1258	Is slain by the Emperor Rudolph at the battle of Marchfeld 50	1208	Innocent III. persuades Louis VIII. to a crusade against the Albigenses, under the Counts of Toulouse and Carcassonne 55
1106	1138 Italian republics recognise the German emperor as their supreme head, but claim sovereign power for themselves 50	1226	Death of Louis VII. 55
1158	Frederic Barbarossa claims the kingdom of Italy 50	1229	Louis IX. acquires Languedoc by the treaty of Paris 55
1162	He razes the city of Milan 50		County of Toulouse, county of Venaisin, and possessions of the Counts of Carcassonne 55
1167	League of the cities of Lombardy 50	1220	Order of St. Dominic founded 55
1218	Frederic II. renews the war in Italy 50	1167	Death of the Empress Matilda 55
1226	He is opposed by Gregory IX. and the League of Lombardy 50	1167	Henry II. of England inherits Normandy, Gascony, Guienne, Anjou, Touraine, and Maine 55
	Factions of the Guelphs and Ghibellines in Italy 50	1172	His conquest of Ireland 55
	The Italian municipalities lose their liberty 50	1175	Hendrick, King of Connaught, submits 55
	The institution of Podesta in several Italian states 50	1199	Usurpation of King John 55
	The <i>Podestas</i> , or captains, arrogate sovereign power over their cities 51	1210—1213	John of England deposed by Innocent III. 55
	Commerce of Venice and Genoa 51	1215	John signs Magna Charta at Runnymede near Windsor 55
69	Dege of Venice, institution of that magistrate 51	1216—1272	Reign of Henry III. of England 56
	History of Venice 51	1272	Edward I. 56
	Hereditary aristocracy of that republic 51	1282	He conquers Wales, Llewellyn being slain near the Meneil, and Prince David executed 56
	History of Genoa 51	1157	Valdenar I. King of Denmark, undertakes a crusade against the pagan nations of the North 56
	Account of the republic of Pisa 52	1183	Canute VI., of Denmark, reduces Pomerania, Mecklenburg, and Schwerin 56
127	Norman chiefs acquire a portion of Italy 52	1209	Conquests of Valdemar II. of Denmark 56
130	Roger, sovereign of Sicily 52	1227	He is defeated in Holstein 56
166	Anacletus II., anti-pope 52	1080—1133	Anarchy in Sweden 56
	William II., King of Naples and Sicily 52	1157	St. Eric the apostle and conqueror of Finland 57
	Account of the House of Hohenstaufen 52		Charles I. King of Sweden and Gothland 57
189	Marriage of the Emperor Henry IV. with Constance of Naples 52	1250	Birger, King of Sweden, spreads the Christian religion in the north of Europe 57
189	The usurper Tancred 52		Prussians unknown before the close of the tenth century 57
189	Maintoil usurps the kingdom of the Two Sicilies 52		St. Adelbert suffers martyrdom in Prussia 57
266	Clement IV. invests Charles of Anjou with the kingdom of Naples 52	1215	The Abbot of Olyva appointed the first bishop in Prussia, by Innocent III. 57
266	Maintoil slain in the battle of Beneventum 52	1218	Honorius III. publishes a crusade against the pagans of Prussia 57
268	Conradin heir to the crown of Naples, and Frederic of Austria, beheaded 52	1226	Courad, Duke of Masovia, grants to the Teutonic Knights the conquests they might make in Prussia 57
	Michael Paleologus expels the Latins from Constantinople 52	1255	They build the city of Koningsberg 57
282	The Sicilian Vespers, massacre of the French 52	1280	They found Marienburg, their capital 57
282	Peter III. of Arragon crowned in Sicily 53	1283	The Teutonic Knights enlarge their conquests 57
	Conquests of Moorish kingdoms in Spain by the Kings of Arragon and Castile 53	1100—1200	Commerce of the Baltic 57
234	Count of Champagne acquires the kingdom of Navarre in right of Blanche, daughter of Sancho VI. 53	1192	Mairand, Bishop of Livonia 57
274	Philip I. of France acquires Navarre and Champagne by his marriage with Joan, daughter of Henry I. of Navarre 53	1204	He institutes the Order of Knights of Christ, or Sword-bearers 57
286	Joan, daughter of Louis le Hutin, transfers the kingdom of Navarre to the Count of Evreux, relinquishing Champagne and Brie to Philip of Valois 53	1257	Union of these with the Teutonic Knights 57
288	Philip of Valois succeeds Charles the Fair on the French throne 53	1206	Conquests of Zinghis Khan 58
357	Raimond, Count of Barcelona, becomes King of Arragon, by his marriage with Petronilla 53	1227	His death 58
304	His grandson, Pedro II., does homage to Innocent III. 53		His son Oetai Khan conquers the north of China 58
330	James I. of Arragon conquers the Balearic Islands and the kingdom of Valencia 53	1237	Baton conquers Kipzack and enters Russia 58
376	Dispute of Pope Martin IV. with Pedro III. of Arragon 53		The Mogul Tartars overrun Poland, Hungary, and Moravia 58
385	Alphonso VI. of Castile (i.e. Alphonso I.) conquers the kingdom of Toledo 53	1278	Cublai, or Yuen Chi tsou, conquers the south of China 58
	Abu-beker, Commander of the Faithful, expels the Saracens from Africa 53		
39	His son Yousuff builds the city of Morocco 53		

A.D.		PAGE
1278	Tartarlan khans of Persia, Zagatai, and Kipzac . . .	58
1291	Fall of the Mogul power in China, and death of Cubli . . .	58
	The Grand or Golden Horde, or Horde of Kipzac, a terror to the Russian princes . . .	58
1481	Achmet Khan, the last chief of the Horde of Kipzac . . .	59
	Descendants of Vladimir the Great share the Russian territories . . .	59
1157	The Grand-Duke Andrew I . . .	59
	Grand-duchy of Kiow devastated by the Lithuanians and Poles . . .	59
1223	Toushi, son of Zinghis Khan, defeats the princes of Kiow . . .	59
1237	His son Batou takes Moscow . . .	59
	The Mogul Tartars conquer the Grand-duchy of Vladimir, and devastate Russia . . .	59
1241	Alexander Newski defeats the Knights of Livonia . . .	49
1261	On his death he was declared a saint in the Russian calendar . . .	59
	The Piast dynasty in Poland . . .	59
1138	Discussions on the partition of that kingdom by Boleslaus II . . .	59
1230	Conrad, son of Casimir the Just, establishes the Teutonic Knights in Culm . . .	59
	Laws of the Hungarians . . .	59
1077—1095	Conquests of Ladislaus I. King of Hungary . . .	60
1102	Coloman, King of Hungary, conquers Croatia and Dalmatia . . .	60
1131	Bela II, King of Hungary . . .	60
	Appanages of the younger sons of the kings weaken that kingdom . . .	60
1204	Andrew II, King of Hungary . . .	60
1217	He undertakes a crusade to the Holy Land . . .	60
1222	The Golden Bull, or Constitution of Hungary . . .	60
	Andrew II. confers privileges on the Saxons settled in Transylvania . . .	60
1235	Bela IV., King of Hungary . . .	60
1241	The Moguls under Batou and Gayouk conquer that kingdom . . .	60
1214	On the death of Oktai Khan, his son tsnouk with the Moguls return towards China . . .	60
	Decline of the Greek or Eastern Empire . . .	60
1195	The Emperor Isaac Angelus dethroned by Alexius III . . .	60
1203	Alexius III. replace Isaac on the throne of Constantinople . . .	60
	Alexius, named Mourzoufle, usurps the throne . . .	61
1204	The Crusaders again take Constantinople, and place Baldwin, Count of Flanders, on the throne, the first Latin emperor of Constantinople . . .	61
	Venetian acquisitions in the Levant . . .	61
	Boniface, Marquis of Monterrat, acquires the sovereignty of Candia, the ancient Crete . . .	61
1207	Boniface transfers Candia to the Venetians . . .	61
1206	Theodore Lascaris crowned emperor at Nice in Bithynia . . .	61
1205	Alexius and David Comnenus found an empire in Pontus, of which Trebizond is the capital, and Michael Angelus Comnenus, emperor at Durazzo, over Epirus, Acarnania, Etolia, and Thessaly . . .	61
1261	Baldwin II, the last Latin emperor, flies from Constantinople . . .	61
1261	Michael Paleologus, Greek emperor at Constantinople, with assistance of the Genoese . . .	61
	Atabeks, of Iran, reign in Syria . . .	61
1099	Fatimite Caliphs of Egypt dispossessed of Jerusalem by the Crusaders . . .	61
1168	Nourredin sends Saladin to Egypt against the Crusaders . . .	61
1171	Saladin, or Salah-ed-deen, sultan on the death of the Atabek Nourredin . . .	61
	His conquests in Mesopotamia, Armenia, and Arabia . . .	61
1187	He defeats the Christian princes at Hittin near Tiberias . . .	61
	He takes Guy de Lusignan, King of Jerusalem, prisoner . . .	61
	Subsequent history of the Saracens . . .	61
	The Mameluke slaves acquire power . . .	61
	The Ayoubite dynasty; reign of the Sultan Sal. h. . .	62
1250	Sultan Touran Shih assassinated . . .	62
	Isbeg, the Mameluke, Sultan of Egypt . . .	62
1210	The Mamelukes take Damascus and Aleppo from the Moguls . . .	62
1268	They conquer Antioch . . .	62
1289	And possess themselves of Tripoli . . .	62

A.D.		PAGE
1289	Ptolemais taken by assault . . .	62
	Tyre surrendered to the Mamelukes . . .	62
1291	The Franks entirely expelled from Syria . . .	62

PERIOD V.

From Pope Boniface VIII. to the taking of Constantinople by the Turks. A.D. 1300—1453.

1303	Usurpations of Boniface VIII. over the secular princes of Europe . . .	62
	History of the popes considered to be the best history of Europe . . .	62
	Aggrandisement of papal dominion . . .	62
1305	Clement V. pope . . .	62
1303	Translation of the popes to Avignon . . .	62
1367	Gregory XI. again removes the see to Roma . . .	62
1347	Rienzi, tribune of Rome, restores for a time the form of a commonwealth . . .	62
	The Ecclesiastical States a prey to the Italian nobles . . .	62
1492	Pontificate of Alexander VI.	62
1502	Julius II. restores the papal influence . . .	62
1378	Urban VI. elected at Rome by the Italian ecclesiastics . . .	62
1378	Clement VII., the pope at Avignon, chosen by the French cardinals . . .	62
1385	Boniface IX. at Rome. Benedict XIII. at Avignon . . .	62
1409	Deposition of the rival popes by the Council of Pisa, and election of Alexander V.	62
	Schism, of the see of St. Peter, consequent on the co-existence of three popes . . .	62
1410	John XXIII. elected at Pisa . . .	62
1414	The Emperor Sigismund convokes a general council at Constance . . .	62
	Schism in the pontificate terminated by this council . . .	62
	John Huss, the Reformer of Bohemia, burnt at Constance . . .	62
1417	Jerome of Prague burnt . . .	62
1417	Otho de Colonna elected pope, who assumes the name of Martin V.	62
	His scheme of church reform . . .	62
1431	Council of Basil assembled . . .	62
1437	Eugenius IV. transfers the council to Ferrara, and to Florence . . .	62
1439	The prelates at Basil elect Amadeus VIII., ex-duke of Saxony, as pope under the name of Felix V.	62
	Schism renewed until the resignation of Felix V.	62
1438	The Pragmatic Sanction promulgated by Charles VII., King of France . . .	62
	The liberties of the Gallican church . . .	62
1448	Nicholas V. concludes a concordat with the Germans . . .	62
1516	Leo X.'s concordat with France . . .	62
	General councils considered superior in authority to the Roman pontiff . . .	62
	Rise of the Reformation, or reformed religion . . .	62
	John of Paris defends Philip the Fair against the arrogance of Boniface VIII.	62
	Dante Alighieri maintains the cause of Louis of Bavaria against the power of Rome . . .	62
	William Okkham, Peter d'Ailly, and other early controversial writers . . .	62
	Philosophy of Aristotle occasions a controversy among schoolmen . . .	62
1294	Death of Roger Bacon . . .	62
1321	Of the poet Dante . . .	62
1374	Of Petrarch . . .	62
1375	Of Boccaccio, author of the Decameron . . .	62
	History of Inventions.—Paper.—Painting in oils . . .	62
1436	Printing . . .	62
1160	Copper-plate engraving . . .	62
1300—1400	Application of gunpowder in warfare . . .	62
1467	Mortars and bombs . . .	62
	Cannons and muskets . . .	62
	The mariner's compass . . .	62
	Italian and Huseatic commerce . . .	62
	The Lombard merchants . . .	62
	Genoese trade in the Black Sea . . .	62
	Venetian commerce with India . . .	62
	Maritime power of the House of V.	62
1350—1450	Enlargement of towns forming the Italian League . . .	62
	Causes of its decline . . .	62

350—1450	Artisan woolen cloth . . .	62
1069—1438	Prince of Germany . . .	62
1438	House of Hapsburg . . .	62
1338	Diet of Frank . . .	62
	General union of the Empire . . .	62
1356	The Golden Bull . . .	62
	Germany . . .	62
1430	Decrees of the Council of Basel . . .	62
1447	Concords with the City of Lyons . . .	62
1419	Humbert II., the French . . .	62
1481	Charles of Anjou . . .	62
1348	Avignon sold to the Pope . . .	62
1410	Dukes of Zähringen . . .	62
	Cantons of Switzerland . . .	62
1299	Albert I. of Austria . . .	62
1315	Revolution . . .	62
315—1355	Federal Republic of the Swiss . . .	62
1415	The Swiss departmental dominions . . .	62
1363	Dukes of Burgundy . . .	62
1306	Wenceslaus V.	62
1309	Henry VII., King of Bohemia . . .	62
1418	War of the Hussites against the Pope . . .	62
1329	House of Wittelsbach . . .	62
	and Bavaria . . .	62
1373	Prohibitory Decree of Innocent VI.	62
1290	Anarchy in Italy . . .	62
1309	Beign of the Emperor . . .	62
1346	House of Este . . .	62
1530	House of Gonzaga . . .	62
1305	John Gedeas, King of Milan . . .	62
1417	House of Strozzi . . .	62
1300—1400	Florentine publican institutions . . .	62
1292	The Goutfaulx . . .	62
	France . . .	62
1406	The Florentine Republic . . .	62
1530	Usurpation of the Papacy . . .	62
1376	Wars of Geneva . . .	62
	Peter Doria . . .	62
	Venetians . . .	62
1380	The Venetians . . .	62
1464	Genoa becomes a Republic . . .	62
	Milan . . .	62
1528	Genoa recovers her liberties . . .	62
1388	The Venetians . . .	62
1420	They deprive the Dalmatians . . .	62
1401—1454	Their Duke . . .	62
1392	Joanna I., Queen of Sicily . . .	62
1423	Joanna II., Queen of Sicily . . .	62
	Louis of Anjou . . .	62
1445	René of Anjou . . .	62
	V. of Arras . . .	62
1340	Alphonso XI., King of Castile . . .	62
1381	John I., King of Castile . . .	62
	and his wife . . .	62
1365	John the Bastard, Duke of Burgundy . . .	62
	Castilians . . .	62
1328	Assession of the French . . .	62
1338	Context of Edward III.	62
	The Salt Law . . .	62
1388	Insanity of Charles VI.	62
1419	Jean sans Peur . . .	62
1415	Henry V., King of France . . .	62
1420	His marriage . . .	62
1422	Death of Henry V.	62
1429	Henry VI., King of France . . .	62
	England . . .	62
	Context of Charles VI.	62
	The Duke of Burgundy . . .	62
	John of Artois . . .	62
1429	Coronation of Charles VI.	62

PAGE	PAGE
350—1450 Artisans of Flanders and Brabant carry the woolen cloth manufacture into England.....	69
308—1438 Princes of Luxemburg elected to the empire of Germany.....	69
438 House of Hapsburg elected to the Empire.....	69
338 Diet of Frankfurt.....	69
General union of the electors of the German Empire.....	69
356 The Golden Bull authorized by Charles IV. of Germany.....	69
439 Decrees of the Council of Basel adopted.....	69
447 Concordats with Nicholas V.....	69
312 City of Lyons transferred to Philip the Fair.....	69
349 Humbert II., of Dauphiny, bequeaths his territory to the French monarch.....	69
481 Charles of Anjou bequeaths Provence to the crown of France.....	69
348 Avignon sold by Joanna I. of Naples to Clement VI.....	69
418 Dukes of Zähringen extinct.....	69
Cantons of Switzerland, under the Imperial government.....	69
398 Albert I. of Austria.....	70
308—1315 Revolution in Switzerland.....	70
315—1353 Federal League of the Cities of Switzerland.....	70
445 The Swiss deprive Frederic of Austria of his patrimonial dominions.....	70
363 Dukes of Burgundy.....	70
306 Wenceslaus V., of Bohemia, assassinated.....	70
309 Henry VII., of Luxemburg, emperor, seizes on Bohemia.....	70
418 War of the Hussites.....	70
Crusade against Ziska, or John de Trocznowa.....	70
329 House of Wittelsbach possesses the Palatinate and Bavaria.....	71
The Ascanian princes lose Saxony.....	71
373 Frederic of Hohenzollern acquires Saxony.....	71
300 Anarchy in Italy.....	71
309 Reign of the Emperor Henry VII.....	71
336 House of Este govern Modena and Reggio.....	71
530 House of Gonzaga, dukes of Mantua.....	71
335 John Galeas, of the House of Visconti, duke of Milan.....	71
447 House of Sforza acquires Milan.....	71
300—1400 Florence, Venice, and Genoa maintain republican institutions.....	71
392 The Gonfaloniere of Justice established in Florence.....	71
406 The Florentines overpower the republic of Pisa.....	71
530 Expulsion of the Medici in Florence.....	71
376 Wars of Genoa and Venice.....	71
Peter Doria takes the port of Chioggia from the Venetians.....	71
380 The Venetians expel the Genoese from Chioggia.....	71
464 Genoa becomes a dependency of the duchy of Milan.....	72
524 Genoa recovers its independence.....	72
488 The Venetians seize on Treviso.....	72
420 They deprive Sigismund, King of Hungary, of Dalmatia.....	72
401—1454 Their dominions in Italy.....	72
382 Joanna I., of Naples, adopts Charles of Durazzo, who puts her to death.....	72
423 Joanna II., daughter of Charles of Durazzo, adopts Louis of Anjou.....	72
443 René of Anjou expelled from Naples by Alphonso V. of Arragon.....	72
340 Alphonso XI., of Castile, defeats the Moors at Tariffa.....	72
381 John I., of Castile, espouses Beatrix of Portugal, and lays siege to Lisbon.....	73
385 John the Bastard, King of Portugal, defeats the Castilians.....	73
Accession of the House of Valois to the throne of France.....	73
338 Contest of Edward III. with Philip VI.....	73
The Salic Law.....	73
538 Insanity of Charles VI. of France.....	73
419 Jean sans Peur, Duke of Burgundy, assassinated.....	73
415 Henry V., victorious at Agincourt.....	73
420 His marriage with Catherine of France.....	73
422 Death of Henry V.....	73
420 Henry VI. crowned at Westminster as King of England and France.....	73
Contest of Charles VII. with the English under the Duke of Bedford.....	73
Joan of Arc, the Maid of Orleans.....	73
420 Coronation of Charles VII. at Rheims.....	74

A.D.	PAGE
1445 A standing army formed by Charles VII. to repress his ambitious vassals.....	74
Civil wars of the Houses of York and Lancaster.....	74
1461 Reign of Edward IV.....	74
1292 Candidates for the crown of Scotland.....	74
1306 Robert Bruce, King of Scotland.....	74
1379 Robert II., king. Establishment of the Stuarts on the throne of Scotland.....	74
1387 Margaret of Norway.....	74
1397 Union of Calmar, Sweden, Norway, and Denmark governed by Margaret.....	75
1412 Eric VII. sole monarch.....	75
1441 Christopher III. succeeds to that Union of Northern kingdoms.....	75
1448 Charles VIII., Canutus, King of Sweden.....	75
1450 Christian I., King of Denmark and Norway.....	75
1457 Charles VIII. dethroned.....	75
1461 His restoration.....	75
1459 Christian I. acquires Holstein and Sleswic.....	75
History of the Grand-dukes of Russia.....	75
Grand-dukes of Lithuania.....	75
Grand-dukes of Wologodit.....	76
1380 Victory of Demetrius Iwanowitsch, anointed Demski, or conqueror of the Don.....	76
1311—1343 The Teutonic Knights of Marienburg acquire Dantzic.....	76
The wars against the pagan Lithuanians.....	76
1454 Their wars with the kings of Poland.....	76
1466 Peace of Thorn.....	76
Teutonic Knights established in Königsberg.....	76
1320 Ladislaus IV., King of Poland.....	76
1340 Casimir the Great's conquest of Red Russia.....	76
1370 Piast dynasty extinct.....	77
1370 Louis, King of Hungary, acquires the crown of Poland.....	77
1386 Ladislaus Jagello, of Lithuania, King of Poland.....	77
1404 General Diet of Polish nobles.....	77
1310 Charles Robert of Anjou, King of Hungary.....	77
1342 Louis L., of Hungary, acquires great territorial accessions.....	77
1386 His daughter Mary marries Sigismund of Luxemburg, who unites Hungary to the German Empire.....	77
1411 Calamitous reign of the Emperor Sigismund.....	77
1428 His son Albert, Emperor and King of Hungary.....	77
1444 Ladislaus of Poland, King of Hungary, slain at Varna by the Turks.....	77
1456 John Huniades defeats Mahomet II. at Belgrade.....	78
1300 Origin of the Ottoman Turks.....	78
1327 Osman, or Ortohan, takes Bursa in Bithynia.....	78
The Jannisaries established by Orchan.....	78
1358 Sultan Soliman takes Gallipoli in the Thracian Chersonesus.....	78
1360 Amurath I. conquers Thrace.....	78
He is slain by the Servians at Cassowa.....	78
1396 Bajazet I. defeats Sigismund of Hungary at Nicopolis.....	78
1369 Timour, or Tamerlane, establishes his authority in Samarcand as his capital.....	78
He conquers Kipsac, Persia, and India.....	78
1400 He defeats Bajazet I. in the battle of Angora.....	78
1405 He marches towards China, and dies.....	78
1500 The Mogul Empire in Hindostan established by Babour, or Babu.....	79
1421 Amurath II. conquers the Morra, or Peloponnesus Scanderbeg and John Huniades oppose Amurath II. at Croja.....	79
1453 Mahomet II. takes Constantinople.....	79
1465 David Comnenus, Emperor of Trebizond, slain by the Turks.....	79
1464 Pius II. dies while preparing a crusade against the power of Mahomet II.....	79

PERIOD VI.

From the taking of Constantinople by the Turks to the Peace of Westphalia. A.D. 1453—1648.

1460 Revival of learning in Europe.....	79
Italian school of painting.....	79
Metaphysical and philosophical pursuits.....	79
Maritime discoveries.....	80
1492 Christopher Columbus sails to the Bahama Islands.....	80
1494 He discovers the Continent of America.....	80
1497 Amerigo Vesputio, a Florentine, gives his name to South America.....	80
Spanish conquests in America.....	80

A.D.	PAGE	A.D.	PAGE
Ferdinand the Catholic receives a grant from Alexander VI. of the American territories	80	1544—1551 Francis I., King of France, and his son Henry II. oppose the further aggrandizement of the House of Austria	85
The Portuguese discoveries in the East	80	Henry Quatre, Louis XIII., Richelieu, and Mazarin, join the Protestant League against Austria	85
1521 Cortes subdues the empire of Mexico	80	1618 Thirty years' war commenced	85
Death of Montezum and Guatimozin	80	1619 Reign of the Emperor Ferdinand II.	85
1533 Pizarro makes conquest of Peru	80	1648 Peace of Westphalia	85
Atabalipa, Inca of Peru, slain	80	1659 Treaty of the Pyrenees	85
The Spaniards import negroes to work in the mines of South America	80	1493 Reign of the Emperor Maximilian I.	86
They establish the Inquisition in those countries	81	Anarchy of the German Empire	86
1500 Cabral takes possession of Brazil for the King of Portugal	81	1495 The perpetual public peace, published by the Diet of Worms	86
1584—1616 Virginia colonized by Sir Walter Raleigh	81	The Imperial Chamber constituted	86
1603 Reign of James I., King of Great Britain	81	1512 Institution of the Aulic Council, by the Diet of Cologne	86
1629 West India Islands settled by the English	81	1519 The Imperial Capitulations, a guarantee of German liberties	86
1655 Admirals Penn and Venables take Jamaica from the Spaniards	81	1521 The war of Smalcalde	86
1534—1604 French establish themselves in Canada in the reigns of Francis I. and Henry IV.	81	Proscription of Luther by Charles V.	86
1608 City of Quebec founded	81	Charles V. condemns the Confession of Augsburg	86
1635 French settle in Martinique and Guadaloupe	81	1530 Union of Smalcalde, or league of Protestant princes in Germany	86
1630—1722 Their colony in St. Domingo	81	The Holy League of Catholic princes	86
Barthelemi Diaz a Portuguese admiral, doubles the Cape of Good Hope	81	The Turks invade Hungary, which occasions the truce or accommodation at Nuremberg	86
1498 Vasco di Gama reaches Calicut, by that route, in the reign of Emanuel	81	1544 Peace signed at Cressy with Francis I.	86
1509 Francis Almeida defeats the Egyptian and Indian fleets	81	1516 Proscription of the Protestant Elector John Frederick of Saxony, and the Landgrave of Hesse	86
1511 Alonzo Albuquerque conquers Goa	81	1547 Capture of those princes by Charles V.	86
1547 Silveira defeats the fleet of Soliman the Great at Diu	81	1548 Maurice created Elector of Saxony	86
Mercantile establishments of the Portuguese in India	81	The Interim designed for the extirpation of the reformed religion	86
Change in the commerce with India once carried on by the Venetians	82	Maurice, of Saxony, espouses the Protestant cause, and nearly surprises Charles V. at Inspruck	86
The Portuguese and Dutch engross the trade by the route of the Cape	82	1532 Treaty of Passau secures toleration to the Protestants	86
English, French, and Danish commerce with America and India	82	1553 Diet of Augsburg concludes a pacification	86
1517—1542 Portuguese commerce with China and Japan	82	The Ecclesiastical Reserve explained	86
1519 Magellan's voyage by the route of Cape Horn, and the Straits of Magellan	82	1603 Henry IV., of France, promotes a new union of the Protestant princes of Germany	86
Establishment of horse-posts in Europe, for letters	82	1609 Holy League renewed at Wurzburg	86
1500 Abuses of the clergy of Rome	82	1610 Murder of Henry IV. by Ravallac	86
Causes of the Reformation	82	1618 Thirty years' war narrated	86
1513 Sale of indulgences by Leo X.	82	1620 Battle of Prague	86
Martin Luther burns the bull issued by Leo X. against him, at Wittenberg	83	1626 Tilly defeats Christian IV., of Denmark, at Lutzen	86
Zincale preaches the Reformation at Zurich	83	Gustavus Adolphus, of Sweden, puts himself at the head of the Protestant League	86
1532—1538 Doctrines of John Calvin	83	1631 He gains the battle of Lepsic	86
1520 Protest of the Lutherans and Calvinists against the Decrees of the Diet of Spire	83	1632 He slays at Lutzen, where his arms were victorious	86
1530 The Confession of Faith presented to the Diet of Augsburg and the Emperor Charles V.	83	1634 The Swedes defeated at Nordlingen	86
Universities and schools founded in the Protestant States	83	1635 Treaty of Prague between John George of Saxony and the Emperor	86
Wars ensue throughout central Europe in consequence of the Reformation	83	Louis XIII. declares war against Spain	86
1545 Paul III. convokes the Council of Trent	84	Banier and Torstenstun, Swedish generals, continue the war in Germany	86
1547 He transfers this assembly to Bologna	84	Turenne and D'Enghien distinguished in this contest against the emperor	86
1551 Julius III. re-assembles the Council at Trent	84	1648 Peace of Munster	86
Maurice, Elector of Saxony, takes Augsburg and marches against the emperor	84	The religious pacification confirmed	86
1560 Pius IV. renews the Council of Trent	84	France acquires Metz, Toul, Verdun, and Alsace	86
Its decisions maintain the cause of Rome against the Protestant League	84	The Low Countries inherited by Philip II. of Spain	86
1534 Ignatius Loyola founds the order of Jesuits	84	1556—1609 Origin of the republic of the United Provinces	86
Their vow of obedience to Rome	84	1559 The Inquisition established in the Low Countries by Philip II.	86
Their missions to China, Japan, and the Indies	84	Confederacy of the nobles at Breda, called the Compromise	86
Balance of power, devised in Italy	84	They are denominated Gueux or Beggars	86
1477 Maximilian, of Austria, by his marriage with Mary of Burgundy, acquires the Low Countries, including Frenche-Comte, Flanders, and Atois	85	William of Orange, Louis of Nassau, and the chief nobility emigrate	86
1506 Charles V., Emperor of Germany, called Charles I. of Spain, inherits the Low Countries	85	1567 Duke of Alva sent into Flanders—executes 18,000 persons, together with the Counts Egmont and Horn	86
Extent of his empire	85	The Beggars of the Low Countries	86
1557 He cedes his patrimonial dominions in Austria and Germany to his brother Ferdinand I.	85	The Maritime Beggars	86
1526 Louis, King of Hungary and Bohemia, is slain at the battle of Mohacs by the Turks	85	1568 The Prince of Orange places himself at their head	86
His king sons devolve on Ferdinand I. of Austria	85	1572 He takes the Brill by surprise	86
1700 The House of the Emperor Charles V. becomes extinct on the demise of Charles II. of Spain	85	The republic founded by the Assembly of Dort	86
1740 The male line of Ferdinand I., of Austria, ends in Charles VI.	85	1576 The Pacification of Ghent signed	86
1580 Philip II. inherits Portugal in right of his mother Isabella, daughter of Emanuel	85	Queen Elizabeth countenances the new republic	86
1590 Death of Henry the Cardinal, King of Portugal	85	Alexander Farnese, a Spanish governor, takes Maastricht by assault	86
		1579 The Prince of Orange, by the Union of Utrecht, establishes the Seven United Provinces of Holland, &c.	86
		1584 William, Prince of Orange, assassinated at Delft	86
		Maurice of Orange, stadtholder	86

A.D.	PAGE
They conquer the Moluccas and engross the spice trade	99
Gon and Dia alone remain to the Portuguese	99
1640 Revolt of the Catalans	99
1640 The Duke of Burgundy seizes on Lisbon, and is crowned king by the title of John IV.	99
1485 The House of York ends, by the death of Richard III. in the battle of Bosworth	100
1486 Henry VII., of the House of Tudor, espouses Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV.	100
Agriculture and commerce revive on this happy conclusion of the wars of the Two Roses	100
1509 Reign of Henry VIII.	100
1521 The pope grants him the title of Defender of the Faith	100
1532 Henry VIII. divorces his queen, Catherine of Aragon	100
Clement VII. having maintained her cause, gives rise to the separation of the English church from Rome	100
1531 Crommer, Archbishop of Canterbury, on the death of Cardinal Wolsey	100
1534 Henry VIII. declares himself supreme head of the church	100
Court of High Commission established	100
1536—1539 Suppression and confiscation of monasteries in England	100
The Six Articles of religion in the reign of Henry VIII.	100
1542 He takes the title of King of Ireland	100
1547 Reign of Edward VI. Calvinism established in England	100
1553 Mary I., Queen of England, persecutes the Protestants	100
She restores the Catholic religion	100
1554 Her marriage with Philip II.	100
Crommer, Latimer, and Ridley, burnt	100
1558 Reign of Queen Elizabeth	100
Elizabeth establishes the Protestant faith	100
Distinction of the English or High Church, and the Calvinistic or Presbyterian	100
Mary of Lorraine, widow of James V., is Regent of Scotland	100
The Congregation, or Presbyterian church of Scotland	101
1560 Elizabeth's general expels the French troops from Scotland by the capitulation signed at Leith	101
1560 Mary, Queen of Scots, and her husband Francis II., renounce her claim to the English crown	101
1560 Death of Francis II., King of France	101
Death of Barnley, second husband of Mary of Scots	101
1568 The Scottish queen flies into England	101
1587 Mary is beheaded by Elizabeth's order, on a suspicion of conspiracies	101
1567 Minority of James VI., King of Scotland	101
1598 Rebellion of Hugh O'Neil, Earl of Tyrone	101
Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, having failed to suppress it, Charles, Lord Mountjoy, reduces Ireland	101
Queen Elizabeth patronises commerce and navigation	101
She encourages the Flemish manufacturers in England	101
1555 Richard Chancellor's voyage to Archangel	101
Charter granted by John Basilovich II. to the English company trading to Russia	101
1577—1580 Sir Francis Drake's voyage round the world	101
1600 English East India Company instituted	101
1584 Sir Walter Raleigh attempts to colonize Virginia	101
1588 Maritime greatness of England. The Spanish armada destroyed	102
1603 Accession of James I. (James VI. of Scotland), and the House of Stuart	102
1625 Reign of Charles I.	102
He levies impositions without a parliament	102
He endeavours to establish episcopacy in Scotland	102
1638 The Covenant taken by the Presbyterians of Scotland	102
1640 The Long Parliament—Strafford beheaded	102
1641 The civil war in England	102
1642 Dr. Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, beheaded	102
1644 The Parliamentarians defeat Charles I. near York	102
1646 He flies to Scotland, and is sold by the Scottish army to the parliament	102
The Partisans overpowered by the Independents	102
1649 Charles I. beheaded at Whitehall	102
Oliver Cromwell, Protector	102

A.D.	PAGE
Revolutions in the North of Europe	102
Union of Calmar dissolved	102
1471—1520 Steno Sture, Svanke Sture, and Steno Sture the young, govern Sweden	102
1497 John, King of Denmark	102
1513—1520 Victory of Christian II. of Denmark over Steno Sture the young, at Bogesund	102
1520 Christian II. crowned at Stockholm	102
He massacres the Swedish nobles	102
1521 Gustavus Vasa delivers Sweden from the Danes	102
1523 Is crowned King of Sweden	102
1527 Frederic I. of Denmark embraces the Reformation of religion	102
1534 Christian III. abolishes the Catholic worship and episcopacy, in Denmark and Norway	102
House of Oldenburg	102
1544 Treaty of Partition among the branches of this family	102
The Dukes of Holstein-Gottorp	102
1588 Reign of Christian IV. in Denmark	102
1616 The Danish East India Company instituted	102
Danish colony in Tranquebar	102
University of Copenhagen, and other Danish colleges	102
Reformation of religion in Sweden	102
1540 The Hereditary Union passed at Trebro	102
1404 Charles IX., King of Sweden	102
1611 Gustavus Adolphus the Great, King of Sweden, commands the Protestant confederates in Germany	102
1631 He defeats Tilly at Leipsic	102
1632 Is slain when gaining the victory of Lutzen	102
1632 Christina, Queen of Sweden	102
1466 Albert of Brandenburg, Grand-Master of the Teutonic Order	102
1519 His contest with the Poles	102
Doctrines of Luther disseminated in Prussia	102
1525 Duchy of Prussia made hereditary in the House of Brandenburg, by the treaty of Cracow	102
1525 Walter de Cronenberg establishes the Teutonic Knights in Franconia	102
1527 Walter de Plattenberg, Grand-Master of the Teutonic Order, made a prince of the Empire by Charles V.	102
1535 Joachim II. Elector of Brandenburg	102
1640 Frederic William the Great, Elector of Brandenburg and Duke of Prussia	102
1658 His son, Frederic I., King of Prussia	102
Lutheranism introduced into Livonia	102
1561 Gothard Kettler, Grand-Master of the Knights Sword-brothers, reeds Livonia to Sigismund Augustus, King of Poland	102
Kettler is created Duke of Courland	102
Suppression of the Knights of Livonia, and of the Archbishops of Riga and their suffragans	102
1561—1582 The city of Revel, and Esthonia, claim the protection of Eric XIV., King of Sweden, against the Russians	102
Contest between Poland and Sweden	102
1660 Terminated by the Peace of Oliva	102
1481 Achemet, Khan of Kipzax, resisted in Russia by John Basilovich III.	102
1481—1528 The Nogai Tartars assist the Czars in the destruction of the Grand Horde of Kipzax	102
1552 John Basilovich IV. takes Casan and Astracan	102
The Strelitzes, or standing army, instituted	102
Discovery of Siberia	102
1548 Reformed religion embraced in Poland by Sigismund II.	102
1573 Henry III. of Valois, King of Poland	102
1618 Vladislavus of Poland marches to Moscow	102
1458 Matthias Corvinus, King of Hungary, son of John Hunyadi	102
1485 He takes Vienna from the Emperor Frederic III.	102
1480 Death of Matthias at Vienna	102
1526 Louis, King of Hungary, slain at Mohacz by Soliman I. the Great	102
1526 Ferdinand of Austria claims the crown of Hungary, which is given by the Hungarians to John de Zapolya, Count of Zips and Transylvania	102
1520 Soliman I. aids John de Zapolya, and lays siege to Vienna	102
1541 Soliman invades Hungary and takes Buda	102
1562 Truce between Ferdinand and Soliman	102
Protestants of Hungary and Transylvania persecuted	102
Bethlem Gabor, and George Ragoz, Protestant princes of Transylvania	102

Rodolph II. of A	102
tion at Vienna	102
9 Ferdinand II. en	102
9 Ferdinand III. e	102
5 Pacification sign	102
4 The Hussites, o	102
by Maximilian	102
0 Diet of Prague,	102
toleration	102
2 The Letters of	102
this	102
The Bohemian e	102
8 The Thirty Year	102
dissensions	102
0 Battle of Prague	102
Fall of the Elect	102
Severities of Fe	102
John George, El	102
4 Buzajet II. conq	102
4 Selim I. defests	102
sia	102
7 He defeats the	102
Mamelukes, at	102
0—1534 Soliman I.	102
gary, and Bago	102
6 Death of Sultan	102
man power	102
0 Selim II. takes C	102
17 His fleet destroy	102
from the Peace of N	102
Revolution in the	102
Formidable power	102
Abasement of the	102
1638—1715 Louis XIV.	102
Administration of	102
His queen, Maria	102
of Spain	102
7 Louis XIV., in h	102
7 Triple Alliance s	102
12 He attacks the S	102
rums Holland	102
England and Swe	102
Amsterdam defen	102
ulating the coun	102
4 Charles II. of En	102
Louis XIV. conq	102
Spain gains the v	102
Turenne conquers	102
Death of Turenne	102
cuculi	102
The Swedes rout	102
him of Brande	102
Peace of Nimgue	102
Troubles of the r	102
M. de Louvois t	102
France of twenty	102
Louis XIV. pers	102
The Dragonnades	102
Recreation of the	102
The French fac	102
manufacturers in	102
Louis's disputes	102
XI. as to the R	102
Liberties of the C	102
Leopold I. emp	102
Louis XIV. bre	102
nifesto against	102
James II. King o	102
The English Rev	102
William and Mar	102
Marshall de Lu	102
Fleury	102
Marshal Cathari	102
Stauford	102
Peace of Ryswick	102
Death of Charles	102
Treaty of Partit	102
Claim of the Arc	102
Charles II. nam	102
the Dauphin, t	102
Philip V. proclai	102

16	Rodolph II. of Austria agrees to a religious pacification at Vienna.....	108
17	Ferdinand II. emperor.....	108
17	Ferdinand III. emperor.....	108
17	Pacification signed at Linz.....	108
17	The Hussites, or reformers, of Bohemia tolerated by Maximilian II.....	108
17	Diet of Prague, when Rodolph II. grants them toleration.....	108
17	The Letters of Majesty confirmed by King Matthias.....	109
17	The Hohenau crown elective.....	109
17	The Thirty Years War, a consequence of religious dissensions.....	109
17	Battle of Prague.....	109
17	Fall of the Elector Palatine.....	109
17	Severities of Ferdinand II. of Austria.....	109
17	John George, Elector of Saxony.....	109
17	Bajazet II. conquers Bessarabia.....	109
17	Selim I. defeats the Shah Ismail, Sophi of Persia.....	109
17	He defeats the Sultan of Egypt, overthrows the Mamelukes, and takes Cairo.....	109
17	—1534 Soliman I. the Great conquers Rhodes, Hungary, and Bagdad.....	109
17	Death of Soliman Soltan, and decline of the Ottoman power.....	109
17	Selim II. takes Cyprus.....	110
17	His fleet destroyed at Lepanto.....	110

PERIOD VII.

<i>from the Peace of Westphalia to that of Utrecht.</i>		A. D.
1648—1713.		
110	Revolution in the political system of Europe.....	110
110	Unrivalled power of France.....	110
110	Abatement of the House of Austria.....	110
110	1643—1713 Louis XIV. patronises learning and the arts.....	110
110	Administration of Colbert.....	110
110	His queen, Maria Theresa, daughter of Philip IV. of Spain.....	110
111	1667 Louis XIV., in her right, conquers Flanders.....	111
111	1668 Triple Alliance signed at the Hague.....	111
111	He attacks the Seven United Provinces, and overruns Holland.....	111
111	England and Sweden make an alliance with Louis.....	111
111	Amsterdam defended by cutting the dykes and inundating the country.....	111
111	Charles II. of England makes peace with Holland.....	111
111	Louis XIV. conquers Franche Comté.....	111
111	Condé gains the victory of Senef.....	111
111	Toronic conquers Alsace.....	111
111	Death of Turenne in the campaign against Montecendi.....	111
111	The Swedes routed at Fehrbellin by Frederic William of Brandenburg.....	111
111	Peace of Nimwegen.....	111
112	Problems of the re-unions.....	112
112	M. de Louvois takes Strasburg.....	112
112	Peace of twenty years signed at Ratisbon.....	112
112	Louis XIV. persecutes the Calvinists.....	112
112	The Dragonnades.....	112
112	Revocation of the edicts of Nantes and of Nismes.....	112
112	The French Protestants carry their industry and manufactures into foreign lands.....	112
112	Louis's disputes with Clement IX. and Innocent XI. as to the <i>Regale</i>	112
113	Liberties of the Gallican church.....	113
113	Leopold I. emperor.....	113
113	Louis XIV. breaks the truce, and publishes a manifesto against Leopold I.....	113
113	James II. King of England.....	113
113	The English Revolution.....	113
113	William and Mary crowned.....	113
113	Alliance against Louis XIV.....	113
113	Marshal de Luxembourg gains the victory of Fleurus.....	113
113	Marshal Catinaut defeats the Duke of Savoy at Staffarda.....	113
113	Peace of Ryswick.....	113
114	Death of Charles II. of Spain.....	114
114	Treaty of Partition.....	114
114	Clot of the Archduke Charles.....	114
114	Charles II. names Philip of Anjou, second son of the Dauphin, to succeed him.....	114
114	Philip V. proclaimed at Madrid.....	115

A. D.	1702 William III., and his successor Queen Anne, the Dutch, Prussia, Portugal, and the Emperor, unite against Louis XIV. and Philip V.....	115
1704	Marlborough and Prince Eugene defeat Marshal Tallard at Blenheim.....	115
1706	Battle of Ramillies won by Marlborough.....	115
1708	Prince Eugene defeats Marsul de Marsin at Turin.....	115
1708	Battle of Oudenarde.....	115
1709	Marlborough defeats Villars at Malplaquet.....	115
1711	Death of the Emperor Joseph I.....	115
1711	The archduke becomes Charles VI. of Germany.....	115
1711	Tories supplant the Whig ministry in England.....	115
1711	Preliminaries of peace signed in London.....	116
1712	Villars defeats the Earl of Albemarle at Denain.....	116
1713	Peace of Utrecht.....	116
1714	Peace between the emperor and France signed at Baden.....	116
1715	Death of Louis XIV.....	116
1715	Dispute between the Molinists and the Jansenists.....	116
1715	The Bull <i>Unigenitus</i>	116
1658	State of Germany under Leopold I.....	117
117	The Electors of the Empire.....	117
117	House of Wittelsbach.....	117
1692	Ernest Augustus of Brunswick-Lunenburgh, first Elector of Hanover.....	117
117	The King of Bohemia obtains a voice in the Electoral College.....	117
117	The Imperial Capitulations changed into a perpetual Capitulation.....	117
117	Kingdoms of Saxony and Prussia established.....	117
1701	Installation of Frederic I. King of Prussia.....	118
118	The Electress Sophia of Hanover, daughter of Elizabeth and the Elector Palatine, and granddaughter of James I. of England.....	118
1711	Her son, George, Elector of Hanover, ascends the throne of England.....	118
118	History of the duct House of Saxony.....	118
1713	The Cortes of Spain regulate the <i>Castilian Succession</i> to be in the male line of Philip V.....	119
1661	War of Alphonso VI. of Portugal against Spain.....	119
119	He cedes Tangiers to the English.....	119
119	He cedes the island of Bombay also to the English.....	119
1663—1665	Victories of Count Schonberg and the Portuguese.....	119
1667	Alphonso VI. dethroned, and Pedro II. appointed regent.....	120
1668	Spain recognises the independence of Portugal.....	120
1706	Pedro II. joins the alliance against Philip V. of Spain.....	120
120	The Portuguese and English proclaim the Archduke Charles at Madrid.....	120
1715	Treaty of Utrecht between Spain and Portugal.....	120
120	Cessions to Portugal in South America.....	120
1649	The Commonwealth of England.....	120
1651	Cromwell passes the Navigation Act.....	120
1655—1658	He acquires Dunkirk and Jamaica.....	120
1659	Richard Cromwell resigns the protectorate.....	120
1660	General Monk restores Charles II.....	120
121	Origin of Whig and Tory factions.....	121
1685	Reign of James II. of England.....	121
121	The bishops committed to the Tower.....	121
1688	Birth of the Pretender.....	121
121	William Prince of Orange lands in Torbay.....	121
1689	James II. defeated at the Boyne by William III.....	121
121	The Declaration of Rights.....	121
1701	Succession of the House of Hanover enacted.....	121
1689	Reign of William and Mary.....	121
1702	Accession of Queen Anne.....	121
1711	Reign of George I.....	121
1667	De Ruyster and Van Tromp sail up the Thames to Chatham.....	122
122	Treaty of Hreda.....	122
1674	Treaty of Westminster.....	122
1650	Death of William II. Prince of Orange.....	122
122	John de Witt enacts the Perpetual Edict.....	122
1672	Louis XIV. invades Holland.....	122
122	John and Cornelius de Witt assassinated at the Hague.....	122
1673	William III. of Orange, stadtholder.....	122
1713	The Barrier Treaty.....	122
1656	War of religion in Switzerland between Zurich and Bern in the Prot-stant cause, and St. Gall, &c., on the Catholic side.....	123
1654	Charles X. succeeds Christina of Sweden.....	123
1658	He besieges Copenhagen.....	123
123	The Dutch fleet defeats the Swedes and relieves Copenhagen.....	123

UNIVERSITY OF WINDSOR LIBRARY

A.D.	PAGE
1660	Minority of Charles XI. of Sweden 123
	Peace concluded at Copenhagen 123
	Peace of Oliva 123
1680	Revolution in Sweden effected by Charles XI. against the aristocracy 124
1693	Despotic power entrusted by the Swedish Diet to Charles XI. 124
1697	Accession of Charles XII. 124
1688	Peter the Great 124
1700	Charles XII. gains the battle of Narva 124
1701—1703	He defeats Augustus of Saxony, King of Poland 124
1704	Stanislaus Leszczyński, King of Poland 124
	Charles XII. marches towards Moscow, but diverges to the Ukraine 125
	Mazepa, Hetman of the Cossacs, joins him 125
1708	Peter the Great defeats General Lowenhaupt at Desna 125
1709	Defeat of Charles XII. at Poltawa 125
1718	Charles XII. killed at the siege of Fredericshall, in Norway 125
1719	Treaty of Stockholm between Sweden and George I. of England 125
1721	Peace of Nystadt between Peter I. and Frederic I. King of Sweden 125
	Sweden thereby acquired Finland, and Peter I. acquired Livonia, Esthonia, Ingria, and Carelia 126
1660	Frederic III. of Denmark convokes the States General 126
	The <i>Royal Law</i> becomes the constitution of Denmark 126
1675	Christian V. declares war against Sweden 126
1677	Naval successes of the Danes 127
1679	Peace signed at Lund 127
1648	Reign of John Casimir, King of Poland 127
	The <i>Libertine Veto</i> explained 127
1647	War of the Cossacs and the Poles 127
1645	Reign of Alexis Michaelovitz in Russia 127
1667	Treaty of Andrussov between Russia and Poland 127
1673	John Sobieski defeats the Turks at Choczim 127
	John Sobieski was then elected King of Poland 127
1699	Peace of Carlowitz 128
1676	Reign of Feodor Alexievitz in Russia 128
1685	Peace of Moscow concluded by the Princess Sophia of Russia 128
1688	Peter the Great deposes his sister Sophia 128
	He establishes the marine of Russia 128
1698	He travels to Holland and to England to study ship-building and naval science 128
	He puts the Strelitzes to death 129
	He disciplines the Russian soldiery 129
1703	Peter I. founds the northern capital of St. Petersburg 129
	He constructs the port of Kronschlot 129
1709	He vanquishes Charles XII. at Poltawa 129
1718	Peter puts his son Alexis to death 129
1725	Catherine I. ascends the throne on the death of the Emperor Peter I. 129
1664	The Turks invade Hungary and Germany, and are defeated by Monteceni 129
	Truce of twenty years concluded at Temeswar 129
1671	Hungarian nobles beheaded, and the Protestants persecuted 130
1677	Count Tekeli, leader of the Hungarian malcontents 130
	John Sobieski, King of Poland, saves the city of Vienna 130
1668	Charles of Lorraine, Louis of Baden, and Prince Eugene, defeat the Turks and take Buda 130
1687	The Imperialists defeat the Turks at Mohacz 130
	Mahomet IV. resolves Kara-Mustapha to be strangled, and is himself deposed by the Janissaries 130
	Leopold I. assembles the states at Presburg, which crown his son, Joseph I., as hereditary King of Hungary 130
1689	Louis of Baden gains the victories of Nissa and Widdin 130
	Mustapha Kupruli retakes Nissa, Widdin, and Belgrade 130
1691	Is defeated by Louis of Baden at Salankemen and slain 130
1697	Prince Eugene defeats Mustapha II. near the river Teis 130
1699	Peace of Carlowitz 131
1793	Francis Ragozi, prince of Transylvania, leader of the Hungarian insurrection 131
1645	Sultan Ibrahim attempts to take Candia, or Crete, from the Venetians 131

A.D.	PAGE
1648	Maimont IV. Sultan 131
1669	Achmet Kupruli, after a long siege, takes the city of Candia 131

PERIOD VIII.

From the Peace of Utrecht to the French Revolution. A.D. 1713—1789.

1700—1800	Progress of the sciences and of literature 131
	The modern philosophy 131
	Hobbes, Bolingbroke, Shaftesbury, and Finch 131
	Voltaire, D'Alembert, Diderot, and Helvetius 131
	Deism and infidelity 131
	The Economists 131
	Francis Quesnay, and Victor de Riquetti, Marquis of Mirabeau 131
	The <i>Pré-laud</i> de Montesquieu publishes his <i>Esprit des Loix</i> 131
	The Contrat Social of Jean-Jacques Rousseau 131
	The Illuminati in Germany 131
	Balance of power in Europe 131
	Preponderance of England 131
	State of Russia and of Prussia 131
	The mercantile system of Europe 131
	Colonies of the European powers 131
	Public funds and funded debt 131
	The sinking fund instituted by Mr. Pitt 131
1715	Minority of Louis XV. The regent Duke of Orleans 131
	Philip V., and administration of Cardinal Alberoni in Spain 131
1718	The Spaniards conquer Sardinia and Sicily 131
	The Quadruple Alliance signed at London 131
	Articles of this treaty specified 131
1720	Philip V. exiles Alberoni 131
1721	Peace of Paris 131
	Renunciation of Italy and the Netherlands by Philip V. 131
	The Company of Ostend 131
	Question of the reversion of Tuscany, Parma, and Placentia 131
1725	Treaty of Vienna between the Emperor Charles VI. and Philip V. 131
	The alliance of Hanover between France, England, and Prussia 131
1727	Death of Catherine I. of Russia 131
1729	Cardinal Fleury engages England, Spain, and France to guarantee Parma and Tuscany to Don Carlos 131
1731	Charles VI., on the death of Anthony Farnese, takes possession of the duchy of Parma 131
	Treaty of Vienna, suppressing the Ostend Company, and granting Tuscany, Parma, and Placentia to Don Carlos 131
1715	War between the Turks and Venetians for the possession of the Morea 131
	The Emperor Charles VI., Philip V., and the pope, side with the Venetians 131
1716	Prince Eugene gains the battle of Peterwaradin and takes Temeswar 131
1717	He routs the Turks at Belgrade 131
1718	Peace of Passarowitz 131
1723	Diet of Presburg confirms the accession to females according to the Austrian Pragmatic Sanction 131
1719	Ulrica Eleonora elected Queen of Sweden 131
	The <i>Royal Assurances</i> , limiting the authority of the crown in Sweden 131
1720	Frederic I. of Hesse-Cassel, King of Sweden 131
1731	Stanislaus Leszczyński restored to the throne of Poland 131
1730	Death of Peter II. of Russia, and accession of the Empress Anne 131
	Augustus III., supported by the Empress Anne and the Polish nobles, proclaimed King 131
	Field-Marshal Munich besieges King Stanislaus in Dantzic 131
1733	Louis XV. seizes on Lorraine 131
1734	Marshal Berwick slain at Philippsburg 131
1739	Peace of Vienna 131
1739	The Turks, directed by the Count de Bonneval, defeat the Austrians and lay siege to Belgrade 131
1739	Munich defeats the Turks at Choczim 131
	Peace signed at Belgrade 131
1742	Maria Theresa, Queen of Hungary 131
1742	The Elector of Bavaria elected emperor by the title of Charles VII. 131

Frederic II., King of Prussia 131
He gains the victory of Mollath 131
Peace of Berlin 131
Glatz 131
Affairs of Sardinia 131
—1760 George II. 131
English victory at the battle of Maida 131
Successors of Maria Theresa 131
Louis XV. invades Poland 131
Treaty of union with Great Britain 131
Frederic II. invades Poland 131
Death of the Empress Maria Theresa 131
Frederic II. defeats the Austrians at Mollath 131
He takes Dresden 131
Peace concluded at Hubertusburg 131
Louis XV. and Maria Theresa 131
Cumberland at the battle of Culloden 131
French conquests in Italy 131
Prince Charles Stuart 131
vanes to Derby 131
Duke of Cumberland 131
Ferdinand VI. King of Spain 131
Prince Dorcia expelled from Sicily 131
Blockade of Genoa 131
Louis XV. conquers Sicily 131
Siege of Aix-la-Chapelle 131
Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle 131
Contract of the Association 131
Minority of Ivan the Terrible 131
burg in Russia 131
Biron elected Duke of Courland 131
Elizabeth proclaimed Queen of Great Britain 131
Adolphus Frederic of Sweden 131
Peace of Abo 131
Joseph I. King of Prussia 131
The Jesuits instituted in Prussia 131
War between Portugal and France 131
Lisbon destroyed by the English 131
King Joseph wounds himself 131
the Portuguese in the East 131
The Jesuits banished from Portugal 131
The Jesuits expelled from the East 131
Their goods confiscated 131
Clement XV. suppresses the Society of Jesus 131
Contest of England and France 131
marcation between the English and the French 131
The English capture Newfoundland 131
Treaty of Westminster 131
Frederic II. of Prussia 131
Frederic II. invades Poland 131
League against France 131
The French, under the Duke of Burgundy 131
Minority 131
They occupy Hanover 131
—1761 The English 131
cherry and Marlborough 131
General Wolfe slain at the battle of the Clouds 131
Guadaloupe, Martinique, and the West Indies 131
lish 131
—1761 Events of the year 131
George III. King of Great Britain 131
The <i>Family Compact</i> 131
Duke of Choiseul 131
Peter III. Emperor of Russia 131
He conquers the province of East Prussia 131
Peter III. dethroned 131
Russia 131
A general pacific 131
Paris 131
Articles of the peace 131
or restitutions 131
Commerce of England 131
Consequences of the peace 131
mental Europe 131
Decline of the Ministry 131
Count of Dowry 131
His defects in action 131
Death of Jaffier A 131
Stach Alliance 131
the English 131
Contest with Hydrunt 131

	PAGE
Frederic II. King of Prussia, invades Silesia	141
He gains the victory of Mollwitz	141
Peace of Berlin, by which he acquired Silesia and Glatz	141
Affairs of Sarinina	141
1760 George II. King of England	141
English victory at Dettingen	141
Successes of Maria Theresa	141
Louis XV. invades the Austrian Netherlands	141
Treaty of union with Charles VII. signed at Frank- fort	141
Frederic II. invades Bohemia	141
Death of the Emperor Charles VII.	142
Frederic II. defeats the troops of Augustus III. and Maria Theresa, at Hohenfriedberg	142
He takes Dresden	142
Peace concluded at Drossen	142
Louis XV. and Marshal Saxe defeat the Duke of Cumberland at Fontenoi	142
French conquests in Flanders	142
Prince Charles Stuart lands in Scotland and ad- vances to Derby	142
Duke of Cumberland defeats him at Culloden	142
Ferdinand VI. King of Spain	142
Prince Doria expels the Austrians from Genoa	142
Blockade of Genoa	142
Louis XV. conquers Dutch Flanders	143
Siege of Maastricht	143
Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle	143
Contract of the Assiento	144
Minority of Ivao and regency of Anne of Meeklen- burg in Russia	144
Ilirio created Duke of Courland	144
Factions of the Hats and the Caps in Sweden	144
Elizabeth proclaimed Empress of Russia	144
Adolphus Frederic, bishop of Lubec, elected King of Sweden	144
Peace of Abo	145
Joseph I. King of Portugal	145
The Jesuits institute a republic in Paraguay	145
War between Portugal and Spain	145
Lisbon destroyed by an earthquake	145
King Joseph wounded, and in consequence some of the Portuguese nobles are executed	145
The Jesuits banished from Portugal	145
The Jesuits expelled from France and Spain	145
Their goods confiscated	145
Clement XIV. suppresses their order	146
Contest of England and France respecting the de- marcation between Virginia and Canada, &c.	146
The English capture French merchant vessels off Newfoundland and on the high seas	146
Treaty of Westminster between England and Frede- ric II. of Prussia	146
Frederic II. invades Saxony	146
League against Frederic II.	146
The French, under the Duke of Richelieu, conquer Minorca	146
They occupy Hanover, Brunswick, and Hesse	146
1761 The English take Chaudernagore, Pondi- cherry, and Malé	147
A General Wolfe slain at Quebec, when Canada falls into the hands of the English	147
Guadaloupe, Martinique, Tobago, Dominica, and various West India colonies, taken by the Eng- lish	147
1764 Events of the Seven Years' War	147
George III. King of England	147
The Family Compact concluded at Paris by the Duke of Choiseul	147
Peter III. Emperor of Russia	147
He concludes peace with Frederic II.	147
Peter III. dethroned, Catharine II. Empress of Russia	147
A general pacification signed at Fontenbleau and Paris	147
Articles of the peace of Paris, specifying cessions or restitutions	147
Commerce of England with all parts of the world	148
Consequences of the peace in the policy of Conti- nental Europe	148
Decline of the Mogul Empire in India	148
Sourajah Dowlah, Nombah of Bengal	148
His defeats in action by Lord Clive	148
Death of Jaffer Ali Khan	148
Sirah Alim cedes Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa to the English	148
Contest with Hyder Ali, Rajah of Mysore	148

A.D.	PAGE
1799 Death of Tippoo Saib, and capture of Seringapatam	148
Succession to the crowns of Spain and of the Two Sicilies	148
Convention concluded at Paris on this subject	149
Aggrandizement of the Russian power	149
House of Holstein-Gottorp	149
1765 Catharine II. concludes a treaty with Denmark at Copenhagen	150
Duchy of Holstein-Oldenburg	150
1765 Joseph II. Emperor of Germany	150
1729 The Corsicans rise against their Genoese rulers	150
The Emperor Charles VI. succeeds the Genoese in Corsica	150
1734 Gialferri, general of the Corsicans	150
1736 Theophile, Baron Neuhoff, elected by the Corsicans for their king	150
1738 The French land in Corsica	150
1755 Pascal Paoli, general of the Corsicans	151
1757 Reign of Sultan Mustapha III.	151
1763 The Genoese cede Corsica to Louis XV.	151
The French conquer that island	151
1764 Catharine II. places Stanislaus Poniatowski on the throne of Poland	151
The Dissidents, or Protestants of Poland	151
1768 Treaty of Warsaw	151
Polish confederacy	152
War between Russia and Turkey	152
Catherine overruns Moldavia and Wallachia	152
1770 Romanzow defeats the Turks at the rivers Puth and Kukuli	152
Count Panin carries Bender by assault	152
1770 The Russians burn the Turkish fleet in the bay of Chisme	153
1772 Prince Dolgoroucki conquers the Crimea	153
1771 The plague at Moscow	153
The courts of Vienna and Berlin oppose the am- bitions projects of Catharine II.	153
Congress at Bucharest	153
1774 Aclmet IV., sultan of the Turks	153
He concludes peace with Romanzow at Kainargi near Silistria	153
The Tartars of the Crimea and Cuban declared independent of the Porte	153
1778 Catharine acquires Azoff and Kiburn by this treaty, and founds the city of Chersun	151
Part of Moldavia, and Bukowina, ceded to Austria	151
Russian establishments on the shores of the Black Sea	154
Prince Henry of Prussia proposes to partition Poland	154
1772 Convention signed by Russia, Austria, and Prussia at St. Petersburg for partition of a certain part of Poland	154
Shares confirmed to those powers by the republic of Warsaw	154
The <i>Liberum Veto</i> ratified	155
1771 Gustavus III., King of Sweden	155
Captain Hellichius conspires against the authority of the states of Sweden	155
Gustavus III. carries the revolution of Stockholm into effect	156
New constitutions of the Swedish monarchy	156
A partial revolution takes place at Copenhagen	156
The Zaparoz Cossacs	156
Succession to the Electorate of Bavaria contested on the demise of Maximilian	157
1778 Convention signed at Vienna on this question	157
Frederic II. takes the field on this occasion, and invades Bohemia, but is foiled by Marshal Ludlow	158
1779 Congress held at Teschen in Silesia secures his dominions to the Elector Palatine, Charles Theodore	158
Pacification of Germany	158
1785 The Germanic Confederation	159
Revolt of the English colonies of North America	159
1765 The Stamp Act passed and rescinded	159
1767 Duties on tea, &c. in North America	159
Administration of Lord North	160
1774 Embargo on the port of Boston	160
1774 Congress at Philadelphia	160
1776 Declaration of independence	160
Command conferred on George Washington	160
1776 He surprises the Hessians at Trenton	160
1777 Burgoyne capitulates at Saratoga	160
1778 Treaty of Paris between France and the United States of North America	160
1778 Action between Keppel and Count d'Orvilliers	161

A.D.	PAGE
1780	War between England and the Dutch republic . . . 161
1782	Lord Rodney defeats Count de Grasse . . . 161
	The French take Dominica, Tobago, and other islands . . . 161
	They also possess themselves of Senegal . . . 161
	The Spaniards take Pensacola and Western Florida . . . 161
1780—1782	Siege of Gibraltar . . . 161
	Port Mahon and Fort St. Philip taken by the French and Spaniards . . . 161
	The French take Trincomalee . . . 161
1781	Lord Cornwallis capitulates to Washington, La Fayette, and Rochambeau . . . 161
1783	Peace concluded at Paris and Versailles . . . 161
	Independence of the United States acknowledged by England . . . 161
	The cessations and restitutions . . . 162
	Armed neutrality of the northern powers . . . 162
1780	Manifesto of Catherine II. 162
	The Baltic declared by Denmark to be a shut sea . . . 162
	European states which joined the armed neutrality . . . 162
1778	Catherine II. places Sackem Gueray on the throne of the Crimea . . . 162
1782	Dispute with Turkey respecting the Khan of the Crimea . . . 163
1783	The Empress Catherine seizes on the Crimea and Cuban . . . 163
	Governments of the Taurida and Caucasus . . . 163
	The Dutch blockade the Scheldt . . . 163
1785	The Emperor Joseph II. consents, by the treaty of Fontainebleau, to the closing of the Scheldt . . . 164
	Discontents in the United Provinces . . . 164
	Louis, Duke of Brunswick, governor of the Stadtholder, driven from Holland . . . 164
	Parties, named the <i>Patriots</i> , and the <i>Free Bodies</i> . . . 164
1788	Insurrection at the Hague . . . 161
	William V. Prince of Orange, the stadtholder, retires to Guelders . . . 164
1787	Frederic William II. King of Prussia, sends an army into Holland for protection of his sister the Princess of Orange . . . 164
1788	The stadtholdership declared hereditary in the House of Orange . . . 165
	Factions in the Belgic provinces, and insurrection in Brabant . . . 165
1780	The states of Brabant declare their independence . . . 165
1790	The sovereign congress of the Belgic states . . . 165
	Reign of the Emperor Leopold II. 165
	The Belgic provinces submit to Leopold . . . 166
1787	Catherine II. accompanied by the Emperor Joseph II., of Germany, in a journey to visit the Crimea . . . 166
	M. de Boulgarkoff, Russian ambassador, committed to the Castle of the Seven Towers . . . 166
	Prince Potemkin marches against the Turks . . . 166
1789	Marshal Landohin, with an Imperial army, invests Belgrade . . . 166
1789	Gustavus III. invades Finland, and threatens Cronstadt . . . 166
	The Danes lay siege to Gotenbourg . . . 166
	Gustavus III. defeats the Russian fleet under the Prince of Nassau-Seigen . . . 166
1790	Peace concluded between Sweden and Russia . . . 167
1788	Prince Potemkin takes Oczakoff by assault . . . 167
1789	Suwarow and the Prince of Cobourg defeat the Turks at Fooksani, and likewise on the Rymna . . . 167
	Bender surrendered to the Russians . . . 167
	Marshal Suwarow takes Ismail by assault . . . 167
	Frederic William II., in alliance with England, sends an army against Catherine II. and Leopold II. 167
1791	Leopold II. makes peace with the Porte at Sistowa in Bulgaria, and restores Belgrade . . . 167
	The Empress of Russia continues the war . . . 167
1792	Peace signed at Jassy between Selim III. and the Empress Catherine . . . 167
	Catherine II. founds the city and port of Odessa on the coast of the Black Sea . . . 167

PERIOD IX.

From the Commencement of the French Revolution to the Downfall of Buonaparte. A. D. 1789—1815.

1789	The French Revolution 168
	Primary causes conducing to this important event . . . 169
	Retrospect of the reign of Louis XV. 169

A.D.	PAGE
1774	Reign of Louis XVI. 161
	Administrations of the Comte de Maurepas, of Turgot, and of Malouberbes 161
1789	French finances exhausted at the close of the American war 161
1787	M. de Calonne, minister of finance 161
	Assembly of the Notables 161
	Loans, and deficit of the revenue 161
1788	Cardinal de Brehan's administration 161
	M. Necker's several administrations 161
	Double representation of the <i>Tiers Etat</i> 161
1789	The States General meet at Versailles 161
	Louis XVI. opens the Assembly in person 161
	Customs of the nobles, the clergy, and the deputies 161
	The National Assembly constituted 161
	The Comte de Artois 161
	The Duke of Orleans employs his resources to agitate the public, and promote insurrections 161
	Murquis de La Fayette, commandant of a national guard 161
1789	Destruction of the Bastille 161
	Declaration of the Rights of Man 161
	The ancient provinces divided into eighty-three departments 161
	Emigration of the wealthy class, and the nobility 161
	Leopold XVI. flies, and is arrested at Varennes 161
	The Orleans party 161
	The Moderate party predominant 161
1791	The Constituent Assembly, succeeded by the Legislative Assembly 161
	Leopold II. addresses the sovereigns of Europe in the cause of Louis XVI. 161
	Alliance of Prussia and Austria 161
	The Legislative Assembly composed of inexperienced deputies 161
	Popular society denominated the Jacobins 161
1792	Administration of Dumouriez, Roland, and other republicans 161
	Insurrection of the Faubourgs 161
	The Sections of Paris 161
	Attack on the Tuileries and massacre of the Swiss Guards 161
	The National Convention 161
	Louis XVI. and the royal family imprisoned in the Temple 161
1791	The Duke of Brunswick and General Clairfait take Verdun and Longwy 161
1792	The Republic <i>one and indivisible</i> 161
1793	Trial and execution of Louis XVI. 161
	Proscription of the Girondins 161
	Discredit of the assignats, or paper-money 161
	The Queen, Marie Antoinette, executed 161
	The Duke of Orleans guillotined 161
	The whole kingdom visited with remorseless executions of men, and of women 161
	Era of the Republic adopted 161
	The Christian religion abolished 161
	Royalist insurrection in Brittany 161
1793	Battle of Saumur 161
1793	Toulon admits some English auxiliaries, but is taken by assault 161
	Buonaparte distinguishes himself under General Carteaux in this siege 161
	Lyons taken by the republicans and partly destroyed 161
1792	General Custine takes Mayence 161
	Dumouriez gains a victory at Jemappe, and conquers Belgium 161
1793	vicissitudes of the campaign in Flanders 161
	The Duke of York defeated at Hondscote 161
	General Pichegru obliges the Austrians under Wurmsler to raise the Rhine 161
	The Committee of Public Safety, presided by Robespierre 161
1794	Robespierre and many of the Mountain faction guillotined 161
	Jourdan defeats the Duke of Cobourg at Fleurus 161
	Dugommier and Perignon defeat the armies of Spain 161
1795	General Pichegru conquers the United Provinces 161
	William V., stadtholder, retires to England 161
	Monsieur takes the title of Louis XVIIII. on the death of the Dauphin 161
	Insurrection of the Chouans in Brittany and Normandy 161
	Royalists landing at Quiberon defeated by General Hoche 161
1795	The Executive Directory 161

Royalists of La
The Grand-Huk
Hum II. of Pr
republic
General's Jour
but are not s
General Scherer
in the Genes
Charles IV., of
St. Domingo
Basle
Lord Bridport d
Buonaparte's vic
defeats Genera
He grants a tre
Duke of Parm
Buonaparte and
He enters Milau
Ferdinand IV.,
Genoa, conclu
Buonaparte defe
and oblige
Celebrated retre
Lord Nelson con
Negotiations of
abortive
French armamen
fit in an Invas
Marshal Wurms
Buonaparte sign
Francis II., Em
Genesee territori
public
Peace concluded
Articles of this t
Negotiations at
The Cisalpine re
Tumults at Rom
General Berthie
Rome
The Helvetic rep
Death of Pius VI
The Toulon flee
Buonaparte an
Malta
Buonaparte land
Lari Nelson, a
stroys or takes
Bay of Abonki
Charles Emanue
a convention
public
The second coalit
Paul, Emperor o
Treaties of allian
Disorder of the F
Military conscri
Ferdinand IV.,
French in Rom
General Charpe
blishes a Part
Charles Emanue
Congress of Ras
War between Fr
The Archduke
Steuckach . . .
Suwarow, gener
feats Moreau
General Macdon
Suwarow defend
the action . . .
The Archduke
zerland, and r
Suwarow crosse
The Turkish an
other islands .
The Duke of Ye
Helzer
He returns hom
General Brun
The English lat
Buonaparte, in
raise the siege
A Turkish arm
totally routed
He lands at Fre
Discontents aga

	PAGE
Royallists of La Vendée overpowered	177
The Grand-Duke of Tuscany, and Frederic William II. of Prussia, make peace with the French republic	177
Generals Jourdan and Kleber cross the Rhine, but are not successful	177
General Scherer defeats General de Vinsat Lovano in the Genoese territory	177
Charles IV., of Spain, cedes the Spanish part of St. Domingo to the French, by the treaty of Basle	177
Lord Bridport defeats a French fleet off L'Orient	177
Buonaparte's victorious career in Italy, where he defeats Generals Beaulieu and Colla	177
He grants a truce to the King of Sardinia and the Duke of Parma	177
Buonaparte and Augereau force the bridge of Lodi	177
He enters Milan	177
Ferdinand IV., of Naples, and the republic of Genoa, conclude peace with France	178
Buonaparte defeats Alvincz at Arcola	178
The Archduke Charles defeats General Jourdan, and obliges him to recross the Rhine	178
Celebrated retreat of General Moreau	178
Lord Nelson evacuates Corsica	178
Negotiations at Lord Malborough at Lille prove abortive	178
French armament under General Hoche unsuccessful in an invasion of Ireland	178
Marshal Wurmsers surrenders Mantua	178
Buonaparte signs preliminaries at Leoben with Francis II., Emperor of Germany	178
Genese territories constituted into a Ligurian republic	178
Peace concluded at Campo Formio	179
Articles of this treaty	179
Negotiations at Rastadt	179
The Cisalpine republic	179
Tumults at Rome	179
General Berthier establishes a republic at Rome	179
The Helvetic republic subservient to France	179
Death of Pius VI. at Valence	179
The Toulon fleet under Admiral Brueys, with Buonaparte and a French army, sail and take Malta	180
Buonaparte lands his troops in Egypt	180
Lord Nelson, after an ineffectual pursuit, destroys or takes the Toulon fleet in the Nile, or Bay of Aboukir	180
Charles Emanuel IV., King of Sardinia, concludes a convention at Milan with the French republic	180
The second coalition against France	180
Paul, Emperor of Russia	180
Treaties of alliance enumerated	180
Disorder of the French finances	180
Military conscription in France	180
Ferdinand IV., of the Two Sicilies, attacks the French in Rome	180
General Championnet takes Naples, and establishes a Parthenopean republic	180
Charles Emanuel IV. retires to Sardinia	181
Congress of Rastadt dissolved	181
War between Francis II. and the French	181
The Archduke Charles defeats Jourdan at Stockach	181
Sawwar, generalissimo of the allies in Italy, defeats Moreau at Cassano	181
General Macdonald effects a junction with Moreau	181
Sawwar defeats Joubert at Novi, who is slain in the action	181
The Archduke Charles attacks Massena in Switzerland, and marches towards the Rhine	181
Sawwar crosses the Alps	181
The Turkish and Russian fleets take Corfu and other islands	182
The Duke of York conducts an expedition to the Helles	182
He returns home, according to a capitulation with General Brune	182
The English take Surinam from the Dutch	182
Buonaparte, having conquered Egypt, is obliged to raise the siege of Acre	182
A Turkish army landed at Aboukir, and was totally routed by Buonaparte	182
He lands at Frejus in Provence	182
Discontents against the Directory	182

A. D.	PAGE
1799	Counts de Frutic, d'Antichamp, and de Hourmont, head an insurrection of the Chouans
	The Directory overthrown by Buonaparte and his brother Lucien
	A new constitution promulgated
	Buonaparte, Canton-eres, and Le Brun, consults of the republic
	Pacification of the West of France
	Mr. Pitt's subsidies to the continental allies of England
1800	In Italy, General Melas defeats Massena at Voltri
	Buonaparte crosses the Alps, and takes Milan
1800	He defeats Melas in the battle of Marengo, where General Desaix is slain
	General Moreau defeats General Kray, and enters Munich
	Francis II. refuses to ratify the preliminaries signed at Paris
	Armistice and truces agreed on in Germany and Italy
1800	Peace of Lunéville
	The English compel General Vaubois to surrender Malta
	Convention of El-Arish
1801	General Kleber assassinated in Egypt
1801	Sir Ralph Abercromby lands at Aboukir and defeats General Menou at Bahmatich near Alexandria
	Death of Abercromby
	The French capitulate to General Hutchinson at Alexandria
1801	Alexander, Emperor of Russia
1802	Peace of Amiens
	Stipulation for surrendering Malta to the Knights of St. John
	The principle of free commerce not alluded to in the Treaty
	Retrospect of the affairs of Spain
1783	Character of Charles V.
	Don Manuel Godoy, Prince of the Peace
1797	Sir John Jervis defeats Admiral Cordova off Cape St. Vincent
1793	The English take Trinidad and Minorca
1800	Spain surrendered Louisiana and eventually Parma to the French, by the treaty of St. Idefonso
	The Grand-Duchy of Tuscany promised, in consequence, to the Infant of Parma
1801	Treaty of Madrid signed by Lucien Buonaparte
1785	Administration of the Right Hon. William Pitt
	Eloquence of Mr. Edmund Burke
	Suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act
1793	Alien Bill
1796	A French fleet sails to Bantry Bay
	England subsidizes the continental powers, and excites the coalitions against the French republic
1798	Insurrection in Ireland
1800	The Union between Great Britain and Ireland
	Right of search
	Armed Neutrality
1801	Sir Hyde Parker and Lord Nelson attack the Danish fleet at Copenhagen
	Hanover occupied by the King of Prussia
1795	The Batavian Republic established
1797	Admiral Lord Duncan defeats De Winter in the action off Camperdown
	Treaties of peace and alliance
	Overthrow of the Helvetic confederacy
1802	State of Italy at the peace of Amiens
1773	Victor Amadeus III., King of Sardinia
1796	Charles Emanuel IV., King of Sardinia
1797	The Cisalpine republic
	Republic of Genoa democratic
1801	Prince of Parma proclaimed King of Etruria
1791	Pius VI., protests against the French uniting Avignon to the Venaisian
1796	He equips an army under General Colla
1797	Peace of Tolentino with Pius VI.
1798	General Duphot killed in an insurrection at Rome
	A republic proclaimed in Rome
1799	Pius VI. made prisoner, and dies at Valence
	Pictures and statues removed from Rome, &c. to the Louvre
	Admiral La Touche obliges Ferdinand IV. to recognize the French republic
1800	Republic of the Seven Islands, or Ionian Islands
1795	Neutrality of the North of Germany recognized by the Convention of Basle
1796	Frederic William II. of Prussia remains neutral

UNIVERSITY OF WINDSOR

A.D.	PAGE	
1796	Doctrines of the French revolution invade the German people	189
1798	Confederation of Warsaw	189
1791	King Stanislaus Augustus sanctions a new constitution in Poland	189
	That throne declared hereditary in the House of Saxony	189
	Absurdity of the Libereum Veto	189
1792	Catherine II. sends an army into Poland	189
	The Poles take up arms	189
1793	Convention of St. Petersburg, between Russia and Prussia	190
	New dismemberment of Poland	190
	Extent of the portion seized by Catherine II.	190
	Prussian acquisitions	190
	Treaty between Russia and Poland as then constituted	190
1794	Secret association of Warsaw elects Thaddeus Kosciuszko general of the insurrection	190
	Revolt of the City of Warsaw	190
1794	Suwarow defeats Kosciuszko at Mactelwitz	191
	He enters Praga, the great suburb of Warsaw, by assault	191
	King Stanislaus Augustus retires to Grodno, where he abdicates	191
	Final partition of Poland	192
1796	Death of Catherine II.	192
1801	Murder of the Emperor Paul	192
	The Emperor Alexander of Russia abandons the claim for a free trade by neutral vessels	192
1792	Assassination of Gustavus III. of Sweden	193
1766	Telign of Christian VII. in Denmark	193

PERIOD IX, continued.

<i>The military preponderance of France under the sway of Napoleon Buonaparte, A.D. 1802-1810.</i>		
1802	Buonaparte declared, at Lyons, President of the French or Cisalpine republic	193
1801	French concordat with Pope Pius VII.	194
	Restoration of the Catholic Bishops	194
	Insultation of the Legion of Honour	194
1802	General Le Clerc's expedition to St. Domingo, Buonaparte chosen Consul for ten years, and also for life	194
	General Ney enters Switzerland	195
1803	New constitution of Switzerland, or the Act of Mediation	195
	The recess of the Deputation of Brunswick	195
	Declaration of war between England and the French republic	195
	Residence of Mr. Jefferson in the United States	195
	Those States purchase Louisiana of the French	195
	Affairs of the Batavian republic	195
1804	Charles IV. of Spain unwillingly joins in the war against England	196
1803-1804	The Army of England collected near Boulogne for the threatened invasion	196
	Demerara and Essequibo taken by the English from Holland	196
	England conquers various islands and colonies from her enemies	196
1804	Conspiracy of General Pichegru	196
	Expatriation of the celebrated General Moreau, who visits America	196
1804	Military execution of the Duke d'Enghien, son of the Duke de Bourbon	196
1801	Napoleon Buonaparte, Emperor of the French	197
	Pius VII. assists at his coronation in Notre Dame	197
	Alexander of Russia demands that Napoleon should cede Hanover, and indemnify Sardinia	197
	Coalition of Russia, Prussia, and Austria against the French Emperor	197
	The English take Sumatra	197
	French spoliations of the Italian states	197
	Mr. Pitt again appointed Prime Minister	197
	Various treaties which led to the coalition against France	198
	Coalition of Boulogne broken up, and an invasion of England	198
1805	The Archduke Charles enters Italy, and the Archduke John in the Tyrol	198
	Actors of Bavaria, Wurttemberg and Baden, quit the cause of the allies	198
1805	Defeat of General Mack, who capitulates in Ulm to Napoleon	198
	The French emperor enters Vienna	199

1805	Battle of Austerlitz	199
	Peace of Presburg	199
	Part of Italy, Venice, Dalmatia, and Albania ceded to Napoleon	199
	Austria cedes the Tyrol to the Elector of Bavaria	199
	The Emperor Alexander repairs to Berlin	199
1806	By a treaty signed at Vienna, Frederic William III. of Prussia acquires possession of Hanover	199
	Battle of Trafalgar, and death of Admiral Lord Nelson	199
	Ferdinand IV. embarks for Sicily	199
1806	Joseph Buonaparte created King of Naples	199
	Eugene Beauharnais, Viceroy of Italy, and declares next in succession to that throne	199
	Arrangement of several Italian duchies	199
	Murat created Grand Duke of Berg and Cleves	199
	Berndotte made Prince of Pontecorvo	199
	Herthier created Prince of Neuchâtel	199
	The French enter Frankfort and levy a contribution	199
1805	Death of Mr. Pitt, also of Mr. Fox in 1806, who had joined Lord Grenville's administration	199
1806	Lord Lauderdale negotiates for peace but returns without success	199
	Treaty signed at Paris between the Emperor Alexander and Napoleon	199
	The Confederation of the Rhine	199
	Maximilian Joseph, King of Bavaria	199
	Kingdom of Wurttemberg established	199
	Declaration of the Emperor Francis II. who restores the empire, and becomes Francis I. of Austria	199
	Louis Buonaparte, King of Holland	199
	Frederic William III. sends his ultimatum to Paris	199
1806	Prince Hohenzollern totally defeated by Napoleon at Jena	199
	Duke of Brunswick, defeated by Marshal Davout at Amersdorf, dies of his wounds	199
	General Blücher surrenders at Lubeck	199
	Capitulation of Magdeburg	199
	Frederic Augustus, King of Saxony	199
	General Hennigsen with the Russian army arrives in Prussia	199
1806	Battle of Polusk	199
	The English claim a right of blockade	199
	Napoleon publishes the Berlin Decree, forbidding English merchandise on the continent	199
1807	Battle of Prussian Eylau	199
	Negotiations for peace, infructuous	199
	Convention of Barenstein preparatory of a new coalition	199
1807	Siege of Dantzic	199
1807	Battle of Friedland	199
	Napoleon enters Königsberg	199
1807	Armistice concluded at Tilsit between France, Russia, and Prussia	199
	Interview of the Emperors Alexander and Napoleon, on a raft in the Niemen	199
	Spoilation of part of the Prussian dominions	199
	Convention of Königsberg	199
	Wars of Gustavus Adolphus IV. of Sweden	199
	The King of Saxony put in possession of the Duchy of Warsaw	199
	Jerome Buonaparte, King of Westphalia, has Brunswick and Hesse, part of Hanover, &c. given him for his kingdom	199
1806	Affairs of Spain	199
	Crimes of Fontenaybleau	199
1807	March of the English into Spain	199
	Reign of terror in Spanish France	199
	John I. King of Portugal, with his family sails to the Janeiro	199
	Confiscation of English merchandise in the Hanseatic cities	199
	English Orders in Council, regulating a blockade of hostile ports	199
	The decree of Milan	199
1808	Napoleon establishes the Continental System, against British trade	199
	Pius VII. refuses to accede to it	199
	General Miollis thereupon enters Rome	199
	Napoleon creates a new French nobility	199
1808	Insurrection in Madrid against Godoy	199
	Abdication of Charles IV.	199
	Ferdinand VII. King of Spain	199
	The French under Murat enter Madrid	199
	Charles IV. cedes his dominions to Napoleon, at Bayonne	199

Ferdinand VII., no consent to that	199
Valençay	199
Massacre by Mur Joseph Buonaparte	199
at, or Joachim	199
general insurrec	199
tion of Alexan	199
Convention of the Francis, Emperor	199
welt or militia	199
Francis appeals to	199
varla, Saxony	199
against him	199
Amount and chief	199
The Emperor Fra	199
Napoleon beats G	199
He defeats the Ar	199
at Hatisbon	199
Napoleon enters	199
Battles of Elbers	199
Napoleon in dan	199
Barbarie, of beh	199
mona	199
Beauharnais effect	199
The Archduke	199
attacks Prussia	199
Death of Wagram	199
Insurrection of the Expedition of the An	199
armistice conc	199
The Earl of Chas	199
take the island	199
They take Flusbi	199
The English ar	199
by Marshal Ber	199
Peace of Schen	199
Francis and Nap	199
The Hlyrian provi	199
Empire	199
Napoleon seizes	199
Pope Pius VII. de	199
Naval victories of	199
Colonies of Cayen	199
The Spaniards exp	199
1810 Napoleon c	199
and espouses M	199
Abdication of Lou	199
Napoleon annexes	199
Guadaloupe, the	199
taken by the Ge	199
The Continental	199
Tyranny	199
Insurrection at O	199
Sir Arthur Welles	199
Russian fleet in	199
Charles Cotton	199
Marshal Junot's	199
conveyed in Eng	199
Marshal Soult tak	199
the Portuguese	199
Sir Arthur Welles	199
retires into Gali	199
General Beresford	199
Buenos Ayres	199
General Auchmut	199
General Whiteoak	199
take Buenos Ay	199
The Junta of Sevi	199
VII.	199
General Dupont's	199
Death of Sir John	199
Defence of Sarag	199
Lord Wellington	199
Talavera	199
Soult overruns Ar	199
Junot takes Cádiz	199
Wellington maint	199
against Marshs	199
English commere	199
of French, Spain	199
Abolition of the S	199
Condition of Holl	199
Affairs of Switzer	199
Political condition	199
Abdication of the	199
Emperor of Aus	199
Confederation of	199

A.D.	PAGE	A.D.	PAGE
1812	Napoleon returns to Paris, leaving his army under the conduct of his marshals	1814	He retires to Germany
	General Yorke and the Prussian troops capitulate to the Russians		Reign of Louis XVIII. King of France
1812	Pius VII. at Fontenelle signs a concordat		He grants a Charter to his people
1813	Treaty of Kalisch, between Alexander and Frederick William III.	1814	Cessions and restitutions of colonies, on the conclusion of general peace at Paris
	Kutsoff's proclamation from Kalisch for the Dissolution of the Rhenish Confederation	1814	The Emperor of Russia, King of Prussia, Prince Metternich, Prince Blücher, Platoff, and other generals, visit the Prince Regent in London.
1813	King Murat retires to Naples		Articles of the Peace of Paris
	Forces of the belligerents preparatory to the campaign of 1813.		King of Saxony loses a portion of his dominions.
	Napoleon takes the command in person		Treaty for the abolition of negro slavery
	Battle of Gross-Gerschen or Lützen	1814	Buonaparte lands in Provence
	Battle of Bautzen		His adventures and successful march on Paris
1813	Convention signed at Dresden, under the mediation of the Emperor Francis		Louis XVIII. retires to Ghent
	Francis declares war against the French.		The Additional Act to the Constitution of the Empire
	Treaties signed antecedent to the sixth coalition of the allied sovereigns	1815	The Champ de Mai, held at Paris
	Armies of the Allies enumerated		The Allies prepare to fulfil the treaty of Chaumont
	Strength of Napoleon's army		Murat declares for Buonaparte
	Battle of Gross-Beeren		He is defeated at Tolentino
1813	Battle of Dresden	1815	Ferdinand IV. restored in Naples
	Fall of General Moreau		The Act of the Germanic Confederation
	Vandamme, defeated in the Battle of Calm, surrenders to Barclay de Tolly and Marshal Millobrodskich		The Act of Congress signed
	Ney routed by Bernadotte		The armies of the allies approach France
1813	Battle of Leipzig gained by Blücher, Bentinck, and the Prince Royal of Sweden		Numerical strength of Buonaparte's army
	Flight of Napoleon to Mayence	June	He crosses the Sambre, and defeats Blücher at Liézy, who retires in good order
	King of Bavaria joins the allies		The Duke of Wellington defeats Buonaparte at Waterloo
	Marshal Davoust attacked in Hamburg by the Prince Royal		Prince Blücher and Bülow assist in that final victory
1814	Frederic VI. of Denmark joins the allies		Buonaparte flies to Paris
	Peace at length concluded between Denmark and England		His abdication
1813	Wellington defeats Marshal Jourdan at Vittoria		He surrenders to Captain Maitland, R.N.
	The electors of Hanover and Hesse recover those dominions, and other political arrangements take place throughout Germany		Is banished to St. Helena, where he dies 5th May, 1821
	Forces of the contending parties, before the campaign of 1814.		Wellington and Blücher march in triumph to Paris
1813—1814	The allies enter France		Capitulation of that capital
1814	Napoleon defeated by Blücher at Rothière		Louis XVIII. is restored to the throne of France
	Blücher, surrounded by trench, loses 6000 men at Etoges		Military execution of Marshal Ney and Colonel Lubezky
	Events and vicissitudes of the war in France		Indemnity paid by France
1814	Napoleon defeated at Laon		Agreement entered into for the abolition of the slave trade
	Congress of Châtillon for a peace	1815	The Holy Alliance signed at Vienna
	The Quadruple Alliance signed at Chaumont, March 1.		The Cortes of Spain
	Marmont and Mortier driven from Montmartre and Belleville		Retrospect of the political affairs of Europe
1814	The allied sovereigns enter Paris	1810	Mental affliction of George III.
	Count d'Artois, Lieutenant-General of the kingdom	1811	George, Prince Regent
1814	Napoleon abdicates in favour of the King of Rome	1812	War between the United States and England
	The sovereignty of Elba secured to him, to which island he is conducted by commissioners		Cape of Good Hope, Essequibo, Berbee, and Demerara ceded to England
	Wellington defeats Soult at Orthes		Recapitulation of treaties, &c.
	The Battle of Toulouse		The Ionian Islands placed under the protection of Great Britain
	Conduct of Joachim Murat, King of Naples, in Italy, at this crisis of political affairs	1815	Military execution of Murat on landing in the kingdom of Naples
1814	Engene Beauharnais's action with Field Marshal Bellegarde		Settlement of the states of Germany
			Norway acquired by Sweden
			War between Russia and Turkey favourable to the former power
			Russian acquisitions in the Turkish provinces, in Persia, and in Poland
			State of the Ottoman Empire
			HISTORICAL AND EXPLANATORY NOTES

History has very particular branch examples, how men in all situations of such is the infirmity of mind, that abstracting the impression on itself or obscure,—it is confirmed by evidence from history own experience times, that we learn we have imbibed from our own experience, often tends in general to subvert or destroy what happened before always a child; for we do not combine principles of past ages? There are certain things which hold true in all ages, and consist with the intellect and digest of history, who may, in a system, both on the combined judgment by universal advantages that we are preferable to the persistence; for not only from this kind number of objects, some of others, from personal experience.

"We may learn from our own mistakes. The knowledge (historian) which we undoubtedly have learned from the past, in as much as it is not pain, or danger, or loss, has also the advantage of being more accurate, and more derived from individual experience, it belongs to the characters and actions of either misadventured by their own

V I E W

OF THE

REVOLUTIONS OF EUROPE.

INTRODUCTION.

HISTORY has very properly been considered as that particular branch of philosophy, which teaches, by examples, how men ought to conduct themselves in all situations of life, both public and private. Such is the infirmity and incapacity of the human mind, that abstract or general ideas make no lasting impression on it; and often appear to us doubtful or obscure,—at least if they be not illustrated and confirmed by experience and observation.

It is from history alone, which superadds to our own experience that of other men and of other times, that we learn to conquer the prejudices which we have imbibed from education, and which our own experience, often as contracted as our education, tends in general rather to strengthen than to subvert or destroy. “Not to know (says Cicero) what happened before we were born, is to remain always a child; for what were the life of man, did we not combine present events with the recollection of past ages?”

There are certain principles or rules of conduct that hold true in all cases; because they accord and consist with the invariable nature of things. To collect and digest these, belongs to the student of history, who may, in this way, easily form to himself a system, both of morals and of politics, founded on the combined judgment of all ages, and confirmed by universal experience. Moreover, the advantages that we reap from the study of history are preferable to those we acquire by our own experience; for not only does the knowledge we derive from this kind of study embrace a greater number of objects, but it is purchased at the expense of others, while the attainments we make from personal experience often cost us extremely dear.

“We may learn wisdom, (says Polybius) either from our own misfortunes, or the misfortunes of others. The knowledge (adds that celebrated historian) which we acquire at our own expense is undoubtedly the most efficacious; but that which we learn from the misfortunes of others is the less, in as much as we receive instruction without pain, or danger to ourselves.” This knowledge has also the advantage of being in general more accurate, and more complete than that which we derive from individual experience. To history it belongs to judge with impartiality of public characters and political measures, which are often either misunderstood or not properly appreciated by their contemporaries; and while men

individually, and from their own observation, can see great events as it were, but in part, history embraces the whole in all its various details. Thus, for example, we can see but imperfectly all the bearings of that mighty revolution which is now (1793) passing before our eyes; and it will remain for posterity to perceive all its influence and effects, and to judge of its different actors without feelings of irritation or party spirit.

It is a fact universally admitted, that all ranks and professions of men and in history appropriate instruction, and rules of conduct suited to their respective conditions. In occupying the mind agreeably with such a vast diversity of subjects, it serves to form the judgment, to inspire us with the ambition of glory, and the love of virtue. Those especially who devote themselves to the study of politics, or who are destined to the management of public affairs, will discover in history the structure and constitution of governments, their faults, and their advantages, their strength and their weakness; they will find there the origin and progress of empires, the principles that have raised them to greatness, and the causes which have prepared their fall. The philosopher, and the man of letters, will there trace the progress of the human mind, the errors and illusions that have led it astray; the connexion of causes and effects; the origin of arts and sciences, their changes, and their influence on society; as well as the innumerable evils that have sprung from ignorance, superstition, and tyranny.

History, in short, avails more than all precepts to cure us of those mistakes originating in self-love, and national partiality. He who knows no other country than his own, easily persuades himself that the government, manners, and opinions of the little corner of the earth which he inhabits, are the only ones consistent with reason and propriety. Self-love, so natural to man, cherishes this prejudice, and makes him disdain all other nations. It is only by an extensive acquaintance with history, and by familiarizing ourselves with the institutions, customs, and habits of different ages, and of different countries, that we learn to esteem wisdom and virtue, and to acknowledge talents wherever they exist. Besides, when we observe, that, though revolutions are continually changing the face of kingdoms, nothing essentially new ever happens in the world, we cease to be longer the slaves of that extravagant admiration, and that

credulous astonishment which is generally the characteristic of ignorance, or the mark of a feeble mind.

The most important attribute of history is truth, and in order to find this out, it is necessary to examine the materials which serve as the elements and evidences of history, by the test of sound criticism. These materials are of two kinds: 1. *Public Acts and Records*, such as medals, inscriptions, treaties, charters, official papers; and in general, all writings drawn up or published by the established authorities. 2. *Private writers*, viz. authors of histories, of chronicles, memoirs, letters, &c. These writers are either contemporary, or such as live remote from the times of which they write.

Public acts and official records are the strongest evidences we can possibly have of historical truth; but as, in different ages, there have been fabricators of pretended acts and writings, it becomes necessary, before making use of any public document, to be assured that it is neither spurious nor falsified. The art of judging of ancient charters or diplomas, and discriminating the true from the false, is called *Diplomatics*; in the same way as we give the name of *Numismatics* to the art of distinguishing real medals from counterfeit. Both of these sciences are necessary ingredients in the criticism of history.

It will not be out of place to subjoin here some rules that may serve as guides in the proper selection of historical documents. 1. The authority of any chartulary or public act is preferable to that of a private writer, even though he were contemporary. These public registers it is always necessary to consult if possible, before having recourse to the authority of private writers; and a history that is not supported by such public vouchers must in consequence be very imperfect. 2. When public acts are found to accord with the testimony of contemporary authors, there results a complete and decisive proof, the most satisfactory that can be desired, for establishing the truth of historical facts. 3. The testimony of a contemporary author ought generally to be preferred to that of an historian, who has written long after the period in which the events have happened. 4. Whenever contemporary writers are defective, great caution must be used with regard to the statements of more modern historians, whose narratives are often very inaccurate, or altogether fabulous. 5. The unanimous silence of contemporary authors on any memorable event is of itself a strong presumption for suspecting, or even for entirely rejecting, the testimony of very recent writers. 6. Historians who narrate events that have happened anterior to the times in which they lived, do not, properly speaking, deserve credit, except in so far as they make us acquainted with the sources whence they have drawn their information. 7. In order to judge of the respective merits of historians, and the preference we ought to give some beyond others, it is necessary to examine the spirit and character of each, as well as the circumstances in which they are placed at the time of writing. Hence it follows—That we ought to distrust an historian who is deficient in critical discernment, who is fond of fables, or who scruples not, in order to please and amuse his readers, to alter or disguise the truth; That as impartiality is an essential quality

in an historian, we must always be on our guard against writers who allow their minds to be warped by the prejudices of their nation, their party or their profession; for, in order to be impartial the historian must form his judgment on acts themselves, without regard to the actors; That historians who have had a personal concern in transactions, or been eye-witnesses of the events they describe, or who, writing by the permission or authority of government, have had free access to national archives and public libraries, ought always to be preferred to those who have not enjoyed the same advantages: That among modern historians he who has written last often deserves more confidence than those who have handled the subject before him; inasmuch as he has had in his power to obtain more exact information, to avoid all party spirit, and rectify the errors of predecessors.

There are several auxiliary sciences which may be said to constitute the very foundation of history; and among these, geography, genealogy, and chronology, hold the first rank. In truth, no fact can be fully established, nor can any narrative possess interest, unless the circumstances related to the times and places in which the events have happened, as well as to the persons who have been concerned in them, be previously made known, and distinctly explained. It is obvious, therefore, that geography, genealogy, and chronology, are a series of the most faithful interpreters and inseparable companions of the principal study of history.

Geography may be divided into the mathematical, the physical, and the political; accordingly, we must consider the different objects which it embraces. Mathematical geography regards the earth, considered as a measurable body. Physical geography has for its object to examine the natural or physical structure of the earth; while political geography illustrates the different divisions of the earth which men have invented, such as kingdoms, states, and provinces. This science is also divided, relatively to the time of which it treats, into ancient, middle-age, and modern geography. Ancient geography is that which explains the primitive state of the world and its political divisions prior to the subservience of the Roman Empire in the west. By the geography of the middle ages, is understood that which acquaints us with the political state of the nations who figured in history from the fifth century to the end of the sixteenth, or the beginning of the seventeenth. Modern geography represents to us the state of the world and its political divisions, from the sixteenth century to the present time.

Antiquity has handed down to us the names of several very eminent geographers, the most celebrated of whom are Strabo, Ptolemy, Pomponius Mela, Pausanias, and Stephanus of Byzantium. Among the moderns who have laboured in the department of geography, those more particularly deserving of notice, are Cuvier, Cellarius, D'Anville, Gosselein, Mannert, and Ukert.

The geography of the middle ages is but a kind of desert which remains yet a sort of desert which demands cultivation. There does not exist a geographical work which gives a correct representation of that new order of things, which the man nations introduced into Europe after the downfall of the Roman Empire in the fifth century. The literati of France and Germany have the

scope rays of light regions; but no having thorough Of modern aut the restorer of g Munster, a Germ work on cosmog sixteenth century have been among graphy since the Gerard Mercator Fischer, are well works which they Among the num graphers are to Casini, D'Anvill Bouche, Montell Bern, &c. Deli geography to the nation. Busch geography, which tory; and among these, geography, genealogy, and chronology, hold the first rank. In truth, no fact can be fully established, nor can any narrative possess interest, unless the circumstances related to the times and places in which the events have happened, as well as to the persons who have been concerned in them, be previously made known, and distinctly explained. It is obvious, therefore, that geography, genealogy, and chronology, are a series of the most faithful interpreters and inseparable companions of the principal study of history. Geography may be divided into the mathematical, the physical, and the political; accordingly, we must consider the different objects which it embraces. Mathematical geography regards the earth, considered as a measurable body. Physical geography has for its object to examine the natural or physical structure of the earth; while political geography illustrates the different divisions of the earth which men have invented, such as kingdoms, states, and provinces. This science is also divided, relatively to the time of which it treats, into ancient, middle-age, and modern geography. Ancient geography is that which explains the primitive state of the world and its political divisions prior to the subservience of the Roman Empire in the west. By the geography of the middle ages, is understood that which acquaints us with the political state of the nations who figured in history from the fifth century to the end of the sixteenth, or the beginning of the seventeenth. Modern geography represents to us the state of the world and its political divisions, from the sixteenth century to the present time. Antiquity has handed down to us the names of several very eminent geographers, the most celebrated of whom are Strabo, Ptolemy, Pomponius Mela, Pausanias, and Stephanus of Byzantium. Among the moderns who have laboured in the department of geography, those more particularly deserving of notice, are Cuvier, Cellarius, D'Anville, Gosselein, Mannert, and Ukert. The geography of the middle ages is but a kind of desert which remains yet a sort of desert which demands cultivation. There does not exist a geographical work which gives a correct representation of that new order of things, which the man nations introduced into Europe after the downfall of the Roman Empire in the fifth century. The literati of France and Germany have the

be on our minds to be warped, their part to be impartial judgment on the actors: the national concern of the events, the permission had free access, ought not to have not enjoyed modern historians reserves more of the scene, as he had it, to correct information, to rectify the errors of sciences which the foundation of geography, general rank. In truth, in any narrative, circumstances relating to the events have persons who have been made known, are therefore, chronology, are a valuable companion into the mathematical; according to the embraces. More charts and plans of the countries that had geography has been connected with geography is the science of or physical structure, or the study of the constitution and political economy of states. Two Italians, Sansovino and Botero, about the end of the sixteenth century, were the first that attempted to treat this as a particular science, separate and distinct from geography. The Germans followed nearly in the steps of the Italian writers; they introduced the statistics into their Universities as a branch of geography, and gave it also the name by which it is known.² It was chiefly, however, during the eighteenth century that the government of Europe encouraged the study of this new science, which borrows its illustrations from history, and constitutes at present an essential branch of national polity.

Some rays of light on certain parts of these obscure regions; but no nation in Europe can yet boast of having thoroughly explored them. Of modern authors, too, the most conspicuous as the restorer of geographical science, is Sebastian Münster, a German, who published a voluminous work on cosmography, towards the middle of the sixteenth century. The Flemings and the Dutch have been among the earliest cultivators of geography since the revival of letters. Ortelius, Gerard Mercator, Varenius, Janson, Blau, and Fischer, are well known by the maps and learned works which they have produced. Among the number of celebrated French geographers are to be reckoned Sanson, Delisle, Cassini, D'Anville; and more recently Zannoni, Bouché, Mentelle, Barbié du Bocage, Malte-Brun, &c. Delisle is the first who submitted geography to the touchstone of astronomical observation. Busehing, a German, wrote a work on geography, which has been translated into several languages, and has received various additions and improvements, especially in the hands of the French translators. M. Ritter, a professor at Berlin, published a work in which he gives a new scientific form to geography. It was during the latter half of the eighteenth century that the attention of the learned was turned more particularly towards geography, when a series of the most elegant maps appeared in all the principal states of Europe. The wars that sprang from the revolution encouraged several engineers and geographers, both foreigners and Frenchmen, to publish those masterpieces of their art. More charts and plans of the countries that had been considered as the theatre of hostilities, were connected with geography is the science of or physical structure, or the study of the constitution and political economy of states. Two Italians, Sansovino and Botero, about the end of the sixteenth century, were the first that attempted to treat this as a particular science, separate and distinct from geography. The Germans followed nearly in the steps of the Italian writers; they introduced the statistics into their Universities as a branch of geography, and gave it also the name by which it is known.² It was chiefly, however, during the eighteenth century that the government of Europe encouraged the study of this new science, which borrows its illustrations from history, and constitutes at present an essential branch of national polity.

abilities from fables and conjectures. Few families who have occupied the thrones of former dynasties, or who now hold pre-eminent rank in Europe, can trace their genealogy beyond the twelfth century. The House of Capet is the only one that can boast of a pedigree that reaches back to the middle of the ninth century. The origin of the royal families of Savoy, Lorraine, Brunswick, England, and Baden, belongs to the eleventh century; all the others are of a date posterior to these. A single fact in diplomatics has proved sufficient to discredit a multitude of errors and fables, that tradition had engrained on the legends of the dark ages. From the examinations that have been made of ancient charters and records, there is abundant evidence that, prior to the twelfth century, among families even the most illustrious, the distinction of surnames was unknown. The greatest noblemen, and the presumption is much stronger that common gentlemen, never used any other signature than their baptismal name; to which they sometimes annexed that of the dignity or order with which they were invested. There was therefore little chance of distinguishing families from each other, and still less of distinguishing individuals of one and the same family. It was only towards the end of the eleventh century, and during the era of the crusades, that the use of family names was gradually introduced; and that they began, in their public transactions, to superadd to their baptismal and honorary names, that of the country or territory they possessed, or the castle where they had their residence; and it must have required nearly two hundred years before this practice became general in Europe. The Germans were the first, after the Reformation, who combined the study of genealogy with that of history. Among their most distinguished genealogists may be mentioned Reinerus Reineccius, Jerome Henninges, Elias Reusnerus, Nicolas Rittershusiers, James-William Imhof, and the two Gebhards of Lameburg, father and son. The work of Henninges is much sought after, on account of its rarity; but the genealogical labours of the two Gebhards are particularly remarkable for the profound and accurate criticism they display. The principal writers on this subject among the French are, D'Hooyer, Godefroy, Andrew Duchesne, St. Marthe, Father Ausmele, Chazot de Nantigny, and M. de St. Allais. CHRONOLOGY, or the science of computing time, represents facts or events in the order in which they have occurred. The historian ought by no means to neglect to ascertain, as nearly as possible, the exact and precise date of events; since, without this knowledge, he will be perpetually liable to commit anachronisms, to confound things with persons, and often to mistake effects for causes, or causes for effects. This study is not without its difficulties, which are as perplexing as they are singularly various, both in kind and degree. These embarrassments relate chiefly, 1. To the age of the world; 2. The different forms of the year; 3. The number of years that elapsed from the creation to the birth of Christ; 4. The variety of epochs or periods of reckoning time. Many of the ancient philosophers maintained that the world was eternal. Ocellus Lucanus, a

UNIVERSITY OF WIRREGENS LIBRARY

Greek philosopher of the Pythagorean sect, attempted to prove this hypothesis, in a treatise entitled *De Universo*, which the Marquis D'Argens and the Abbé Bateaux have translated into French. Aristotle followed in the footsteps of Ocellus. His opinion as to the eternity of the universe is detailed at length in his commentaries on *Physics*.

Some modern philosophers, as Buffon, Hamilton, Dolomieu, Saussure, Faujas de St. Fond, &c. have assigned to our globe an existence long anterior to the ages when history commences. Their reasoning they support by the conformation of the globe itself, as well as the time that must have necessarily elapsed before the earth, in the progressive operations of nature, could be rendered a suitable habitation for man.

The most ancient account that we have of the origin of the world, and of the human race is derived from Moses. This leader and lawgiver of the Jewish nation lived about 1500 years before Christ; and nearly 1000 before Herodotus, the most ancient profane author whose works have been handed down to our times. According to Moses and the Jewish annals, the history of the human race does not yet comprehend a period of six thousand years. This account seems to be in opposition to that of several ancient nations, such as the Egyptians, Indians, Chaldeans, Thibetians, and Chinese, who carry back their chronology to a very remote date, and far beyond what Moses has assigned to the human race. But it is sufficient at present to remark, that this high antiquity, which vanity has led these nations to adopt as a reality, is either altogether imaginary, or purely mythological, founded on a symbolical theology, whose mysteries and allegories have been, but little understood. This primeval epoch is usually filled with gods and demigods, who are alleged to have reigned over these nations for so many myriads of years.

Traditions so fabulous and chimerical will never destroy the authenticity of Moses, who independently of his nativity, and the remote age in which he lived, merits implicit credit from the simplicity of his narrative, and from the circumstance, that there has never yet been discovered on the surface or in the internal structure of the earth, any organic evidence or work of human art, that can lead us to believe that the history of the world, or more properly speaking, of the human race, is antecedent to the age which the Jewish legislator has assigned it.

With regard to the division of time, a considerable period must, no doubt, have elapsed before men began to reckon by years, calculated according to astronomical observations. Two sorts or forms of computation have been successively in use among different nations. Some have employed solar years, calculated by the annual course of the sun; others have made use of lunar years, calculated by the periodical revolutions of the moon. All Christian nations of the present day adopt the solar year; while the lunar calculation is that followed by the Mahometans. The solar year consists of 365 days, 5 hours, 48', 45", 30''' ; the lunar year, of 354 days, 3 hours, 48', 38", 12'''.

The invention, or more properly speaking, the calculation of the solar year, is due to the ancient Egyptians, who, by the position of their country, as well as by the periodical overflowings and eb-

dings of the Nile, had early and obvious inducements for making astronomical observations. The solar year has undergone, in process of time, various corrections and denominations. The most remarkable of these are indicated by the distinctions, still in use, of the Julian, the Gregorian and the Reformed year.

Julius Caesar introduced into the Roman empire the solar or Egyptian year, which took, from hence the name of the Julian year. This he substituted instead of the lunar year, which the Romans had used before his time. It was distinguished, by an account of a slight variation in the reckoning, into the common and bissextile or leap year. The common Julian year consisted of 365 days; the bissextile, which returned every four years, 366 days. This computation was faulty, inasmuch as it allowed 365 days, and 6 entire hours, for the annual revolution of the sun; being an excess every year, of 11', 14", 30''' , beyond the truth. This, in a long course of ages, had amounted to several days; and began, at length, to derange the order of the seasons.

Pope Gregory XIII.,³ wishing to correct this error, employed an able mathematician, named Louis Lilio, to reform the Julian year according to the true annual course of the sun. A new calendar was drawn up, which was called after the name of that pontiff, the Gregorian calendar; and, in consequence of the incorrectness of the Julian era, the civil year had gained ten days. The same Pope ordered, by a bull published in 1582, that these should be expunged from the calendar; so that, instead of the 5th of October 1582, they should reckon it the 15th.

The Catholic States adopted this new calendar without the least difficulty; but the Protestants in the Empire, and the rest of Europe, as also the Russians and the Greeks, adhered to the Julian year; and hence the distinction between the old and new style, to which it is necessary to pay attention in all public acts and writings since the year 1582 of the Christian era. The difference between the old and new style, which, until 1700 in England there was only ten days, and eleven from the commencement of 1700, must be reckoned twelve days until 1753 during the present century of 1800; so that the 1st of January of the old year, answers to the 14th of the new.

The *Reformed year* or *Calendar*, as it is called, is distinct from the Gregorian, and applies to the calculation of the year, which was made by the professor at Jena, named Weigel. It differs from the Gregorian year, as to the method of calculation, as to the time of the Easter, and the other moveable feasts, as much of the Christian churches. The Protestants in Germany, Holland, Denmark and Switzerland, have adopted this new calendar in 1700. Their example was followed in 1752 by Great Britain; and in 1753, by Sweden; but since the year 1770 the Protestants of Germany, Switzerland and Holland have abandoned the reformed calendar, and adopted the Gregorian; and there is, properly speaking, no nation in Europe at this day, except the Russians and the Greeks, which makes use of the Julian calendar, or old style.⁴

But it is not merely the variations that have prevailed as to the form and computation of the year that have perplexed the science of chronology; the different methods of commencing it have

been the source of the first or second reckoned years from the commencement of the world. The same difficulty among the ages. The first year of the year began the year of the month of January; and called indiscriminately, or Incarnation, two months generally prevailed commencement of the year, and the day on which the Capetian kings, near the middle of the year, by an edict in France the year on the 1st of January, if sometimes happened, that the Easter, that the year 1358 had which Easter fell on the 14th of the year on the eve preceding this and hence the distinction between the old and new style, to which it is necessary to pay attention in all public acts and writings since the year 1582 of the Christian era. The difference between the old and new style, which, until 1700 in England there was only ten days, and eleven from the commencement of 1700, must be reckoned twelve days until 1753 during the present century of 1800; so that the 1st of January of the old year, answers to the 14th of the new. The Reformed year or Calendar, as it is called, is distinct from the Gregorian, and applies to the calculation of the year, which was made by the professor at Jena, named Weigel. It differs from the Gregorian year, as to the method of calculation, as to the time of the Easter, and the other moveable feasts, as much of the Christian churches. The Protestants in Germany, Holland, Denmark and Switzerland, have adopted this new calendar in 1700. Their example was followed in 1752 by Great Britain; and in 1753, by Sweden; but since the year 1770 the Protestants of Germany, Switzerland and Holland have abandoned the reformed calendar, and adopted the Gregorian; and there is, properly speaking, no nation in Europe at this day, except the Russians and the Greeks, which makes use of the Julian calendar, or old style. But it is not merely the variations that have prevailed as to the form and computation of the year that have perplexed the science of chronology; the different methods of commencing it have

and obvious induc-
observations. The
process of time, t
ations. The nat
ated by the disti
ian, the Gregoria

the Roman emp
which took, from h
This he substitut
which the Romans h
as distinguished,
n the reckoning, i
or leap year. It
d of 365 days; a
every four years,
was faulty, inasm
entire hours, for
n; being an exce
beyond the true t
es, had amounted
length, to derange

shing to correct t
mathematician, nam
Julian year accord
of the sun. A new
was called after t
Gregorian calendar;
incorrecness of t
l gained ten days,
all published in B
ged from the calend
of October 1582, t

oted this new calen
the year 1358 hav
; but the Protest
of Europe, as also
adhered to the Ju
consecration betwe
is necessary to pay
and writings since
era. The differenc
yle, which, until t
en from the comm
reckoned twelve
y of 1800; so that
ear, answers to the

Calendar, as it is c
rian, and applies to
ng was made by a
ngel. It differs from
method of calculat
the other moveable
The Protestants
mark and Switzerl
in 1700. Their
2 by Great Britain;
since the year 1776
Switzerland and Holl
calendar, and adopte
properly speaking
day, except the Rus
makes use of the Ju

e variations that have
computation of the
science of chronol
commencing it have

been the source of much confusion. The Romans, from the time of Julius Cæsar, began the year on the first of January. The ancient Greeks at first reckoned from the winter solstice, and afterwards from midsummer; and the Syro-Macedonians of Seleucide, commenced from the autumnal equinox. The sacred year of the Jews began with the first new moon after the vernal equinox, that is, in the month of March; and their civil year began with the new moon immediately following the autumnal equinox, that is, in the month of September.

The same diversity of practice which we observe among the ancients existed also in the middle ages. The Franks, under the Merovingian kings, began the year with the month of March. The Papas began it sometimes at Christmas, or the 25th of December; sometimes on the 1st of January; and sometimes on the 25th of March, called indiscriminately the day of the Annunciation, or Incarnation. Under the Carovingian princes, two methods of beginning the year were generally prevalent in France,—the one fixed its commencement at Christmas, or the 25th of December, and the other at Easter; that is, at the day on which that moveable feast happened to fall. This latter custom prevailed also under the Capetian kings, and it was not suppressed until near the middle of the sixteenth century. Charles IX., by an edict published in 1564, ordered, that in France the year should henceforth commence on the 1st of January. Previously to this edict, it sometimes happened, from the variable date of Easter, that the same month was found to occur twice in one and the same year. For example, the year 1358 having begun on the 1st of April, on which Easter day happened to fall, did not terminate until the 20th of April following, that is, on the eve preceding Easter. There were consecration in this year nearly two complete months in April. Since the reign of Charles IX., it has continued the invariable practice in France to begin the year on the 1st of January.

In England the year used to commence on the 25th of March, and the old style was there observed until 1753; when, by virtue of an act of parliament, passed in 1752, the beginning of the year was transferred to the 1st of January. It was decreed also, at the same time, that, in order to accommodate the English chronology to the new style, the 3d of September 1752 should be reckoned the 14th of the same month.

It is easy to conceive the perplexity and confusion that must have been introduced into chronology, as much by the difference of styles as by the different methods of commencing the year. Nothing is more probable, than that we should find mistakes and contradictions which, in reality, have no existence; and the more so, as the writers or recorders of public acts, who employ different styles, or date the beginning of the year variously, never give us any intimation on the subject; and all reckon promiscuously from the day of Christ's nativity, without informing us whether they follow the old or the new style—whether they commence the year in the month of January or March, at Easter or at Christmas.

Modern chronologists have found much embarrassment in calculating the number of years that had elapsed between the creation and the birth of

Christ. Father Petau, one of the most learned men in this science, admits that this point of chronology is to be established rather by probable conjectures than solid arguments. There have even been reckoned, according to Fabricius, about a hundred and forty different opinions respecting the epoch of Christ's nativity. Some fix this era in the year of the world 3616, while others carry it back to the year 6484. This great discordance of opinions arises from the contradictions found to exist between the three principal texts of the Old Testament. The Hebrew text, for instance, to which most chronologists give the preference, fixes the deluge in the year of the world 1656; while, according to the Samaritan text, it happened in 1307; and, according to the Septuagint, in 2242. The system at present most accredited is that of Archbishop Usher, an Irish prelate, who, founding his calculation on the Hebrew text, fixes the date of Christ's nativity in the year of the world 4000.

A variety of epochs prevailed at different times; as most nations, both ancient and modern, who had governments and laws of their own, adopted chronological eras that were peculiar to themselves. The ancient Greeks had their Olympiads, and the Syro-Macedonians the era of the Seleucide. The Romans calculated by consulships, which became the era of their public acts; and besides these, their historians used to reckon from the foundation of the city, which goes back 752 years before Christ, or 3249 after the creation. The era of Dioclesian, introduced in honour of that emperor, and sometimes also called the era of the martyrs, began in the year 284 after Christ, and was for a long time used in the West. But, without stopping here to enumerate the different eras of antiquity, we shall rather restrict ourselves at present to the pointing out of those that belong more properly to modern history, viz. 1. The era of the modern Greeks. 2. Of the modern Jews. 3. Of the Spaniards. 4. The Hegira, or Mahometan era. 5. The Dionysian, or Christian era.

The era of the modern Greeks is known by the name of the Mundane era of Constantinople. It begins 5508 years before the birth of Christ. The first year of the incarnation thus falls in the year of the world 5509; and, consequently, the year 1823 of the Christian era answers to the year 7331 of the Mundane era of Constantinople. Under this system, two kinds of years are in use, the civil and the ecclesiastical. The former commences with the month of September, the other has begun sometimes on the 21st of March, and sometimes on the 1st of April. This era is followed, even at this day, by the Greek church. The Russians, who adopted it from the Greeks, along with the Christian religion, made use of it even in their civil acts, until the reign of Peter the Great. That emperor, in 1700, abolished the Mundane era of Constantinople, and substituted in its place the Christian era, and the Julian calendar or old style.

The modern Jews have likewise a mundane era; as they reckon from the creation of the world. It commences on the 7th of October of the Julian year, and reckons 3761 years before Christ. The year 3762 of the world is the first of the Christian era, according to the Jews; and the year 1823 answers to the year 5583 of their mundane era.

UNIVERSITY OF WINDSOR LIBRARY

In Spain, the era began with the year of Rome 714, 38 years before the birth of Christ; being the time when the triumvirate was renewed between Caesar Octavianus, Mark Antony, and Lepidus. The Spaniards, wishing to give Octavianus some testimony of their satisfaction on being comprehended within his province, began a new era with this event,⁶ which prevailed not only in Spain and Portugal, but also in Africa, and those parts of France which were subject to the dominion of the Visigoths. It is of great importance to know that the Spaniards and Portuguese constantly employed this era in their annals and public acts, so late as the 14th and 15th centuries, when they substituted the Christian era in its place.

The era which the Mussulman nations follow is that of Mahomet, called the Hegira, or the Flight of the Prophet. It began on the 16th of July 622 A. C. and is composed of lunar years. In order to find out in what year of the vulgar era any given year of the Hegira falls, it is necessary first to reduce the lunar into solar years, and then add the number 622. For example, the year 1238 of the Hegira answers to the year 1823 of the vulgar, or Christian era. It began on the 18th of September 1822, and ended on the 7th of the following September.

Dionysius, or Denys the Little, a Roman Abbé, who lived in the time of the Emperor Justinian, about the year of Christ 530, was the author of the vulgar era, which afterwards received a more perfect form from the hands of the venerable Bede, an English monk, about the year 720. Before that time, the Latins, or Christians of the West, employed the era of the Consuls, or that of Dioclesian. Denys the Little, imagining it would be more convenient for the Christians to reckon their time from the birth of Christ, applied himself with great industry to calculate the number of years that had elapsed from the Incarnation to his own times. Modern chronologists have remarked, that both Denys and Bede were mistaken in their calculations; but a difference of opinion prevails on this subject, as may be seen in the learned work of Fabricius. There are some of these chronologists who date the birth of Christ thirty-four years earlier, while others find a difference of but one year, or at most four, between the true epoch of the nativity, and that adopted by Denys. This disagreement of the modern chronologists has given rise to the distinction between the *true era* of the birth of Christ, and the *Vulgar or Dionysian era*, which the general usage has now consecrated and established.

In France, this era was not introduced until the eighth century. We find it employed, for the first time, in the acts of the Councils of Gormany, Liptines, and Soissons, held in the years 742-3-4, under Pepin, surnamed the Short. The Kings of France never used it in their public acts, until the end of the ninth century; and the Popes only since the eleventh.

In order to compare the different eras, and to facilitate the process of reducing the years of one into those of another, a scheme has been proposed called the Julian period. The invention of this is due to Joseph Scaliger, a professor at Leyden, and well known by his chronological works. He gave it the name of *Julian*, because the Julian year served as the basis of it. It is composed of the

several products of the cycles of the sun, the moon and the indictions multiplied by each other.

The *cycle of the sun* is a period, or revolution of twenty-eight solar years; at the end of which the same order of years returns, by a kind of cycle or cycle. Its use is to indicate the days which each year commences, and the Dominical Letters. These are the first seven letters of the alphabet, A, B, C, D, E, F, G, which are employed to indicate the seven days of the week, more particularly the Sabbath (*dominica*). At the end of twenty-eight years, of which this cycle is composed, there returns a new order or series of years, so similar to the preceding, that the Dominical letters again answer exactly to the same days.

The *cycle of the moon* comprises nineteen lunar years, twelve of which are called common, and remaining seven intercalary; these yield a product of 6939 days 18 hours, according to the calculation of the ancients,⁷ and are equal to nineteen Julian solar years. By means of this cycle always recurring, the new moons fall again on the same day and the same hours on which they had happened nineteen years before; so that, for all the new moons, the cycle which is to come is entirely similar to the preceding. The cipher which indicates the year of the cycle is called the *golden number*, because they used to write it in characters of gold in the ancient calendars, where it was employed to mark the times of the new moons.

The *cycle of indictions* is a cycle which recurs every fifteen years; and which, like those already mentioned, was frequently employed in charters and public records. The origin of these indictions is generally referred to a contribution or cess appointed, for fifteen years, by the Romans, and afterwards renewed for the same period. They began in the reign of Constantine the Great, that is, at the year of Christ 313, and are distinguished into three kinds; 1. that of Constantinople, which was employed by the Greek Emperors, and began on the 1st of September; 2. that which was termed the Imperial, or Cæsarean indiction, the use of which was limited to the West, which began on the 25th of September; 3. the Roman or Pontifical indiction, which the Popes employed in their bulls. This last began on the 25th of December, or the 1st of January, according as the one or the other of these dates was reckoned by the Romans the first of the new year.

The *cycle of the sun*, comprising twenty-eight years, and that of the moon nineteen, when multiplied together, give a product of 532, which is called the Paschal cycle, because it serves to ascertain the feast of Easter. The product of 532, multiplied by 15, the cycle of indictions, amounts to the number 7980, which constitutes the Julian period. When in the compass of this period may be placed, were, under one view, these different eras, epochs, in order to compare and reconcile them with each other; adopting, as their common basis, the nativity of Christ, fixed to the year 4714 of the Julian period.

History has been divided, according to the different subjects of which it treats, into Civil, Ecclesiastical, Literary, and Philosophical History. Civil and political history is occupied entirely with events that relate to mankind, as distributed

societies, and un-
less, and manne-
and to those ex-
tion. Literary
of the origin, pro-
and sciences. L-
is but a branch o-
illustrates the diff-
have flourished in
modern times.

Another divisio-
tent, is that of U-
History. Univer-
or summary of the
have figured on th-
to the present tim-

By general his-
trials of the rev-
the world, whethe-
powers, or of sev-
by various and com-
may be a general
tain, a general
a general history
tory embraces, in
people, or provin-
tual.

Finally, in regar-
history is distingui-
and that of the M-
that of the nation-
of the creation to
tory of the middle
volutions that too-
of the fifteenth c-
modern history, is
of the last three ce-

This division, w-
the history of
volutions which
ended in the fifth
revolution of the
vention of the Ro-
the birth to
; while that
is its commen-
Eastern empi-
of literature
tion of civil soci-

Although ancient
of the follow-
necessary to gi-
the reader, with a
fine, and the
has occurred for
day. We ha-

the first of which
and the third 500
the first perio-
is almost who
have been tra-
order of tim-
foundation.

ous Parian m-
as spurious;
can guide our
ofane history
are left us of
the books of M-
earliest profa-

the sun, the moon, and the stars, and the revolutions of the planets, and the end of the world, by a kind of chronology, and the Dominical letters of the week, more particularly (omnibus). At which this cycle, order or series, that the Dominical letters, exactly to the same, and nineteen hundred and nine, and these yield a prodigious quantity to the calculation of nineteen Julian cycles always return on the same day, they had happened, for all the nations come into the same epoch, which is called the golden age, where it was the new moons, a cycle which resembles, like those already employed in chronology, of these indictions, distribution or cessation of the Romans, and of the period. They are great, that is, all are distinguished, Constantinople, the Emperors, and the 2. that was the Caesarian indiction, and to the West, of September, the indiction, which is the 1st of January, other of these, the first of the year, comprising twenty-nine, when in the year of 532, which is reserved to ascertain the year of 532, multiple amounts to the number of the Julian period. Where it may be placed, the different eras, and reconcile them as their common epoch, to the year 4714 of the world, according to the Jews, into Civil, Ecclesiastical, Philosophical, and occupied entirely, and, as distributed

societies, and united together by governments, laws, and manners. Ecclesiastical history is confined to those events that properly belong to religion. Literary history treats more particularly of the origin, progress, and vicissitudes of the arts and sciences. Lastly, philosophical history, which is but a branch or sub-division of literary history, illustrates the different systems of philosophy that have flourished in the world, both in ancient and modern times. Another division of history, according to its extent, is that of Universal, General, and Particular History. Universal history gives a kind of outline or summary of the events of all the nations that have figured on the earth, from the remotest ages to the present time. By general history, is understood that which treats of the revolutions that have happened in the world, whether of great states or confederate powers, or of several nations combined together, by various and complicated interests. Thus, there may be a general history of France, or of Great Britain, a general history of the United Provinces, a general history of Europe, &c. Particular history embraces, in detail, the events of a particular people, or province, or city, or illustrious individual. Finally, in regard to the time of which it treats, history is distinguished into Ancient and Modern, and that of the Middle Ages. Ancient history is that of the nations who flourished from the time of the creation to the fifth century; while the history of the middle ages has, for its object, the revolutions that took place from the fifth to the end of the fifteenth century. What is now termed modern history, is that which retraces the events of the last three centuries. This division, which applies more particularly to the history of Europe, is founded on the great revolutions which this part of the world experienced in the fifth and fifteenth centuries. The revolution of the fifth century ended in the subversion of the Roman empire in the West, and the birth of the principal states in modern Europe; while that of the fifteenth century, which is its commencement from the destruction of the Eastern empire, brought along with it the revival of literature and the fine arts, and the renovation of civil society in Europe. Although ancient history does not enter into the plan of the following work, nevertheless it appeared necessary to give here a brief sketch of it to the reader, with the view of connecting the order of time, and the chain of the great events that have occurred from the remotest ages to the present day. We have divided it into three periods, the first of which embraces 3000, the second 1000, and the third 500 years. The first period, which comprises thirty centuries, is almost wholly fabulous. The notices of it that have been transmitted to us are very imperfect. The order of time cannot be established on any solid foundation. Even the authenticity of the famous Parian marbles has been called in question as spurious; and there is no other chronology that can guide our steps through this dark labyrinth of profane history. The only literary monuments that are left us of these remote and obscure ages, are the books of Moses and the Jews. Herodotus, the earliest profane historian, wrote more than

a thousand years after Moses, and about 450 before Christ. He had been preceded several centuries by Sanchoniathon the Phœnician; but the work of this latter historian is lost, and there exist only a few scattered fragments of it in Porphyry and Eusebius. It appears, therefore, that of the 4500 years that fall within the compass of ancient history, the first thirty centuries may, without inconvenience, be retrenched. Amidst the darkness of those ages, we discover nothing but the germs of societies, governments, sciences, and arts. The Egyptians, the Israelites, the Phœnicians, the Assyrians, the Babylonians, or Chaldeans, made then the most conspicuous figure among the nations of Asia and Africa. The Egyptians and Chaldeans were the first who cultivated astronomy. Egypt was long the nursery of arts and sciences. The Phœnicians, without any other guide than the stars, boldly traversed unknown seas, and gave a vast extent of intercourse to their commerce and navigation. They founded many celebrated colonies, such as Carthage in Africa, and Malaga, and Cadiz on the shores of Spain. The history of Europe, which is utterly unknown during the first two thousand years, begins to exhibit in the third millenary a few slight notices of ancient Greece. A multitude of petty states had then taken root; most of which, as Argos, Athens, and Thebes, had been founded by colonies from Egypt. The Greeks, in imitation of the Phœnicians, applied themselves to arts, navigation, and commerce. They established numerous colonies, not only on the coasts of Asia Minor, but on those of Italy and Sicily. That in Lower Italy, or Calabria, was known by the name of Magna Graecia. It was during the second period of ancient history, or in the fourth millenary, that great and powerful monarchies arose; which contributed to the progress of arts and civilisation, and the perfection of society. These are commonly reckoned five, viz., the Egyptian, the Assyrian, the Persian, the Macedonian, and the Roman; all of which successively established themselves on the ruins of each other. The history of the first two monarchies is enveloped in mystery and doubt. Of the ancient Egyptians, nothing now remains but their pyramids, their temples, and obelisks,—monuments which can only attest the power and grandeur of the ancient sovereigns of Egypt. As to the Assyrian antiquities, the contradictions that we find between the narratives of Herodotus and Ctesias, cannot fail to make us reject, as fabulous, the details of the latter, respecting the magnificence of Ninus, Semiramis, and Sardanapalus, the supposed monarchs of Assyria and Babylon. Nothing certain is known of this empire, or the conquests of these kings, beyond what we find recorded in the annals of the Jews. Shalmaneser, King of Assyria, subdued the kingdom of Samaria or Israel, about the year of the world 3270; and Nebuchadnezzar, one of his successors, conquered that of Judah and Jerusalem, about the year 3403. The Persian monarchy was founded by Cyrus, who put an end to the dominion of the Assyrians and Babylonians, by taking the city of Babylon,

UNIVERSITY OF WINDSOR LIBRARY

about the year of the world 3463. The Persian empire, when at its greatest height, under Darius Hystaspes, comprehended all that part of Asia which stretches from the Indus to the Caspian Sea, and from the Euxine to the shores of the Mediterranean. Egypt in Africa, and Thrace in Europe, were subject to its laws. After a duration of nearly two centuries, it was finally destroyed by the Macedonians in the year 3672.

Greece, which was at first divided into several petty kingdoms, changed its condition towards the commencement of the fourth millenary; when its principal cities, till then governed by kings, formed themselves into detached republics. An enthusiasm for liberty spread over all Greece, and inspired every bosom with the love of glory. Military bravery, as well as arts, and talents of all kinds, were fostered and encouraged by public games, the principal of which were the Olympic. Two cities, Athens and Lacedaemon, fixed upon themselves for a time the eyes of all Greece. Solon was the legislator of the former, and Lycurgus of the latter. To these two republics all the rest succumbed, either as allies, or by right of conquest. Athens has rendered herself immortal by the victories which she gained over the Persians, at the famous battles of Marathon, Salamis, and Plataea; fought A. M. 3512, 3522, and 3523.

The ascendancy which these victories procured the Athenians over the rest of the Greek states, excited the jealousy of the Lacedaemonians, and became the principal cause of the famous civil war which arose in 3572, between these two republics, and which is known by the name of the Peloponnesian war. This was followed by various other civil wars; and these disasters contributed greatly to exhaust the Greeks, and to break that union which had been the true source of their prosperity and their glory. Philip, King of Macedon, had the address to turn these unhappy divisions to his own advantage, and soon made himself master of all Greece. The battle of Charonea, which he gained over the Athenians about the year of the world 3646, completed the conquest of that country.

Alexander the Great, son of Philip, afterwards attacked the Persian empire, which he utterly overthrew, in consequence of the three victories which he gained over Darius Codomannus, the last of the Persian kings, at the passage of the Granicus in 3668, at Issus in 3669, and near Arbela in 3672.

The monarchy founded by Alexander fell to pieces after his death. From its wreck were formed, among others, by three of his generals, the three kingdoms of Macedon, Syria, and Egypt; all of which were conquered in succession by the Romans, A. M. 3835, 3936, and 3972. Greece itself had been reduced to a Roman province, after the famous sack of Corinth, and the destruction of the Achaean league, A. M. 3856, or 144 years before Christ.

The empire of the Greeks was succeeded by that of the Romans, which is distinguished from all its predecessors, not more by its extent and duration, than by the wisdom with which it was administered, and the fine monuments of all kinds which it has transmitted to posterity. The greatness of this empire was not, however, the achievement of a single conqueror, but the work of ages.

Its prosperity must be chiefly ascribed to the primitive constitution of the Republic, which inspired the Romans with the love of liberty, and the love of patriotism,—which animated them to glory, perseverance, and taught them to despise danger and death. Their religion, likewise, served as a powerful engine to restrain and direct the multitude, according to the views and designs of government.

The earlier part of the Roman history may be divided into three periods. The first of these presents Rome under the government of kings, from the time of its foundation, about the year of the world 3249, to the expulsion of Tarquin Proud, and the establishment of the Republic, 3493. The second extends from the establishment of the Republic, in the year of Rome 245, to the first Punic war, in the year of the City 490, of the world 3738. The third commences with the first Punic war, and terminates at the battle of Actium, which put an end to the Republic, and re-established monarchy under Augustus, in the year of Rome 723.

During the first of these periods, the Romans had to sustain incessant wars with their neighbours, the petty states of Italy. They subdued the whole of that peninsula in course of the second period, and it was not till the third, that they carried their arms beyond their own country, to conquer the greater portion of the then known world. The first two periods of the Roman history are full of obscure and uncertain traditions. In those ages, the Romans paid no attention to the cultivation of letters. Immersed entirely in the business of war, they had no other historical records than the annals of their pontiffs, which perished in the year of Rome, at the time of its invasion by the Gauls, the same year that was the year of the City 365.

The most ancient of their historians was Fabius Pictor, who wrote his Annals in the sixth century, after the foundation of Rome, or about the time of the second Punic war. These Annals, in which Fabius had consulted both tradition and fact, are lost; and we possess no information on these two periods of Roman history, except what has been left us by Dionysius of Halicarnassus, and Titus Livius, who both wrote in the reign of Augustus, and whose narratives do not resemble a romance rather than a true history.

The cultivation of letters and arts among the Romans did not, properly speaking, commence until the third period; and after they had had intercourse with civilized nations, as the Carthaginians and Greeks. It was not until 481 that, after the building of the city that they struck the first silver coinage; and ten years afterwards, they equipped their first fleet against the Carthaginians. It is at this period, also, that truth begins to dawn upon their history, and to occupy the place of fable and tradition. Besides their native historians, Titus Livius, Florus, and Velleius Paterculus, several Greek authors, as Polybius, Plutarch, Appian of Alexandria, Dion Cassius, &c. furnished useful memorials on this period of history of Polybius, especially, is a work of the highest merit. The statesman will there find instructions in politics and government, and the soldier instructions in the art of war.

A long series of foreign wars put the Romans in possession of the Isles of the Mediterranean

Spain, Northern Africa, Macedonia, Greece, the Republic of Carthage, the Euphrates. The republic of Carthage decided the end of the Romans.

Carthage was a modern city of 3110, and 130 before its destruction rendered the Carthaginians and their Carthage carried their Carthage for its protection Carthage victorious. Carthage along the Carthage the attempts which Carthage of Sicily was Carthage in a war with Carthage years, Rome Carthage the Carthage not until these two Carthage, made each other Carthage, that the Carthage of the conqueror. Carthage which lasted nearly Carthage in ruins by the Carthage of Polybius Carthage now remain Carthage of that Carthage, and all the Carthage, and the Carthage Carthage. The Carthage of the Carthage, which perished in the Carthage of Rome, at the time of its invasion by the Carthage the same year that was

The fall of Carthage, the most ancient of their historians was Fabius Pictor, who wrote his Annals in the sixth century, after the foundation of Rome, or about the time of the second Punic war. These Annals, in which Fabius had consulted both tradition and fact, are lost; and we possess no information on these two periods of Roman history, except what has been left us by Dionysius of Halicarnassus, and Titus Livius, who both wrote in the reign of Augustus, and whose narratives do not resemble a romance rather than a true history.

The cultivation of letters and arts among the Romans did not, properly speaking, commence until the third period; and after they had had intercourse with civilized nations, as the Carthaginians and Greeks. It was not until 481 that, after the building of the city that they struck the first silver coinage; and ten years afterwards, they equipped their first fleet against the Carthaginians. It is at this period, also, that truth begins to dawn upon their history, and to occupy the place of fable and tradition. Besides their native historians, Titus Livius, Florus, and Velleius Paterculus, several Greek authors, as Polybius, Plutarch, Appian of Alexandria, Dion Cassius, &c. furnished useful memorials on this period of history of Polybius, especially, is a work of the highest merit. The statesman will there find instructions in politics and government, and the soldier instructions in the art of war.

A long series of foreign wars put the Romans in possession of the Isles of the Mediterranean

Spain, Northern Africa, Macedonia, Greece, the Republic of Carthage, the Euphrates. The republic of Carthage decided the end of the Romans.

scribed to the
lic, which inspi
erty, and the sp
them to glory,
to despise th
twice, served
direct the m
nd designs of
man history may
the first of these
ernment of king
i, about the year
on of Tarquin
of the Republic
the establishm
f Rome 245, to
of the City 490,
d commences w
ession of Sicily
to the Republic
d monarchy un
723.
periods, the Rom
not until these two
with their neigh
subdued the w
the second per
of the conqueror.
l, that they car
which lasted ne
years, was comp
country, to con
in ruins by the
famous Scipio
Emilianus, the
known world.
scholar of Poly
bius. No monum
ent of the anti
quarians now
remains to point
out the ancient
splendour of
that republic.
Their national
attention to the
statues, and all
the literary trea
sures they contain
ed, in the busi
ness pursued w
ith the city, or
were destroyed
by the carnage
of the Romans.
The destruction
of Carthage hap
pened in the
year of Rome
608, and of the
world 356,
evanish by the
same year that
witnessed the
sack of Corinth.
The fall of Car
thage, and more
especially the
fall of the king
dom of Greece,
Egypt, and the
Asiatic king
doms, occasion
ed a wonderful
revolution in
the manners
and government
of the Romans.
The Greek An
nals, in which
the arts and
institutions of
the ancient and
civilized nation
s, brought them
acquainted with
the progress
they had never
known, which
soon proved
fatal harbing
ers of vice. Their
patriotism and
love of liberty
insensibly decl
ined, and beca
me a source of
corruption. The
ambitions citi
zens fomented
the civil wars,
which ended in
the establishm
ent of monarchy.
Two triumvira
tes appeared in
succession. The
first consisted
of Pompey, Cas
sar, and Crass
us, as the Car
thage was diss
olved in conse
quence of the
civil war not
until 48 that
arose among
the triumvirs.
Casar, having
defeated Pom
pey at the bat
tle of Pharsalia
in 49, became
master of the
east under the
title of perpet
ual dictator. This
elevation of
fortune he did
not long enjoy
; he was assas
sinated in the
senate by a
band of cons
pirators, at the
head of whom
was Brutus, in
the year of Rome
710, and 42
before the
birth of
Christ.
A second
triumvirate
was formed
between
Mark
Antony,
Casar Octavi
anus, and
Lepidus. Many
of the illust
rious Romans,
and among
others
Cato, were
at this time
proscribed,
and put to
death by
order of the
triumvirs.
Jealousy
having
disunited
these new
tyrants, Oct
avianus
deposed
Lepidus
of his power,
and defeat
ed Mark
Antony in
the famous
naval battle
which took
place near
the promont
ory of Actium,
in the year
of Rome 723.
Antony
having been
assassinated
in Egypt,
immediately
after his
death, Cas
sar Octavi
anus beca
me sole mas
ter of the
empire, wh
ich he after
wards ruled
with sove
reign auth
ority under
the name
of Augustus.
At this time
the Roman
empire com
prehended
the finest
countries
of Europe
and Asia,
with
Egypt and
all the nor
thern part
of Africa.
It was
bounded
on the west
by the Rh
ine and the
Danube,
and on the
east by the
Euphrates.
The suc
cessors of
Augustus
added the
greater
part of
Britain to
the empire.
Trajan
carried his
victorious
arms be
yond the
Danube;
he con
quered the
Dacians,
who inhab
ited those
countries
known
at present
under the
name of
Hungary,
Transylva
nia, Mold
avia, Wal
achia, and
Bessarabia.
In the East
this prince
extended
the limits
of the em
pire be
yond the
Euphrates,
having sub
dued Mes
opotamia,
Assyria,
Armenia,
Coelechia,
and Iberia
(or Geor
gia); but
the conquest
s of Trajan
were aban
doned by
his suc
cessors,
and the
empire
again
shrank
within the
bounds
prescribed
by Augustus.
This empire,
which ex
tended
from north
to south
nearly
six hundred
leagues,
and more
than a
thousand
from east
to west,
viz. from
the 24°
to the 56°
of latitude,
comprised
a total of
180,000
square
leagues.
The popu
lation,
during its
most
flourishing
state, may
be estimat
ed at about
120,000,000,
—a popula
tion which
equals that
of modern
Europe,
with the
exception
of Great
Britain,
Denmark,
Sweden,
Russia,
and Turkey.
The govern
ment which
had been
introduc
ed was an
absolute
monarchy,
only cloth
ed with the
forms of
the ancient
republic.
Under the
popular
titles of
consul, tri
bune of the
people, ge
neral, grand
pontiff, cen
sor, &c., the
prince unit
ed in him
self all the
various
attributes
of supreme
power. The
senate in
deed enjoy
ed extens
ive prerog
atives; the
legislative
power, wh
ich had be
en reserv
ed at first
for the
people, was
afterwards
transfer
red to this
body; but
as the mil
itary was
wholly
subordi
nate to the
prince, and
as he had
also at his
command
a numerous
guard, it
is easy to
perceive
that the
authority
of the sen
ate was
but prec
arious, and
by no
means a
counterpo
ise to that
of the
prince.
A govern
ment so
construct
ed could
not insure
the welfare
and happ
iness of
the people,
except
under
princes
as humane
as Titus,
as just
and en
lighten
ed as Tra
jan and
the Anton
ines; or so
long as
the forms
introduc
ed by Au
gustus
should be
respected.
It could
not fail
to degener
ate into
arbitrar
y power,
under
tyrants
such as
Tiberius,
Caligula,
Nero, and
Domitian;
and the
senate
must then
have been
but a serv
ile instru
ment in
the hands
of the
prince,
employ
ed by him
to facili
tate the
means
of satiat
ing his
passions
and his
tyranny.
The max
ims of
absolute
power
soon be
came the
fashion
able and
favourite
doctrine.
Civilians
began
to teach
publicly
that all
the auth
ority of
the senate
and the
people
was tran
sferred
to the
prince;
that he
was su
perior
to the
laws;
that his
power
extend
ed to the
lives
and for
tunes
of the
citizens;
and that
he might
dispose
of the
state
as his
own
patrim
ony. These
encroach
ments of
despotism,
join
ed to the
instabil
ity of the
imperial
throne,
the decay
of milit
ary disci
pline, the
unbrid
led licen
ce of the
troops,
the employ
ing whol

Spain, Northern Africa, Egypt, Gaul, Illyria, Macedonia, Greece, Thracia, and all Asia, as far as the Euphrates. The destruction of the powerful republic of Carthage was the grand east of the die that decided the empire of the world in favour of the Romans.
Carthage was a colony which the ancient Phenicians had founded on the coast of Africa, near the modern city of Tunis, in the year of the world 3119, and 130 before the founding of Rome. In imitation of their mother country, the Carthaginians rendered themselves famous by their merchandise and their marine. The extent to which they carried their commerce, and the force necessary for its protection, rendered their arms everywhere victorious. They gradually extended their conquests along the shores of Africa, in Spain, and the islands of the Mediterranean.
The attempts which they had made to get possession of Sicily were the occasion of embroiling them in a war with the Romans. For nearly two hundred years, Rome and Carthage disputed between them the empire of the world; and it was not until these two mighty rivals had, more than once, made each other tremble for their independence, that the Carthaginians yielded to the yoke of the conqueror. Their capital, after a siege which lasted nearly three years, was completely laid in ruins by the famous Scipio Emilianus, the scholar of Polybius. No monument of the antiquarians now remains to point out the ancient splendour of that republic. Their national attention to the statues, and all the literary treasures they contained, in the business pursued with the city, or were destroyed by the carnage of the Romans. The destruction of Carthage happened in the year of Rome 608, and of the world 356, evanish by the same year that witnessed the sack of Corinth.
The fall of Carthage, and more especially the fall of the kingdom of Greece, Egypt, and the Asiatic kingdoms, occasioned a wonderful revolution in the manners and government of the Romans. The Greek Annals, in which the arts and institutions of the ancient and civilized nations, brought them acquainted with the progress they had never known, which soon proved fatal harbingers of vice. Their patriotism and love of liberty insensibly declined, and became a source of corruption. The ambitious citizens fomented the civil wars, which ended in the establishment of monarchy.
Two triumvirates appeared in succession. The first consisted of Pompey, Casar, and Crassus, as the Carthage was dissolved in consequence of the civil war not until 48 that arose among the triumvirs. Casar, having defeated Pompey at the battle of Pharsalia, in 49, became master of the east under the title of perpetual dictator. This elevation of fortune he did not long enjoy; he was assassinated in the senate by a band of conspirators, at the head of whom was Brutus, in the year of Rome 710, and 42 before the birth of Christ.
A second triumvirate was formed between Mark Antony, Casar Octavianus, and Lepidus. Many of the illustrious Romans, and among others Cato, were at this time proscribed, and put to death by order of the triumvirs. Jealousy having disunited these new tyrants, Octavianus deposed Lepidus of his power, and defeated Mark Antony in the famous naval battle which took

place near the promontory of Actium, in the year of Rome 723. Antony having been assassinated in Egypt, immediately after his death, Casar Octavianus became sole master of the empire, which he afterwards ruled with sovereign authority under the name of Augustus.
At this time the Roman empire comprehended the finest countries of Europe and Asia, with Egypt and all the northern part of Africa. It was bounded on the west by the Rhine and the Danube, and on the east by the Euphrates. The successors of Augustus added the greater part of Britain to the empire. Trajan carried his victorious arms beyond the Danube; he conquered the Dacians, who inhabited those countries known at present under the name of Hungary, Transylvania, Moldavia, Walachia, and Bessarabia. In the East this prince extended the limits of the empire beyond the Euphrates, having subdued Mesopotamia, Assyria, Armenia, Coelechia, and Iberia (or Georgia); but the conquests of Trajan were abandoned by his successors, and the empire again shrank within the bounds prescribed by Augustus.
This empire, which extended from north to south nearly six hundred leagues, and more than a thousand from east to west, viz. from the 24° to the 56° of latitude, comprised a total of 180,000 square leagues. The population, during its most flourishing state, may be estimated at about 120,000,000,—a population which equals that of modern Europe, with the exception of Great Britain, Denmark, Sweden, Russia, and Turkey.
The government which had been introduced was an absolute monarchy, only clothed with the forms of the ancient republic. Under the popular titles of consul, tribune of the people, general, grand pontiff, censor, &c., the prince united in himself all the various attributes of supreme power. The senate indeed enjoyed extensive prerogatives; the legislative power, which had been reserved at first for the people, was afterwards transferred to this body; but as the military was wholly subordinate to the prince, and as he had also at his command a numerous guard, it is easy to perceive that the authority of the senate was but precarious, and by no means a counterpoise to that of the prince.
A government so constructed could not insure the welfare and happiness of the people, except under princes as humane as Titus, as just and enlightened as Trajan and the Antonines; or so long as the forms introduced by Augustus should be respected. It could not fail to degenerate into arbitrary power, under tyrants such as Tiberius, Caligula, Nero, and Domitian; and the senate must then have been but a servile instrument in the hands of the prince, employed by him to facilitate the means of satiating his passions and his tyranny.
The maxims of absolute power soon became the fashionable and favourite doctrine. Civilians began to teach publicly that all the authority of the senate and the people was transferred to the prince; that he was superior to the laws; that his power extended to the lives and fortunes of the citizens; and that he might dispose of the state as his own patrimony. These encroachments of despotism, joined to the instability of the imperial throne, the decay of military discipline, the unbridled licence of the troops, the employing whol

PERIOD I.

FROM THE INVASION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE IN THE WEST BY THE BARBARIANS, TO THE TIME OF CHARLEMAGNE, A.D. 406—800.

The Roman empire had, for many years, been gradually tending towards its downfall. Its energies were exhausted; and it required no great effort to lay prostrate that gigantic power which had already lost its strength and activity. The decay of the government, the relaxation of discipline, the animosities of faction, and the miseries of the people, all announced the approaching ruin of the empire. Divided by mutual jealousies, enervated by luxury, and oppressed by despotism, the Romans were in no condition to withstand the numerous swarms of barbarians from the North, who unacquainted with luxury, and despising danger and death, had learned to conquer in the ranks of the Imperial armies.

Several of the Emperors, guided by a short-sighted policy, had received into their pay entire legions of foreigners; and, to recompense their services, had assigned them settlements in the frontier provinces of the empire. Thus the Franks obtained, by way of compensation, territories in Belgic Gaul; while similar grants were made in Pannonia and in Thrace to the Vandals, Alans, Suevi, and other barbarians. This liberality of the Romans, which was a true mark of weakness, began with the vast numbers of these troops whom they employed in their wars, at length accustomed the barbarians to regard the empire as their prey. Towards the close of the year 406, the Vandals, the Suevi, and the Alans, sounded the tocsin of that famous invasion which accelerated the downfall of the Western empire. The example of these nations was soon followed by the Ostrogoths, the Burgundians, the Alcomans, the Huns, the Angles, the Saxons, the Visigoths, the Ostrogoths, and the Lombards. All these nations, with the exception of the Huns, were of German origin.

The VANDALS, it appears, were originally settled in that part of northern Germany which lies between the Elbe and the Vistula. They formed a branch of the ancient Suevi, as did also the Burgundians and the Lombards. After the third century, and under the reign of the Emperor Probus, they had them, with the Burgundians, engaged in fighting against the Romans on the Rhine. In the time of Aurelian (272) they established themselves in the Western part of Dacia, that is, in Pannonia, and a part of modern Hungary. Expelled in these districts by the Goths, they fled from Constantine the Great settlements in Pannonia, on condition of rendering military service to the Romans. They remained in Pannonia until the commencement of the fifth century, when they set out on their emigration towards the West. It was on this occasion that they associated themselves with the Alans, a people originally from Mount Caucasus and ancient Scythia; a part of which, settled in Sarmatia near the mouth of the Borysthenes or Dnieper, had advanced as far as the Danube, and there made a

formidable stand against the Romans. In their passage through Germany, the Vandals and the Alans joined a body of the Suevi, who also inhabited the banks of the Danube, eastward of the powerful nation of the Alemanni. United in this rude confederacy, they entered Gaul, plundering and destroying wherever they went. Mayence, Worms, Spire, Strasbourg, and many flourishing cities of Gaul, were pillaged by these barbarians.

THE GERMANS, the most powerful of these destructive nations, began to rise into notice in the third century, after the time of the Emperor Caracalla. They then inhabited the country between the Vistula, the Dniester, the Borysthenes, and the Tanais or Don. It is not certain whether they were originally from these regions, or whether, in more remote times, they inhabited Scandinavia, from which, according to Jornandes, a Gothic author, they emigrated at an early period. It is however certain that they were of German extraction; and that, in the third and fourth centuries, they made the Caesars tremble on their thrones. The Emperor Aurelian was compelled (274) to abandon the province of Dacia to their dominion.

This nation, the first of the German tribes that embraced the Christian religion, was divided, in their ancient settlements beyond the Danube, into two principal branches. They who inhabited the districts towards the east and the Euxine Sea, between the Dniester, the Borysthenes, and the Tanais, were called Ostrogoths; the Visigoths were the branch which extended westward, and occupied ancient Dacia, and the regions situated between the Dniester, the Danube, and the Vistula. Attacked in these vast countries by the Huns (375), some were subjugated, and others compelled to abandon their habitations. A part of the Visigoths then fixed their abode in Thrace, in Messia, and the frontiers of Dacia, with consent of the emperors; who granted also to the Ostrogoths settlements in Pannonia. At length the Visigoths, after having twice ravaged Italy, sacked and plundered Rome, ended their conquests by establishing themselves in Gaul and in Spain. One branch of these Goths appears to have been the Thuringians, whom we find in the fifth century established in the heart of Germany, where they erected a very powerful kingdom.

THE FRANKS were probably a confederacy which the German tribes, situated between the Rhine, the Maine, the Weser, and the Elbe, had formed among themselves, in order to maintain their liberty and independence against the Romans. Tacitus, who wrote about the commencement of the second century, did not know them under this new name, which occurs for the first time in the historians of the third century. Among the German tribes who composed this association we find the Chauvi, the Scambri, the Chamavi, the Cherusei, the Brueteri, the Catti, the Ampsivarii, the Ripuarii, the Salii, &c. These tribes, though com-

bined for the purposes of common defence, under the general name of Franks, preserved, nevertheless, each their laws and form of government, as well as their particular chiefs, and the names of their aboriginal tribes. In the fourth, and towards the beginning of the fifth century, the whole country lying within the Rhine, the Weser, the Maine, and the Elbe, was called *Franconia*.

Another confederation of the German tribes was that of the *ALEMANNI*; unknown also to Tacitus. It took its origin about the commencement of the third century. Their territories extended between the Danube, the Rhine, the Neckar, the Maine, and the Lahn. On the east, in a part of Franconia and modern Suabia, they had for their neighbours and allies the *SUEVI*, who, after having long formed a distinct nation, were at length bleuded with the Alemanni, and gave their country the name of Suabia. The Alemanni rendered themselves formidable to the Romans, by their frequent inroads into Gaul and Italy, in the third and fourth centuries.

THE SAXONS, unknown also to Tacitus, began to make a figure in history about the second century, when we find them settled beyond the Elbe, in modern Holstein, having for their neighbours the *ANGLES*, or English, inhabiting Sleswick Proper. These nations were early distinguished as pirates and freebooters; and, while the Franks and the Alemanni spread themselves over the interior of Gaul, the Saxons infested the coasts, and even extended their incursions into Britain. The Franks having penetrated into Gaul with their main forces, the Saxons passed the Elbe, and in course of time occupied, or united in alliance with them, the greater part of ancient France, which took from them the name of Saxony. There they subdivided themselves into three principal branches,—the *Ostphalians* to the east, the *Westphalians* to the west, and the *Angriani* or *Angriarii*, whose territories lay between the other two, along the Weser, and as far as the confines of Hesse.

THE HUNS, the most fierce and sanguinary of all the nations which overran the Roman empire in the fifth century, came from the remote districts of northern Asia, which were altogether unknown to the ancient Greeks and Romans. From the descriptions which the historians of the fifth and sixth centuries have given us of them, we are led to believe that they were Kalmucks or Mongols originally. The fame of their arms had begun to spread over Europe so early as the year 375 of the Christian era. Having subdued the Alans, and crossed the Tanais, they subverted the powerful monarchy of the Goths, and gave the first impulse to the great revolution of the fifth century, which changed the face of all Europe. The Eastern empire first felt the fury of these barbarians, who carried fire and sword wherever they went, rendered the emperors their tributaries, and then precipitated themselves on the West under the conduct of the famous Attila.⁵

Several of the nations we have now enumerated divided among themselves the territories of Gaul. This province, one of the richest and most important in the Western empire, was repeatedly overrun and devastated by the barbarous hordes of the fifth century. The Visigoths were the first that formed settlements in it. On their arrival, under the command of King Attila, or Adolphus

(412), they took possession of the whole country lying within the Loire, the Rhine, the Durane, the Mediterranean, and the Alps. Toulouse became their capital and the residence of their king.

THE *LEUGOSIANS*, a people, it would appear originally from the countries situated between the Oder and the Vistula, followed nearly in the track of the Visigoths; as we find them, about the year 413, established on the Upper Rhine and in Switzerland. After the dissolution of the empire they succeeded in establishing themselves in those parts of Gaul known by the names of the Sequani, Lyonnais, Viennois, and Narbonnois, viz. in the districts which formed, in course of time, the territories of the Burgundies, the provinces of Lyonnais, Dauphiné, and Provence on this side of the Durane, and the Pays de Vaud, the Valais, and Switzerland. These countries then assumed the name of the Kingdom of the Burgundians.

THE *ALEMANNI* and the *SUEVI* became flourishing nations on the banks of the Upper Rhine and the Danube. They invaded those countries of Gaul, or the *Germania Prima* of the Romans, known since under the names of Alsace, the Palatinate, Mayence, &c.; and extended their conquests also over a considerable part of Rhetia and Vindelicia.

At length the Franks, having been repulsed in different rencounters by the Romans, again passed the Rhine (430), under the conduct of Clodion, their chief; made themselves masters of the greater part of Belgic Gaul, took possession of Tournay, Cambrai, and Amiens; and thus laid the foundation of the new kingdom of France in Gaul. The Romans, however, still maintained their authority in the interior of that province, and the brave Etius, their general, made head against all the hordes of barbarians who disputed with him the dominion of Gaul.

It was at this crisis that the *HUNS* made their appearance on the theatre of war. The fierce Attila, a man of great military talents, after having overthrown various states, conquered Pannonia and different provinces of the Eastern empire of the right bank of the Danube, undertook his famous expedition into Gaul. Marching along the Danube from Pannonia, at the head of an immense army,⁷ he passed the Rhine near the Lake of Constance, pillaged and ravaged several places, and spread the terror of his arms over all Gaul. The Franks and the Visigoths united their forces with those of the Roman general, to arrest the progress of the barbarian. A bloody and obstinate encounter took place (451) on the plain of Chalons-sur-Marne, or Mery-sur-Seine, according to others. Thierry King of the Visigoths perished on the field of battle. Night separated the combatants; and Attila, who found his troops too much exhausted to renew the combat, resolved to retreat. The following year he made a descent on Italy, and committed great devastations. He proved his last expedition; for he died suddenly on his return, and the monarchy of the Huns expired with him.

The defeat of the Huns did not re-establish the shattered and ruinous affairs of the Romans in Gaul. The Salian Franks,⁸ under their kings, Meroveus and Childeric I., the successors of Clodion, extended their conquests more and more

at length Clovis, son of Childeric, succeeded to the dominion of the Romans in Gaul, by the victory which he gained over Syngarius, the last general, who died of a broken heart in consequence of this defeat. The Alemanni, having disputed with him the empire, he routed them completely (486) at the battle of Tolbiac, or Zulpich;⁹ and he succeeded soon after embracing Christianity, and by his new creed, and backed by the heretical sect of Arius, defeated their king, Alaric II., in the plain of Bourdeaux (507), and stripped them of their possessions between the Loire and the Alps, which became thus, by degrees, the possession of the Franks. The Visigoths added to their conquests the Kingdom of the Burgundians (534), which they transferred to These same princes increased their dominion the interior of Germany, by the conquest of the powerful kingdom of the Thuringians, comprising those vast countries between the Aller, the Elbe, the Saal, the Elbe, the Danube; and which are now the names of Saxony, Thuringia, Franconia, and Palatinate,¹¹ &c. This kingdom was their allies the Saxons, who obtained a part of it, situated between the Upper Rhine and the Elbe.

While the Visigoths, the Franks, and the Alemanni, were engaged in each other the conquest of Gaul, the Suevi, and the Alans, turned their eyes towards Spain. After having subdued Gaul, these tribes passed the Pyrenees, to establish themselves in the Kingdoms of Spain. The Vandals succeeded in the conquest of a part of Gallia; the Suevi of Galicia; while the Alans took possession of Lusitania and the province of Mauritania, which the Alans afterwards submitted to the King of the Vandals (429). The Vandals reserved their native princes, and their possessions in Gallia and Lusitania; this latter part was abandoned by the Vandals into Africa.

Meanwhile new conquerors began to appear in Spain. The Visigoths, who had driven the Romans in Gaul, took the Pyrenees, and their arms beyond the Pyrenees, under their King, Adolphus, made themselves masters of the city of Bourdeaux, one of the successors of Childeric, one of the successors of Childeric (472) all their possessions in Spain; and, by the conquest of their kings, completed the conquest of the country (584), by reducing the Suevi. The monarchy of the Visigoths, a flourishing state comprised, at the end of the reign of King Leovigild, the Kingdoms of Spain, Septimania or Languedoc, Mauritania Tingitana in Africa, and the country of the Mauri in the eighth century; when, as we shall see, it was finally overthrown by the Franks. In Northern Africa, one of the most fertile parts of the Roman empire, the Romans, was wrested from them by the Vandals. Count Boniface, who had been the successor of that country, having been defeated by the Emperor Valentinian

at length Clovis, son of Childeric I., put an end to the dominion of the Romans in that country, by the victory which he gained in 486, at the battle of Tolbiac or Zulpich;⁹ seized their estates, and soon after embraced Christianity. Emboldened by his new creed, and backed by the orthodox bishops, he attacked the Visigoths, who were of the heretical sect of Arius, defeated and killed their king, Alaric II., in the plains of Vouge, near Poitiers (507), and stripped them of all their possessions between the Loire and the Pyrenees.¹⁰ Gaul became thus, by degrees, the undisputed possession of the Franks. The descendants of Clovis added to their conquests the kingdom of the Burgundians (534), which they totally overthrew. These same princes increased their possessions in the interior of Germany, by the destruction of the powerful kingdom of the Thuringians (531), comprising those vast countries between the Werra, the Aller, the Elbe, the Saal, the Mulda, and the Saube; and which are now known under the names of Saxony, Thuringia, Franconia, the Upper Sarmatia,¹¹ &c. This kingdom they divided with their allies the Saxons, who obtained the northern part of it, situated between the Unstrut and the Saal.

While the Visigoths, the Burgundians, the Franks, and the Alemanni, were disputing with each other the conquest of Gaul, the Vandals, the Suevi, and the Alans, turned their ambitious views towards Spain. After having settled some years in Gaul, these tribes passed the Pyrenees (409) to establish themselves in the most fertile regions of Spain. The Vandals seized Bætica, and a part of Gallicia; the Suevi seized the rest of Gallicia; while the Alans took possession of Lusitania and the province of Carthagona. The Alans afterwards submitted to the sway of Genseric, King of the Vandals (420), while the Suevi preserved their native princes, who reigned in Gallicia and Lusitania; this latter province having been abandoned by the Vandals (427) when they were driven into Africa.

Meanwhile new conquerors began to make their appearance in Spain. The Visigoths, pressed by the Romans in Gaul, took the resolution of carrying their arms beyond the Pyrenees. Under the conduct of their King, Adolphus, they made themselves masters of the city of Barcelona (in 415). Alaric, one of the successors of this prince, took from the Romans (472) all that yet remained of their possessions in Spain; and Leovigild, another of their kings, completed the conquest of all that country (584), by reducing the kingdom of the Suevi. The monarchy of the Visigoths, which in its flourishing state comprised, besides the continent of Spain, Septimania or Languedoc in Gaul, and Mauritania Tingitana in Africa, maintained its existence until the commencement of the sixth century; when, as we shall afterwards see, it was finally overthrown by the Arabs.

In Northern Africa, one of the finest possessions of the Romans, was wrested from them by the Vandals. Count Boniface, who had the government of that country, having been falsely accused at the court of the Emperor Valentinian III., and be-

lieving himself ruined in the esteem of that prince, invited the Vandals over to Africa; and proposing to them the surrender of the provinces intrusted to his command. Genseric was at that time king of the Vandals. The preponderance which the Visigoths had acquired in Spain induced that prince to accept the offer of the Roman General; he embarked at the port of Andalusia (427), and passed with the Vandals and the Alans into Africa. Meantime Boniface, having made up matters amicably with the Imperial court, wished to retract the engagements which he had made with the Vandals. Genseric nevertheless persisted in his enterprise. He carried on a long and obstinate war with the Romans; the result of which turned to the advantage of the barbarians. Genseric conquered in succession all that part of Africa pertaining to the Western empire, from the Straits of Cadiz as far as Cyrenaica, which was dependent on the empire of the East. He subdued likewise the Balearic Isles, with Sardinia, Corsica, and a part of Sicily.

The writers of that age who speak of this invasion agree in painting, in the most lively colours, the horrors with which it was accompanied. It appears that Genseric, whose whole subjects, including old men and slaves, did not exceed eighty thousand persons, being resolved to maintain his authority by terror, caused, for this purpose, a general massacre to be made of the ancient inhabitants of Africa. To these political severities were added others on the score of religion; being devoted with all his subjects to the Arian heresy, he as well as his successors became the constant and implacable persecutors of the orthodox Christians.

This prince signalized himself by his maritime exploits, and by the piracies which he committed on the coasts of Italy and the whole Roman empire. Encouraged, as is supposed, by the Empress Eudoxia, who wished to avenge the death of her husband Valentinian III., he undertook an expedition into Italy (455), in which he made himself master of Rome. This city was pillaged during fifteen days by the Vandals, spoiled of all its riches and its finest monuments. Innumerable statues, ornaments of temples, and the gilded cupola of the temple of Jupiter Capitolinus, were removed in order to be transported to Africa; together with many thousands of illustrious captives. A vessel laden with the most precious monuments of Rome perished in the passage.

The dominion of the Vandals in Africa lasted about a hundred years. Their kingdom was destroyed by the Emperor Justinian, who reunited Africa to the empire of the East. Glimmer, the last king of the Vandals, was conquered by Belisarius (534), and conducted by him in triumph to Constantinople.

BRITAIN, inaccessible by its situation to most of the invaders that overran the Western empire, was infested in the fifth century by the northern inhabitants of that island—the free Britons, known by the name of Caledonians or Picts, and Scots. The Romans having withdrawn their legions from the island (410), to employ them in Gaul, the Britons, abandoned to their own strength, thought proper to elect a king of their own nation, named Vortigern; but, finding themselves still too weak to resist the incursions of the Picts and Scots,

who, breaking over the wall of Severus, pillaged and laid waste the Roman province, they took the imprudent resolution of calling in to their succour the Angles, Saxons, and Jutlanders, who were already distinguished for their maritime incursions. A body of these Anglo-Saxons arrived in Britain (450) in the first year of the reign of the Emperor Marcian, under the command of Hengist and Horsa. From being friends and allies, they soon became enemies of the Britons; and ended by establishing their own dominion in the island. The native islanders, after a protracted struggle, were driven into the province of Wales, where they succeeded in maintaining their independence against their new conquerors. A number of these fugitive Britons, to escape from the yoke of the invaders, took refuge in Gaul. There they were received by the Franks into Armorica and part of Lyonnais, to which they gave the name of Brittany.

The Anglo-Saxons founded successively seven petty kingdoms in Britain, viz., Kent, Sussex, Wessex, Essex, Northumberland, East Anglia, and Mercia. Each of these kingdoms had severally their own kings; but they were all united in a political association, known by the name of the Heptarchy. One of the seven kings was the common chief of the confederacy; and there was a general convention of the whole, called *witnagenot*, or the assembly of the wise men. Each kingdom was likewise governed by its own laws, and had its separate assemblies, whose power limited the royal authority. This federal system continued till the ninth century, when Egbert the Great succeeded in abolishing the Heptarchy (827), and raised himself to be king over all England.

In the midst of this general overthrow there were still to be seen in Italy the phantoms of the Roman emperors, feebly supporting a dignity which had long since lost its splendour. This fine country had been desolated by the Visigoths, the Huns, and the Vandals, in succession, without becoming the fixed residence of any one of these nations. The conquest of that ancient seat of the first empire in the world was reserved for the Heruls and the Rugians. For a long time these German nations, who are generally supposed to have emigrated from the coasts of the Baltic Sea, had been approaching towards the Danube. They served as auxiliaries to the Romans in Italy, after the example of various other tribes of their countrymen. Being resolved to usurp the dominion of that country, they chose for their king Odoacer, under whose conduct they seized Ravenna and Rome, dethroned Romulus Momyllus Augustulus, the last of the Roman emperors (476), and put an entire end to the empire of the West.

The Heruls did not enjoy these conquests more than seventeen years, when they were deprived of them in their turn by the Ostrogoths. This nation then occupied those extensive countries on the right bank of the Danube, in Pannonia, Illyria, and Thrace, within the limits of the Eastern empire. They had rendered themselves formidable to the Romans in that quarter by their frequent incursions into the very heart of the empire. The Emperor Zeno, in order to withdraw these dangerous neighbours from his frontiers, encouraged their king, Theodoric, as is alleged, to undertake the conquest of Italy from the Heruls.

This prince immediately penetrated into the country; he defeated the Heruls in several actions, and at length forced Odoacer to shut himself up in the city of Ravenna (489), where, after a siege of three years, he fell into the hands of the conqueror, who deprived him at once of his throne and his life.

Theodoric deserves not to be confounded with the other barbarous kings of the fifth century. Educated at the court of Constantinople, where he passed the years of his youth, he had learned to establish his authority by the equity of his laws and the wisdom of his administrations. He ruled an empire which, besides Italy, embraced a great part of Pannonia, Rhetia, Noricum, and Illyria.

This monarchy, formidable as it was, did not exist beyond the space of sixty years; after a sanguinary warfare of eighteen years, it was totally subverted by the Greeks. The Emperor Justinian employed his generals, Belisarius¹² and Narses, in recovering Italy and Sicily from the hands of the Goths. This nation defended their possessions with determined obstinacy. Encouraged by Totila, one of their last kings, they maintained a protracted struggle against the Greeks, and with considerable success. It was during this war that the city of Rome was pillaged afresh, and at length (547) dismantled by the Goths. Totila sustained a complete defeat at the foot of the Apennines in Umbria (552), and died of the wounds which he had received in the action. His successor Totila

was by no means so fortunate in military affairs. In a bloody battle which he fought with Narses in Campania (553), he was vanquished and slain. His dominions passed into the hands of the Greeks, with the exception of that part of Rhetia and Noricum which the Alemanns occupied, which, during the war between the Greeks and the Goths, had become the possession of the Franks (568).

A new revolution happened in Italy (568), the invasion of the Lombards. This people, who originally inhabited the northern part of Germany on the Elbe, and formed a branch of the great nation of the Suevi, had at length fixed themselves in Pannonia (527), after several times changing their abode. They then joined with the Avares, an Asiatic people, against the Gepidae, who possessed a formidable dominion in ancient Dacia, on the left bank of the Danube. This state was soon overturned by the combined forces of the Franks, the Slavs, and the whole territories of the Gepidae, which passed (565) under the dominion of the Avares. The Lombards also abandoned to them their possessions in Pannonia, and went in quest of new settlements into Italy. It was in the spring of 568 that they began their route, under the conduct of their King Alboin, who, without coming to regular combat with the Greeks, took from them, in possession, a great number of cities and provinces. Pavia, which the Goths had fortified with care, was the only town that opposed him with vigorous resistance; and it did not surrender till after a siege of three years, in 572. The Lombards made this town the capital of their dominions, which, besides Upper Italy, comprehended also a considerable part of the middle and lower districts, which the Lombards gradually wrested from the Greeks.

The revolution, of which we have just

seen a summary view, Europe; but it had a more favourable fate of ancient Germanies, whose former borders the Danube, now and these rivers. The nations, recorded by Tacitus, were replaced by the federations, viz., the Alemanns, Suabians, and Franks, who occupied all the regions under the name of Germani. The Alemanns, and the Franks, occupied, along with the other part of what is called the sides of the Danube, the banks, masters of a portion reserved, under their immediate Rhine, a part of ancient territories of which the Alemanns¹³ and the Thuringians. This nation defended their possessions with those of the Thuringians; and as to the protracted struggle against the Greeks, and with considerable success. It was during this war that the city of Rome was pillaged afresh, and at length (547) dismantled by the Goths. Totila sustained a complete defeat at the foot of the Apennines in Umbria (552), and died of the wounds which he had received in the action. His successor Totila

This nation, different from the other, occupied a great part of Upper Germany, until the Christian era. Jornandes, in the sixth century, is the first who mentions them. He calls them Scythians, and distinguishes them into three nations, the Slavi, and the Gepidae, who occupied the vast territories between the Euxine Sea, between the Niéper, &c. It was in the sixth century that they began their ancient habitations over the east and sides of the Danube. On the one side they extended to the Saal; on the other to the Danube, and penetrated into Illyria; occupying a great part of this day under the name of the Gepidae, Servia, Bosnia, Croatia, and the whole of the Avares, in the history of the sixth century, are more memorable than the emperors of the East had to do with the Slavians of the Danube. These colonies of themselves on the Elbe, and the countries situated on the banks of the Danube, were the Czech and Sorabians inhabiting between the Saal and the Elbe, known under the name of the Slavi, and Lower Slavonians, which the Avares comprehended also a considerable part of the middle and lower districts, which the Lombards gradually wrested from the Greeks. In the seventh century, they ruled over many of the

prehended in a government like this, where the great body of the nation were in arms, sat in their general assemblies, and marched to the field of war. Their kings, however, soon invented an expedient calculated to shackle the national liberty, and to augment their own influence in the public assemblies, by the number of retainers which they found means to support. This expedient, founded on the primitive manners of the Germans, was the institution of fiefs.

It was long a custom among the ancient Germans, that their chiefs should have, in peace as well as in war, a numerous suite of the bravest youths attached to their person. Besides provisions, they supplied them with horses and arms, and shared with them the spoil which they took in war. This practice subsisted even after the Germans had established themselves in the provinces of the Western empire. The kings, and, after their example, the nobles, continued to entertain a vast number of companions and followers; and, the better to secure their allegiance, they granted them, instead of horses and arms, the enjoyment of certain portions of land, which they dismembered from their own territories.

These grants, known at first by the name of *benefices*, and afterwards of *fiefs*, subjected those who received them to personal services, and allegiance to the superiors of whom they held them. As they were bestowed on the individual possessor, and on the express condition of personal service, it is obvious that originally fiefs or benefices were not hereditary, and that they returned to the superior when the reason for which they had been given no longer existed.

The laws and jurisprudence of the Romans were in full practice through all the provinces of the Western empire when the German nations established themselves there. Far from superseding or abolishing them, the invaders permitted the ancient inhabitants, and such of their new subjects as desired it, to live conformably to these laws, and to retain them in their courts of justice. Nevertheless, without adopting this system of jurisprudence, which accorded neither with the rudeness of their manners, nor the imperfection of their ideas, they took great care, after their settlement in the Roman provinces, to have their ancient customs, to which they were so peculiarly attached, digested and reduced to writing.

The Codes of the Salian and Riparian Franks, those of the Visigoths, the Burgundians, the Bavarians, the Anglo-Saxons, the Frisians, the Alemanni, and the Lombards, were collected into one body, and liberty given to every citizen to be governed according to that code of laws which he himself might choose. All these laws wore the impress of the military spirit of the Germans, as well as of their attachment to that personal liberty and independence which is the true characteristic of human nature in its primitive state. According to these laws, every person was judged by his peers; and the right of vengeance was reserved to the individuals, or the whole family, of those who had received injuries. Feuds, which thus became hereditary, were not however irreconcilable. Compromise was allowed for all private delinquencies, which could be expiated, by paying to the injured party a specified sum, or a certain number of cattle. Murder itself might be expiated

in this manner; and every part of the body by tax or equivalent, which was more or less severe according to the different rank or condition of offenders.

Every freeman was exempt from corporal punishment; and, in doubtful cases, the law obliged the judge to refer the parties to single combat, enjoining them to decide their quarrel sword in hand. Hence, we have the origin of the *Judgements of God*, as well as of *Challenges* and *Duels*. These customs of the German nations, and the singular resolution in persisting in them, could not interrupt the good order of society, encourage barbarism, and stamp the same character of rudeness on all their conquests. New wants sprang from new enjoyments; while opulence, and the contagion of example, taught them to contrivances of which they had been ignorant, and which they did not redeem by new virtues. Murder, oppressions, and robberies, multiplied every day. The sword was made the standard of honour, the rule of justice and injustice; cruelty and perjury became everywhere the reigning character of the court, the nobility, and the people.

Literature, with the arts and sciences, felt all the baneful effects of this revolution. In less than a century after the first invasion of the barbarians there scarcely remained a single trace of the literature and fine arts of the Romans. Learning, it is true, had for a long time been gradually falling into decay, and a corrupt taste had begun to appear among the Romans in works of genius and imagination; but no comparison can be made between the state of literature, such as it was in the West anterior to the revolution of the fifth century, and that which we find there after the conquests of the German nations.

These barbarians, addicted solely to war and the chase, despised the arts and sciences. Under their destructive hands, the finest monuments of the Romans were levelled to the ground; the libraries were reduced to ashes; their schools and seminaries of instruction annihilated. The few rays of learning that remained to the vanquished were unable to enlighten or civilize those enemies to knowledge and mental cultivation. The sciences, unprotected and unprotected by the ferocious conquerors, soon fell into total contempt.

It is to the Christian religion alone, which was embraced, in succession, by the barbarous destroyers of the empire, that we owe the preservation of the mutilated and venerable remains which possess of Greek and Roman literature.¹⁹ The clergy, being the authorized teachers of religion and the only interpreters of the sacred writings, were obliged by their office to have some time devoted to letters. They thus became, over all the Empire, the sole depositaries of learning; and for a long series of ages there were none in any other rank or profession of life that occupied themselves with science, or had the slightest acquaintance with the art of writing. These advantages, which the clergy enjoyed, contributed in no small degree to augment their credit and their influence. Everywhere they were intrusted with the management of state affairs; and the offices of chancellor, ministers, public notaries, and in general all situations where knowledge of the art of writing was indispensable, were reserved for them; and in this way their very name (*clericus*) became as it were

synonym for a man capable of handling the sword, held the first rank in war, marched to the head of their vassals.

Another circumstance which contributed to the credit and the power of the Latin language, was the Roman provinces, the dominion of which was written exclusively in Latin, which became the language of public acts; and it was by degrees reduced to writing in the Latin, and the arts and constructions of the new languages, their Roman origin, Portuguese, French and the fifth and following language, or that spoken in the court, was called *lingua*, and distinguished from the vulgar language spoken by the people. This gave rise to the French language, before, from what we know of the Germanic West was the true language, ignorance, and the state of Europe was so degraded.

There would have been a more complete deplore a revolution than disastrous in its effects, had it not been for the bringing Europe from the barbarians; and, on the other hand, the rude institutions of the Germans of liberty, which led the nations to a better organized government among the states which formed the empire; that of a moderate and balanced character of being the European. This movement extended still more to the whole of Gaul, and to the Visigoths, many also was subjected to Saxony, and the territories had fallen into decay, and the descendants of the Visigoths, however by the warriors of the palace, were original splendour of these mayors, from the hands of the emperor and ministers, governed by the kings. This was Pepin d'Heristal, the Carlovingians, who, towards the year 750, under the name of the empire, was divided into three kingdoms, viz. that of the West, the Eastern France, situated between the Rhine; as well as

the body ha
or less sev
condition of
n corporat
the law obli
single com
marra swor
of the *Juc
es and Duc
ions, and t
them, could
society, encour
character of
wants spr
evidence, and
em to count
rant, and wh
ness. Murd
died every d
of honour,
elty and per
character of
ences, felt
lution. In
ision of the
single trace
omans. Les
been gradu
taste had be
works of ge
son can be m
uch as it was
tion of the
there after
ely to war
sciences. I
quest monum
e ground; t
their schools
ated. The fo
to the vanqui
ze those em
ation. The s
ected by th
total conten
done, which
barbarous destr
e preservation
ains which
erature.¹⁹
hers of relig
sacred writin
ave some funct
ver all the E
; and for al
any other r
themselves v
quaintance e
advantages, wh
no small de
fluence. Ev
the managin
chancellor, m
eral all situat
riting was in
; and in this
e as it were*

onym for a man of letters, or any person able of handling the pen. The bishops, moreover, held the first rank in all political assemblies, and in war marched to the field in person, at the head of their vassals.

Another circumstance that contributed to raise credit and the power of the clergy was, that Latin language continued to be employed in the Roman provinces which had been subjected to the dominion of the German nations. Every thing was written exclusively in the Roman tongue, which became the language of the church, and of public acts; and it was long before the German dialects, which had become universally prevalent, could be reduced to writing. The corrupt pronunciation of the Latin, and its mixture with foreignisms and constructions, gave birth, in course of time, to new languages, which still retain evidence of their Roman origin, such as the Italian, Spanish, Portuguese, French and English languages. In the fifth and following centuries, the Teutonic language, or that spoken by the conquerors of Gaul, was called *lingua Francica*: this was distinguished from the *lingua Romana*, or the language spoken by the people; and which afterwards gave rise to the modern French. It appears, therefore, from what we have just stated, that the partition of the German tribes into the provinces of the West was the true source of all the barbarity, ignorance, and superstition, in which that part of Europe was so long and so universally involved.

There would have been, therefore, every reason to deplore a revolution, not less sanguinary in its effects than disastrous in its consequences, if, on the other hand, it had not been the instrument of degrading Europe from the terrible despotism of the Germans; and, on the other, if we did not find, in the rude institutions of the German conquerors, the germs of liberty, which, sooner or later, were to lead the nations of Europe to wiser laws, and better organized governments.

Among the states which rose on the ruins of the Roman empire, that of the Franks acquired the preponderance; and, for several ages, it sustained the character of being the most powerful kingdom in Europe. This monarchy, founded by Clovis, extended still more by his successors, embraced the whole of Gaul except Languedoc, which belonged to the Visigoths.²⁰ The greater part of many also was subject to it, with the exception of Saxony, and the territories of the Slavi. After it had fallen into decay, by the partitions and civil wars of the descendants of Clovis, it rose again, chiefly however by the wisdom and ability of the Merovingian monarchs, who restored it once more to its original splendour.

These mayors, from being originally merely the administrators of the court, rose by degrees to be the ministers, governors of the state, and ultimately to be kings. The founder of their greatness was Pepin d'Heristal, a cadet of the dynasty of the Merovingians, which succeeded that of the Franks, towards the middle of the eighth century. Under the Merovingian princes, the sovereignty was divided between two principal dynasties, viz. that of Austrasia, which comprehended Eastern France, being all that part of Gaul situated between the Meuse, the Scheld, and the Rhine; as well as the German provinces

beyond the Rhine, which also made a part of that monarchy. The whole of Western Gaul, lying between the Scheld, the Meuse and the Loire, was called Neustria. Burgundy, Aquitaine, and Provence, were considered as dependencies of this latter kingdom.

Dagobert II., King of Austrasia, having been assassinated (in 678), the King of Neustria, Thierry III., would in all probability have reunited the two monarchies; but the Austrasians, who dreaded and detested Ebroin, Mayor of Neustria, elected a mayor of their own, under the nominal authority of Thierry. This gave rise to a sort of civil war between the Austrasians and the Neustrians, headed by Pepin d'Heristal, Mayor of Austrasia, and Bertaire, Mayor of Neustria, who succeeded Ebroin. The battle which Pepin gained at Testry, near St. Quentin (687), decided the fate of the empire; Bertaire was slain, and Thierry III. fell into the power of the conqueror. Pepin afterwards confirmed to Thierry the honours of royalty, and contented himself with the dignity of Mayor, and the title of Duke and Prince of the Franks; but regarding the throne as his own by right of conquest, he vested in himself the sovereign authority, and granted to the Merovingian Prince nothing more than the mere externals of majesty, and the simple title of king. Such was the revolution that transferred the supreme authority of the Franks to a new dynasty, viz. that of the Carolingians, who, with great moderation, still preserved, during a period of sixty-five years, the royal dignity to the Merovingian princes, whom they had stripped of all their power.²¹

Pepin d'Heristal being dead (714), the partisans of the ancient dynasty made a last effort to liberate the Merovingian kings from that dependence under which Pepin had held them so long. This prince, in transferring the sovereign authority to his grandson Theodwald, only six years of age, had devolved on his widow, whose name was Plectrude, the regency and guardianship of the young mayor.

A government so extraordinary emboldened the factious to attempt a revolution. The regent, as well as her grandson, were divested of the sovereignty, and the Neustrian grandees chose a mayor of their own party named Rainfroy; but their triumph was only of short duration. Charles Martel, a natural son of Pepin as is supposed, having escaped from the prison where he had been detained by the regent, passed into Austrasia, and then caused himself to be proclaimed duke, after the example of his father. He engaged in a war against Chilperic II. and his mayor Rainfroy; three successive victories which he gained, viz. at Stavelo, Vinei near Cambrai, and Soissons, in 716—17—18, made him once more master of the throne and the sovereign authority. The duke of Aquitaine having delivered up King Chilperic to him, he confirmed anew the title of royalty to that prince; and shortly after raised his glory to its highest pitch, by the brilliant victories which he gained over the Arabs (733—737), in the plains of Poitiers and Narbonne.

Pepin le Bref (or the Short), son and successor of Charles Martel, finding his authority established both within and without his dominions, judged this a favourable opportunity for reuniting the title of royalty to the power of the sovereign. He managed to have himself elected King in the Ge-

UNIVERSITY OF

neral Assembly of the Franks, which was convened in the Champ-de-Mars, in the neighbourhood of Soissons. Childeric III. the last of the Merovingian kings, was there deposed (751), and shut up in a convent. Pepin, with the intention of rendering his person sacred and inviolable, had recourse to the ceremony of coronation; and he was the first king who caused himself to be solemnly consecrated and crowned in the cathedral of Soissons, by St. Boniface, first archbishop of Mayence.²² The example of Pepin was followed soon after by several princes and sovereigns of Europe. The last conquest he added to his dominion was the province of Languedoc, which he took (759) from the Arabs.

The origin of the secular power of the Roman pontiffs commences with the reign of Pepin. This event, which had so peculiar an influence on the religion and government of the European nations, requires to be detailed at some length.

At the period of which we write, there existed a violent controversy between the churches in the East, and those in the West, respecting the worship of images. The Emperor Leo, the Isaurian, had declared himself against this worship, and had proscribed it by an imperial edict (726). He and his successors persisted in destroying these objects of idolatry, as well as in persecuting those who avowed themselves devotees to this heresy. This extravagant zeal, which the Roman pontiffs blamed as excessive, excited the indignation of the people against the Grecian Emperors.²³ In Italy, there were frequent rebellions against the imperial officers that were charged with the execution of their orders. The Romans especially took occasion, from this, to expel the duke or governor, who resided in their city on the part of the emperor; and they formally erected themselves into a republic (730), under the pontificate of Gregory II., by usurping all the rights of sovereignty, and, at the same time, reviving the ancient names of the senate and the Roman people. The Pope was recognised as chief or head of this new republic, and had the general direction of all affairs, both at home and abroad. The territory of this republic, formed of the duchy of Rome, extended, from north to south, from Viterbo as far as Terracina; and from east to west, from Narni to the mouth of the Tiber. Such was the weakness of the Eastern empire, that all the efforts of the emperors to reduce the Romans to subjection proved unavailing. The Greek viceroy—the Duke of Naples, who had marched to besiege Rome, was killed in battle, together with his son; and the exarch himself was compelled to make peace with the republicans.

This state of distress to which the Grecian empire was reduced afforded the Lombards an opportunity of extending their possessions in Italy. Aistolphus their king attacked the city of Ravenna (751), where the exarchs or governors-general of the Greeks had fixed their residence; and soon made himself master of it, as well as the province of the exarchate,²⁴ and the Pentapolis. The exarch Eutychius was obliged to fly, and took shelter in Naples.

This surrender of the capital of Grecian Italy emboldened the Lombard king to extend his views still farther; he demanded the submission of the city and duchy of Rome, which he considered

as a dependency of the exarchate. Pope Stephen II. became alarmed, and began to solicit an alliance with the Greek empire, whose distant power seemed to him less formidable than that of the Lombards, his neighbours; but being closely pressed by Aistolphus, and finding that he had no success to expect from Constantinople, he determined to apply for protection to the Franks and their king Pepin.

The Franks, at that time, held the first rank among the nations of Europe; their exertions against the Arabians had gained them a high reputation for valour over all the West. Stephen repaired in person to France, and in an interview which he had with Pepin, he found himself interested that prince in his cause. Pepin did not regard himself as securely established on a throne which he had so recently usurped from the Merovingian princes; more especially as there subsisted a son of Childeric III., named Thierry, a formidable rival in the puissant dukes of the Franks, who were cadets of the same family, and had no other right to the crown than that of election; and this title, instead of descending to his sons, might perhaps serve as a pretext for depriving them of the sovereignty. Anxious to render the crown hereditary, he induced the Pope to renew the ceremony of his coronation in the Church of St. Denis; and at the same time consecrate his two sons, Charles and Carloman. The Pope did more; he disengaged the King from the oath which he had taken to Childeric, bound all the nobility of the Franks, that were present on the occasion, in the name of Christ and St. Peter, to preserve the royal throne in the right of Pepin and his descendants; and, lastly, that he might the more effectually secure the attachment of Pepin and his sons, and procure himself the title of being their protector, publicly conferred on them the honour of patricians of Rome.

So great condescension on the part of the Pope could not but excite the gratitude of Pepin, who not only promised him succour against the Arabians, he engaged to recover the exarchate from their hands, and make a present of it to the Pope; he even made him a grant of it by anticipation, which he signed at the Castle of Chiersy-Poisse, and which he likewise caused to be signed by the princes his sons.²⁵ It was in fulfilment of these stipulations that Pepin undertook (753) two successive expeditions into Italy. He expelled Aistolphus to acknowledge himself a vassal, and deliver up to him the exarchate of the Pentapolis, of which he immediately possessed himself in possession. This donation of Pepin served to confirm and to extend the secular power of the Popes, which had already been augmented by various grants of a similar kind. The only document of this singular contract now remaining exists; but the names of the places are preserved which were ceded to the pontifical hierarchy.

In the conclusion of this period, it may be proper to take some notice of the Arabs, commonly called Saracens,²⁷ and of their irruption into Europe. Mahomet, an Arab of noble birth, a native of Mecca, had constituted himself a prophet, a legislator, and a conqueror, about the beginning of the seventh century of the Christian era. He had been expelled from Mecca,

account of his pretensions to the head of a new religion, and self master of the Arabian empire, in subjecting the kingdoms of Arabia. His disciples, the Caliphs, or viceroys, were the prophet, followed by his disciples. They propagated his doctrine, and extended their empire to the vast regions of Syria, Palestine, Egypt, and the northern coasts of the Greek empire by the time (651) overthrew the Persians; conquered the Indies, and followed by the Caliphs, and afterwards by the Caliph Mohammed; and by the Caliph Harun, (766) who

was under the Caliph Harun, the Arabs first invaded the archipelago of the Visigoths, who had already sunk into decay, and the despoiled themselves. These latter, having decided with supreme authority of the nation, and in that time commanded by the Caliph Harun, he sent in the name of Tariq, or Tariq, a descent on the coast of the hill of Gibraltar (Gibralta), in commemoration of which was in the neighbourhood of Frontera, in Andalusia, the army of the king Roderic. The Visigoths sustained a defeat in the flight; Roderic, not having arrived in time, the conquest of the province of this viceroys, which then became a monarchy, passed into the dominion of the Arabs, these fierce invaders. These Arabs in Europe to Spain, Sicily, Sardinia, Calabria, fell likewise, and the sea was once carried to the gates of Rome. It was not until the reign of Charlemagne that the Arabs were expelled from the province of Languedoc, and the unity of the empire was restored. Harun did not long

then II., Pop
bs and Sura
omet, Prop

Walid invades Europe.
Tariq conquers Spain.
Aravicus defeated.

Abdralhman of Cordova.
Al. Fatimite Caliph.
Harum Alrashid. 19

Pope Stolicit an all
power se
of the Loui
pressed by
no succor
determin
s and their
d the first
; their ex
hem a high
West. St
in an inter
and means
epin did n
ashed on a
from the M
as there s
omed Thier
ed dukes of
ume family.
han that of
esceding to
a pretext for
Anxious to
sueed the Pe
coration in
the same tim
es and Char
ged the King
to Childeric
Franks, that
e name of
the royal di
descendants
effectually s
sons, and pr
their protect
honour of
part of the
le of Pepin
against the
ic exarchate
of it to the
of it by anti
tle of Chiers
caused to be
as in fulfillm
dertook (755
Italy). He
edge himsel
the exarchate
mediately p
donation of
the secular p
ly been augm
ind. The or
contract no l
aces are pres
gate hierarchy
od, it may be
Arabs, comm
irruption into
noble birth,
ed himself a
ror, about the
y of the Chr
from Mecca

account of his predictions, but afterwards re-
ated at the head of an army; and having made
self master of the city, he succeeded, by de-
s, in subjecting to his yoke the numerous
s of Arabia. His successors, known by the
e of Caliphs, or vicars spiritual and temporal
the prophet, followed the same triumphant
er. They propagated their religion wherever
extended their empire, and overran with their
quests the vast regions both of Asia and Africa.
e, Palestine, Egypt, Barca, Tripoli, and the
le northern coasts of Africa, were won from
Greek empire by the Caliphs; who at the
time (631) overthrew the powerful monarchy
e Persians; conquered Charasm, Transoxiana,
the Indies, and founded an empire more ex-
tensive than that of the Romans had been. The
ral of the Caliphs, which had originally been
edina, and afterwards at Cufa, was transferred
d) by the Caliph Moavia I. to Damascus in
; and by the Caliph Mhauzor, to Bagdad in
Arabia, (766) which was founded by that
er.
was under the Caliphate of Walid (711), that
Arabs first invaded Europe, and attacked the
archy of the Visigoths in Spain. This mo-
ny had already sunk under the feebleness of
ings, and the despotic prerogatives which the
lers, and especially the bishops, had arrogated
emselves. These latter disposed of the throne
eir pleasure, having declared it to be elective.
y decided with supreme authority in the coun-
of the nation, and in all affairs of state. Muza
at time commanded in northern Africa, in
s of the Caliph Walid. By the authority of
sovereign, he sent into Spain one of his gene-
named Tariq, or Taree-Abenzara, who, having
e a descent on the coasts of Andalusia, took
tation on the hill which the ancients called
s, and which has since been known by the
s of Gibraltar (Gibel-Tariq), or the hill of
s, in commemoration of the Arabian general.
was in the neighbourhood of the city Xeres
Fraterna, in Andalusia, that Tariq encoun-
ed the army of the Visigoths, commanded by
king Roderic. The battle was decisive, as
Visigoths sustained a total defeat. Roderic
hed in the flight; and Muza, the Arabian
mor, having arrived to second the efforts of
s, the conquest of all Spain followed as a
quence of this victory.²⁰ Septimania, or
quedo, which then made a part of the Visi-
ic monarchy, passed at the same time under
ommission of the Arabs.
ese fierce invaders did not limit their con-
s in Europe to Spain and Languedoc; the
ric Isles, Sardinia, Corsica, part of Apulia
Calabria, fell likewise under their dominion;
infested the sea with their fleets, and more
once carried terror and desolation to the
ates of Rome. It is probable even that all
pe would have submitted to their yoke, if
les Martel had not arrested the career of their
ries. He defeated their numerous and war-
armies in the bloody battles which were fought
Poitiers and Narbonne (732-737), and at
h compelled them to shut themselves up with-
in province of Languedoc.
e unity of the empire and the religion of
omet did not long remain undivided. The

first dynasty of the Caliphs, that of the Omniades,
was subverted; and all the princes of that family
massacred by the Abassides (749), who seized
the caliphate.²⁰ A solitary descendant of the Om-
niades, named Abdralhman, grandson of the fif-
teenth Caliph Hasehem, was saved in Spain, and
fixed his residence at Cordova; and being ac-
knowledged as Caliph by the Mussulmans there,
he detached that province from the great empire
of the Arabians (756).
This revolution, and the confusion with which
it was accompanied, gave fresh courage to the
small number of Visigoths, who, to escape the
Mahometan yoke, had retired to the mountains of
Asturias. Issuing from their retreats, they retali-
ated on the Infidels; and towards the middle of
the eighth century, they laid the foundation of a
new Christian state, called afterwards the kingdom
of Oviedo or Leon. Alphonso I., surnamed the
Catholic, must be regarded as the first founder of
this new monarchy.²⁰
The Franks, likewise, took advantage of these
events to expel the Arabs from Languedoc. Pepin
took possession of the cities of Nismes, Mague-
lonne, Agde, and Beziers (732), which were deli-
vered up to him by a noble Goth, named Osmund.
The reduction of Narbonne was by no means so
easy a task. For seven years he continued to
blockade it; and it was not until 759 that he be-
came master of the city, and the whole of Lan-
guedoc.
The loss of Spain, on the part of the Abassides,
was soon after followed by that of Northern Africa.
Ibrahim-Ben-Aglab, having been sent thither as
governor by the Caliph of Bagdad, Harum
Alrashid (800), he found means to constitute
himself sovereign prince over the countries then
properly termed Africa; of which Tripoli, Cairo, and
Tunis, and Algiers, formed a part. He was the
founder of the dynasty of the Aglabites;²¹ while
another usurper, named Edris, having conquered
Numidia and Mauritania, called by the Arab
Mogyreb, founded that of the Edrissites. These
two dynasties were overturned (ab. at 908) by
Aboul Cassem Mohammed, son of Obeidallah,
who claimed to be descended from Ali, by Fatima
daughter of the prophet; he subjected the whole
of Northern Africa to his yoke, and took the titles
of *Mahadi* and Caliph. From him were descended
the Caliphs, called Fatimites, who extended their
conquests to Egypt, and laid there the foundation
of Kahrab, or Grand Cairo (968), where they
established the seat of their caliphate, which, in
the twelfth century, was destroyed by the Ayo-
bides.
The irruption of the Arabs into Spain, disastrous
as it was, did not fail to produce effects beneficial
to Europe, which owes its civilisation partly to
this circumstance. The Abassidian Caliphs, as-
piring to be the protectors of letters and arts,
began to found schools, and to encourage transla-
tions of the most eminent Greek authors into the
Arabic language. Their example was followed by
the Caliphs of Cordova, and even by the Fatimites,
who held the sovereignty of Egypt and Northern
Africa. In this manner a taste for learning was
communicated to all the Mahometan states. From
Bagdad it passed to Cairo; and from the banks of
the Euphrates and the Nile, it spread itself as far
as the Tagus. Mathematics,²² Astronomy, Che-

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

those parts of continental Europe. England then presented a heptarchy of seven confederate governments, the union of which was far from being well consolidated. The kings of this confederacy were incessantly engaged in war with each other; and it was not until several years after Charlemagne, that Egbert the Great, king of Wessex, prevailing in the contest, constituted himself king of all England in 827.

The Mahometan part of Spain, after it was separated from the great empire of the Caliphs, was engaged in perpetual warfare with the East. The Omniades, sovereigns of Cordova, far from provoking their western neighbours, whose valour they had already experienced, showed themselves, on the contrary, attentive to preserve peace and good understanding with them. The Greek emperors, who were continually quarrelling with the Arabs and Bulgarians, and agitated by factious and intestine commotions, could no longer be an object of suspicion or rivalry to the monarchy of the Franks.

Thus did the empire of Charlemagne enjoy the glory of being the ascendant power in Europe; but it did not long sustain its original splendour. It would have required a man of extraordinary talents to manage the reins of a government so extensive and so complicated. Louis-le-Debonnaire, or the Gentle, the son and successor of Charles, did not possess a single qualification proper to govern the vast dominions which his father had bequeathed to him. As impolitic as he was weak and superstitious, he had not the art of making himself either loved or feared by his subjects. By the imprudent partition of his dominions between his sons, which he made even in his lifetime, he planted with his own hand those seeds of discord in his family which accelerated the downfall of the empire. The civil wars which had commenced in his reign continued after his death. Louis, surnamed the German, and Charles the Bald, combined against their elder brother Lothaire, and defeated him at the famous battle of Pontenay in Burgundy (841), where all the flower of the ancient nobility perished. Louis and Charles, victorious in this engagement, obliged their brother to take refuge in Italy. They next marched to Strasbourg, where they renewed their alliance (842), and confirmed it by oath at the head of their troops.²

These princes were on the point of dividing the whole monarchy between them, when, by the interference of the nobility, they became reconciled to their elder brother, and concluded a treaty with him at Verdun (843), which finally completed the division of the empire. By this formal distribution, Lothaire retained the imperial dignity, with the kingdom of Italy, and the provinces situated between the Rhone, the Saone, the Meuse, the Scheld, the Rhine, and the Alps. Louis had all Germany beyond the Rhine, and on this side of the river, the cantons of Mayence, Spire, and Worms; and, lastly, all that part of Gaul which extends from the Scheld, the Meuse, the Saone, and the Rhone, to the Pyrenees, fell to the lot of Charles, whose division also comprehended the March of Spain, consisting of the province of Barcelona, and the territories which Charlemagne had conquered beyond the Pyrenees.

It is with this treaty, properly speaking, that

modern France commences, which is but a partment of the ancient empire of the Franks, monarchy of Charlemagne. For a long time retained the boundaries which the conference of Verdun had assigned it; and whatever it possesses beyond these limits, was the acquisition of conquests which it has made since the tenth century. Charles the Bald was in then the first King of France, and it is from that the series of her kings commences. It is moreover, under this prince that the government of the Neustrians, or Western Franks, assumes a new aspect. Before his time it was entirely Frankish or German constitution; and the manners and customs of the conquerors of Gaul everywhere predominated; their language (the *lingua Franca*) was that of the court and the government. After the dismemberment of which we have spoken, the Gauls imported it into Neustria, or Western France; the customs and popular language adopted by the court, and had no small influence on the government. This language, which then known by the name of the *Roman or Romance*, polished by the refinements of the court, assumed by degrees a new and purer form, and in course of time, became the parent of the modern French. It was, therefore, at this period, viz. the reign of Charles the Bald, that the Western Franks began, properly speaking, to be a distinct nation, and exchanged their more ancient appellation of Gauls, for that of *French*, the name by which they are known.

At this same period Germany was, for the first time, embodied into a monarchy, having its particular kings. Louis the German was the monarch of Germany, as Charles the Bald was of France. The kingdom of Louis for a long time was called Eastern France, to distinguish it from the western kingdom of that name, which he for ever exclusively retained the name of France.

The empire of Charlemagne, which the conference of Verdun had divided, was for a short space united (884) under Charles, surnamed the younger son of Louis the German, and King of Germany; but that prince, too feeble to support so great a weight, was deposed by his subjects (887), and their example was speedily followed by the French and the Italians. The vast empire of the Franks was thus dismembered for ever (888), and besides the kingdoms of France, Germany, and Italy, it gave birth to three new states—the kingdoms of Lorraine, Burgundy, and Navarre.

The kingdom of Lorraine took its name from Lothaire II., younger son of the Emperor Louis II., who, in the division which he made of his estates among his sons (855), gave to this Lothaire the provinces situated between the Rhine, the Meuse, and the Scheld, known since under the name of Lorraine, Alsace, Treves, Cologne, Liege, and the Low Countries. At the death of Lothaire II., who left no male or legitimate issue, his kingdom was divided by the treaty of Pressburg (870) into two equal portions, one of which was assigned to Louis the German, and the other to Charles the Bald.³ By a subsequent treaty, concluded (879) between the sons of Louis, surnamed the Stammerer, King of France, and Louis the Young, King of Germany, the French division of Lorraine was ceded to the latter prince, who

united the whole of the kingdom of Germany, and retained the kingdom of Burgundy as his natural son, who, after the deposition of Louis the Stammerer, was succeeded by Arnulf (912), Charles the Bald, who, in the advantage of the time, had himself in possession of the kingdom at length finally united to himself by Henry, surnamed the Fowler, two new kingdoms, Burgundy, viz., Provence, and Transjuranca. The former was a noble kingdom. Charles the Bald, the king, his brothers, and his allies in the state, he had a great part of Vienna, Duke of Austria, and Prime Minister of the Emperor. The Princess Matilda II., Emperor and his princess, he died in various views to the Stammerer, who afforded him an interest most of the kingdom to his government, he held at Mantua, and they by oath that of *French*, the name by which they are known. The schedule of the bishoprics of the extent of the kingdom comprehended Franche-Comte, Lyons, Viennois, Viviers, Uzes, Val d'Audou, Provence, and caused himself to be the archbishop of the mission of his usurper combined efforts which France and Germany. The example of Boson, Rodolph, governor of the kingdom, related by the female. He was proclaimed Maurice in the Valais, and between Moun and Switzerland, the Valais, and a person happening about with a favouring his frontiers, and the kingdom of Burgundy. These two kingdoms were divided into one. Hugo, at the time the guardian of the kingdom, in his relation, the Boson. The Italian government of Hugo, crown on Rodolph, and Hugo, in order to the guardian of the province of Italy, and in the district of Provence, a royal ward. Thus, these two kingdoms, viz. Conrad, his grandson. These principles sometimes Kings of

h is but a
the Frank
a long time
the conferen
whatever it
s the acquis
since the
ald was in
and it is from
necesses. It
n by Henry, surnamed the Fowler.
so new kingdoms appeared under the name
urgundy, viz., Provence, or Cisjurane Bur-
y, and Transjurane Burgundy. The founder
former was a nobleman named Boson, whose
Charles the Bald had espoused. Elevated
he king, his brother-in-law, to the highest
ties in the state, he was created, in succession,
a of Vienna, Duke of Provence, Duke of
and Prime Minister, and even obtained in
age the Princess Irmenegarde, daughter of
II., Emperor and King of Italy. Instigated
his princess, he did not scruple to raise his
ious views to the throne. The death of
the Stammerer, and the troubles that en-
afforded him an opportunity of attaching to
interest most of the bishops in those countries
ted to his government. In an assembly
he held at Mantaille in Dauphiné (879), he
ged them by oath to confer on him the royal
ty. The schedule of this election, with the
ures of the bishops annexed, informs us dis-
ly of the extent of this new kingdom, which
comprehended Franche-Comté, Maçon, Chalons-
sone, Lyons, Vienne and its dependencies,
y, Viviers, Uzes, with their dependencies in
nedoc, Provence, and a part of Savoy. Bo-
soused himself to be anointed king at Lyons,
he archbishop of that city. He maintained
sion of his usurped dominions, in spite of
ubined efforts which were made by the kings
rance and Germany to reduce him to subjec-
tion.

und the whole of that kingdom. Arnulph,
King of Germany, and successor of Charles, be-
time the kingdom of Lorraine on Sweatibald,
natural son, who, after a reign of five years,
deposed by Louis, surnamed the Infant, son
successor of Arnulph. Louis dying without
(912), Charles the Simple, King of France,
advantage of the commotions in Germany to
himself in possession of that kingdom, which
at length finally reunited to the Germanic
n by Henry, surnamed the Fowler.
so new kingdoms appeared under the name
urgundy, viz., Provence, or Cisjurane Bur-
y, and Transjurane Burgundy. The founder
former was a nobleman named Boson, whose
Charles the Bald had espoused. Elevated
he king, his brother-in-law, to the highest
ties in the state, he was created, in succession,
a of Vienna, Duke of Provence, Duke of
and Prime Minister, and even obtained in
age the Princess Irmenegarde, daughter of
II., Emperor and King of Italy. Instigated
his princess, he did not scruple to raise his
ious views to the throne. The death of
the Stammerer, and the troubles that en-
afforded him an opportunity of attaching to
interest most of the bishops in those countries
ted to his government. In an assembly
he held at Mantaille in Dauphiné (879), he
ged them by oath to confer on him the royal
ty. The schedule of this election, with the
ures of the bishops annexed, informs us dis-
ly of the extent of this new kingdom, which
comprehended Franche-Comté, Maçon, Chalons-
sone, Lyons, Vienne and its dependencies,
y, Viviers, Uzes, with their dependencies in
nedoc, Provence, and a part of Savoy. Bo-
soused himself to be anointed king at Lyons,
he archbishop of that city. He maintained
sion of his usurped dominions, in spite of
ubined efforts which were made by the kings
rance and Germany to reduce him to subjec-
tion. The example of Boson was followed soon after
Rodolph, governor of Transjurane Burgundy,
related by the female side to the Carlovins.
He was proclaimed king, and crowned at
aurice in the Valais; and his new kingdom,
ed between Mount Jura and the Penine
contained Switzerland, as far as the River
y, the Valais, and a part of Savoy. The death
son happening about this time, furnished
ph with a favourable opportunity of ex-
g his frontiers, and seizing a part of the
y of Burgundy.
ese two kingdoms were afterwards (930)
d into one. Hugo, king of Italy, exercised
at time the guardianship of the young Con-
ne, his relation, the son of Louis, and grand-
f of Boson. The Italians, discontented under
government of Hugo, and having devolved
rown on Rodolph II., king of Transjurane
ndy, Hugo, in order to maintain himself on
rone of Italy, and exclude Rodolph, ceded
n the district of Provence, and the kingdom
royal ward. Thus united in the person of
ph, these two kingdoms passed to his de-
ants, viz. Conrad, his son, and Rodolph III.,
ndson. These princes are styled, in their
sometimes *Kings of Burgundy*; sometimes

Kings of Vicare or Arles; sometimes *Kings of
Provence and Allemania*. They lost, in course of
time, their possessions beyond the Rhone and the
Saone; and in the time of Rodolph III., this
kingdom had for its boundaries the Rhine, the
Rhone, the Saone, the Reuss, and the Alps.
Navarre, the kingdom next to be mentioned,
known among the ancients under the name of
Vasconia, was one of the provinces beyond the
Pyrenees which Charlemagne had conquered from
the Arabs. Among the counts or wardens of the
Marches (called by the Germans Margraves)
which he established, the most remarkable were
those of Barcelona in Catalonia, Jacea in Arragon,
and Pampeluna in Navarre. All these Spanish
Marches were comprised within Western France,
and within the division which fell to the share of
Charles the Bald, on the dismemberment of that
monarchy among the sons of Louis the Gentle.
The extreme imbecility of that prince, and the
calamities of his reign, were the causes why the
Navarrese revolted from France, and erected them-
selves into a free and independent state. It ap-
pears also, that they were implicated in the defe-
ction of Aquitain (853), when it threw off the yoke
of Charles the Bald. Don Garcia, son of the
Count Don Garcia, and grandson of Don Saneho,
is generally reckoned the first of their monarchs,
that usurped the title of *King of Pampeluna* (858).
He and his successors in the kingdom of Navarre
possessed, at the same time, the province of Jacea
in Arragon. The Counts of Barcelona were the
only Spanish dependencies that, for many cen-
turies, continued to acknowledge the sovereignty
of the Kings of France.
On this part of our subject, it only remains for
us to point out the causes that conspired to acce-
lerate the downfall of the empire of the Franks.
Among these we may reckon the inconveniences
of the feudal system,—a system as unfitted for the
purposes of internal administration, as it was in-
compatible with the maxims that ought to rule
a great empire. The abuse of fiefs was carried
so far by the Franks, that almost all property had
become feudal; and not only grants of land, and
portions of large estates, but governments, duke-
doms, and counties, were conferred and held under
the title of fiefs. The consequence of this was,
that the great, by the allurements of fiefs or bene-
fices, became devoted followers of the kings, while
the body of the nation sold themselves as retainers
of the great. Whoever refused this vassalage was
despised, and had neither favour nor honour to
expect.* By this practice, the liberty of the subject
was abridged without augmenting the royal autho-
rity. The nobles soon became so powerful, by the
liberality of their kings, and the number of their
vassals they found means to procure, that they had
at length the presumption to dictate laws to the
sovereign himself. By degrees, the obligations
which they owed to the state were forgotten, and
those only recognised which the feudal contract
imposed. This new bond of alliance was not long
in opening a door to licentiousness, as, by a natural
consequence, it was imagined, that the feudal
superior might be changed, whenever there was a
possibility of charging him with a violation of his
engagements, or of that reciprocal fidelity which
he owed to his vassals.
A system like this, not only overturned public

UNIVERSITY OF

order, by planting the germs of corruption in every part of the internal administration; it was still more defective with regard to the external operations of government, and directly at variance with all plans of aggrandisement or of conquest. As war was carried on by means of slaves or vassals only, it is easy to perceive that such armies not being kept constantly on foot, were with difficulty put in motion; that they could neither prevent intestine rebellion, nor be a protection against hostile invasion; and that conquests made by means of such troops must be lost with the same facility that they are won. A permanent military, fortresses and garrisons, such as we find in modern tactics, were altogether unknown among the Franks. These politic institutions, indispensable in great empires, were totally repugnant to the genius of the German nations. They did not even know what is meant by finances, or regular systems of taxation. Their kings had no other pecuniary resource than the simple revenues of their demesnes, which served for the maintenance of their court. Gratuitous donations, the perquisites of bed and lodging, fines, the tierce of which belonged to the king, rights of custom and toll, added but little to their wealth, and could not be reckoned among the number of state resources. None but tributaries, or conquered nations, were subjected to the payment of certain imposts or assessments; from these the Franks were exempted; they would have even regarded it as an insult and a blow struck at their national liberty, had they been burdened with a single imposition.

It is obvious, that a government like this, so disjointed and incoherent in all its parts, in spite of the advantages which accrued to it from nourishing a spirit of liberty, and opposing a sort of barrier against despotism, was nevertheless far from being suitable to an empire of such prodigious extent as that of the Franks. Charlemagne had tried to infuse a new vigour into the state by the wise laws which he published, and the military stations which he planted on the frontiers of his empire. Raised, by the innate force of his genius, above the prejudices of the age in which he lived, that prince had formed a system capable of giving unity and consistency to the state, had it been of longer duration. But this system fell to pieces and vanished, when no longer animated and put in execution by its author. Disorder and anarchy speedily paralyzed every branch of the government, and ultimately brought on the dismemberment of the empire.

Another cause which accelerated the fall of this vast empire, was the territorial divisions, practised by the kings, both of the Merovingian and the Carolingian race. Charlemagne and Louis the Gentle, when they ordered the empire to be divided among their sons, never imagined this partition would terminate in a formal dismemberment of the monarchy. Their intention was rather to preserve union and amity, by means of certain rights of superiority, which they granted to their eldest sons, whom they had invested with the Imperial dignity. But this subordination of the younger to their elder brothers was not of long continuance; and these divisions, besides naturally weakening the state, became a source of perpetual discord, and reduced the Carolingian princes to the necessity of courting the grandees

on every emergency, and gaining their interests by new gifts, or by concessions which went to the foundation of the throne.

This exorbitant power of the nobles must be reckoned among the number of causes which hastened the decline of the empire. Dukes, Counts, besides being intrusted with the justice and police of their respective governments, exercised, at the same time, a military power, collected the revenues of the Exchequer, and many and so different jurisdictions, united in and the same power, could not but become dangerous to the royal authority; while it facilitated to the nobles the means of fortifying themselves, their governments, and breaking, by degrees, the unity of the state. Charlemagne had felt this convenience; and he thought to remedy the evil by successively abolishing the great duchies, dividing them into several counties. Unfortunately this policy was not followed out by his successors, who returned to the ancient practice of creating dukes; and besides, being educated and nurtured in superstition by the priests, they themselves wholly under dependence to bishops and ecclesiastics, who thus disposed of the state to their pleasure. The consequence was, that governments, at first alterable only by the will of the King, passed eventually to the children, or to some of those who were merely administrators, or superintendants, of them.

Charles the Bald, first King of France, had weakness to constitute this dangerous principle into a standing law, in the parliament which he held at Chiersi (877), towards the close of his reign. He even extended this principle generally to all fiefs; to those that held immediately of the crown, as well as to those which held of lay or ecclesiastical superiors.

This new and exorbitant power of the nobles, joined to the injudicious partitions already mentioned, tended to sow fresh discord among different members of the state, by exciting a multitude of civil wars and domestic feuds, which, a necessary consequence, brought the whole body politic into a state of decay and dissolution. The history of the successors of Charlemagne presents a sad picture, humiliating and distressing to humanity. Every page of it is filled with insurrections, devastations, and carnage: princes, sprung from the same blood, armed against each other, breathing unnatural vengeance, and bent on mutual destruction: the royal authority insulted and despised by the nobles, who were perpetually at war with each other, either to decide their private quarrels, or aggrandize themselves at the expense of their neighbours; and, finally, the citizens exposed to all kinds of oppression, reduced to misery and seritude, without the hope of redress from the government. Such was the melancholy situation of the States which composed the Empire of Charlemagne, when the irruption of new barbarians, the Normans from the extremities of the North, and the Hungarians from the back settlements of Asia, exposed it afresh to the terrible scourge of foreign invasion.

The Normans, of German origin, and inhabiting ancient Scandinavia, that is to say, Sweden, Denmark, and modern Norway, began, towards the end of the eighth century, to cover the sea with their ships, and to infest successively all the

coasts of Europe. In a few years, they committed devastations, which surpassed all imagination. Never, is easily expressive of barbarism in Scandinavia, in general, despising agriculture, and themselves unable to procure the necessary subsistence. The courage of their neighbours, who, from their cupidity, and force, piracy, or insufficient skill to produce, were, moreover, as fanaticism, which is the most pernicious pestilence they drew upon was the god of their war and intrepidity. The paradise of *Vaalha*, the swords of the enraged, the abode of the *Wolfe*, was prepared for ease and effeminacy, to the glory of agriculture.

This doctrine, generally, inspired the Scythians, rapid and ferocious, to evade all dangers; and a multitude of warriors as they did it happen to those who were already their father's throne, and brigands, solely for the purpose of signaling themselves.

These piracies of the Normans were limited to the sea-coasts of Scandinavia, soon they descended upon the southern coasts of the Kingdoms of Lorraine, Flanders, Spain, the British, even the shores of France. The insulted the insular barbarians.⁶

France more especially, under the feuds, and Charles the Great, who had the Rhone, carrying the fate of the Kingdoms of Orleans, Mont, Sens, Laon, Sens, experienced the same was three times as strong, whom Charles the Great, while combating the Normans. At length, and everywhere was enabled at the very longer courage to in order to rid the emies, they consented

g their inte
rich went to
nobles must
of causes
re. Dukes
with the ju
vernments,
ary power,
Exchequer.
s, united in
ut become
ile it facilit
ng themse
, by degrees
had felt the
remedy the
rent duchies
ities. Unfo
owed out by
cient practi
g educated
priests, they
ence to bias
ed of the sta
was, that gov
the will of
children, or su
rators, or su
France, had
ngerous prin
liament whic
the close of
inciple gene
mediately of
held of late
er of the not
ons already
cord among
y exciting a
fends, which
t the whole
dissolution.
lemagne pres
distressing to
ed with insur
: princes, spr
ainst each o
, and bent
authority insu
were perpetu
to decide
hemseives at
nd, finally,
pession, red
on the hope
overnment. S
f the States
emagne, when
Normans from
Hungarians
posed it afres
vasion.
in, and inhab
ay, Sweden, B
gan, towards
over the sea
sively all the

the coasts of Europe. During the space of two hundred years, they continued their incursions and devastations, with a fierceness and perseverance which surpasses all imagination. This phenomenon, however, is easily explained, if we attend to the state of barbarism in which the inhabitants of Scandinavia, in general, were at that time plunged. Ignorant of agriculture and the arts, they found themselves unable to draw from fishing and the chase the necessary means even for their scanty subsistence. The comfortable circumstances of their neighbours, who cultivated their lands, excited their cupidity, and invited them to acquire force, piracy, or plunder, what they had not sufficient skill to procure by their own industry. They were, moreover, animated by a sort of religious fanaticism, which inspired them with courage for the most perilous enterprise. This reckless superstition they drew from the doctrines of Odin, who was the god of their armies, the rewarder of their valour and intrepidity in war, receiving into his paradise of *Vaalha* the brave who fell beneath the swords of the enemy; while, on the other hand, the abode of the wretched, called by them *Helte*, was prepared for those who, abandoned to ease and idleness, preferred a life of tranquillity to the glory of arms, and the perils of warlike adventure.

This doctrine, generally diffused over all the north, inspired the Scandinavian youth with an ardent and ferocious courage, which made them brave all dangers, and consider the sanguinary death of warriors as the sure path to immortality. It did it happen that the sons of kings, even such as were already destined as successors to their father's throne, volunteered as chiefs of expeditions and brigands, under the name of *Sea Kings*, solely for the purpose of obtaining a name, and signaling themselves by their maritime exploits.

These piracies of the Normans, which at first were limited to the seas and countries bordering Scandinavia, soon extended over all the western and southern coasts of Europe. Germany, the kingdoms of Lorraine, France, England, Scotland, Ireland, Spain, the Balearic Isles, Italy, Greece, and even the shores of Africa, were exposed in their turn to the insults and the ravages of these barbarians.⁸

France more especially suffered from their incursions, under the feeble reigns of Charles the Bald, and Charles the Fat. Not content with the havoc which they made on the coasts, they descended the Seine, the Loire, the Garonne, and the Rhone, carrying fire and sword to the very centre of the kingdom. Nantes, Angers, Tours, Orleans, Mons, Poitiers, Bourdeaux, Rouen, Sens, Laon, Soissons, and various other cities, experienced the fury of these invaders. Paris was three times sacked and pillaged by them. Robert the Strong, a scion of the royal House of Capet, whom Charles the Bald had created (861) Duke or Governor of Neustria, was killed in battle (866) while combating with success against the Normans. At length, the terror which they had spread everywhere was such, that the French, who had longer courage to encounter them in arms; and in order to rid themselves of such formidable enemies, they consented to purchase their retreat

by a sum of money; a wretched and feeble remedy, which only aggravated the evil, by inciting the invaders, by the hope of gain, to return to the charge.

It is not however at all astonishing, that France should have been exposed so long to these incursions, since, besides the inefficient state of that monarchy, she had no vessels of her own to protect her coasts. The nobles, occupied solely with the care of augmenting or confirming their growing power, offered but a feeble opposition to the Normans, whose presence in the kingdom caused a diversion favourable to their views. Some of them even had no hesitation in joining the barbarians, when they happened to be in disgrace, or when they thought they had reason to complain of the government.

It was in consequence of these numerous expeditions over all the seas of Europe, that the monarchies of the North were formed, and that the Normans succeeded also in founding several other states. It is to them that the powerful monarchy of the Russians owes its origin; Ruric the Norman is allowed to have been its founder, towards the middle of the ninth century.⁷ He and the grand dukes, his successors, extended their conquests from the Baltic and the White Sea, to the Euxine; and during the tenth century they made the emperors of the East to tremble on their thrones. In their native style of piratical warfare, they embarked on the Dnieper or Borysthene, infested with their fleets the coasts of the Black Sea, carried terror and dismay to the gates of Constantinople, and obliged the Greek emperors to pay them large sums to redeem their capital from pillage.

Ireland was more than once on the point of being subdued by the Normans, during these piratical excursions. Their first invasion of this island is stated to have been in the year 793. Great ravages were committed by the barbarians, who conquered or founded the cities of Waterford, Dublin, and Limerick, which they formed into separate petty kingdoms. Christianity was introduced among them towards the middle of the tenth century; and it was not till the twelfth, the time of its invasion by the English, that they succeeded in expelling them from the island, when they were dispossessed of the cities of Waterford and Dublin (1170) by Henry II. of England.

Orkney, the Hebrides, the Shetland and Faro Islands, and the Isle of Man, were also discovered and peopled by the Normans.⁹ Another colony of these Normans peopled Iceland, where they founded a republic (874), which preserved its independence till nearly the middle of the thirteenth century, when that island was conquered by the Kings of Norway.⁹ Normandy, in France, also received its name from this people. Charles the Simple, wishing to put a check on their continual incursions, concluded, at St. Clair-sur-Epte (912), a treaty with Rollo or Rolf, chief of the Normans, by which he abandoned to them all that part of Neustria which reaches from the rivers Andelle and Aure to the ocean. To this he added a part of Vexin, situated between the rivers Andelle and Epte; as also the territory of Bretagne. Rollo embraced Christianity, and received the baptismal name of Robert. He submitted to become a vassal of the crown of France, under the

UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN

title of Duke of Normandy; and obtained in marriage the princess Gisela, daughter of Charles the Simple. In the following century, we shall meet with these Normans of France as the conquerors of England, and the founders of the kingdom of the two Sicilies.

The Hungarians, a people of Turkish or Finnish origin, emigrated, as is generally supposed, from Bascshiria, a country lying to the north of the Caspian Sea, between the Wolga, the Kama, and Mount Ural, near the source of the Tobol and the Jaik, or modern Ural. The Orientals designate them by the generic name of Turks, while they denominate themselves *Magiars*, from the name of one of their tribes. After having been long dependent on the Chazars,¹⁰ a Turkish tribe to the north of the Palus Meotis, they retired towards the Danube, to avoid the oppressions of the Patzinacites;¹¹ and established themselves (887) in ancient Dacia, under the auspices of a chief named Arpad, from whom the ancient sovereigns of Hungary derive their origin. Arnulph, King of Germany, employed these Hungarians (892) against the Slavo-Moravians, who possessed a flourishing state on the banks of the Danube, the Morava and the Elbe.¹² While engaged in this expedition, they were attacked again in their Dacian possessions by the Patzinacites, who succeeded at length in expelling them from these territories.¹³ Taking advantage afterwards of the death of Sviatopolk, king of the Moravians, and the troubles consequent on that event, they disengaged from Moravia all the country which extends from the frontiers of Moldavia, Wallachia, and Transylvania, to the Danube and the Morava. They conquered, about the same time, Pannonia, with a part of Noricum, which they had wrested from the Germans; and thus laid the foundation of a new state, known since by the name of Hungary.

No sooner had the Hungarians established themselves in Pannonia, than they commenced their incursions into the principal states of Europe. Germany, Italy, and Gaul, agitated by faction and anarchy, and even the Grecian empire in the East, became, all in their turn, the bloody scene of their ravages and devastations. Germany, in particular, for a long time felt the effects of their fury. All its provinces in succession were laid waste by these barbarians, and compelled to pay them tribute. Henry I., King of Germany, and his son Otho the Great, at length succeeded in arresting their destructive career, and delivered Europe from this new yoke which threatened its independence.

It was in consequence of these incursions of the Hungarians and Normans, to which may be added those of the Arabs and Slavonians, that the

kingdoms which spring from the empire of the Franks lost once more the advantages which political institutions of Charlemagne had procured them. Learning, which that prince had encouraged, fell into a state of absolute languor; and was put both to civil and literary improvement, the destruction of convents, schools, and libraries, the polity and internal security of the states were destroyed, and commerce reduced to nothing. England was the only exception, which then enjoyed a transient glory under the memorable reign of Alfred the Great, who succeeded Ethelred, in 872. That prince, grandson of king Egbert, expelled the Normans from the island (887), and restored peace and tranquillity to his kingdom. After the example of Charlemagne, he cultivated and protected learning and the arts, by restoring the convents and schools which the barbarians had destroyed; inviting philosophers and artists to his court, and civilizing his subjects by literary institutions and wise regulations.¹⁴ It is to be regretted, that a reign so glorious was so soon followed by new misfortunes. After the Normans the Danes reappeared in England, and overspread it once more with turbulence and desolation.

During these unlightened and calamitous times, we find the art of navigation making considerable progress. The Normans, traversing the seas perpetually with their fleets, learned to construct their vessels with greater perfection, to become better skilled in wind and weather, and to use their oars and sails with more address. It was, moreover, in consequence of these invasions that more correct information was obtained regarding Scandinavia, and the remote regions of the North. Two Normans, Wolfstane and Otho, the one from Jutland, and the other from Norway, undertook separate voyages, in course of the ninth century, principally with the view of making maritime discoveries. Wolfstane proceeded to visit that part of Prussia, or the *Estonia* of the ancients, which was renowned for its produce of yellow amber. Other did not confine his adventures to the coasts of the Baltic; setting out from the port of Helligoland, his native country, he doubled Cape North, and advanced as far as Biarmia, at the mouth of the Dwina, in the province of Archangel. Both he and Wolfstane communicated the details of their voyages to Alfred the Great, who made use of them in his Anglo-Saxon translation of Orosius.

Besides Iceland and the Northern Isles, of which we have already spoken, we find, in the tenth century, some of the fugitive Normans peopling Greenland; and others forming settlements in Finland, which some suppose to be the island of Newfoundland, in North America.¹⁵

FROM OTHO

While most of the remembered empire of the Franks was the prey of disorder, Germany assumed a new form, and maintained the character of a power in Europe. It was the peace of Verdun (843) which gave Louis the German the title of king. At that time the cantons of Spire, on the west side the Rhine, and the cantons of the Rhine, on the east of that river, were under the empire of the Franks. The empire of the Franks extended to the Alps and the Rhine, and the Alps and the Rhine were the frontiers of the Slavonian territories.

From the first form of authority was derived from the German, in an assertion of formally engaged rights and privileges; and to consider the conductors in all the states, however, as themselves the right of the Carolingian monarchy. Louis the German, king of the kingdom among his sons, Louis the Younger, Charles having been a Frankfort (887), the place Arnulph, his prince added to the imperial dignity.

The custom of electing any down to modern times, the infant, son of the emperor, by election; and the young (911), a French nobleman, as a French nobleman, or governor of the empire, elected by the female emperor mounted the throne, Charles the Simple, a legitimate and legitimate prince, his latter prince, he was the kingdom of Lorraine annexed to the empire of Conrad I. (919) and on Henry I., surmounting the Saxon dynasty of Germany.

It was to the valour of the emperor, and to his institution of Germany was indebted to that monarch, taking the troubles which had arisen in the empire, recovered the kingdom of Lorraine, the nobles of the empire, in his mission to him in the year 919, his union he extended towards the west, as the shield. The kings of the territory of Lorraine

PERIOD III.

FROM OTHO THE GREAT TO GREGORY THE GREAT. A. D. 962—1074.

While most of the states that sprung from the dismembered empire of the Franks continued to be the prey of disorder and anarchy, the kingdom of Germany assumed a new form, and for several centuries maintained the character of being the ruling power in Europe. It was erected into a monarchy by the peace of Verdun (843), and had for its first king Louis the German, second son of Louis the Great. At that time it comprised, besides the ecclesiastical cantons of Spire, Worms, and Mayence, on the west side of the Rhine, all the countries and provinces eastward of that river, which had belonged to the empire of the Franks, from the Eyder and the Danube to the Alps and the confines of Pannonia. Several of the Slavian tribes, also, were its tributaries.

From the first formation of this kingdom, the royal authority was limited; and Louis the German, in an assembly held at Marsee (851), formally engaged to maintain the states in their rights and privileges; to follow their counsel and advice; and to consider them as his true colleagues and coadjutors in all the affairs of government. The states, however, soon found means to vest in themselves the right of choosing their kings. The first Carolingian monarchs of Germany were hereditary. Louis the German even divided his kingdom among his three sons, viz., Carloman, Louis the Young, and Charles the Fat; but Charles having been deposed in an assembly held at Frankfort (887), the states of Germany elected in his place Arnulph, a natural son of Carloman. This prince added to his crown both Italy and the Imperial dignity.

The custom of election has continued in Germany down to modern times. Louis l'Enfant, or the Infant, son of Arnulph, succeeded to the throne by election; and that prince having died young (911), the states bestowed the crown on a French nobleman, named Conrad, who was duke or governor of France on the Rhine, and elected by the female side to the Carolingian line. Conrad mounted the throne, to the exclusion of Charles the Simple, King of France, the only male and legitimate heir of the Carolingian line. His latter prince, however, found means to seize the kingdom of Lorraine, which Louis the Young had annexed to the crown of Germany. On the death of Conrad I. (919), the choice of the states fell on Henry I., surnamed the Fowler, a scion of the Saxon dynasty of the kings and emperors of Germany.

It was to the valour and the wisdom of Henry I. and to his institutions, civil and military, that Germany was indebted for its renewed grandeur. That monarch, taking advantage of the intestine troubles which had arisen in France under Charles the Simple, recovered possession of the kingdom of Lorraine, the nobility of which made their submission to him in the years 923 and 925. By this union he extended the limits of Germany towards the west, as far as the Meuse and the Scheld. The kings of Germany afterwards divided the territory of Lorraine into two governments or

duchies, called Upper and Lower Lorraine. The former, situated on the Moselle, was called the duchy of the Moselle; the other, bounded by the Rhine, the Meuse, and the Scheld, was known by the name of Lothiers or Brabant. These two duchies comprised all the provinces of the kingdom of Lorraine, except those which the emperors judged proper to exempt from the authority and jurisdiction of the dukes. The duchy of the Moselle, alone, finally retained the name of Lorraine; and passed (1048) to Gerard of Alsace, descended from the dukes of that name, who, in the eighteenth century, succeeded to the Imperial throne. As to the duchy of Lower Lorraine, the Emperor Henry V. conferred it on Godfrey, Count of Louvain (1106), whose male descendants kept possession of it, under the title of Dukes of Brabant, till 1355, when it passed by female succession to the Dukes of Burgundy, who found means also to acquire, by degrees, the greater part of Lower Lorraine, commonly called the Low Countries.

Henry I., a prince of extraordinary genius, proved himself the true restorer of the German kingdom. The Slavonian tribes who inhabited the banks of the Saal, and the country between the Elbe and the Baltic, committed incessant ravages on the frontier provinces of the kingdom. With these he waged a successful war, and reduced them once more to the condition of tributaries. But his policy was turned chiefly against the Hungarians, who, since the reign of Louis II., had repeatedly renewed their incursions, and threatened to subject all Germany to their yoke. Desirous to repress effectually that ferocious nation, he took the opportunity of a nine years' truce, which he had obtained with them, to construct new towns, and fortify places of strength. He instructed his troops in a new kind of tactics, accustomed them to military evolutions, and, above all, he formed and equipped a cavalry sufficient to cope with those of the Hungarians, who particularly excelled in the art of managing horses. These depredators having returned with fresh forces at the expiry of the truce, he completely defeated them in two bloody battles, which he fought with them (933) near Sondershausen and Meresburg; and thus exonerated Germany from the tribute which it had formerly paid them.

This victorious prince extended his conquests beyond the Eyder, the ancient frontier of Denmark. After a prosperous war with the Danes (931), he founded the margravate of Sleswick, which the Emperor Conrad II. afterwards ceded back (1033) to Canute the Great, King of Denmark.

Otho the Great, son and successor of Henry I., added the kingdom of Italy to the conquests of his father, and procured also the Imperial dignity for himself, and his successors in Germany. Italy had become a distinct kingdom since the revolution, which happened (888) at the death of the Emperor Charles the Fat. Ten princes in succession occupied the throne during the space of

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

seventy-three years. Several of these princes, such as Guy, Lambert, Arnulf, Lonis of Burgundy, and Berenger I., were invested, at the same time, with the Imperial dignity. Berenger I. having been assassinated (924), this latter dignity ceased entirely, and the city of Rome was even dismembered from the kingdom of Italy.

The sovereignty of that city was seized by the famous Marozia, widow of a nobleman named Alberic. She raised her son to the pontificate by the title of John XI.; and the better to establish her dominion, she espoused Hugo King of Italy (932), who became, in consequence of this marriage, master of Rome. But Alberic, another son of Marozia, soon stirred up the people against this aspiring princess and her husband Hugo. Having driven Hugo from the throne, and shut up his mother in prison, he assumed to himself the sovereign authority, under the title of *Patrician of the Romans*. At his death (954), he transmitted the sovereignty to his son Octavian, who, though only nineteen years of age, caused himself to be elected pope, by the title of John XII.

This epoch was one most disastrous for Italy. The weakness of the government excited factions among the nobility, gave birth to anarchy, and fresh opportunity for the depredations of the Hungarians and Arabs, who, at this period, were the scourge of Italy, which they ravaged with impunity. Pavia, the capital of the kingdom, was taken, and burnt by the Hungarians. These troubles increased on the accession of Berenger II. (950), grandson of Berenger I. That prince associated his son Adelbert with him in the royal dignity; and the public voice accused them of having caused the death of King Lothaire, son and successor of Hugo.

Lothaire left a young widow, named Adelaide, daughter of Rodolph II., King of Burgundy and Italy. To avoid the importunities of Berenger II., who wished to compel her to marry his son Adelbert, this princess called in the King of Germany to her aid. Otho complied with the solicitations of the distressed queen; and, on this occasion, undertook his first expedition into Italy (951). The city of Pavia, and several other places, having fallen into his hands, he made himself proclaimed King of Italy, and married the young queen, his protégée. Berenger and his son, being driven for shelter to their strongholds, had recourse to negotiation. They succeeded in obtaining for themselves a confirmation of the royal title of Italy, on condition of doing homage for it to the King of Germany; and for this purpose, they repaired in person to the diet assembled at Augsburg (952), where they took the oath of vassalage under the hands of Otho, who solemnly invested them with the royalty of Italy; reserving to himself the towns and marches of Aquileia and Verona, the command of which he bestowed on his brother the Duke of Bavaria.

In examining more nearly all that passed in this affair, it appears that it was not without the regret, and even contrary to the wish of Adelaide, that Otho agreed to enter into terms of accommodation with Berenger, and to ratify the compact which Conrad, Duke of Lorraine, and son-in-law of the Emperor, had made with that prince. Afterwards, however, he lent a favourable ear to the complaints which Pope John XII., and some

Italian noblemen had addressed to him against Berenger and his son; and took occasion, on that account, to conduct a new army into Italy (961). Berenger, too feeble to oppose him, retired a second time within his fortifications. Otho marched from Pavia to Milan, and there made himself crowned King of Italy; from thence he passed to Rome, about the commencement of the following year. Pope John XII., who had himself invited him, and again implored his protection against Berenger, gave him, at first, a very brilliant reception; and revived the Imperial dignity in his favour, which had been dormant for thirty-eight years.

It was on the 2d of February, 962, that the Pope consecrated and crowned him Emperor; but he had soon cause to repent of this proceeding. Otho, immediately after his coronation at Rome, undertook the siege of St. Leon, a fortress in Umbria, where Berenger and his Queen had taken refuge. While engaged in the siege, he received frequent intimations from Rome, of the misconduct and immoralities of the Pope. The remonstrances which he thought it his duty to make on the subject, offended the young Pontiff, who resolved in consequence, to break off union with the Emperor. Hurried on by the impetuosity of his character, he entered into a negotiation with Adelbert; and even persuaded him to come to Rome, in order to concert with him measures of defence. On the first news of this event, Otho put himself at the head of a large detachment, with which he marched directly to Rome. The Pope, however, did not think it advisable to wait his approach, but fled with the King, his new ally. Otho, on arriving at the capital, exacted a solemn oath from the clergy and the people, that henceforth they would elect no pope without his consent, and that of the Emperor and his successors.* Having then assembled a council, he caused Pope John XII. to be deposed; and Leo VIII. was elected in his place. This latter Pontiff was maintained in the papacy, in spite of all the efforts which his adversary made to regain it. Berenger II., after having sustained a long siege at St. Leon, fell a length (964) into the hands of the conqueror, who sent him into exile at Daumberg, and compelled his son, Adelbert, to take refuge in the court of Constantinople.

All Italy, to the extent of the ancient kingdom of the Lombards, fell under the dominion of the Germans; only a few maritime towns in Lower Italy, with the greater part of Apulia and Calabria, still remained in the power of the Greeks. This kingdom, together with the Imperial dignity, Otho transmitted to his successors on the throne of Germany. From this time the Germans held to be an inviolable principle, that as the Imperial dignity was strictly united with the royalty of Italy, kings elected by the German nation should at the same time, in virtue of that election, become Kings of Italy and Emperors. The practice of this triple coronation, viz., of Germany, Italy, and Rome, continued for many centuries; and from Otho the Great, till Maximilian I. (1508), no King of Germany took the title of Emperor, until after he had been formally crowned by the Pope.

The kings and emperors of the house of Saxony did not terminate their conquests with the dominions of Lorraine and Italy. Towards the east

and the north, they had advanced to the Elbe. Between the Havel and the Rhine, the Wiltzians, the Sorabians, the Milizians, and the Bohemians, took up arms in defence.

These nations, were all compelled to pay tribute to the Emperor. The Saxons, who had colonies into the conquest, were several margraves in this side of the Elbe; and in the north, the Saxonians. Otho the Great, after the conquest of the Archbishopric of Oldenburg, Meissen, and Brandenburg, Meissen, and Posenania or Posen, Bohemia; and lastly, all owe their origin to him, the Emperor Otho the Archbishopric of Magdeburg, and subjected the bishopric of Breslau, reserving the see of Magdeburg.

The Saxon dynasty of the emperor Henry I. of Franconia, commonly called the first emperor of the German crown the king, that is sometimes called This monarchy, situated in the Alps, had been a number of counts, or governors, in consequence of the death of Conrad and Rodolph, temporary jurisdiction of monial offices, after nobility, who had already. The principal and the Saxon nobles, were the afterwards called Lorraine, Burgundy, and Mont Lyons, Besangon, and Basle, &c. The countful vassals held the Emperor Rodolph to apply for protection. The Emperors Henry II. who claimed to be the nephew to the Emperor. This reunion was a power of the German counts, and great was newly acquired, still they had usurped it and nothing was to exercise of their fealty together with the lands belonging to the noble, that the high nobles enjoyed exci

him again
sion, on the
to Italy (961
in, retired
Otho marche
he himself
he passed
the followi
himself invit
ction again
y brilliant
nignity in
r thirty-eight

962; that
Emperor; th
s proceeding
tion at Rome
a fortress
een had take
e, he receive
the miscond
remonstranc
make on the
who resolve
on with the
tiousity of
tiation with
h to come
n measures
s event, Oth
achment, wit
p. The Pope
e to wait for
his new alle
cted a solemn
e, that hence
nt his couns
essors.* Har
ed Pope John
was elected
maintained
arts which
nger II., after
Leon, fell
nqueror, wh
compelled h
court of Con

cient kingdo
minion of the
vns in Low
pulia and C
of the Greek
perial dignit
on the thron
ermans held
the Imperia
the royalty
ation should
ction, becom
ractice of the
y, Italy, and
es; and from
(508), no king
er, until after
e Pope.

the house of
uests with the
wards the es

and the north, they extended them beyond the
and the Elbe. All the Slavonian tribes be-
ween the Havel and the Oder; the Abotrites, the
hedarians, the Wilziuns, the Slavonians on the
Havel, the Sorabians, the Dalemincians, the Lusi-
tians, the Milzians, and various others; the dukes
so of Bohemia and Poland, although they often
took up arms in defence of their liberty and inde-
pendence, were all reduced to subjection, and again
compelled to pay tribute. In order to secure their
obmission, the Saxon kings introduced German
colonies into the conquered countries; and founded
here several margravates, such as that of the North,
in this side of the Elbe, afterwards called Bran-
denburg; and in the East, those of Misnia and
Lusatia. Otho the Great adopted measures for
promulgating Christianity among them. The bi-
shopric of Oldenburg in Wagria, of Havelburg,
Brandenburg, Meissen, Merseburg, Zeitz; those
of Posnania or Posen, in Poland, of Prague in
Bohemia; and lastly, the metropolis of Magdeburg,
all owe their origin to this monarch. His grand-
son, the Emperor Otho III., founded (in 1000)
the Archbishopric of Gnesna, in Poland, to which
he subjected the bishoprics of Colberg, Cracow,
and Breslau, reserving Posen to the metropolitan
see of Magdeburg.

The Saxon dynasty became extinct (1024) with
the emperor Henry II. It was succeeded by that
of Franconia, commonly called the *Salic*. Conrad
I., the first emperor of this house, united to the
German crown the kingdom of Burgundy; or, as
it is sometimes called, the kingdom of Arles.
This monarchy, situate between the Rhine, the
Reuss, Mount Jura, the Saone, the Rhone, and
the Alps, had been divided among a certain num-
ber of counts, or governors of provinces, who, in
consequence of the weakness of their last kings,
Conrad and Rodolph III., had converted their
temporary jurisdictions into hereditary and patri-
monial offices, after the example of the French
nobility, who had already usurped the same power.
The principal and most puissant of these Burgun-
dian nobles, were the counts of Provence, Vienne,
(afterwards called Dauphins of Vienne), Savoy,
Burgundy, and Montbelliard; the Archbishop of
Lyons, Besançon, and Arles, and the Bishop of
Basle, &c. The contempt in which these power-
ful vassals held the royal authority, induced Ro-
dolph to apply for protection to his kinsmen the
Emperors Henry II. and Conrad II., and to ac-
knowledge them, by several treaties, his heirs and
successors to the crown. It was in virtue of these
treaties, that Conrad II. took possession of the
kingdom of Burgundy (1032) on the death of
Rodolph III. He maintained his rights by force
of arms against Eudes, Count of Champagne,
who claimed to be the legitimate successor, as
being nephew to the last king.

This reunion was but a feeble addition to the
power of the German emperors. The bishops,
counts, and great vassals of the kingdom they had
newly acquired, still retained the authority which
they had usurped in their several departments;
and nothing was left to the emperors, but the
exercise of their feudal and proprietary rights,
together with the slender remains of the demesne
lands belonging to the last kings. It is even pro-
bable, that the high rank which the Burgundian
nobles enjoyed excited the ambition of those in

Germany, and emboldened them to usurp the
same prerogatives.

The Emperors Conrad II. (1033) and Henry
III. (1038), were both crowned Kings of Bur-
gundy. The Emperor Lothair conferred the
viceroialty or regency on Conrad Duke of Zähr-
ringen, who then took the title of Governor or
Regent of Burgundy. Berthold IV., son of Con-
rad, resigned (1156), in favour of the Emperor
Frederic I., his rights of viceroialty over that part
of the kingdom situate beyond Mount Jura. Swit-
zerland, at that time, was subject to the Dukes of
Zähringen, who, in order to retain it in vassalage
to their government, fortified Morges, Moudon,
Yverdun, and Berthoud; and built the cities of
Fribourg and Berne. On the extinction of the
Zähringian dukes (1191), Switzerland became an
immediate province of the empire. It was after-
wards (1218) formed into a republic; and the
other parts of the kingdom of Burgundy or Arles
were gradually united to France, as we shall see
in course of our narrative.

The Hungarians, since their first invasion under
Louis l'Enfant, had wrested from the German
crown all its possessions in Pannonia, with a part
of ancient Noricum; and the boundaries of Ger-
many had been contracted within the river Enns in
Bavaria. Their growing preponderance after-
wards enabled the Germans to recover from the
Hungarians a part of their conquests. They suc-
ceeded in expelling them, not only from Noricum,
but even from that part of Upper Pannonia which
lies between Mount Cetus, or Kahlenberg as it is
called, and the river Leita. Henry III. secured
the possession of these territories by the treaty of
peace which he concluded (1043) with Samuel,
surnamed Aba, King of Hungary. This part of
Hungary was annexed to the Eastern Margrave,
or Austria, which then began to assume nearly its
present form.

Such then was the progressive aggrandisement
of the German empire, from the reign of Henry I.
to the year 1043. Under its most flourishing
state, that is, under the Emperor Henry III., it
embraced nearly two-thirds of the monarchy of
Charlemagne. All Germany between the Rhine,
the Eyder, the Oder, the Leita, and the Alps; all
Italy, as far as the confines of the Greeks in Apu-
lia and Calabria; Gaul, from the Rhine to the
Scheldt, the Meuse, and the Rhone, acknowledged
the supremacy of the emperors. The Dukes of
Bohemia and Poland were their tributaries; a de-
pendence which continued until the commotions
which agitated Germany put an end to it in the
thirteenth century.

Germany, at this period, ranked as the ruling
power in Europe; and this preponderance was
not owing so much to the extent of her posses-
sions, as to the vigour of her government, which
still maintained a kind of system of political unity.
The emperors may be regarded as true monarchs,
dispensing, at their pleasure, all dignities, civil
and ecclesiastical—possessing very large domains
in all parts of the empire—and exercising, indi-
vidually, various branches of the sovereign power;
—only, in affairs of great importance, asking the
advice or consent of the grandes. This great-
ness of the German emperors gave rise to a sys-
tem of polity which the Popes took great care to
support with all their credit and authority. Ac-

UNIVERSITY OF

According to this system, the whole of Christendom composed, as it were, a single and individual republic, of which the Pope was the spiritual head, and the Emperor the secular. The duty of the latter, as head and patron of the Church, was to take cognizance that nothing should be done contrary to the general welfare of Christianity. It was his part to protect the Catholic Church, to be the guardian of its preservation, to convocate its general councils, and exercise such rights as the nature of his office and the interests of Christianity seemed to demand.

It was in virtue of this ideal system that the emperors enjoyed a precedence over other monarchs, with the exclusive right of electing kings; and that they had bestowed on them the title of masters of the world, and sovereign of sovereigns. A more important prerogative was that which they possessed in the election of the Popes. From Otho the Great to Henry IV., all the Roman pontiffs were chosen, or at least confirmed, by the emperors. Henry III. deposed three schismatical popes (1046), and substituted in their place a German, who took the name of Clement II. The same emperor afterwards nominated various other popes of his own nation.

However vast and formidable the power of these monarchs seemed to be, it was nevertheless far from being a solid and durable fabric; and it was easy to foresee that, in a short time, it would crumble and disappear. Various causes conspired to accelerate its downfall; the first and principal of which necessarily sprang from the constitution of the empire, which was faulty in itself, and incompatible with any scheme of aggrandisement or conquest. A great empire, to prolong its durability, requires a perfect unity of power, which can act with despatch, and communicate with facility from one extremity to the other; an armed force constantly on foot, and capable of maintaining the public tranquillity; frontiers well defended against hostile invasion; and revenues proportioned to the exigencies of the state. All these characteristics of political greatness were wanting in the German empire.

That empire was elective; the states co-operated jointly with the emperors in the exercise of the legislative power. There were neither permanent armies, nor fortresses, nor taxation, nor any regular system of finance. The government was without vigour, incapable of protecting or punishing, or even keeping in subjection, its remote provinces, consisting of nations who differed in language, manners, and legislation. One insurrection, though quelled, was only the forerunner of others; and the conquered nations shook off the yoke with the same facility as they received it. The perpetual wars of the emperors in Italy, from the first conquest of that country by Otho the Great, prove, in a manner most evident, the strange imbecility of the government. At every change of reign, and every little revolution which happened in Germany, the Italians rose in arms, and put the emperors again to the necessity of reconquering that kingdom; which undoubtedly it was their interest to have abandoned entirely, rather than to lavish for so many centuries their treasures and the blood of their people to no purpose. The climate of Italy was also disastrous to the Imperial armies; and many successions of noble German families found there a foreign grave.

An inevitable consequence of this vitiated constitution, was the decline of the royal authority, and the gradual increase of the power of the nobility. It is important, however, to remark, that in Germany the progress of the feudal system is been much less rapid than in France. The dukes, counts, and margraves, that is, the governors of provinces, and wardens of the marches, continued for long to be regarded merely as imperial officers, without any pretensions to consider their governments as hereditary, or exercise the rights of sovereignty. Even fiefs remained for many ages in their primitive state, without being perpetuated, the families of those to whom they had been originally granted.

A total change, however, took place towards the end of the eleventh century. The dukes and counts, become formidable by the extent of their power and their vast possessions, by degrees, constituted themselves hereditary officers; and in content with the appropriation of their duchies and counties, they took advantage of the weakness of the emperors, and their quarrels with the popes, to extort from them new privileges, or usurp the prerogatives of royalty, formerly reserved for the emperors alone. The aristocracy, or lauded proprietors, followed the example of the dukes and counts, and after the eleventh century they began to play the part of sovereigns, styling themselves, in their public acts, *By the Grace of God*. At length fiefs became also hereditary. Conrad II. was the first emperor that permitted the transmission of fiefs to sons and grandsons; the succession of collateral branches was subsequently introduced. The system of hereditary feudalism became thus firmly established in Germany, and by a natural consequence, it brought on the destruction of the imperial authority, and the ruin of the empire.

Nothing, however, was more injurious to the authority than the extravagant power of the clergy, whom the emperors of the Saxon line had loaded with honours and benefactions, either from a zeal for religion, or with the intention of using them as a counterpoise to the ambition of the dukes and secular nobility. It was chiefly to Otho the first that the bishops of Germany were indebted for their temporal power. That prince bestowed on them large grants of land from the imperial domains; he gave them towns, counties, and entire dukedoms, with the prerogatives of royalty, such as justiciary powers, the right of coining money, of levying tolls and other public revenues, &c. These rights and privileges he granted them under the feudal law, and on condition of rendering him military servitude. Nevertheless, as the disposal of ecclesiastical dignities belonged then to the crown, and fiefs had not, in general, become hereditary, the Emperor still retained possession of those which he conferred on the clergy; these he bestowed on whomsoever he judged proper, using them, however, always in conformity with his own views and interests.

The same policy that induced Otho to transfer to the bishops a large portion of his domains, led him also to intrust them with the government of cities. At that time, there was a distinction of towns into *royal* and *prefectorial*. The latter were dependent on the dukes, while the former subject immediately to the king, gave rise to what

since been called the royal cities that practice of establishing magistrates, courts of justice, civi- money, customs, natives usually referred the counties were a bishop reside so, in process of t- ver to subject these y, and render them ad of being immedi- ginally.

The successors of O- tated his example. sessions of the crown- nothing, and the a- ped with the dimini- hops, at first deve- n necessity and gra- ir own strength, ke use of it, and t- er to sap the imp- solidate their own- ses of the downfall- new power of the- which is ascribed- the following Period, re in det- su- re a succ- ion, of- ring this per- ot- The dynasty of the- out the middle of t- med in the eleven- pped at Cordova: t- prince was detro- ended in 1027. - provinces, and the pri- med themselves in- der the title of kin- metan States rose i- nicipal cities. The- re the kingdoms of- shon, Sargossa, To- his partition of the- n princes of Christ- m power at the ex- sides the kingdoms- sted in Spain, at- seventh century, the- had been dismember- ed the county of Bar- the sovereignty of the- Sancho the Great, k- ne to unite in his ov- erainties, with th- al as this occurred- the destruction of th- ould have been eas- complete ascendenc- had kept their fi- Navarre fell into t- en so fatal to the M- minions among his- e eldest, had Navarr- ng line of Navarros- hn d'Alhret, was de- Catholic. From t- ng of Leon and Cast-

since been called *imperial cities*. It was in these royal cities that the German kings were in the practice of establishing counts and burgomasters or magistrates, to exercise in their name the rights of justice, civil and criminal, the levying of money, customs, &c. as well as other prerogatives usually reserved to the king. Otho transferred the counties, or governorships of cities where a bishop resided, on the bishops themselves, and, in process of time, made use of this new power to subject these cities to their own authority, and render them *mediate* and *episcopal*, instead of being *immediate* and *royal* as they were originally.

The successors of Otho, as impolitic as himself, imitated his example. In consequence of this, the possessions of the crown were, by degrees, reduced to nothing, and the authority of the emperors decayed with the diminution of their wealth. The bishops, at first devoted to the emperors, both in necessity and gratitude, no sooner perceived their own strength, than they were tempted to make use of it, and to join the secular princes, in order to sap the imperial authority, as well as to consolidate their own power. To these several causes of the downfall of the empire must be added the new power of the Roman pontiffs, the origin of which is ascribed to Pope Gregory VII. In the following Period, this matter will be treated more in detail. In the meantime, we shall proceed to the success of the other states that figured during this period, in the theatre of Europe.

The dynasty of the Ommiades in Spain, founded about the middle of the eighth century, was overthrown in the eleventh. An insurrection having appeared at Cordova against the Caliph Hasehem, that prince was dethroned (1005), and the caliphate ended in 1027. The governors of cities and provinces, and the principal nobility of the Arabs, made themselves into independent sovereigns, and the title of kings; and as many petty Mahometan States rose in Spain as there had been principal cities. The most considerable of these were the kingdoms of Cordova, Seville, Toledo, Albon, Saragossa, Tortosa, Valencia, Murcia, &c. His partition of the caliphate of Cordova enabled the princes of Christendom to aggrandise their power at the expense of the Mahometans. Besides the kingdoms of Leon and Navarre, there existed in Spain, at the commencement of the tenth century, the county of Castille, which had been dismembered from the kingdom of Leon, and the county of Barcelona, which acknowledged the sovereignty of the Kings of France.

Sancho the Great, King of Navarre, had the fortune to unite in his own family all these different sovereignties, with the exception of Barcelona; and as this occurred nearly at the same time with the destruction of the caliphate of Cordova, it could have been easy for the Christians to obtain complete ascendancy over the Mahometans, if they had kept their forces united. But the King of Navarre fell into the same mistake that had been so fatal to the Mahometans; he divided his dominions among his sons (1035). Don Garcins, the eldest, had Navarre, and was the ancestor of a long line of Navarrese kings; the last of whom, John d'Albret, was deposed (1512) by Ferdinand the Catholic. From Ferdinand, the younger son, the line of Leon and Castille, were descended all the

sovereigns of Castille and Leon down to Queen Isabella, who transferred these kingdoms (1474), by marriage, to Ferdinand the Catholic. Lastly, Don Ramira, natural son of Sancho, was the stem from whom sprung all the kings of Arragon, down to Ferdinand, who, by his marriage with Isabella, happened to unite all the different Christian States in Spain; and put an end also to the dominion of the Arabs and Moors in that peninsula.

In France the royal authority declined more and more, from the rapid progress which the feudal system made in that kingdom, after the feeble reign of Charles the Bald. The Dukes and the Counts, usurping the rights of royalty, made war on each other, and raised on every occasion the standard of revolt. The kings, in order to gain over some, and maintain others in their allegiance, were obliged to give up to them in succession every branch of the royal revenue; so that the last Carolingian princes were reduced to such a state of distress, that, far from being able to counterbalance the power of the nobility, they had hardly left wherewithal to furnish a scanty subsistence for their court. A change of dynasty became then indispensable; and the throne, it was evident, must fall to the share of the most powerful and daring of its vassals. This event, which had long been foreseen, happened on the death of Louis V., surnamed the Stolid (987), the last of the Carolingians, who died childless at the age of twenty.

Hugh Capet, great-grandson of Robert the Strong, possessed at that time the central parts of the kingdom. He was Count of Paris, Duke of France and Neustria; and his brother Henry was master of the duchy of Burgundy. It was not difficult for Hugh to form a party; and under their auspices he got himself proclaimed king at Noyon, and crowned at Rheims. Charles Duke of Lorraine, paternal uncle of the last king, and sole legitimate heir to the Carolingian line, advanced his claims to the crown; he seized by force of arms on Leon and Rheims; but being betrayed by the Bishop of Laon, and delivered up to his rival, he was confined in a prison at Orleans, where he ended his days (991).

Hugh, on mounting the throne, restored to the possession of the crown the lands and dominions which had belonged to it between the Loire, the Seine, and the Meuse. His power gave a new lustre to the royal dignity, which he found means to render hereditary in his family; while at the same time he permitted the grandees to transmit to their descendants, male and female, the duchies and counties which they held of the crown, reserving to it merely the feudal superiority. Thus the feudal government was firmly established in France, by the hereditary tenure of the great fiefs; and that kingdom was in consequence divided among a certain number of powerful vassals, who rendered fealty and homage to their kings, and marched at their command on military expeditions; but who nevertheless were nearly absolute masters in their own dominions, and often dictated the law to the sovereign himself. Hugh was the progenitor of the Capetian dynasty of French kings, so called from his own surname of Capet.

England, during the feeble reigns of the Anglo-Saxon princes, successors to Alfred the Great, had sunk under the dominion of priests and monks.

The consequence was, the utter ruin of its finances, and its naval and military power. This exposed the kingdom afresh to the attacks of the Danes (991), who imposed on the English a tribute or tax, known by the name of Danegeit. Under the command of their kings Sueno or Sweyn I., and Canute the Great, they at length drove the Anglo-Saxon kings from their thrones, and made themselves masters of all England (1017). But the dominion of the Danes was only of short continuance. The English shook off their yoke, and conferred their crown on Edward the Confessor (1042), a prince of the royal blood of their ancient kings. On the death of Edward, Harold, Earl of Kent, was acknowledged King of England (1066); but he met with a formidable competitor in the person of William Duke of Normandy.

This prince had no other right to the crown than that founded on a verbal promise of Edward the Confessor, and confirmed by an oath which Harold had given him while Earl of Kent. William landed in England (October 14th, 1066), at the head of a considerable army, and having offered battle to Harold, near Hastings in Sussex, he gained a complete victory. Harold was killed in the action, and the conquest of all England was the reward of the victor. To secure himself in his new dominions, William constructed a vast number of castles and fortresses throughout all parts of the kingdom, which he took care to fill with Norman garrisons. The lands and places of trust, of which he had deprived the English, were distributed among the Normans, and other foreigners who were attached to his fortunes. He introduced the feudal law, and rendered fiefs hereditary; he ordered the English to be disarmed, and forbade them to have light in their houses after eight o'clock in the evening. He even attempted to abolish the language of the country, by establishing numerous schools for teaching the Norman-French; by publishing the laws, and ordering the pleadings in the courts of justice to be made in that language; hence it happened that the ancient British, combined with the Norman, formed a new sort of language, which still exists in the modern English. William thus became the common ancestor of the kings of England, whose right to the crown is derived from him, and founded on the Conquest.

About the time that William conquered England, another colony of the same Normans founded the kingdom of the Two Sicilies. The several provinces of which this kingdom was composed were, about the beginning of the eleventh century, divided among the Germans, Greeks, and Arabians,⁴ who were incessantly waging war with each other. A band of nearly a hundred Normans, equally covetous of war and glory, landed in that country (1016), and tendered their services to the Lombard princes, vassals of the German empire. The bravery which they displayed on various occasions made these princes desirous of retaining them in their pay, to serve as guardians of their frontiers against the Greeks, and Arabians. The Greek princes very soon were no less eager to gain their services; and the Duke of Naples, with the view of attaching them to his interest, ceded to them a large territory, where they built the city of Aversa, three leagues from Capua. The Emperor Conrad II. erected it into a county

(1038), the investiture of which he granted Rainulph, one of their chiefs.

At this same period the sons of Tancred conducted a new colony from Normandy into Italy. Their arrival is generally referred to the year 1033; and tradition has assigned to Tancred a descent from Rollo or Robert I. Duke of Normandy. These new adventurers undertook the conquest of Apulia (1041), which they formed into a county, the investiture of which they obtained from Henry III. Robert Guiscard, one of the sons of Tancred, afterwards (1047) completed the conquest of that province; he added to that of Calabria, of which he had also deprived the Greeks (1059), and assumed the title of Duke of Apulia and Calabria.

To secure himself in his new conquests, as well as in those which he yet inherited from the empires, Robert concluded a treaty the same year with Pope Nicholas II., by which that Pontiff confirmed him in the possession of the duchies of Apulia and Calabria; granting him not only the investiture of these, but promising him also the duchy of Sicily, whenever he should expel the Greeks and Arabians from it. Robert, in his turn, acknowledged himself a vassal of the Pope, and engaged to pay him an annual tribute of two pieces of money of Pavia, for every pair of oxen, the two duchies.⁵ Immediately after this treaty Robert called in the assistance of his brother Roger, to rescue Sicily from the hands of the Greeks and Arabs.⁶ No sooner had he accomplished this object, than he conquered in succession the principalities of Bari, Salerno, Amalfi, Sorrento, and Benevento; this latter city he rendered to the Pope.

Such is the origin of the duchies of Apulia and Calabria; which, after a lapse of some years, were formed into a kingdom under the name of the Two Sicilies.

As to the kingdoms of the North, the light of history scarcely began to dawn there until the introduction of Christianity, which happened about the end of the tenth or beginning of the eleventh century.⁷ The promulgation of the Gospel opened a way into the North for the diffusion of science and letters. The Scandinavian states, Denmark, Sweden, and Norway, which before that time were parcelled out among independent chieftains, began then to form plans of civil government, and to combine into settled monarchies. Their religion, however, did not inspire these nations with its meek and peaceable virtues, nor overcame their invincible propensity to wars and rapine. Their heroism was a wild and savage bravery which emboldened them to face all dangers, undertake desperate adventures, and to achieve sudden conquests, which were lost and won with the same rapidity.

Harold, surnamed *Blaatand*, or Blue teeth, the first sole monarch of the Danes, who with his son Sweyn received baptism, after being conquered by Otho the Great (965). Sweyn relapsed to paganism; but his son Canute the Great, on his accession to the throne (1014), made Christianity the established religion of his kingdom. He sent for monks from other countries, founded churches, and divided the kingdom into dioceses. Ambitious to distinguish himself as a conqueror, he afterwards subdued England and Nor-

(28). To these he added Sweden; and one of his sons, Canute, reigned in Norway, and on the throne of Denmark. These were merely temporary conquests (1035); which shook off the yoke of Harlicanute, even made himself recover its crown of that prince (1042). The ancient dynasty of Denmark is known by the name of *Skioldung*, from *Skiold*, a god, or Odin, who, from the time he reigned after Sweden, from that monarch a Danish nobleman, the Great. It is a standard of revolution (1044), and killed his death.

In Sweden, the kingdom, as is alleged, the title of Kings of the province. Olaus Skötkonung, that of King of the North, exerted himself to subvert the empire of Sigefroy, Archbishop of Sweden by his father Olaus and his conversion of the Swedes, had not been by the Swedish of conscience.

of doctrine and was Sweden, where Jesus was with Odin, and handed with the father of Olaus, contributed to the Christianity; and his *Just Christian King* of Norway, Olaus I., towards the end of the apostle and undertook to evangelize and punishment. He likewise converted, became his tributary, Olaus II., succeeded in ex- way (1020); but he established his own and petty kings, who by their own dominion Christianity was likewise some rays of light on nations, by importation of letters, and resistance among the Schavonians, who had been subdued to embrace Christianity of Thierry, and them to shake off

Odin worshipped.
Sweyn deposes Magnus.
Scalvoni as christianized.

(28). To these he added a part of Scotland
Sweden; and conferred in his own lifetime
one of his sons, named Sweyn, the kingdom
Norway, and on the other, named Hardicanute,
Denmark. These acquisitions, however,
merely temporary. Sweyn was driven from
Denmark (1035); while England and Scotland
shook off the Danish yoke (1042), on the
death of Hardicanute; and Magnus, King of Nor-
way, even made himself master of Denmark, which
did not recover its entire independence until the
death of that prince (1047).

The ancient dynasty of Kings who occupied the
north of Denmark from the most remote ages
known by the name of *Skioldungs*, because,
according to a fabulous tradition, they were de-
scended from *Skiold*, a pretended son of the
god Odin, who, from being the conqueror, was
deified into the deity of the North. The Kings
who reigned after Sweyn II. were called *Estris-*
ings, from that monarch, who was the son of
a Danish nobleman, and *Estrith*, sister to
the Great. It was this Sweyn that raised
standard of revolt against Magnus, King of
Denmark (1044), and kept possession of the throne
till his death.

In Sweden, the kings of the reigning family,
as is alleged, from Regner Lodbrok,
took the title of Kings of Upsal, the place of their
residence. Olaus Skotkonung changed this title
to that of King of Sweden. He was the first
monarch of his nation that embraced Christianity,
and exerted himself to propagate it in his king-
dom. Sigefroy, Archbishop of York, who was
sent into Sweden by Ethelred, King of England,
baptized Olaus and his whole family (1001). The
conversion of the Swedes would have been more
difficult, had not the zeal of Olaus been re-
inforced by the Swedish Diet, who decided for
full trial of conscience. Hence the strange mixture
of doctrine and worship, that long prevailed
in Sweden, where Jesus Christ was profanely as-
sisted with Odin, and the Pagan goddess Freya
founded with the Virgin. Anund Jacques,
son of Olaus, contributed much to the progress of
Christianity; and his zeal procured him the title
of *Just Christian King*.

In Norway, Olaus I., surnamed *Tryggveson*,
towards the end of the tenth century, constituted
himself the apostle and missionary of his people,
and undertook to convert them to Christianity by
preaching and punishment. Iceland and Greenland⁹
were likewise converted by his efforts, and after-
wards became his tributaries (1029). One of his
successors, Olaus II., called the Fat, and also the
Great, succeeded in extirpating paganism from
Denmark (1020); but he used the cloak of religion
to establish his own authority, by destroying sev-
eral petty kings, who before this time possessed
their own dominions.

Christianity was likewise instrumental in throw-
ing some rays of light on the history of the Sla-
vonian nations, by imparting to them the know-
ledge of letters, and raising them in the scale of
civilization among the civilized nations of Europe.
The Slavonians, who were settled north of the
Danube, had been subdued by the Germans, and com-
pelled to embrace Christianity. The haughtiness
of Thierry, Margrave of the North, induced
him to shake off the yoke, and to concert

a general insurrection, which broke out in the
reign of Otho II. (982). The episcopal palaces,
churches and convents, were destroyed; and the
people returned once more to the superstitious
of paganism. Those tribes that inhabited Branden-
burg, part of Pomerania and Mecklenburg, known
formerly under the name of *Wiltzians* and *Wet-*
tabes, formed themselves into a republican or
federal body, and took the name of *Lutizians*.
The Abotrites, on the contrary, the Polabes, and
the Wagrians,⁹ were decidedly for a monarchical
government, the capital of which was fixed at
Mecklenburg. Some of the princes or sovereigns
of these latter people were styled *Kings of the*
Veneti. The result of this general revolt was a
series of long and bloody wars between the
Germans and Slavonians. The latter defended
their civil and religious liberties with a remark-
able courage and perseverance; and it was not till
after the twelfth century that they were subdued
and reduced to Christianity by the continued
efforts of the Dukes of Saxony, and the Mar-
graves of the North, and by means of the crusades
and colonies which the Germans despatched into
their country.¹⁰

The first duke of Bohemia that received bap-
tism from the hands, as is supposed, of Metho-
dius, bishop of Moravia (894), was Borzivy.
His successors, however, returned to idolatry;
and it was not till near the end of the tenth
century, properly speaking, and in the reign of
Boleslaus II., surnamed the Pious, that Christi-
anity became the established religion of Bohemia
(999). These dukes were vassals and the tribu-
taries of the German empire; and their tribute
consisted of 500 silver marks, and 120 oxen.
They exercised, however, all the rights of sover-
eignty over the people; their reign was a system
of terror, and they seldom took the opinion or
advice of their nobles and grandees. The suc-
cession was hereditary in the reigning dynasty;
and the system of partition was in use, otherwise
the order of succession would have been fixed and
permanent. Over a number of these partitionary
princes, one was vested with certain rights of
superiority, under the title of Grand Prince,
according to a custom found very prevalent among
the half-civilized nations of the north and east of
Europe.¹ The greater proportion of the inhabi-
tants, the labouring classes, artisans, and domestics,
were serfs, and oppressed by the tyrannical
yoke of their masters. The public sale of men
was even practised in Bohemia; the tithe, or
tenth part of which, belonged to the sovereign.
The descendants of Borzivy possessed the throne
of Bohemia until 1306, when the male line became
extinct.

The Poles were a nation whose name does not
occur in history before the middle of the tenth
century; and we owe to Christianity the first in-
formations that we have regarding this people.
Mieczislaus I., the first duke or prince of the
Poles of whom we possess any authentic accounts,
embraced Christianity (966), at the solicitation of
his spouse Dambrowka, sister of Boleslaus II.,
duke of Bohemia. Shortly after, the first bishopric
in Poland, that of Posen, was founded by Otho
the Great. Christianity did not, however, tame
the ferocious habits of the Poles, who remained
for a long time without the least progress in men-

VI., and when the celebrated Photius was patriarch of Constantinople; and in spite of the efforts which several of the Greek emperors and patriarchs afterwards made to effect a union with the Roman see, the animosity of both only grew more implacable, and ended at last in a final rupture between the two churches. A government so weak and so capricious as that of Constantinople, could not but be perpetually exposed to the inroads of foreign enemies. The Huns, Ostrogoths, Persians, Bulgarians, Russians, Hungarians, Chazars, and Patzinacites, harassed the empire on the side of the Danube; while the Persians¹⁶ were incessantly exhausting its strength in the East, and on the side of the Euphrates. All these nations, however, were content with merely desolating the frontiers of the empire, and imposing frequent contributions on the Greeks. It was a task reserved to the Lombards, the Arabs, the Normans, and the Turks, to detach from it whole provinces, and to decree to hasten its downfall.

The Lombards were the first that conquered the Greeks the greater part of Italy. Palestine, Syria, and the whole possessions of the Empire in Greater Asia, as well as Egypt, Northern Africa, and the Isle of Cyprus, were seized in the ninth century by the Arabs, who made themselves masters of Sicily, and three times laid siege to Constantinople (699, 717, 719). They would even succeed in taking this Eastern capital, and annihilating the Greek empire, had not the courage of Leo the Isaurian, and the surprising efforts of the *Grægeois*, or Greek Fire,¹⁷ rendered their efforts useless. At length, in the eleventh century, the Normans conquered all that remained of the Greeks in Italy; while the Seljuk Turks, who must not be confounded with the Ottoman Turks, deprived them of the greater part of Asia Minor.

Turk is the generic appellation for all the Tartar nations,¹⁸ mentioned by the ancients under the name of Scythians. Their original country was those vast regions situate to the north of Mount Caucasus, and eastward of the Caspian Sea, between the Jihon, or Oxus of the ancients, especially Parasana, Transoxiana, Turkestan, &c. About the eighth century, the Arabs had passed the Oxus, and rendered the Turks of Chorasam and Transoxiana their tributaries. They instructed them in the laws and laws of Mahomet; but, by a transition rather extraordinary, it afterwards happened, that the vanquished imposed the yoke on their masters.

The empire of the Arabs, already enfeebled by territorial losses which have been mentioned, declined more and more, from about the middle of the ninth century. The Caliphs of Bagdad had committed the mistake of trusting their persons to the military guard of foreigners,¹⁹ viz. the Turks, taking advantage of the effeminacy of these princes, soon arrogated to themselves the whole authority, and abused it so far, as to leave the empire entirely dependent on their will, and to convert themselves the hereditary succession of government. Thus, in the very centre of the empire of Bagdad, there rose a multitude of petty sovereignties or dynasties, the heads of which, under the title of *Emir* or Commander, exercised supreme power; leaving nothing more to the Caliph than a pre-eminence of dignity, and that

rather of a spiritual than a temporal nature. Besides the external marks of homage and respect which were paid him, his name continued to be proclaimed in the mosques, and inscribed on the coined money. By him were granted all letters-patent of investiture, robes, swords, and standards, accompanied with high-sounding titles; which did not, however, prevent these usurpers from maltreating their ancient masters, insulting their person, or even attempting their lives, whenever it might serve to promote their interest.

A general revolution broke out under the caliph Rahdi. That prince, wishing to arrest the progress of usurpation, thought of creating a new minister, whom he invested with the title of *Emir-al-Omra*, or Commander of Commanders; and conferred on him powers much more ample than those of his vizier. This minister, whom he selected from the Emirs, officiated even in the grand mosque of Bagdad, instead of the caliph; and his name was pronounced with equal honours in the divine service throughout the empire. This device, which the caliph employed to re-establish his authority, only tended to accelerate its destruction. The Bowvides, the most powerful dynasty among the Emirs, arrogated to themselves the dignity of Chief Commander (945), and seized both the city and the sovereignty of Bagdad. The Caliph, destitute of all temporal power, was then only granted the name, or sovereign-pontiff of the Mussulman religion, under the protection of the Bowvidian prince, who kept him as his prisoner at Bagdad.

Such was the sad situation of the Arabian empire, fallen from its ancient glory, when a numerous Turkish tribe, from the centre of Turkestan, appeared on the stage, overthrew the dominions of the Bowvides; and, after imposing new fetters on the caliphs, laid the foundation of a powerful empire, known by the name of the Seljukides. This ruling tribe, which took its name from Seljuk a Mussulman Turk, after having wandered for some time with their flocks in Transoxiana, passed the Jihon to seek pasturage in the province of Chorasam. Reinforced by new Turkish colonies from Transoxiana, this coalition became in a little time so powerful, that Togrul Beg, grandson of Seljuk, had the boldness to make himself proclaimed Sultan in the city of Niesabur,²⁰ the capital of Chorasam, and formally announced himself as a conqueror (1038). This prince, and the sultans, his successors, subdued by degrees most of the provinces in Asia, which formed the caliphate of Bagdad.²¹ They annihilated the power of the Bowvides, reduced the Caliphs to the condition of dependents, and at length attacked also the possessions of the Greek empire.

Alp-Arslan, the nephew and immediate successor of Togrul Beg, gained a signal victory in Armenia, over the Emperor Romanus Diogenes (1071), who was there taken prisoner. The confusion which this event caused in the Greek empire was favourable to the Turks, who seized not only what remained to the Greeks in Syria, but also several provinces in Asia Minor, such as Cilicia, Isauria, Pamphylia, Lycia, Pisidia, Lycania, Cappadocia, Galatia, Pontus, and Bithynia.

The empire of the Seljukides was in its most flourishing state under the sultan Malek Shah, the son and successor of Alp-Arslan. The caliph Cayem, in confirming to this prince the title of

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Sultan and Chief Commander, added also that of *Commander of the Faithful*, which before that time had never been conferred but on the caliphs alone. On the death of Malek (1092), the disputes that rose among his sons occasioned a civil war, and the partition of the empire. These vast territories were divided among three principal dynasties descended from Seljuk, those of Iran, Kernan, and *Roum* or Rome. This latter branch, which ascribes its origin to Soliman, great grandson of Seljuk, obtained the provinces of Asia Minor, which the Seljukides had conquered from the Greeks. The princes of this dynasty are known in the history of the Crusades by the name of Sultans of Iconium or Cogni, a city of Lycaonia, where the sultans

established their residence after being deprived of the city of Nice in Bithynia. The most powerful of the three dynasties was that of the Seljukides of Iran, whose sway extended over the greater part of Upper Asia. It was, however, fell from its grandeur, and its states were divided into a number of petty sovereignties over which the Emirs or governors of cities and provinces usurped the supreme power.²² The divisions prepared the way for the conquests of the crusaders in Syria and Palestine; and furnished also to the Caliphs of Bagdad the means of shaking off the yoke of the Seljukides (1130) and recovering the sovereignty of Irak-Arabia, Bagdad.

PERIOD IV.

FROM POPE GREGORY VII. TO BONIFACE VIII. A.D. 1074—1300.

A NEW and powerful monarchy rose on the ruins of the German empire, that of the Roman Pontiffs; which monopolized both spiritual and temporal dominion, and extended its influence over all the kingdoms of Christendom. This supremacy, whose artful and complicated mechanism is still an object of astonishment to the most subtle politicians, was the work of Pope Gregory VII., a man born for great undertakings, as remarkable for his genius, which raised him above his times, as for the austerity of his manners and the boundless reach of his ambition. Indignant at the depravity of the age, which was immersed in ignorance and vice, and at the gross immorality which pervaded all classes of society, both laymen and ecclesiastics, Gregory resolved to become the reformer of morals, and the restorer of religion. To succeed in this project, it was necessary to replace the government of kings, which had totally lost its power and efficiency, by a new authority, whose salutary restraints, imposed alike on the high and the low, might restore vigour to the laws, put a stop to licentiousness, and impose a reverence on all by the sanctity of its origin. This authority was the spiritual supremacy of the Pope, of which Gregory was at once the creator and inventor.

This extraordinary person, who was the son of a carpenter at Saona in Tuscany, named Bonizone, or, according to others, descended of a Roman family, had paved the way to his future greatness under the preceding pontiffs, whose counsels he had directed under the title of Cardinal Hildebrand. While Cardinal, he engaged Pope Nicolas II. to enter into a treaty with Robert Guiscard (1059), for procuring that brave Norman as an ally and a vassal of the Holy See. Taking advantage, likewise, of the minority of Henry IV., he caused, this same year, in a council held at Rome, the famous decree to be passed, which, by reserving the election of the pontiffs principally to the cardinals, converted the elective privileges which the emperors formerly enjoyed in virtue of their crown rights, into a personal favour granted by the Pope, and emanating from the court of Rome.

On the death of Pope Nicolas II., Cardinal Hildebrand procured the election of Alexander II. without waiting for the order or concurrence of the Imperial court; and he succeeded in maintaining him in the apostolical chair against Pope Ilonorius II., whom the reigning empress had destined for that honour. At length, being raised himself to the pontifical throne, scarcely had he obtained the Imperial confirmation, when he put in execution the project which he had so long been concerting and preparing, viz. the erecting of spiritual despotism,¹ extending to priests as well as kings; making the supreme pontiff the arbiter in all affairs, both civil and ecclesiastical—the bestower of favours, and the dispenser of crowns. The basis of this dominion was, that the Vicar of Jesus Christ ought to be superior to all human power. The better to attain his object, he began by withdrawing himself and his clergy from the authority of the secular princes.

At that time the city of Rome, and the whole ecclesiastical states, as well as the greater part of Italy, were subject to the kings of Germany, who in virtue of their being kings of Italy and Roman emperors, nominated or confirmed the popes, and installed the prefects of Rome, who there received the power of the sword in their name. They sent also every year commissioners to Rome, to levy the money due to the royal treasury. The popes used to date their acts from the year of the emperor's reign, and to stamp their coin with his name; and all the higher clergy were virtually bound and subject to the secular power, by the solemn investiture of the ring and the cross. This investiture gave to the emperors and the other sovereigns the right of nominating and confirming bishops, and even of deposing them if they refused. It gave them, moreover, the right of conferring, at their pleasure, those fiefs and royal prerogatives which the munificence of princes had vested in the Church. The emperors, in putting bishops and prelates in possession of these fiefs, used the symbols of the ring and the cross, which were badges of honour belonging to bishops

and abbots. They made the oath of fidelity was the origin of their nation to furnish their perform military service

Gregory VII. prohibited investiture, by a formal a council assembled was more than the sin and the crosser implied in depriving, or confirming, or as of receiving their feuding military service. by which the bishops v subordination to prince respect, entirely independent investitures, the pontiff object in view. It was both himself and his whole ecclesiastical state German kings; especially which these princes had maintaining and confirming fact, that if he could clergy independent of follow, by a natural course being supreme head longer be dependent of emperor, excluded from vestiture of bishops, w interfere in the election

This affair, equally it was of the utmost in Germany, who had error of putting the gre into the hands of eccl those princes of the rig tical fiefs, was in fact the half of their emp flattering themselves w ginary liberty, forgot th the emperors had load the banners of the P the secular princes thos imprudently trusted in

There yet subsisted which connected the political orders of soci rest in the protection of that was, the marriage in use at that time ove as it still is in the G It is true, that the law mended strongly by adopted by the Romi no means of introduc churches of the Cathol with better success i Europe than: in the n priests continued to n England, and the kin even in France, Spain the law of celibacy, w vain by a multitude of

Gregory VII., per clergy completely depe be necessary to breac renewed the law of co

and abbots. They made them, at the same time, take the oath of fidelity and allegiance; and this was the origin of their dependence, and their obligation to furnish their princes with troops, and to perform military service.

Gregory VII. prohibited, under pain of excommunication, all sovereigns to exercise the rights of investiture, by a formal decree which he published in a council assembled at Rome in 1074. There was more than the simple ceremony of the ring and the crozier implied in this interdiction. He aimed at depriving princes of the right of nominating, confirming, or deposing prelates, as well as of receiving their fealty and homage, and exacting military service. He thus broke all those ties by which the bishops were held in allegiance and subordination to princes; making them, in this respect, entirely independent. In suppressing investitures, the pontiff had yet a more important object in view. It was his policy to withdraw both himself and his successors, as well as the whole ecclesiastical state, from the power of the German kings; especially by abolishing the right which these princes had so long exercised of nominating and confirming the Popes. He saw, in fact, that if he could succeed in rendering the clergy independent of the secular power, it would follow, by a natural consequence, that the Pope, as being supreme head of the clergy, would no longer be dependent on the emperors; while the emperor, excluded from the nomination and investiture of bishops, would have still less right to interfere in the election of pontiffs.

This affair, equally interesting to all sovereigns, was of the utmost importance to the kings of Germany, who had committed the unfortunate error of putting the greater part of their domains into the hands of ecclesiastics; so that to divest those princes of the right to dispose of ecclesiastical fiefs, was in fact to deprive them of nearly the half of their empire. The bishops, vainly flattering themselves with the prospect of an imaginary liberty, forgot the valuable gifts with which the emperors had loaded them, and enlisted under the banners of the Pope. They turned against the secular princes those arms which the latter had imprudently trusted in their hands.

There yet subsisted another bond of union which connected the clergy with the civil and political orders of society, and gave them an interest in the protection of the secular authority, and that was, the marriages of the priests; a custom in use at that time over a great part of the West, as it still is in the Greek and Eastern Churches. It is true, that the law of celibacy, already recommended strongly by St. Augustine, had been adopted by the Romish church, which neglected no means of introducing it by degrees into all the churches of the Catholic communion. It had met with better success in Italy and the south of Europe than in the northern countries; and the priests continued to marry, not only in Germany, England, and the kingdoms of the North, but even in France, Spain, and Italy, notwithstanding the law of celibacy, which had been sanctioned in vain by a multitude of councils.

Gregory VII., perceiving that, to render the clergy completely dependent on the Pope, it would be necessary to break this powerful connexion, renewed the law of celibacy, in a council held at

Rome (1074); enjoining the married priests either to quit their wives, or renounce the sacerdotal order. The whole clergy murmured against the unfeeling rigour of this decree, which even excited tumult and insurrection in several countries of Germany; and it required all the firmness of Gregory and his successors to abolish clerical marriages, and establish the law of celibacy throughout the Western churches.² In thus dissolving the secular ties of the clergy, it was far from the intention of Gregory VII. to render them independent. His designs were more politic, and more suitable to his ambition. He wished to make the clergy entirely subservient to his own elevation, and even to employ them as an instrument to humble and subdue the power of the princes.

The path had already been opened up to him by the *False Decretals*, as they were called, forged about the beginning of the ninth century, by the famous impostor Isidore, who, with the view of diminishing the authority of the metropolitans, advanced in these letters, which he attributed to the early bishops of Rome, a principle whose main object was to extend the rights of the Romish See, and to vest in the popes a jurisdiction till then unknown in the church. Several Popes before Gregory VII. had already availed themselves of these *False Decretals*;³ and they had even been admitted as true into different collections of canons. Gregory did not content himself with rigidly enforcing the principles of the impostor Isidore. He went even farther; he pretended to unite, in himself, the plenary exercise both of the ecclesiastical and episcopal power; leaving nothing to the archbishops and bishops but the simple title of his lieutenants or vicars. He completely undermined the jurisdiction of the metropolitans and bishops, by authorising in all cases an appeal to the Court of Rome; reserving to himself exclusively the cognizance of all causes term'd *major*—including more especially the privilege of judging and deposing of bishops. This latter privilege had always been vested in the provincial councils, who exercised it under the authority, and with the consent of the secular powers. Gregory abolished this usage; and claimed for himself the power of judging the bishops, either in person or by his legates, to the exclusion of the Synodal Assemblies. He made himself master of these assemblies, and even arrogated the exclusive right of convocating General Councils.

This pontiff, in a council which he held at Rome (1079), at length prescribed a new oath, which the bishops were obliged to take; the main object of which was not merely canonical obedience, but even fealty and homage, such as the prelates, as lieges, vowed to their sovereigns; and which the pontiff claimed for himself alone, bearing that they should aid and defend, against the whole world, his new supremacy, and what he called the *royal rights of St. Peter*. Although various sovereigns maintained possession of the homage they received from their bishops, the oath imposed by Gregory nevertheless retained its full force; it was even augmented by his successors, and extended to all bishops without distinction, in spite of its inconsistency with that which the bishops swore to their princes.

Another very effectual means which Gregory

VII. made use of to confirm his new authority, was to send, more frequently than his predecessors had done, legates into the different states and kingdoms of Christendom. He made them a kind of governors of provinces, and invested them with the most ample powers. These legates soon obtained a knowledge of all the affairs of the provinces delegated to their care; which greatly impaired the authority of the metropolitans and provincial councils, as well as the jurisdiction of the bishops. A clause was also inserted, in the form of the oath imposed on the bishops, which obliged them to furnish maintenance and support for these legates; a practice which subsequently gave place to frequent exactions and impositions on their part.

While occupied with the means of extending his power over the clergy, Gregory did not let slip any opportunity of making encroachments on the authority of princes and sovereigns, which he represented as subordinate to that of the Church and the Pope. As supreme head of the Church, he claimed a right of inspecting over all kings and their governments. He deemed himself authorized to address admonitions to them, as to the method of ruling their kingdoms; and to demand of them an account of their conduct. By and by, he presumed to listen to the complaints of subjects against their princes, and claimed the right of being a judge or arbiter between them. In this capacity he acted towards Henry IV., emperor of Germany, who enjoyed the rights of sovereignty over Rome and the Pope. He summoned him to Rome (1076), for the purpose of answering before the synod to the principal accusations which the nobles of Saxony, engaged in disputes with that prince, had referred to the Pope. The emperor, burning with indignation, and hurried on by the impetuosity of youth, instantly convoked an assembly of bishops at Worms, and there caused the pontiff to be deposed. No sooner was this sentence conveyed to Rome, and read in presence of the Pope in a council which he had assembled, than Gregory ventured on a step till then quite unheard of. He immediately thundered a sentence of excommunication and deposition against the Emperor, which was addressed to St. Peter, and preached in the following terms:—

"In the name of Almighty God, I suspend and interdict from governing the kingdom of Germany and Italy, Henry, son of the Emperor Henry, who, with a haughtiness unexampled, has dared to rebel against thy church. I absolve all Christians whatever from the oath which they have taken, or shall hereafter take, to him; and henceforth none shall be permitted to do him homage or service as king: for he who would disobey the authority of thy Church, deserves to lose the dignity with which he is invested. And seeing this prince has refused to submit as a Christian, and has not returned to the Lord whom he hath forsaken, holding communion with the excommunicated, and despising the advice which I tendered him for the safety of his soul, I load him with curses in thy name, to the end that people may know, even by experience, that thou art Peter, and that on this rock the Son of the living God has built his church; and that the gates of hell shall never prevail against it."

This measure, which seemed at first to have

been merely the effect of the pontiff's impetuosity, soon discovered of what importance it was to him to persevere, and what advantage he might derive from it. In humbling the Emperor, the most powerful monarch in Europe, he might hope that all the other sovereigns would bend before him. He omitted nothing, therefore, that might serve to justify his conduct, and endeavoured to prove, by sophistries, that if he had authority to excommunicate the Emperor, he might likewise deprive him of his dignity; and that the rights which release subjects from their oath of allegiance were an emanation and a natural consequence of the power of the Keys. The same equivocal interpretation he afterwards made use of in a sentence which he published against the same prince (1080) and which he addressed to the Apostles St. Peter and St. Paul, in these terms: "You, fathers and princes of the apostles, hereby make known to the whole world, that if you can bind and unbind in heaven, you can much more, on earth, take from all men empires, kingdoms, principalities, duchies, marquisates, counties, and possessions, of whatever nature they may be. You have often deprived the unworthy of patriarchates, primacies, archbishoprics, and bishoprics, to give them to persons truly religious. Hence, if you preside over spiritual affairs, does not your jurisdiction extend *a fortiori* to temporal and secular dignities, and if you judge the angels who rule over princes and potentates, even the haughtiest, will you not also judge their slaves? Let then the kings and princes of the earth learn how great and irresistible is your power! Let them tremble to contemn the commands of your church! And do you, blessed Peter, and blessed Paul, exercise, from this time forward, your judgment on Henry, that the whole earth may know that he has been humbled, not by any human contingencies, but solely by your power." Until that time, the emperors had exercised the right of confirming the Popes, and even of deposing them, should there be occasion; but by a strange reverse of prerogatives, the pope now arrogated to themselves the confirmation of the emperors, and even usurped the right of deposing them.

However irregular this step of the pontiff might be, it did not fail to produce the intended effect. In an assembly of the Imperial States, held at Tribur (1076), the Emperor could only obtain their consent to postpone their proceeding to a new election, and that on the express condition of his submitting himself to the judgment of the Pope, and being absolved immediately from the excommunication he had incurred. In consequence of this decision of the States, Henry crossed the Alps in the middle of winter, to obtain reconciliation with the Pope, who then resided with the famous Countess Matilda, at her Castle of Canossa in the Modenese territory. Absolution was granted him, however, except under conditions the most humiliating. He was compelled to do penance in an outer court of the castle, in a woollen shirt and barefooted, for three successive days, and afterwards to sign whatever terms the pontiff chose to prescribe. This extraordinary spectacle must have spread consternation among the sovereigns of Europe, and made them tremble at the censures of the Church.

After this, Gregory VII. exerted his utmost

influence to engage a nation, to acknowledge tributaries. "Let us see, in a letter which he wrote to the emperor, "that the church is not to be humbled, but let him know his sovereign." From this time the empire as a whole was setting up a rival to the person of Henry IV. who was deposed from him a Gregory pursued the same policy as the other sovereigns of Poland, having Cracow, who had vassals, the pontiff took of the prince; releasing the bishops of fidelity, and the bishops henceforth to express consent of the Pope. This aspiring pontiff had nothing, provided nothing, provided. However contented were to his pretexts of authority, imposing anything on was thus that, in order to pay him the same, he alleged the Pope pretended that the king of this tribute, but not to St. Peter; as he instance of that apostle France, he expressed a desire to please St. Peter as well as thy soul in the end thee, and absolve thee." And in a letter to Princes of Spain, he said, that the kingdom of Castile, the property of the Holy See, should be free from the hands they had come to. He affirmed to Soliman at Stephen I., on the orders of Pope Silvester II. as free property, in virtue of this decree, he considered as a tributary. He wrote in 1076, his immediate orders to Simeo, King of Sicily, to deliver up his kingdom to the Holy See. He refused to Demetrius of Dalmatia, except that he should do him homage, to pay the hundred golden pieces, but the art of the Holy See, under the pretence that he prevailed with the knowledge themselves of Provence, transferred homage, to the prelates he owed to the Holy See, Italy and Germany, in consequence of his abdication, abandoned the Holy See under submission, and the Holy See were not equally successful.

fluence to engage all sovereigns, without distinction, to acknowledge themselves his vassals and tributaries. "Let not the Emperor imagine," he wrote, in a letter which he wrote to the German emperor, "that the church is subject to him as a vassal, but let him know that she is set over him as sovereign." From that time the pontiff regarded the empire as a fief of his church; and afterwards he setting up a rival emperor to Henry IV., the person of Hermann of Luxemburg, he exacted from him a formal oath of vassalage. Gregory pursued the same conduct in regard to other sovereigns of Europe. Boleslaus II., King of Poland, having killed Stanislaus Bishop of Cracow, who had ventured to excommunicate him, the pontiff took occasion from this to depose that prince; releasing all his subjects from their oaths of fidelity, and even prohibiting the Polish bishops henceforth to crown any king without the express consent of the Pope.

This aspiring pontiff stuck at nothing; he needed nothing, provided he could obtain his object. However contrary the customs of former ages were to his pretensions, he quoted them as examples of authority, and with a boldness capable of imposing anything on weak and ignorant minds. It was thus that, in order to oblige the French king to pay him the tax of one penny each year, he alleged the example of Charlemagne, who pretended that that prince had not merely paid this tribute, but even granted Saxony as a fief to St. Peter; as he had conquered it with the assistance of that apostle. In writing to Philip I. of France, he expressed himself in these terms: "I strive to please St. Peter, who has thy kingdom as well as thy soul in his power; and who can absolve thee, and absolve in heaven as well as on earth." And in a letter which he addressed to the Kings of Spain, he attempted to persuade them, that the kingdom of Spain, being originally the property of the Holy See, they could not expropriate themselves from paying him a tax on all the lands they had conquered from the Infidels.

He affirmed to Solomon, King of Hungary, that Stephen I., on receiving his crown at the hands of Pope Sylvester II., had surrendered his kingdom as free property to the Holy See; and that, in virtue of this donation, his kingdom was to be considered as a part of the domain of the Holy See. He wrote in exactly the same style to Basil, his immediate successor. In one of his letters to Sueno, King of Denmark, he enjoins him to deliver up his kingdom to the power of the Holy See. He refused (1076) to grant the royal dignity to Demetrius Swinimir, Duke of Croatia and Dalmatia, except on the express condition that he should do him homage for his kingdom, and engage to pay the Pope an annual tribute of a hundred golden pieces of Byzantium. This pontiff had the art of disguising his ambition so artfully, under the mask of justice and piety, that he prevailed with various other sovereigns to acknowledge themselves his vassals. Bertrand, Count of Provence, transferred to him his fealty and homage, to the prejudice of those feudal obligations he owed to the Empire. Several princes in Italy and Germany, influenced by artifice or imitation, abandoned the emperor, and put themselves under submission to the Pope. His efforts were not equally successful with William the Con-

queror, King of England, whom he had politely invited, by letter, to do him homage for his kingdom, after the manner of his royal predecessors. That prince, too wise to be duped by papal imposition, replied, that he was not in a humour to perform homage which he had never promised, and which he was not aware had ever been performed by any of his predecessors.

The successors of Gregory VII. followed in the path he had opened up, giving their utmost support to all his maxims and pretensions. In consequence, a very great number of the princes of Christendom, some intimidated by the thunders of ecclesiastical anathemas, others with a view to secure for themselves the protection of the Holy See, acknowledged these usurped powers of the Popes. The Kings of Portugal, Arragon, England, Scotland, Sardinia, the two Sicilies, and several others, became, in course of time, vassals and tributaries to the Papal See; and there is not a doubt that the universal monarchy, the scheme of which Gregory VII. had conceived, would have been completely established, if some of his successors had been endowed with his vast ambition, and his superior genius.

In every other respect, circumstances were such as to hasten and facilitate the progress of this new pontifical supremacy. It had commenced in a barbarous age, when the whole of the Western world was covered with the darkness of ignorance; and when mankind knew neither the just rights of sovereignty, nor the bounds which reason and equity should have set to the authority of the priesthood. The court of Rome was then the only school where politics were studied, and the Popes the only monarchs that put them in practice. An extravagant superstition, the inseparable companion of ignorance, held all Europe in subjection; the Popes were revered with a veneration resembling that which belongs only to the Deity; and the whole world trembled at the utterance of the single word *Excommunication*. Kings were not sufficiently powerful to oppose any successful resistance to the encroachments of Rome; their authority was curtailed and counteracted by that of their vassals, who seized with eagerness every occasion which the Popes offered them to aggrandize their own prerogatives at the expense of the sovereign authority.

The Emperor of Germany, who was alone able to countervail this new spiritual tyranny, was at open war with his grand vassals, whose usurpations he was anxious to repress; while they, disrespecting the majesty of the throne, and consulting only their own animosity against the emperor, blindly seconded the pretensions of the pontiff. The emperor, however, did all in his power to oppose a barrier to this torrent of ecclesiastical despotism; but the insolence of Gregory became so extravagant, that, not content to attack him with spiritual weapons, he set up rival emperors, and excited intestine wars against him; and his successors even went so far as to arm the sons against their own father. Such was the origin of the contests which arose between the Empire and the Papacy, under the reign of Henry IV., and which agitated both Germany and Italy for a period of several centuries. They gave birth, also, to the two factions of the Guelphs and the Ghibellines, the former Imperial, and the other

Papal, who for a long course of time tore each other to pieces with inconceivable fury.

Henry V., son and successor of Henry IV., terminated the grand dispute about the investitures of the ring and the crosier. By the Concordat, which he concluded at Worms (1122) with Pope Calixtus II., he renounced the ceremony of the ring and the cross; and granting to the churches free liberty of election, he reserved nothing to himself, except the privilege of sending commissioners to the elections, and giving to the newly elected prelates, after consecration, the investiture of the regalian rights, by means of the sceptre, instead of the ring and crosier. The ties of vassalage which connected the bishops with the emperors, were still preserved by this transaction, contrary to the intentions of Gregory VII.; but the emperors being obliged to approve of the persons whom the Church should hereafter present, lost their chief influence in the elections, and were no longer entitled, as formerly, to grant or refuse investiture.

These broils with the court of Rome, the check which they gave to the Imperial authority, joined to the increasing abuses of the feudal system, afforded the princes and states of the Empire the means of usurping the heritable succession of their duchies, counties, and fiefs; and of laying the foundations of a new power, which they afterwards exercised under the name of territorial superiority. Frederic II., compelled by the pressure of events, was the first emperor that sanctioned the territorial rights of the states by charters, which he delivered to several princes, secular and ecclesiastic, in the years 1220 and 1232. The Imperial dignity thus lost its splendour with the power of the emperors; and the constitution of the Empire was totally changed. That vast monarchy degenerated by degrees into a kind of federal system; and the Emperor, in course of time, became only the common chief, and superior over the numerous vassals of which that association was composed. The extraordinary efforts made by the Emperors Frederic I. and II. of the house of Hohenstaufen,⁴ to re-establish the tottering throne of the empire, ended in nothing; and that house, one of the most powerful in Europe, was deprived of all its crowns, and persecuted even to the scaffold.

The empire thus fell into gradual decay, while the pontifical power, rising on its ruins, gained, day by day, new accessions of strength. The successors of Gregory VII. omitted nothing that policy could suggest to them, in order to humble more and more the dignity of the Emperors, and to bring them into a state of absolute dependence, by arrogating to themselves the express right of confirming, and even of deposing, them;⁵ and compelling them to acknowledge their feudal superiority. Being thus no longer obliged to submit their election to the arbitration of the Imperial court, the ambitious pontiffs soon aspired to absolute sovereignty.

The custom of dating their acts, and coining their money with the stamp and name of the emperor, disappeared after the time of Gregory VII.; and the authority which the emperors had exercised at Rome ceased entirely with the loss of the prefecture or government of that city; which Pope Innocent III. took into his own hands (1198),

obliging the prefect of Rome to swear the oath of homage to the Apostolic See, which the magistrate owed to the Emperor, from whom he received the prefecture. Hence it happened, that the chiefs of the Empire, obliged to comply with a power which they had learned to dread, had no longer any difficulty in recognising the entire independence of the Popes; even formally renouncing the rights of high sovereignty which their predecessors had enjoyed, not only in Rome, but over the Ecclesiastical States. The domains of the church were likewise considerably increased by the acquisitions which Innocent III. made of the March of Ancona, and the duchy of Spoleto; as well as by the personal property, *Patrimony of the Countess Matilda*,⁶ which Emperor Frederic II. ceded to Honorius III. (1220), and which his successors in the Apostolic chair formed into the province known by the name of the *Patrimony of St. Peter*.

One of the grand means which the Popes employed for the advancement of their new authority, was the multiplication of Religious Orders, and the way in which they took care to manage these corporations. Before the time of Gregory VII., the only order known in the West was that of the Benedictines, divided into several families or congregations. The rule of St. Benedict, prescribed at the Council of Aix-la-Chapelle (817), was the only one allowed by the Romish Church; just as that of St. Basil was, and still is, the only one practised in the East by the Greek church. The first of these newly invented orders was that of Grammont in Limousin (1073), authorized by Pope Gregory VII. This was followed, in the next century, by the order of Chartreux, and that of Antony.⁷ The Mendicant orders took their rise under Innocent III., near the end of the twelfth and beginning of the thirteenth century. Their number increased in a short time so prodigiously, that, in 1274, they could reckon twenty-three orders. The complaints which were raised on this subject from all parts of Christendom, obliged Pope Gregory to reduce them, at the Council of Lyons, to four orders, viz., the Hermits of St. William or Augustines, Carmelites, the Minor Franciscan friars, and the Preaching or Dominican friars. The Popes, perceiving that they might convert the monastic orders, and more particularly the mendicants, into a powerful engine for strengthening their own authority, and keeping the secular clergy in subjection, granted by degrees to these fraternities, immunities and exemptions, tending to withdraw them from the jurisdiction of the bishops, and to emancipate them from every other authority, except that of their Heads, the Popes. They even conferred on them various privileges, such as those of preaching, confessing, and instructing the young,—as being the most likely means to augment their credit and their influence. The consequence was, that the monks were frequently employed by the Popes in quality of legates and missionaries; they were feared and respected by sovereigns, singularly revered by the people, and let slip no occasion of exalting their power to which alone they owed their promotion, their respectability, and all the advantages they enjoyed.

Of all the successors of Gregory VII., he was

enabled him most
us, and the exten
pient III., who w
ants of Segni, and
the age of 37. He
stiff, and equally fe
surpassed him in
the success of him
need himself as *the*
by God to govern
the world. It was t
of the famous con
mon: *As God (says*
inquiries in the firm
and the other to give
published two grand
royal; and as the m
son, so does royalty
Papal authority.

not content to exerci
pleased, by means
which he dispersed ov
stiff was the first th
negative of dispensing
virtue of what he ten
per. It is to him al
quisition is ascribed, t
wards became the
potism; but what is
mark is, that he haic
orbitant power, which
reised in collating or
nities and benefices.
The secular princes
their rights of nominat
degrees of Gregory
privilege of electing
clergy and congreg
the chapters of conv
elected prelates hel
eriors; and collation
offices was reserved
ies. All these regu
the end of the tw
cathedral churches, a
me, claimed to them
the exclusion of th
le the Popes, gradu
s and collations, fo
mination and collatio
offices. The principl
ended on the false dec
ecclesiastical jurisdic
rt of Rome, as a riv
s from the Pope, that
that portion of autl
owed; and of which
by the act of comm
rather the more entitl
the exercise of that
y judge proper.

This principle of a cor
ery plausible pretext
collation to benefices.
the canon law, being
bishops, it seemed un
ccurred in the jurisd
the privileges derive
on or collation to bene
currence, therefore,

near the
age, which
from whom
happened,
a compron-
ised to dis-
cognising
even form-
reignty wh-
ot only of
States. The
e consider-
Innocent I
the duchal
property
a, which
Innocent I
the Apos-
n by the ma-

the Popes
ir new anti-
gious Order
to manage
ne of Greg-
West was
several fam-
Benedict,
pelle (817)
e Franks,
e Church;
e, the only
church. The
ers was that
rized by Pa-
e, in the se-
and that of
took their
of the twelfth
century. The
to prodigious
twenty-thre
these raised
dom, oblig-
the Council
hermits of S
the Minor
or Dominian
at they mig
more partic-
ful engine-
, and keep-
ed by depre-
and exempt-
jurisdiction
em from eve-
r Heads, as
in them vari-
ng, confess-
ing the nec-
t and their
that the most
Popes in qual-
ere feared a
revered by
of exalting
their promote
advantages th
y VII., he w

abled him most in the superiority of his
us, and the extent of his knowledge, was
cent III., who was of the family of the
nts of Segni, and elevated to the pontificate
the age of 37. He was as ambitious as that
still, and equally fertile in resources; and he
surpassed him in the boldness of his plans,
the success of his enterprises. Innocent an-
nounced himself as the successor of St. Peter, set
by God to govern not only the Church, but the
le world. It was this Pope who first made
of the famous comparison about the sun and
moon: *As God (says he) has placed two great
laries in the firmament, the one to rule the
day, and the other to give light by night, so has he
lished two great powers, the pontifical and
royal; and as the moon receives her light from
sun, so does royalty borrow its splendour from
Papal authority.*

Not content to exercise the legislative power as
pleased, by means of the numerous decretals
which he dispersed over all Christendom, this
Pope was the first that arrogated to himself the
rogative of dispensing with the laws themselves,
virtue of what he termed the *plenitude of his
power*. It is to him also that the origin of the
quisition is ascribed, that terrible tribunal which
wards became the firmest prop of sacerdotal
potism; but what is of more importance to
mark, is, that he laid the foundations of that
bitant power, which his successors have since
reised in collating or presenting to ecclesiastical
nities and benefices.

The secular princes having been deprived of
r rights of nomination and confirmation, by
decrees of Gregory VII. and his successors,
privilege of electing bishops was restored to
clergy and congregation of each church, and
the chapters of convents; the confirmation of
elected prelates belonged to their immediate
eriors; and collation to the other ecclesiastical
offices was reserved for the bishops and ordi-
ns. All these regulations were changed to-
wards the end of the twelfth century. The canons
cathedral churches, authorized by the Court of
me, claimed to themselves the right of election,
the exclusion of the clergy and the people;
le the Popes, gradually interfering with elec-
s and collations, found means to usurp the
ination and collation to almost all ecclesiastical
offices. The principle of these usurpations was
nded on the false decretals; according to which
ecclesiastical jurisdiction emanates from the
rt of Rome, as a river flows from its source.
s from the Pope that archbishops and bishops
d that portion of authority with which they are
dowed; and of which he does not divest him-
self, by the act of communicating it to them; but
rather the more entitled to co-operate with them
the exercise of that jurisdiction as often as he
y judge proper.

This principle of a conjunct authority, furnished
ery plausible pretext for the Popes to interfere
collation to benefices. This collation, according
the canon law, being essential to the jurisdiction
bishops, it seemed natural that the Pope, who
ncurred in the jurisdiction, should also concure
the privileges derived from it, namely, induc-
ion or collation to benefices. From the right of
erence, therefore, Innocent III. proceeded

to that of *prevention*, being the first pontiff that
made use of it. He exercised that right, especially
with regard to benefices which had newly become
vacant by the death of their incumbents, when at
the court of Rome; in which cases it was easy to
anticipate or get the start of the bishops. In the
same manner, this right was exercised in remote
dioceses, by means of legates *a latere*, which he
dispersed over the different provinces of Christen-
dom.

From the right of prevention were derived the
provisional mandates, and the *Graces Expectatives*
(reversionary grants or Bulls), letters granting
promise of church livings before they became
vacant. The Popes not having legates every-
where, and wishing, besides, to treat the bish-
ops with some respect, began by addressing to the
letters of recommendation in favour of those per-
sons for whom they were anxious to procure
benefices. These letters becoming too frequent
and importunate, the bishops ventured to refuse
their compliance; on which the Popes began to
change their recommendations into orders or
mandates; and appointed commissioners to en-
force their execution by means of ecclesiastical
censures. These mandates were succeeded by the
Graces Expectatives, which, properly speak-
ing, were nothing else than mandates issued for be-
nefices, whose titulars or incumbents were yet alive.
Lastly appeared the *Reservations*, which were
distinguished into general and special. The first
general reservation was that of benefices becoming
vacant by the incumbents dying at the court of
Rome. This was introduced by Pope Clement
IV. in 1265, in order to exclude forever the
bishops from the right of concurrence and preven-
tion in benefices of that kind.

This first reservation was the forerunner of
several others, such as the reservation of all cat-
hedral churches, abbeys, and priories; as also of
the highest dignities in cathedral and collegiate
churches; and of all collective benefices, becom-
ing vacant during eight months in the year, called
the Pope's months, so that only four months re-
mained for the ordinary collators; and these, too,
encroached upon by mandates, expectatives, and
reservations. The Popes having thus seized the
domination to episcopal dignities, it followed, by
a simple and natural process, that the *confirmation*
of all prelates, a distinct distinction, was in like
manner reserved for them. It would have even
been reckoned a breach of decorum to address an
archbishop, demanding from him the confirmation
of a bishop nominated by the Pope; so that this
point of common right, which vested the confir-
mation of every prelate in his immediate superior,
was also annihilated; and the Romish See was at
length acknowledged over the whole Western
world, as the only source of all jurisdiction, and
all ecclesiastical power.

An extraordinary event, the offspring of that
superstitious age, served still more to increase the
power of the Popes; and that was the Crusades,
which the nations of Europe undertook, at their
request and by their orders, for the conquest of
Palestine or the Holy Land. These expeditions,
known by the name of Holy Wars, because reli-
gion was made the pretext or occasion of them,
require a somewhat particular detail, not merely of
the circumstances that accompanied them, but also

UNIVERSITY OF

of the changes which they introduced into the moral and political condition of society. Pilgrimages to Jerusalem, which were in use from the earliest ages of Christianity, had become very frequent about the beginning of the eleventh century. The opinion which then very generally prevailed, that the end of the world was at hand, induced vast numbers of Christians to sell their possessions in Europe, in order that they might set out for the Holy Land, there to await the coming of the Lord. So long as the Arabs were masters of Palestine, they protected these pilgrimages, from which they derived no small emoluments. But when the Seljukian Turks, a barbarous and ferocious people, had conquered that country (1075), under the Caliphs of Egypt, the pilgrims saw themselves exposed to every kind of insult and oppression.⁸ The lamentable accounts which they gave of these outrages on their return to Europe, excited the general indignation, and gave birth to the romantic notion of expelling these Infidels from the Holy Land.

Gregory VII. was the projector of this grand scheme. He addressed circular letters to all the sovereigns of Europe, and invited them to make a general crusade against the Turks. Meantime, however, more pressing interests, and his quarrels with the Emperor Henry IV., obliged him to defer the projected enterprise; but his attention was soon recalled to it by the representation of a pilgrim, called Peter the Hermit, a native of Amiens in Picardy. Furnished with letters from the Patriarch of Jerusalem to the Pope and the princes of the West, this ardent fanatic traversed the whole of Italy, France, and Germany; preaching everywhere, and representing, in the liveliest colours, the profanation of the sacred places, and the miserable condition of the Christians and poor pilgrims in the Holy Land. It proved no difficult task for him to impart to others the fanaticism with which he was himself animated. His zeal was powerfully seconded by Pope Urban II., who repaired in person to France, where he convoked the council of Clermont (1095), and pronounced, in full assembly, a pathetic harangue, at the close of which they unanimously resolved on the Holy War. It was decreed, that all who should enrol their names in this sacred militia, should wear a red cross on their right shoulder; that they should enjoy plenary indulgence, and obtain remission of all their sins.

From that time the pulpits of Europe resounded with exhortations to the crusades. People of every rank and condition were seen flocking in crowds to assume the signal of the cross; and, in the following year, innumerable bands of crusaders, from the different countries of Europe, set out, one after another, on this expedition to the East.⁹ The only exception was the Germans, who partook but feebly of this universal enthusiasm, on account of the disputes which then subsisted between the Emperor and the court of Rome.¹⁰ The three or four first divisions of the crusaders, under the conduct of chiefs, who had neither name nor experience, marched without order and without discipline; pillaging, burning, and wasting the countries through which they passed. Most of them perished from fatigue, hunger, or sickness, or by the sword of the exasperated nations, whose territories they had laid desolate.¹¹

To these unwearied and undisciplined troops succeeded regular armies, commanded by experienced officers, and powerful princes. Godfrey Bouillon (1096), Duke of Lorraine, accompanied by his brother Baldwin, and his cousin Baldwin of Bourz, with a vast retinue of noblemen, set himself at the head of the first body of crusaders. He directed his march through Germany, Hungary, and Bulgaria, towards Constantinople, which was soon followed by several French princes, such as Hugh the Great, brother of Philip I., King of France; Robert, Duke of Normandy, son of William the Conqueror; Stephen VI., Count of Blois; Eustace of Boulogne, brother to Godfrey de Bouillon; and Robert, Count of Flanders; all preferred the route by Italy. They passed the winter in the environs of Bari, Brindisi, and Otranto; and did not embark for Greece until the following spring. Boemond, Prince of Tarentum, son to Roger, Earl of Sicily, at the instigation of the French grandees, took the cross, after that example, and carried with him into the East the flower of the Normans, and the noblesse of Sicily, Apulia, and Calabria. Lastly, Raymond IV., Count of Toulouse, accompanied by the Bishop of Puy, traversed Lombardy, Friuli, and Dalmatia on his passage to the Holy Land.

The general rendezvous of the crusaders was at Chalcedon in Bithynia. It is supposed that their forces, united, amounted to six hundred thousand combatants. They commenced their expedition with the siege of Nice, capital of the empire of Roum, of which they made themselves masters after having repulsed the Turks, who had advanced under the command of the Sultan Karslan, the son of Soliman, premier sultan of Roum. Another victory, gained over the sultan (1097) in the Gorgonian valley in Bithynia, opened for the crusaders a passage into Syria. There they undertook the siege of the strongest of Antioch, which they carried after an immense loss of lives (1098). Having at length arrived in Palestine, they planned the attack of Jerusalem, which the Caliph of Egypt had just recovered from the Turks; and which the crusaders, in their turn, carried by assault upon the Egyptians (1099). This city was declared the capital of a new kingdom, the sovereignty of which was bestowed on Godfrey of Bouillon, though he refused to take the title of king. This famous prince extended his conquests by a splendid victory, which he gained that same year near Ascalon, over the Caliph of Egypt. On his death, his brother Baldwin succeeded him, and transmitted the throne to his cousin Baldwin of Bourz, who in posterity reigned in Jerusalem until the destruction of that kingdom by Saladin (1187).

Besides the kingdom of Jerusalem, which comprehended Palestine, with the cities of Sidon, Tyre, and Ptolemais, the crusaders founded several other states in the East. The earldom of Edessa, first conquered by Baldwin, brother of Godfrey, passed to several French princes in succession until the year 1144, when it was subdued by Atabek-Zenghi, commonly called Sanguin. The principality of Antioch fell to the share of Boemond, Prince of Tarentum, whose heirs and descendants added to it, in 1188, the County of Tripoli, which had been founded (1110) by Raymond, Count of Toulouse, one of the crusaders

Richard I. of England.
The six succeeding crusades.

they were deprived of these sovereignties, who afterwards (1109) took Tripoli. Lastly, the King of France, Louis IX., surnamed Saint-Louis, and the Greeks (1191), were to Guy de Lusignan, who reigned in Cyprus till the year 1204, a possession of by the transient duration of the crusades, nothing surprising. The East, disunited among all hands, and incessantly assailed by the crusaders, found themselves unable to obtain from that quarter any aid. It was, therefore, necessary to withstand the efforts of the crusaders, who were animated, as usual, by a religious zeal, which led them against the enemies of the prophet. The efforts of the crusaders, not, however, becoming successful, it was encouraged by the numerous privileges which were conferred on the crusaders, and the payments that were made to the Pope continued to be made. The principal sovereigns married their daughters either to attempt to recover the Holy Land, which the first crusade and the six grand crusades which were either fruitless or of short duration. The Emperor of Germany, Frederick I., surnamed Barbarossa, undertook the siege of Antioch before, had made himself King (1189) was King of France; and the King of England; and the occupation of Jerusalem by the crusaders was undertaken by Innocent III. German nobility undertook the cross under the auspices of Montfort; in Palestine, they ended their expedition from the city of Antioch (1217) was conducted by Hungary, attended by nobles of Germany, who were invited to the council of Lateran by Pope Innocent III. undertook the expedition, which he concluded, he obtained the possession of several other cities of the Holy Land, not long continued by the Seljukian Turks, oppressed the Holy Land (1244) in Jerusalem. That famous city, the part of Palestine, was divided by the Sultans of Egypt in the seventh and last crusade, by Louis IX. King of France, who received it necessary to recover the Kingdom of Egypt; but his efforts were fruitless. Being made prisoner at Mansoura

they were deprived both of the one and the other of these sovereignties by the Mamelukes in 1289, who afterwards (1289) conquered Antioch and Tripoli. Lastly, the kingdom of Cyprus, which Richard Cœur-de-Lion, King of England, took from the Greeks (1191), was surrendered by that king to Guy de Lusignan, whose posterity reigned in Cyprus till the year 1487, when that island was again in possession of by the republic of Venice.

The transient duration of these different states is nothing surprising. The Christians of the East, disunited among themselves, surrounded on all hands, and incessantly attacked by powerful nations, found themselves too remote from Europe to obtain from that quarter any prompt or effective aid. It was, therefore, impossible for them to withstand the efforts of the Mahometans, who were animated, as well as the Christians, by a fanatic zeal, which led them to combine their efforts against the enemies of their religion and their prophet. The enthusiasm of religious wars did not, however, become extinct until nearly two centuries. It was encouraged and supported by numerous privileges which popes and sovereigns conferred on the invaders, and by the rich spoils that were made in their favour. All this continued to be in motion, and all its principal sovereigns marched in their turn to the East, either to attempt new conquests, or to maintain what the first crusaders had achieved.

Of the six grand crusades succeeded to the first; all of which were either fruitless, or at least without important and durable success. Conrad III., Emperor of Germany, and Louis VII., King of France, undertook the second (1147), on account of the conquests of Atabek-Zenghi, who, three years before, had made himself master of Edessa. The third (1189) was headed by the Emperor Frederick I., surnamed Barbarossa; Philip Augustus, King of France; and Richard Cœur-de-Lion, King of England; and the occasion of it, was the taking of Jerusalem by the famous Saladin (1187). The fourth was undertaken (1202), at the pressing invitation of Innocent III. Several of the French nobles, German nobility uniting with the Venetians, carried the cross under the command of Boniface, Count of Montferrat; but instead of marching into Palestine, they ended their expedition by taking Constantinople from the Greeks. The fifth crusade (1217) was conducted by Andrew, King of Hungary, attended by many of the princes and nobles of Germany, who had enlisted under the banner of the Cross in consequence of the decrees of the council of Lateran (1215). The Emperor Frederick II. undertook the sixth (1228). By a treaty which he concluded with the Sultan of Egypt, he obtained the restoration of Jerusalem and several other cities of Palestine; although they did not long continue in his possession. The Armenian Turks, oppressed by the Moguls, seized the Holy Land (1244), and pillaged and burnt Jerusalem. That famous city, together with the greater part of Palestine, fell afterwards under the dominion of the Sultans of Egypt.

The seventh and last grand crusade, was undertaken by Louis IX. King of France (1248). He considered it necessary to begin his conquests by the recovery of Egypt; but his design completely miscarried. Being made prisoner with his army after the battle of Mansourah (1250), he only obtained

his liberty by restoring Damietta, and paying a large ransom to the Sultan of Egypt. The unfortunate issue of this last expedition slackened the zeal of the Europeans for crusading. Still, however, they retained two important places on the coast of Syria, the cities of Tyre and Ptolemais. But these places having been conquered by the Mamelukes (1291), there was no longer any talk about crusades to the East; and all the attempts of the Court of Rome to revive them proved ineffectual.

It now remains for us briefly to notice the effects which resulted from the crusades, with regard to the social and political state of the nations in Western Europe. One consequence of these, was the aggrandisement of the Roman Pontiffs, who, during the whole period of the crusades, played the part of supreme chiefs and sovereign masters of Christendom. It was at their request, as we have seen, that those religious wars were undertaken; it was they who directed them by means of their legates,—who compelled emperors and kings, by the terror of their spiritual arms, to march under the banner of the Cross—who taxed the clergy at their pleasure, to defray the expenses of these distant expeditions,—who took under their immediate protection the persons and effects of the Crusaders, and emancipated them, by means of special privileges, from all dependence on any power, civil or judiciary. The wealth of the clergy was considerably increased during the time of which we speak, both by the numerous endowments which took place, and by the acquisition which the Church made of the immense landed property which the pious owners sold them on assuming the badge of the Cross.

These advantages which the See of Rome drew from the Crusades in the East, were inducements to undertake similar expeditions in the West and North of Europe. In these quarters we find that the wars of the cross were carried on, 1. Against the Mahometans of Spain and Africa. 2. Against the Emperors and Kings who refused obedience to the orders of the Popes.¹² 3. Against heretical or schismatic princes, such as the Greeks and Russians. 4. Against the Slavonians and other Pagan nations, on the coasts of the Baltic. 5. Against the Waldenses, Albigenses, and Hussites, who were regarded as heretics. 6. Against the Turks.

If the result of the crusades was advantageous to the hierarchy, if it served to aggrandize the power of the Roman Pontiffs, it must, on the contrary, have proved obviously prejudicial to the authority of the secular princes. It was in fact during this period that the power of the emperors, both in Germany and Italy, was sapped to the very foundation; that the royal house of Hohenstaufen sunk under the determined efforts of the Court of Rome; and that the federal system of the Empire gained gradual accessions of strength. In England and Hungary, we observe how the grandees seized on the opportunity to increase their own power. The former took advantage of their sovereign's absence in the Holy Land, and the latter of the protection which they received from the Popes, to claim new privileges and extort charters, such as they did from John of England, and Henry II. of Hungary, tending to cripple and circumscribe the royal authority.

In France, however, the result was different. There, the kings being freed, by means of the crusades, from a crowd of restless and turbulent vassals who often threw the kingdom into a state of faction and discord, were left at liberty to extend their prerogatives, and turn the scale of power in their own favour. They even considerably augmented their royal and territorial revenues, either by purchasing lands and fiefs from the proprietors who had armed in the cause of the cross; or by annexing to the crown the estates of those who died in the Holy Land, without leaving feudal heirs; or by seizing the forfeitures of others who were persecuted by religious fanaticism, as heretics or abettors of heresy. Finally, the Christian kings of Spain, the sovereigns of the North, the Knights of the Teutonic order, and of Livonia, joined the crusades recommended by the Popes, from the desire of conquest; the former, to subdue the Mahometans in Spain, and the others to vanquish the Pagan nations of the North, the Slavonians, Finns, Livonians, Prussians, Lithuanians, and Courlanders.

It is to the crusades, in like manner, that Europe owes the use of surnames, as well as of armorial bearings, and heraldry.¹³ It is easy to perceive, that among these innumerable armies of crusaders, composed of different nations and languages, some mark or symbol was necessary, in order to distinguish particular nations, or signalize their commanders. Surnames and coats of arms were employed as these distinctive badges; the latter especially were invented to serve as rallying points, for the vassals and troops of the crusading chiefs. Necessity first introduced them, and vanity afterwards caused them to be retained. These coats of arms were hoisted on their standards, the knights got them emblazoned on their shields, and appeared with them at tournaments. Even those who had never been at the crusades became ambitious of these distinctions; which may be considered as permanently established in families, from about the middle of the thirteenth century.

The same enthusiasm that inspired the Europeans for the crusades, contributed in like manner to bring tournaments into vogue. In these solemn and military sports, the young noblesse were trained to violent exercises, and to the management of heavy arms; so as to gain them some reputation for valour, and to insure their superiority in war. In order to be admitted to these tournaments it was necessary to be of noble blood, and to show proofs of their nobility. The origin of these feasts is generally traced back to the end of the tenth, or beginning of the eleventh century. Geoffrey of Preuilly, whom the writers of the middle ages cite as being the inventor of them, did no more, properly speaking, than draw up their code of regulations. France was the country from which the practice of tournaments diffused itself over all the other nations of Europe. They were very frequent, during all the time that the crusading mania lasted.

To this same epoch belongs the institution of *Religious and Military Orders*. These were originally established for the purpose of defending the new Christian States in the East, for protecting pilgrims on their journey, taking care of them when sick, &c.; and the vast wealth which they acquired in most of the kingdoms of Europe, pre-

served their existence long after the loss of Holy Land; and some of these orders even became a conspicuous figure in the political history of the Western nations.

Of all these, the first and most distinguished was the *Order of St. John of Jerusalem*, afterwards the *Order of Malta*. Prior to the crusade, there had existed at Jerusalem a church of the Latin or Romish liturgy, dedicated to Mary, and founded by some merchants of Amalfi in the kingdom of Naples. There was also a monastery of the Order of St. Benedict, and a hospital for the relief of poor or afflicted pilgrims. This hospital, the directors of which were appointed by the Abbot of St. Mary's, having, very short time become immensely rich by numerous donations of lands and seignories, in Europe and Palestine, one of its governors, Gerard, a native of Martigues in Provence, alleged, took the regular habit (1100), and led with his brethren a distinct congregation, under the name and protection of St. John the Baptist. Pope Pascal II., by a bull issued in 1114, approved of this new establishment, and ordained, that, after the death of Gerard, the Hospitaliers alone should have the election of their superintendent. Raymond du Puy, a gentleman from Dauphine, successor to Gerard, was the first that took the title of Grand Master. He prescribed a rule for the Hospitaliers; and Pope Calixtus II., in approving of this rule (1120), divided the members of the order into three classes. The nobles, or Knights of Justice, were destined for the profession of arms, making war on the Infidels, and protecting pilgrims. The priests and chaplains selected from the respectable citizens, were intrusted with functions purely ecclesiastical; while serving brethren, who formed the third class, were charged with the care of sick pilgrims, and were to act in the capacity of soldiers. The new knights were known by the name of *Knights of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem*, and were distinguished by wearing a white cross on a black habit.

After the final loss of the Holy Land, the order established themselves in the Isle of Cyprus. From this they passed into Rhodes, which they had conquered from the Infidels (1310). The latter island they kept possession of till 1522, being then expelled by Soliman the Great, who obtained (1530) from Charles V., the magnificent grant of the Isle of Malta, under the express condition of making war against the Infidels. Of this they were at length deprived by Buonaparte in 1798.

The order of Templars followed nearly the same course. Its first founders (1119) were French gentlemen; the chief of whom were Hugh de Payens, and Geoffrey de St. Omer. He made a declaration of their vows before the Patriarch of Jerusalem, they took upon themselves a special charge of maintaining free passage and conduct for the pilgrims to the Holy Land. Raymond, king of Jerusalem, assigned them an apartment in his palace, near the temple, whence they took the name of *Knights of the Temple*, or *Templars*. They obtained from Pope Honorius II. (1120) a rule, with a white habit; and Eugene III. added a red cross octagon. The order, after accumulating vast wealth and

especially in France, and their military exploits, at length suppressed (1312).

The Teutonic order, in the opinion of some, took its rise from Ptolemais. It was a pious and charitable citizen who erected a hospital for the relief of the wounded of their brethren having jointly devoted themselves to the sick; as also to the relief of the Infidels. The order of the Teutonic Knights, received confirmation from Pope Innocent III. (1192), who prescribed a rule for the Hospital of St. John.

The Hospital of St. John, which was a mark of knighthood, that Henry Walpott de Passy, master of the order; and a white habit, with a red cross, distinguished them from the other orders. The first grand master, Henry Walpott de Passy, died (1309). They were expelled from Marienburg; but had the privilege of a change in their grand master (1285), they transferred their residence to Prussia, in Fraconia.

A fourth order of Hospitaliers, in the Holy Land, was that of the Knights of St. Lazarus, who had for their principal object the relief of lepers;¹⁴ and who, in the thirteenth century, became a military order, and resided in the East. They were expelled from the Holy Land, and passed into France (1220), where they had a house at Boigny, near Paris. Henry II. united them with the Knights of St. Savoy; and Henry I. of France, in 1210, united Mount Carmel, in France, with the Hospitaliers. For the example of the Hospitaliers, several other were founded in the kingdoms of Europe, and attributed greatly to the progress of chivalry in the Middle Ages. The Hospitaliers institution is earliest mentioned in French history, when they first appear to have spoken, and seen the beginning of the decay of feudalism by their liberality and charities and private good-will, several noble and illustrious knights devoted themselves, by their piety and the genius of the time, to the service of God and its ministers; and every person suffering from poverty or distress. From the end of the thirteenth century, the time when the crusades were at their height, with its pomp and splendour, and its military institution, by its new energy, gave birth to new orders, and new practices. It tended to revive the old order, to revive order, and to revive the relationship among the nations. In general, it may

pecially in France, and distinguishing themselves by their military exploits for nearly two centuries, were at length suppressed by the Council of Clermont (1312).

The Teutonic order, according to the most probable opinion, took its origin in the camp before Acre or Ptolemais. The honour of it is ascribed to some charitable citizens of Bremen and Lubec, who erected a hospital or tent with the sails of their vessels, for the relief of the numerous sick and wounded of their nation. Several German knights having joined in this establishment, they devoted themselves by a vow to the service of the sick; as also to the defence of the Holy Land against the Infidels. This order, known by the name of the Teutonic Knights of St. Mary of Jerusalem, received confirmation from Pope Calixtus II. (1192), who prescribed for them the rule of the Hospital of St. John, with regard to their attendance on the sick; and with regard to chivalry or knighthood, that of the order of Templars. Henry Walpott de Passenheim was the first grand master of the order; and the new knights assumed a white habit, with a red cross, to distinguish them from the other orders. It was under their fourth grand master, Hermann de Saltza (1230), that they passed into Prussia, which they conquered (1309). They fixed their chief residence at Marienburg; but having lost Prussia in consequence of a change in the religious sentiments of their grand master, Albert de Brandenburg (1288), they transferred their capital to Mergentheim, in Franconia.

A fourth order of Hospitaliers founded in the Holy Land, was that of St. Lazarus of Jerusalem, who had for their principal object the treatment of lepers;¹⁴ and who, in process of time, from a medical, became a military order. After having long resided in the East, where they distinguished themselves in the Holy Wars, they followed St. Louis into France (1254), and fixed their chief seat at Boigny, near Orleans. Pope Gregory II. united them with the order of St. Maurice, Savoy; and Henry IV. with that of Our Lady Mount Carmel, in France. On the model, and after the example of these four military orders, several others were founded in succession, in various kingdoms of Europe.¹⁵ All these institutions contributed greatly to the renown of chivalry, so common in the Middle Ages. The origin of this order is earlier than the times of which we now speak, and seems to belong to the tenth, or the beginning of the eleventh century. The decay of feudalism being then at its height, and heresies and private quarrels everywhere prevailing, several noble and distinguished individuals devoted themselves, by a solemn vow, according to the genius of the times, to the defence of religion and its ministers; as also of the fair sex, and every person suffering from distress or oppression. From the end of the eleventh century, to the time when the crusades began, we find chivalry, with its pomp and its ceremonies, established in all the principal states of Europe. This military institution, by inspiring the minds of men with new energy, gave birth to many illustrious characters. It tended to repress the disorders of anarchy, to revive order and law, and establish a new relationship among the nations of Europe. In general, it may be said, that these ultra-

marine expeditions, prosecuted with obstinacy for nearly two hundred years, hastened the progress of arts and civilization in Europe. The crusaders, journeying through kingdoms better organized than their own, and observing greater refinement in their laws and manners, were necessarily led to form new ideas, and acquire new information with regard to science and politics. Some vestiges of learning and good taste had been preserved in Greece, and even in the extremities of Asia, where letters had been encouraged by the patronage of the Caliphs. The city of Constantinople, which had not yet suffered from the ravages of the barbarians, abounded in the finest monuments of art. It presented to the eyes of the crusaders a spectacle of grandeur and magnificence that could not but excite their admiration, and call forth a strong desire to imitate those models, the sight of which at once pleased and astonished them. To the Italians especially, it must have proved of great advantage. The continued intercourse which they maintained with the East and the city of Constantinople afforded them the means of becoming familiar with the language and literature of the Greeks, of communicating the same taste to their own countrymen, and in this way advancing the glorious epoch of the revival of letters.

About the same time, commerce and navigation were making considerable progress. The cities of Italy, such as Venice, Genoa, Pisa, and others, in assisting the Crusaders in their operations, by means of the transports, provisions, and warlike stores with which they furnished them, continued to secure for themselves important privileges and establishments in the seaports of the Levant, and other parts in the Greek empire. Their example excited the industry of several maritime towns in France, and taught them the advantage of applying their attention to Eastern commerce. In the North, the cities of Hamburg and Lubec formed, about the year 1241, as is generally supposed, their first commercial association, which afterwards became so formidable under the name of the *Hanseatic League*.¹⁶ The staple articles of these latter cities consisted in marine stores, and other productions of the North, which they exchanged for the spices of the East, and the manufactures of Italy and the Low Countries.

The progress of industry, the protection which sovereigns extended to it, and the pains they took to check the disorders of feudalism, contributed to the prosperity of towns, by daily augmenting their population and their wealth. This produced, about the times we are speaking of, an advantageous change in the civil and social condition of the people. Throughout the principal states of Europe, cities began, after the twelfth century, to erect themselves into political bodies, and to form, by degrees, a third order, distinct from that of the clergy and nobility. Before this period, the inhabitants of towns enjoyed neither civil nor political liberty. Their condition was very little better than that of the peasantry, who were all serfs, attached to the soil. The rights of citizenship, and the privileges deriv'd from it, were reserved for the clergy and the noblesse. The Counts, or governors of cities, by rendering their power hereditary, had appropriated to themselves the rights that were originally attached to their functions. They used them in the most arbitrary way, and

loaded the inhabitants with every kind of oppression that avarice or caprice could suggest.

At length, the cities which were either the most oppressed, or the most powerful, rose in rebellion against this intolerable yoke. The inhabitants formed themselves into confederations, to which they gave the name of *Communes* or *Free Corporations*. Either of their own accord, or by charters, obtained very often on burdensome terms, they procured for themselves a free government, which, by relieving them from servitude, and all impositions and arbitrary exactions, secured them personal liberty and the possession of their effects, under the protection of their own magistrates, and the institution of a militia, or city guard. This revolution, one of the most important in Europe, first took place in Italy, where it was occasioned by the frequent interregnums that occurred in Germany, as well as by the disturbances that rose between the Empire and the priesthood, in the eleventh century. The anathemas thundered against Henry IV., by absolving the subjects from the obedience they owed their sovereign, served as a pretext to the cities of Italy for shaking off the authority of the Imperial viceroys, or bailiffs, who had become tyrants instead of rulers, and for establishing free and republican governments. In this, they were encouraged and supported by the protection of the Roman pontiffs, whose sole aim and policy was the abasement of the Imperial authority.

Before this period, several maritime cities of Italy, such as Naples, Anagni, Venice, Pisa, and Genoa, emboldened by the advantages of their situation, by the increase of their population and their commerce, had already emancipated themselves from the Imperial yoke, and erected themselves into republics. Their example was followed by the cities of Lombardy and the Venetian territory, especially Milan, Pavia, Asti, Cremona, Lodi, Como, Parma, Piacenza, Verona, Padua, &c. All these cities, animated with the enthusiasm of liberty, adopted, about the beginning of the twelfth century, consuls and popular forms of government. They formed a kind of military force, or city guard, and vested in themselves the rights of royalty, and the power of making, in their own name and authority, alliances, wars, and treaties of peace. From Italy, this revolution extended to France and Germany, the Low Countries, and England. In all these different states, the use of *Communes*, or boroughs, was established, and protected by the sovereigns, who employed these new institutions as a powerful check against the encroachments and tyranny of the feudal lords.

In France, Louis the Fat, who began his reign in 1108, was the first king that granted rights, or constitutional charters, to certain cities within his domain, either from political motives, or the allurements of money. The nobility, after his example, eagerly sold liberty to their subjects. The revolution became general; the cry for liberty was raised everywhere, and interested every mind. Throughout all the provinces, the inhabitants of cities solicited charters, and sometimes without waiting for them, they formed themselves voluntarily into communities, electing magistrates of their own choice, establishing companies of militia, and taking charge themselves of the fortifications and wardenship of their cities. The magistrates of

free cities in northern France were usually mayors, sheriffs, and liverymen; while, in the south of France, they were called syndics or consuls. It soon became an established principle that kings alone had the power to authorize the erection of corporate towns. Louis VIII. was that he regarded all cities in which these corporations were established as belonging to his crown. They owed military service directly personally to the king; while such cities as were not these rights or charters were obliged to furnish their chiefs to the war.

In Germany, we find the emperors adopting the same policy as the kings of France. The result, which the progress of commerce and manufactures opened up to the industry of the inhabitants of cities, and the important succours which the emperors Henry IV. and V. had received from them in their quarrels with the Pope and the prince of the Empire, induced them to take these cities under their protection, to augment their number, multiply their privileges. Henry V. was the emperor that adopted this line of policy. He granted freedom to the inhabitants of several cities, even to artisans and tradesmen; whose condition at that time, was as degraded and debased as that of serfs. He extended to them the rank and privileges of citizens, and thus gave rise to the division of cities into classes and corporations of trade. This same prince set about repairing the injuries which the emperors of the house of Saxony had committed, of giving up to the bishops the temporal jurisdiction in all the cities wherein they resided. He gradually superseded these rights, by the privileges which he granted to the inhabitants of cities. The emperors, his successors, followed his example; in a little time, several of these cities threw off the yoke of their bishops, while others extricated themselves from the jurisdiction of their superiors, or provosts, whether imperial or feudal, and adopted, in imitation of the cities in Italy and France, magistrates of their own choice, republican form of government, and a municipal policy.

This liberty in cities gave new vigour to industry, multiplied the sources of labour, and created means of opulence and power, till then unknown in Europe. The population of these cities increased with their wealth. Communities, from their political consequence; and we find themselves successively admitted to the diets and national assemblies, in all the principal states of Europe. England set an example of this; and though English authors are not agreed as to the precise time when the *Commons* of that kingdom were called a Parliament, it is at least certain that their admission belongs to the reign of Henry II. (about 1265 or 1266), and that the formal division of the Parliament into two houses is as old as the reign of Edward III.¹⁷ France followed the example of England; the convocation of the states by Philip the Fair (1303), on the subject of disputes with Pope Boniface VIII., is considered as the first assembly of the States-general, composed of the three orders of the kingdom. In Germany, the first diet in which the cities of the Empire appeared in the form of a third order, that of Suire (1309), of the house of Luxembourg. Afterwards, we find these cities exercising a decisive

erative voice at the court of Louis the Bavarian. In all these states, we find more especially the nobles in checking a stop to the fury of the most powerful of these cities in a country, became less enterprising, even the nobles of France, the power of the nobles, authority was the cities, naturally independent, protected them, serfs, general assemblies, to the nobles, and we find subsidiary supplies of the state.

liberty which the cities procured by the establishment of corporations, or corporate bodies, of the country. Various circumstances, the use of these more liberal policies. The sovereign and policy, set the towns demesnes; and by the feudal lords, of courtesy to their descendants of their serfs, were compelled and mitigate the serfdom, or chartered promoted these enfranchisements, in which they grant feudal superiors.

Italy, we perceive the king as an immediate mediator of communities, arose among the nobles through off the liberty of the serfs; in order to augment the number of hearers, a serf, Captain of the serfs, fellow-citizens, and enfranchisement. All those who presented them before the people, who were to pay the sum or tax, who were the owner. The feudal enfranchisements, the liberty of the three estates, to elaborate the condition of liberty. France, after the death of Louis the Fat, they were frequent. The king, Louis VII., by royal letters, all the serfs which were within five miles of a general law (1180) of all serfs belonging to the crown, made a positive declaration to nature, which should be free and independent, and was denominated the *liberty of the Franks*, or *Franchises*, the fact should be considered, at the same

erative voice at the diet of Frankfort (1344),
r Louis the Bavarian.

In all these states, we find the sovereigns pro-
ng more especially those free cities which
d them in checking the devastations, and put-
a stop to the fury of private or intestine wars.
most powerful of the feudal chiefs, finding
where cities in a capacity to defend them-
selves, became less enterprising in their ambition;
even the nobles of inferior rank learned to
bet the power of these communities. The
authority was thereby strengthened; and
cities, naturally inclining to the sovereigns
protected them, served as a counterpoise, in
general assemblies, to the power of the clergy
the noblesse, and were the means of obtaining
subsidiary supplies necessary for the exigen-
of the state.

Liberty which the inhabitants of cities had
procured by the establishment of these com-
munities, or corporate bodies, extended itself to the
inhabitants of the country, by way of enfranchise-
s. Various circumstances concurred to ren-
der the use of these more frequent, after the twelfth
ary. The sovereigns, guided by the maxims
and policy, set the first example of this within
own domesnes; and they were speedily imi-
ted by the feudal lords and nobles, who, either
by courtesy to their sovereigns, or to prevent
desertion of their vassals, or acquire new
vassals, were compelled to grant liberty to the
and mitigate the servitude of the other. The
munities, or chartered cities, likewise seconded
promoted these enfranchisements, by the pro-
m which they granted to the serfs against
feudal superiors.

In Italy, we perceive these enfranchisements
wing as an immediate consequence of the in-
tion of communities. The continual feuds
arose among the numerous republics which
ately thrown off the yoke of authority, made
liberty of the serfs a measure absolutely ne-
cessary, in order to augment the number of cities
fitted to bear arms, and hold places of trust.
Gueso, Captain of Bologna (1256), proposed
to his fellow-citizens, and carried the law of en-
franchisement. All those who had serfs were ob-
liged to present them before the Podesta, or Cap-
tain of the people, who allfranchised them for a
sum or tax, which the republic paid to
owner. The feudal superiors, finding that
enfranchisements had a powe'ful support in
liberty of the three cities, were obliged either
to elaborate the condition of their serfs, or grant
liberty.

France, after the twelfth century, and the
of Louis the Fat, these enfranchisements be-
came frequent. The son and successor of that
king, Louis VII., by royal letter (1180), allfranch-
ised all the serfs which the crown possessed at
Paris, and within five leagues of it. Louis X.
issued a general law (1315), for the enfranchise-
ment of all serfs belonging to the crown. He
made a positive declaration, that *slavery was
contrary to nature, which intended that all men by
should be free and equal*; that, since his
father had *deannated the Kingdom of the
Franks, or Freemen, it appeared just and right
that the fact should correspond with the name.*
He added, at the same time, all the nobility to

imitate his example, by granting liberty to their
serfs. That prince would have emulated the ho-
mage he paid to nature, if the gift of liberty had
been gratuitous on his part; but he made it a
mere object of finance, and to gratify those only
who could afford to pay for it; whence it hap-
pened, that enfranchisements advanced but very
slowly; and examples of it are to be found in his-
tory, so late as the reign of Francis I.

In Germany, the number of serfs diminished in
like manner, after the twelfth century. The cru-
sades, and the destructive wars which the Dukes
of Saxony and the Margraves of the North car-
ried on with the Slavian tribes on the Elbe and
the Baltic, having depopulated the northern and
eastern parts of Germany, numerous colonies from
Brabant, the Netherlands, Holland and Friesland,
were introduced into these countries, where they
formed themselves into establishments, or associa-
tions, of free cultivators of the soil. From Lower
Germany the custom of enfranchisements extended
to the Upper provinces, and along the banks of
the Rhine. This was encouraged by the free
cities, which not only gave a welcome reception
to the serfs who had fled to shelter themselves
from oppression within their walls, but they even
granted protection, and the rights of citizenship,
to those who had settled within the precincts or
liberties of the town;¹⁹ or who continued, without
changing their habitation, to reside on the lands
of their feudal superiors. This spirited conduct
of the free cities put the nobles of Germany to the
necessity of aiding and abetting, by degrees, either
the suppression or the mitigation of slavery. They
reimbursed themselves for the loss of the fine or
tax which they had been in the habit of levying,
on the death of their serfs, by an augmentation of
the quit-rent, or annual cess which they exacted
from them on their being allfranchised.

In the Low Countries, Henry II., duke of Bra-
bant (1218), in his last will, granted liberty to all
cultivators of the soil;—he allfranchised them on
the right of mortmain, and ordained, that, like the
inhabitants of free cities, they should be judged
by no other than their own magistrates. In this
manner, liberty by degrees recovered its proper
rights. It assisted in dispelling the clouds of
ignorance and superstition, and spread a new lustre
over Europe. One event which contributed essen-
tially to give men more exact notions on gov-
ernment and jurisprudence, was the revival of the
Roman law, which happened about the time we
now speak of. The German tribes that destroyed
the Western Empire in the fifth century, would
naturally despise a system of legislation, such as
that of the Romans, which neither accorded with
the ferocity of their manners, nor the tenderness
of their ideas. In consequence, the revolution which
occasioned the downfall of that empire brought at
the same time the Roman jurisprudence into de-
suetude over all the Western world.¹⁹

A lapse of several centuries, however, was re-
quired, to rectify men's ideas on the nature of so-
ciety, and to prepare them for receiving the laws
and institutions of a civilized and refined govern-
ment. Such was the general state and condition
of political knowledge, when the fame of a cele-
brated civilian, called Irnerius, who taught the law
of Justinian publicly at Bologna, about the com-
mencement of the twelfth century, attracted to

UNIVERSITY OF

that academy the youth of the greater part of Europe. They devoted themselves with ardour to the study of this new science. The pupils, instructed by Imerius and his successors, on returning home, and being employed in the tribunals and public offices of their native country, gradually carried into practice the principles which they had imbibed in the school of Bologna. Hence, in a short time, and without the direct interference of the legislative authority, the law of Justinian was adopted by degrees, as a subsidiary law in all the principal states of Europe. Various circumstances contributed to accelerate the progress of this revolution. People had felt for a long time the necessity of a new legislature, and the insufficiency of their national laws. The novelty of the Roman laws, as well as their equity and precision, arrested the attention of all Europe; and sovereigns found it their interest to protect a jurisprudence, whose maxims were so favourable to royalty and monarchical power, and which served at once to strengthen and extend their authority.

The introduction of the Roman jurisprudence was soon followed by that of the Canon law. The Popes, perceiving the rapid propagation of this new science, and eager to arrest its progress, immediately set themselves to the work of raising that vast and astonishing edifice, the Canon law, as an engine to promote the accomplishment of their own greatness. Gratian, a monk of Bologna, encouraged by Pope Eugenius III., compiled a collection of Canons, under the title of the *Decret*, which he arranged in systematic order, to serve as an introduction to the study of that law. This compilation, extracted from different authors who had preceded him, recommended itself to the world by its popular method, which was adapted to the genius of the times. Pope Eugenius III. gave it his approval in 1152, and ordained that it should be read and explained in the schools. This collection of Gratian soon obtained a wide and most successful reception; from the schools it passed to the public tribunals, both civil and ecclesiastical. At length, Pope Gregory IX., in imitation of the Emperor Justinian, who had caused a collection of his own statutes, and those of his predecessors, to be made by Tribonian, ordered his chaplain Raymond de Pennafort to compile and digest, in their proper order, all the decisions of his predecessors, as well as his own; thus extending to common practice, what had been originally established but for one place, and for particular cases. He published his collection (1235) under the name of *Decretals*, with an injunction, that it should be employed both in the tribunals and in the schools.

If this new system of jurisprudence served to extend the jurisdiction, and strengthen the temporal power of the Popes, it did not fail at the same time to produce salutary effects on the governments and manners of Europe. The *peace*, or *truce of God*, which some bishops of France, in the eleventh century, had instituted as a check on the unbridled fury of private quarrels and civil discord, was established, by the *Decretals*, into a general law of the church.²⁰ The *judgments of God*, till then used in the tribunals of justice, trial by single combat, by hot iron, hot and cold water, the cross, &c. were gradually abolished. The restraints of the Canon law, added to the new information

which had diffused its light over the human mind, were instrumental in rooting out practices reserved only to cherish and protract the ferocity of manners. The spirit of order and method which prevailed in the new jurisprudence soon communicated itself to every branch of education among the nations of Europe. The law was reduced to systematic order; customs, usages and customs of the provinces, till then vague and uncertain, were collected and organized in a regular form.²¹

Jurisprudence, having now become a common science, demanded a long and laborious course of study, which could no longer be associated with the profession of arms. The sword was obliged by degrees to abandon the courts of justice and give place to the gown. A new class, thus arose, that of the law, who contributed their influence to repress the overgrown power of the nobility.

The rapid progress which the new jurisprudence made, must be ascribed to the recent foundation of universities, and the encouragements which sovereigns granted these literary corporations. Before their establishment, the principal schools were those which were attached either to monasteries, or cathedral and collegiate churches. There were, however, only a few colleges; and these in large cities, such as Paris, Angers, Oxford, Salamanca, &c. The sciences there taught were comprised under the liberal arts, viz. Grammar, Rhetoric, Dialectic, Logic, Arithmetic, Geometry, Music, and Astronomy. The first three were known by the name of *Trivium*; and the other four, which include mathematics, by that of *Quadrivium*. Theology and Jurisprudence, they did not figure among the academic sciences; and there was no school of medicine prior to that of Salerno—the only one of which any traces are discernible towards the end of the eleventh century.

These schools and academies cannot, by any means, be put in comparison with modern universities; which differ from them essentially, by their institutions as privileged bodies, by a system of government and jurisdiction peculiar to their own. The origin of these Universities is coeval with the revival of the Roman law, and the invention of academic degrees. The Emperor Imerius, who is generally acknowledged as the restorer of the Roman law at Bologna, was the first that conceived the idea of conferring certain solemnities, doctoral degrees; and granting licenses or diplomas to those who excelled in the study of jurisprudence. Pope Eugenius (1153), when he introduced the Code of Justinian into the academy of Bologna, gave permission to confer the same degrees in the Canon law, which had been customary in the Civil law. These degrees were much coveted and esteemed on account of the honours, immunities, and prerogatives the sovereign had attached to them. Not only, however, contributed more to bring universities into favour, than the privileges and immunities which the Emperor Frederic Barbarossa conferred on them (1158), by his *Authentic* (or *not called Habita*). The example of this was speedily followed by the other sovereigns of Europe.

The teaching of jurisprudence in the school of Bologna to Europe. Theology also all as medicine; and faculties, as they were composed. which combined all things under the reign of it obtained its origin in 1200. Except its cities of Bologna, Padua, Coimbra, &c. their origin in the The downfall of the house of Hohenstaufen by the princes assumed a long series that frightful state of the *Grand Interregnum* implied over law and altered from its base found to remedy the by forming alliances that of the Rhine,²² which began to appear election of the emperors and states of the world, became then that officers of the crown of the thirteenth century exclusively the right of Electors.²⁴ The empire, anxious to combat to promote only the incapable of supporting the crown. No other object in view traffic from elections in the candidates for rents or mortgages of some demesnes as suited of these weak emperors in Switzerland expectations of his election of arms the disorder and tribunals to the plundered several of the usurpers who had seized a consequence of the now detailed, we remarkable changes accumulated in the Empire. The Germanic body, beyond the provinces that invested, thought it to portion them out of these partitions in the thirteenth century; and some of the most powerful, multiply almost to infinity, and earldoms of the empire, far from condemning no means accorded to law, on the contrary, as appearing to humbling the power of themselves and the Empire. The ancient duchies of the Empire had received a new revolution

The teaching of jurisprudence passed from the school of Bologna to the different academies of Europe. Theology also was soon admitted, as well as medicine; and these completed the four faculties, as they were called, of which the universities were composed. That of Paris was the first which combined all the faculties. It was founded under the reign of Philip Augustus, from whom it obtained its earliest charter, about the year 1200. Except itself there are only the universities of Bologna, Padua, Naples, Toulouse, Salamanca, Coimbra, Cambridge, and Oxford, that trace their origin in the thirteenth century.²²

The downfall of the Imperial authority, and of the house of Hohenstaufen, and the new power assumed by the princes and states of the Empire, occasioned a long series of troubles in Germany, that frightful state of anarchy, known by the name of the *Grand Interregnum*. Strength then implied over law and right; the government was altered from its basis; and no other means were found to remedy this want of public security, than by forming alliances and confederations, such as that of the Rhine,²³ and the Hanseatic League, which began to appear about this time (1253). The election of the emperors, in which all the princes and states of the Empire had formerly concurred, became then the privilege solely of the great officers of the crown, who, towards the middle of the thirteenth century, claimed for themselves exclusively the right of electing, and the right of Electors.²⁴ The princes and states of the Empire, anxious to confirm their growing power, sought to promote only the feeblest emperors, who were incapable of supporting the rights and prerogatives of the crown. The electors, in particular, had no other object in view, than to derive a lucrative traffic from elections; bargaining every time for the candidates for large sums, and obtaining rents or mortgages of such portions of the Imperial domains as suited their convenience. One of these weak emperors, Rodolph, Count of Habsburg in Switzerland (1273), disappointed the expectations of his electors. He repressed by the use of arms the disorders of anarchy, restored the courts and tribunals to their pristine vigour, and recovered several of the Imperial domains from usurpers who had seized them.

In consequence of the revolutions which we have now detailed, we find very important and notable changes accomplished in the different provinces of the Empire. The princes and states of the Germanic body, regarding as their own property the provinces and fiefs with which they were invested, thought themselves further authorized to portion them out among their sons. The result of these partitions became general after the thirteenth century; and this wrought the downfall of one of the most powerful families, and tended to multiply almost to infinity the duchies, principalities, and earldoms of the Empire. The emperors, far from condemning this practice, which no means accorded with the maxims of the feudal law, on the contrary gave it their countenance, as appearing to them a proper instrument for diminishing the power of the grandes, and securing for themselves a preponderating authority in the Empire.

The ancient duchies of Bavaria and Saxony exchanged a new revolution on the fall of the pow-

erful house of the Guelphs, which was deprived of both these duchies by the sentence of proscription which the Emperor Frederic I. pronounced against Henry the Lion (1180), Duke of Bavaria and Saxony. The first of these duchies, which had formerly been dismembered from the Margravate of Austria by Frederic I. (1156), and erected into a duchy and fief holding immediately of the Empire, was exposed to new partitions at the time of which we now speak. The bishoprics of Bavaria, Stiria, Carinthia, Carniola, and the Tyrol, broke their alliance with Bavaria; and the city of Ratisbonne, which had been the residence of the ancient dukes, was declared *immediate*, or holding of the crown. It was when contracted within these new limits that Bavaria was conferred, by Frederic I. (1180), on Otho, Count of Wittelsbach, a scion of the original house of Bavaria. This house afterwards acquired by marriage (1215) the Palatinate of the Rhine. It was subsequently divided into various branches, of which the two principal were the Palatine and the Bavarian.

As to the duchy of Saxony, which embraced, under the Guelphs, the greater part of Lower Germany, it completely changed its circumstances on the decline of that house. Bernard of Aschersleben, younger son of Albert named the Bear, first Margrave of Brandenburg, a descendant of the Ascanian line, had been invested in the duchy of Saxony by Frederic I. (1180), but was found much too feeble to support the high rank to which he had been elevated. In consequence, the title, or qualification to the duchy of Saxony and the Electorate, was restricted, under the successors and descendants of that prince, to an inconsiderable district, situated on both sides of the Elbe; called since the Electoral Circle, of which Wittenberg was the capital. The princes of Pomerania and Mecklenburg, the Counts of Holstein and Westphalia, and the city of Lubeck, took advantage of this circumstance to revolt from the authority of the Duke of Saxony, and render themselves *immediate*. A part of Westphalia was erected into a distinct duchy, in favour of the Archbishop of Cologne, who had seconded the Emperor in his schemes of vengeance against the Guelphic princes. This latter house, whose vast possessions had extended from the Adriatic Sea to the Baltic and the Northern Ocean, retained nothing more of its ancient splendour than the free lands which it possessed in Lower Saxony, and which the Emperor Frederic II. (1235) converted into a duchy, and immediate fief of the Empire, in favour of Otho the Infant, grandson of Henry the Lion, and the new founder of the House of Brunswick.

The extinction of the House of Hohenstaufen having occasioned a vacancy in the duchies of Suabia and Franconia, the different states of these provinces, both secular and ecclesiastical, found means to render themselves also *immediate* (1268). A number of cities which had belonged to the domains of the ancient dukes, were raised to the rank of free and imperial cities; and the Houses of Baden, Wurtemberg, Hohen-Zollern, and Furstenberg, date their celebrity from this period. The death of the anti-emperor, Henry le Raspon (1247), last Landgrave of Thuringia, gave rise to a long war between the Margraves of Misnia and the Dukes of Brabant, who mutually contested that succession. The former advanced an Expec-

tative, or Deed of Reversion of the Emperor Frederic II., as well as the claims of Jutta, sister of the last landgrave; and the others maintained those of Sophia, daughter of the Landgrave Louis, elder brother and predecessor of Henry le Raspon. At length, by a partition which took place (1264), Thuringia, properly so called, was made over to the House of Misnia; and Henry of Brabant, surnamed the Infant, son of Henry II. Duke of Brabant, and Sophia of Thuringia, was secured in the possession of Hesse, and became the founder of a new dynasty of landgraves—those of the House of Hesse.

The ancient dukes of Austria, of the House of Babenberg, having become extinct with Frederic the Valiant (1246), the succession of that duchy was keenly contested between the niece and the sisters of the last duke; who, though females, could lay claim to it, in virtue of the privilege granted by the Emperor Frederic Barbarossa. Ottocar II. son of Wenceslaus, King of Bohemia, took advantage of these troubles in Austria, to possess himself of that province (1251). He obtained the investiture of it (1262) from Richard, son of John, King of England, who had purchased the title of emperor at a vast expense; but Rodolph of Hapsburg, treating him as a usurper, made war upon him, defeated and slew him in a battle which was fought (1278) at Marchfeld, in the neighbourhood of Vienna. The duchies of Austria, Stiria, Carinthia, and Carniola, being then detached from the kingdom of Bohemia, were declared vacant, and devolved to the Empire. The investiture of these the Emperor conferred (1282) on Albert and Rodolph, his own sons. Albert, the eldest of these princes, who was afterwards emperor, became the founder of the Hapsburg dynasty of Austria.

In Italy, a great number of republics rose about the end of the eleventh, or beginning of the twelfth century. These republics, though they had cast off the Imperial authority, and claimed to themselves the rights of sovereignty, protested, nevertheless, their fealty to the Emperor, whom they agreed to recognise as their supreme head. The Emperors Henry V., Lothaire the Saxon, and Conrad III., saw themselves compelled to tolerate an usurpation which they were too feeble to repress. But Frederic Barbarossa being determined to restore the royalty of Italy to its ancient splendour, led a powerful army into that kingdom (1158); and in a diet which he assembled on the plains of Roncaglia, in the territory of Placentia, he caused a strict investigation to be made by the lawyers of Bologna into the rights on which he founded his pretensions to the title of King of Italy. The opposition which the execution of the decrees of that diet met with on the part of the Milanese, induced the Emperor to undertake the siege of their city. He made himself master of it in 1162, razed it to the foundation, and dispersed the inhabitants.

This chastisement of the Milanese astonished the Italians, but without abating their courage. They afterwards took advantage of the reverses of the Emperor, and the schism which had arisen by the Romish Church, to form a league with the principal cities of Lombardy (1167), into which they drew the King of the Two Sicilies, as well as Pope Alexander III., whom the Emperor treated as a schismatic. The city of Milan was rebuilt in

consequence of this league; as also that of Andria, called della Paglia. The war was protracted; but the Emperor being abandoned by Henry the Lion, Duke of Bavaria and Saxony, most powerful of his vassals, received a defeat at Lignano, which obliged him to make an accommodation with Pope Alexander III., and to sign a treaty, of six years with the confederated cities (1177). This treaty was afterwards converted, at Constance, into a definitive peace (1183); by virtue of which, the cities of Italy were guaranteed in the forms of government they adopted, as well as in the exercise of the rights which they had acquired, whether by law or prescription. The Emperor reserved for himself the investiture of the consuls, the oath of allegiance which was to be renewed every ten years, and appeals, in civil cases, where the sum exceeded the value of twenty-five imperial livres (about 11 francs).

The Emperor Frederic II., grandson of Frederic I., and heir, in right of his mother, to the kings of the Two Sicilies, made new efforts to restore the prerogatives of the Empire in Italy. The cities of Lombardy renewed their league, in which they drew Pope Gregory IX. (1236), whose dignity and power would be endangered if the Emperor, being possessor of the Two Sicilies, should succeed in conquering the cities of Lombardy. The war which ensued (1236), was long and severe. Popes Gregory IX. and Innocent IV. went so far as to preach up a crusade against the Emperor, as if he had been an infidel; and that unfortunate prince, after the most courageous and indefatigable efforts, had the mortification to see his troops once more discomfited by the forces of the League.

The cities of Italy were no sooner delivered from the terror of the Emperors, than they loose their fury against each other; impelled by the rage of conquest, and torn by the intestine factions of the Guelphs and the Ghibellines, as well as by the contests which had arisen between noblesse and the free cities. The partisans of nobles in these cities were strengthened by every measure which had been taken to limit them. The chartered towns, by destroying a multitude of seignories, earldoms, and marquises, with which Lombardy swarmed before the twelfth century, and by incorporating them with their territories, obliged the deserted nobles and knights to seek an establishment within their walls. These latter, finding their partisans much less powerful, soon attempted to seize the government, and hence arose an interminable source of discord, which ended with the loss of liberty to the greater part of these communities.

To arrest these evils, and put a check to the ambition of the powerful citizens, they adopted the plan of intrusting the government to a magistrate, to be called the *Podesta*, who should be chosen in the neighbouring cities. This scheme was but a palliative rather than a remedy; and in order to guarantee themselves from the oppression of the nobles, the corporations of several cities gradually adopted the plan of conferring a sort of dictatorship on one of the powerful citizens, or some prince or nobleman, even though he was a stranger, under the title of *Captain*; hoping, in this way, to succeed in re-establishing peace

der. These chiefs of time, to render authority which at first rested on certain conventional laws, several new imperia were formed in Italy in the thirteenth century. Venice and Genoa, the republics of Italy, by their navigation and commerce, some of these cities in the invasion of the country, the cruelty of these barbarians, and flight over the walls of ancient cities and lagoons on the coast; and there laid the foundation, which, whether by its construction, or by its commerce, deserves to be numbered among the wonders of the world. At first the government was administered by a chief, whose power was annual. This system, though these yearly elections of a chief (Gonfaloniere, or Doge, as he was called) depended on the suffrage of the citizens, exercised nevertheless a despotic authority which it was not till after the death of the Emperor that authority was gradually diminished, which had been the case in democratical governments. Venice, which from the year 1297, enjoyed in the midst of its own which Tyre had lost its antiquity. The company was dated from the year 1297, under the magistracy of the Doge, whom the Venetians called the *Venier*, under of their state. The Emperors he obtained the immunity of commerce; and he procured a very important advantage, which he concluded with the Caliphs of Egypt, by which their commerce in the East was extended to his territory. One of the most important maritime cities of Italy, both of which were the property of Peter Urscole, they were obliged to cede to the Kings of Dalmatia by the Emperor. He regarded these cities as his property; while the King of Hungary laid claim to them, and the hands of the King of Hungary of the eleventh century, a perpetual source of contention between the Kings of Hungary and Venice; and it was not till the year 1297, that the Republic found a way to its territory in Dalmatia. The Venetians having formed the famous League of Lombardy, contributed by their commerce to vast projects of the Emperor Alexander III., as a testamentary gift to them the sove-

der. These chiefs or captains contrived, in process of time, to render absolute and perpetual authority which at first was temporary, and only granted on certain conditions. Hence the origin of several new independent sovereignties which were formed in Italy during the course of the thirteenth century.

Venice and Genoa at that time eclipsed all the republics of Italy, by the flourishing state of their navigation and commerce. The origin of the former of these cities is generally dated as far back as the invasion of the Huns under Attila (452). The cruelty of these barbarians having spread terror and flight over the whole country, many of the inhabitants of ancient Venetia took refuge in the lakes and lagoons on the borders of the Adriatic Sea; and there laid the foundation of the city of Venice, which, whether we regard the singularity of its construction, or the splendour to which it has since risen, deserves to be numbered among the wonders of the world. At first its government was popular, and administered by a bench of tribunes whose power was annual. The divisions which rose among these yearly administrators, occasioned the election of a chief (697), who took the title of Doge or Doge. This dignity was for life, and depended on the suffrages of the community; but he exercised nevertheless the rights of sovereignty, and it was not till after a long course of time that his authority was gradually abridged; and the government, which had been monarchical, became in democratical.

Venice, which from its birth was a commercial city, enjoyed in the middle ages nearly the same prosperity which Tyre had among the trading cities of antiquity. The commencement of its grandeur may be dated from the end of the tenth century, under the magistracy of the Doge Peter Ursuolo II., whom the Venetians regard as the founder of their state (992). From the Greek Emperors he obtained for them an entire liberty of immunity of commerce in all the ports of that empire; and he procured them, at the same time, several very important advantages, by the treaties which he concluded with the Emperor Otho III. and the Caliphs of Egypt. The vast increase of their commerce inspired these republicans with a desire to extend the contracted bounds of their territory. One of their first conquests was the maritime cities of Istria, as well as those of Dalmatia; both of which occurred under the magistracy of Peter Ursuolo II., and in the year 997. They were obliged to make a surrender of the islands of Dalmatia by the Emperors of the East, who regarded these cities as dependencies of their empire; while the Kings of Croatia and Dalmatia laid claim to them. Croatia having passed into the hands of the Kings of Hungary, about the middle of the eleventh century, these same cities became a perpetual source of troubles and wars between the Kings of Hungary and the Republic of Venice; and it was not till the fifteenth century that the Republic found means to confirm its authority in Dalmatia.

The Venetians having become parties in the Holy League of Lombardy, in the eleventh century, contributed by their efforts to render abortive the vast projects of the Emperor Frederick I. Pope Alexander III., as a testimony of his gratitude, granted them the sovereignty of the Adriatic

(1177),⁸⁵ and this circumstance gave rise to the singular ceremony of annually marrying this sea to the Doge of Venice. The aggrandisement of this republic was greatly accelerated by the crusades, especially the fourth (1204), which was followed by the dismemberment of the Greek empire. The Venetians, who had joined this crusade, obtained for their portion several cities and ports in Dalmatia, Albania, Greece, and the Morea; as also the Islands of Corfu, Cephalonia, and Candia or Crete. At length, towards the end of the thirteenth century, this republic assumed the peculiar form of government which it retained till the day of its destruction. In the earlier ages its constitution was democratic, and the power of the Doge limited by a grand council, which was chosen annually from among the different classes of the citizens, by electors named by the people. As these forms gave occasion to troubles and intestine commotions, the Doge Pietro Gradenigo, to remove all cause of discontent in future, passed a law (1298), which abrogated the custom of annual elections, and fixed irrevocably in their office all those who then sat in the grand council, and this to descend to their posterity for ever. The hereditary aristocracy thus introduced at Venice did not fail to excite the discontent of those whose families this new law had excluded from the government; and it was this which afterwards occasioned various insurrections, of which that of Tiepolo (1310) is the most remarkable. The partisans of the ancient government, and those of the new, attempted to decide the matter by a battle in the city of Venice, Tiepolo and his party were defeated, and Querini, one of the chiefs, was killed in the action. A commission of ten members was nominated to inform against the accomplices of this secret conspiracy. This commission, which was meant to be but temporary, was afterwards declared perpetual; and, under the name of the *Council of Ten*, became one of the most formidable supports of the aristocracy.

The city of Genoa, like that of Venice, owed her prosperity to the progress of her commerce, which she extended to the Levant, Constantinople, Syria, and Egypt. Governed at first by consuls, like the rest of the Italian states, she afterwards (1190) chose a foreign *Podesta*, or governor, to repress the violence of faction, and put a check on the ambition of the nobles. This governor was afterwards made subordinate to a Captain of the people, whom the Genoese chose for the first time in 1257, without being able yet to fix their government, which experienced frequent variations before assuming a settled and permanent form. These internal divisions of the Genoese did not impede the progress of their commerce and their marine. The crusades of the 12th and 13th centuries, the powerful succours which these republicans gave to the crusaders, and to the Greeks, as well as the treaties which they concluded with the Moorish and African princes, procured them considerable establishments in the Levant, and also in Asia and Africa. Caffa, a famous sea-port on the Black Sea, and the port of Azoph, the ancient Tanais, at the mouth of the Don, belonged to them; and served as entrepôts for their commerce with China and the Indies. Smyrna in Asia Minor, as also the suburbs of Pera and Galata at Constantinople, and the isles of Scio, Metelin and Tenedos, in the Ar-

chipelago, were ceded to them by the Greek emperors. The Kings of Cyprus were their tributaries. The Greek and German emperors, the Kings of Sicily, Castille and Arragon, and the Sultans of Egypt, zealously sought their alliance, and the protection of their marine. Encouraged by these successes, they formed a considerable territory on the continent of Italy, after the 12th century, of which nothing but a fragment now remains to them.

Genoa had at that time, in its immediate neighbourhood, a dangerous rival of its power and greatness. This rival was Pisa, a flourishing republic on the coast of Tuscany, which owed its prosperity entirely to the increase of its commerce and marine. The proximity of these two states—the similarity of their views and their interests—the desire of conquest—and the command of the sea, which both of them affected, created a marked jealousy between them, and made them the natural and implacable enemies of each other. One of the principal subjects of dispute was the possession of Corsica and Sardinia,²⁹ which the two republics contested at the point of the sword, after having, by means of their combined force, expelled the Moors, toward the middle of the eleventh century. Pisa, originally superior to Genoa in maritime strength, disputed with her the empire of the Mediterranean, and haughtily forbade the Genoese to appear within those seas with their ships of war. This rivalry nourished the animosity of the two republics, and rendered it implacable. Hence a continual source of mutual hostilities, which were renewed incessantly for the space of 200 years, and only terminated in 1290; when, by the conquest of Elba, and the destruction of the ports of Pisa and Leghorn, the Genoese effected the ruin of the shipping and commerce of the Pisan republic.

Lower Italy, possessed by the Norman princes, under the title of Duchy and Comté, became the seat of a new kingdom in the eleventh century—that of the Two Sicilies. On the extinction of the Dukes of Apulia and Calabria, descendants of Robert Guiscard, Roger, son of Roger, Count of Sicily, and sovereign of that island, united the dominions of the two branches of the Norman dynasty (1127); and, being desirous of procuring for himself the royal dignity, he attached to his interest the Anti-Pope Anacletus II., who invested him with royalty by a bull (1130), in which, however, he took care to reserve the territorial right and an annual tribute to the church of Rome. This prince received the crown of Palermo from the hands of a cardinal, whom the Pope had deputed for the express purpose. On the death of the Emperor Lothaire, he succeeded in dispossessing the Prince of Capua, and subduing the duchy of Naples (1139); thus completing the conquest of all that is now denominated the kingdom of Naples. William II., grandson of Roger, was the principal support of Pope Alexander III.; and of the famous League of Lombardy formed against the Emperor Frederic Barbarossa. The male line of the Norman princes having become extinct in William II., the kingdom of the Two Sicilies passed (1189) to the House of Hohenstaufen, by the marriage which the Emperor Henry IV., son of Frederic Barbarossa, contracted with the Princess Constance, aunt and heretrix of the last king. Henry maintained the rights of his wife against

the usurper Tancred, and transmitted this kingdom to his son Frederic II., who acquired by his marriage with Yolande, daughter of John de Brienne, titular King of Jerusalem, the titles and arms of this latter kingdom. The efforts which Frederic made to annihilate the League of Lombardy, to confirm his own authority in Italy, drew down upon him the persecution of the court of Rome, who, taking advantage of the minority of the young Conradin, grandson of Frederic II., wrested the crown of the Two Sicilies from this rival house, which alone was able to check its ambitious projects. Manfred, natural son of Frederic II., disgusted with playing the part of tutor to the young Conradin, in which capacity he at first engaged himself to be proclaimed and crowned King of Palermo, King of the Two Sicilies (1258). The Popes, Urban IV. and Clement IV., dreading the genius and talents of this prince, made an offer of that kingdom to Charles of Anjou, Count of Provence, and brother of St. Louis. Clement granted the investiture of it (1265) to him and his descendants, male and female, on condition of doing fealty and homage to the Holy See, presenting him annually with a white riding horse, and a tribute of eight million ounces of gold. Charles, after being crowned at Rome, marched against Manfred, with an army chiefly composed of crusaders. He defeated that prince, who was slain at the battle of Benevento (1266), which was soon after followed by the reduction of the Sicilian kingdoms. One rival to Charles still survived the young Conradin, the lawful heir to the throne of his ancestors. Charles vanquished him two years afterwards, in the plains of Tagliacozzo, and having made him prisoner, together with his young friend Frederic of Austria, he caused the heads of these princes to be beheaded at Naples, October, 1268.

Charles did not long enjoy his new dignity. While he was preparing to undertake a crusade against Michael Paleologus, a schismatic prince who had expelled the Latins from Constantinople, he had the mortification to see himself dispossessed of Sicily, on the occasion of the famous Sicilian Vespers (1282). This event, which is generally regarded as the result of a conspiracy, planned with great address by a gentleman of Salernum, named John de Procida, appears to have been the sudden effect of an insurrection, occasioned by the aversion of the Sicilians to the French yoke. During the hour of vespers, on the second day of Easter (30th March), when the inhabitants of Palermo were on their way to the church of the Holy Ghost, situated at some distance from the town, it happened that a Frenchman, named Drouette, had offered a private suit to a Sicilian woman; hence a quarrel arose, which drew on a general insurrection at Palermo. All the French who were in the city or in the neighbourhood were massacred, with the exception of one gentleman from Provence, called William Porcellet, who had conciliated all hearts by his virtues. This revolt gradually extended to the other Sicilian cities. Everywhere the French were put to death on the spot. Messina was the last that caught the infection; but there the insurrection did not take place till thirty days after the same event at Palermo (29th April, 1282). It is therefore, not true that this massacre of the French

opened at the same time as the Sicilian Vespers bells, over which more probably presided by Peter III., the hermits displaced the arch, having resolved upon being driven from the vengeance of the King, using with a fleet to make him an offer of the island to the invitation of Charles of Anjou, where he was crowned and submitted to him, obliged to raise the standard undertaken. The division of the place, confined under the papal crown; it became the nucleus of the Arragon, and Navarre were reduced to vassal states.

Spain, which was divided into Christianities, both Christian and Mohammedan, had a continual struggle. The Christian kings of Arragon were gradually made over to the kingdom of Navarre, which, in its local situation, remained a state of mediocrity. The successor to female inheritance of Navarre transferred it to the Crown of Castile, and the extinction of the line of Navarre (1328) was conveyed to the Comtés of Champagne, France. Philip the Fair, and his three sons, Louis, Long, and Charles, were kings both of France and Navarre. Joan I., queen and heretrix of Navarre, transferred the kingdom to the French, and relinquished the crown to Philip of Valois, who succeeded to the throne of France. The family of the Counts of Arragon, under the French yoke. During the hour of vespers, on the second day of Easter (30th March), when the inhabitants of Palermo were on their way to the church of the Holy Ghost, situated at some distance from the town, it happened that a Frenchman, named Drouette, had offered a private suit to a Sicilian woman; hence a quarrel arose, which drew on a general insurrection at Palermo. All the French who were in the city or in the neighbourhood were massacred, with the exception of one gentleman from Provence, called William Porcellet, who had conciliated all hearts by his virtues. This revolt gradually extended to the other Sicilian cities. Everywhere the French were put to death on the spot. Messina was the last that caught the infection; but there the insurrection did not take place till thirty days after the same event at Palermo (29th April, 1282). It is therefore, not true that this massacre of the French

opened at the same hour, and at the sound of vespers bells, over all parts of the island. Nor is it more probable that the plot had been concerted by Peter III., King of Arragon; since the hermits displayed at first the banner of the arch, having resolved to surrender to the Pope; being driven from this resolution, and dreading the vengeance of Charles, they despatched embassies to the King of Arragon, who was then sailing with a fleet off the African coast, and offered him an offer of their crown. This prince yielded to the invitation of the Palermians; he landed at Trapani, and thence passed to Palermo, where he was crowned King of Sicily. The whole island submitted to him; and Charles of Anjou was obliged to raise the siege of Messina, which he had undertaken. Peter entered, and took possession of the place, and from that time Sicily remained under the power of the King of Arragon; it became the inheritance of a particular branch of the Arragonese princes; and the House of Anjou were reduced to the single kingdom of Naples.

Spain, which was divided into several sovereignties, both Christian and Mahometan, presented a continual spectacle of commotion and change. The Christian states of Castille and Arragon were gradually increased by the conquests made over the Mahometans; while the kingdom of Navarre, less exposed to conquest by local situation, remained nearly in its original state of mediocrity. This latter kingdom passed successively to female heirs of different houses. Isabella, daughter of Sancho VI., transferred it to the Counts of Champagne (1234). The extinction of the male line of that house, in Henry I. of Navarre (1274), Joan I., his daughter and heiress, conveyed that kingdom, together with the Countés of Champagne and Brice, to the crown of France. Philip the Fair, husband of that princess, and his three sons, Louis le Hutin, Philip Long, and Charles the Fair, were, at the same time, kings both of France and Navarre. Finally, Isabella, Queen Joan II., daughter of Louis le Hutin, and heretrix of Navarre, who transferred the kingdom to the family of the Counts d'Evreux, relinquished the Countés of Champagne and Brice to Philip of Valois, successor of Charles the First to the throne of France (1336).

The family of the Counts of Barcelona ascended the throne of Arragon (1137), by the marriage of Count Raymond-Berenguer IV. with Donna Ramonilla, daughter and heiress of Ramira II., King of Arragon. Don Pedro II., grandson of Raymond-Berenguer, happening to be at Rome (1194), was there crowned King of Arragon by Pope Innocent III. On this occasion he did homage for his kingdom to that pontiff, and engaged himself and successors, to pay an annual tribute to the Holy See. Don James I., surnamed the Conqueror, son of Don Pedro II., gained some important victories over the Mahometans, from whom he took the Balearic Isles (1230), and the kingdom of Valentia,²⁷ (1238). Don Pedro II., first son of Don James I., had dispossessed Charles I. of Anjou and Sicily, which drew down on him a violent persecution on the part of Pope Martin IV., who was on the eve of publishing a crusade against him, and assigning over his kingdom to Charles of Valois, a younger brother of

Philip called the Hardy, king of France. Don James II., younger son of Don Pedro III., succeeded in making his peace with the court of Rome, and even obtained from Pope Boniface VIII. (1297) the investiture of the Island of Sardinia, on condition of acknowledging himself the vassal and tributary of the Holy See for that kingdom, which he afterwards obtained by conquest from the republic of Pisa.

The principal victories of the Christians over the Mahometans in Spain, were reserved for the kings of Castille, whose history is extremely fertile in great events. Alphonso VI., whom some call Alphonso I., after having taken Madrid and Toledo (1085), and subdued the whole kingdom of Toledo, was on the point of altogether expelling the Mahometans from Spain, when a revolution which happened in Africa augmented their forces by fresh numbers, and thus arrested the progress of the Castilian prince.

The Zeirides, an Arab dynasty, descended from Zeiri, son of Momnad, reigned then over that part of Africa which comprehends Africa properly so called (viz. Tripoli, Tunis, and Algiers), and the Mogreb (comprehending Fez and Morocco), which they had conquered from the Fatamite caliphs of Egypt. It happened that a new apostle and conqueror, named Aboubeker, son of Omer, collected some tribes of Arabs in the vicinity of Sugulmessa, a city in the kingdom of Fez, and got himself proclaimed Commander of the Faithful. His adherents took the name of *Morabethin*, a term which signifies *zealously devoted to religion*; and whence the Spaniards have formed the names *Almoravides* and *Marabouths*. Having made himself master of the city of Sugulmessa, this warlike Emir extended his conquests in the Mogreb, as well as in Africa Proper, whence he expelled the Zeirides. His successor, Yousuff, or Joseph, the son of Tasselata, completed the conquest of these countries; and built the city of Morocco (1069), which he made the capital of the Mogreb, and the seat of his new empire. This prince joined the Mahometans of Seville, to whose aid he marched with his victorious troops, defeated the King of Castille at the battle of Badajos (1090), and subdued the principal Mahometan states of Spain, such as Grenada and Seville, &c.

The empire of the Almoravides was subverted in the twelfth century by another Mahometan sect, called the *Moahedins*, or *Abubekers*, a word signifying Unitarians. An upstart fanatic, named *Abdalmoumen*, was the founder of this sect. He was educated among the mountaineers of Soudan, in Mauritania, and assumed the quality of *Emir* (1120), and the surname of *Mohammidi*, that is, *the Chief*—the leader and director of the Faithful. Having subdued Morocco, Africa, and the whole of the Mogreb, he annihilated the dynasty of the Almoravides (1146), and at the same time vanquished the Mahometan states in Spain. He took also (1160) from the Normans, Tunis, Mohadie, and Tripoli, of which they had taken possession. One of his successors, named Naser-Mohammed, formed the project of reconquering the whole continent of Spain. The immense preparations which he made for this purpose alarmed Alphonso VIII., King of Castille, who immediately formed an alliance with the Kings of Arragon and Navarre, and even engaged Pope Innocent III. to proclaim a crusade against the

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

his policy, recovered his superiority over Eng-
land; he strengthened his power and authority by
numerous accessions which he made to the
Norman lands.³¹ Besides Artois, Ver-
mois, the earldoms of Evreux, Aovergne, and
Anjou, which he annexed under different titles,
he took advantage of the civil commotions which
arisen in England against King John, to dis-
possess the English of Normandy, Anjou, Maine,
Brittany, and Poitou (1203); and he maintained
his conquests by the brilliant victory which he
obtained at Bouvines (1214), over the combined
armies of England, the Emperor Otho, and the
King of Flanders.³²

Several of the French kings were exclusively
occupied with the crusades in the East. Louis
VII., Philip Augustus, and Louis IX. took the
cross, and marched in person to the Holy Land.
The ultra-marine expeditions (1147, 1248),
which required great and powerful resources, could
not exhaust France; while, on the contrary,
the crusades which Louis VIII. undertook against
Albigenses and their protectors, the Counts of
Toulouse and Carcassonne, considerably aug-
mented the royal power. Pope Innocent III., by
claiming this crusade (1208), raised a tedious
bloody war, which desolated Languedoc; and
during which, fanaticism perpetrated atrocities
which make humanity to shudder. Simon, Count
of Montfort, the chief or general of these crusaders,
the whole estates of the Counts of Toulouse
surrendered him by the Pope. Amanri, the son and
heir of Simon, surrendered his claims over these
territories to Louis VIII. King of France (1226);
it was this circumstance that induced Louis to
go in person at the head of the crusader.
The Count of Toulouse, his vassal and
heir. He died at the close of this expedition,
leaving to his son and successor, Louis IX., the
task of finishing this disastrous war. By the peace
which was concluded at Paris (1229), between the
King and the Count, the greater part of Languedoc
was allowed to remain in the possession of Louis.
An arrangement of this treaty was the marriage
of the Count's daughter with Alphonso, brother to
King John; with this express clause, that failing
of issue of this marriage, the whole territory of
Languedoc should revert to the crown. The same
was adjudged to the Pope the county of Vemaissin,
the seat of the Counts of Toulouse; and the
County of Carcassonne, implicated also in the cause
of the Albigenses, was compelled to cede to the
King all right over the viscounties of Beziers, Car-
cassonne, Agde, Rodez, Albi, and Nismes. One
consequence of this bloody war was the establish-
ment of the terrible tribunal of the Inquisition,³³
the founding of the order of Dominicans.³⁴

Henry II., a descendant of the house of Planta-
genet, having mounted the throne of England, in
right of his mother Matilda, annexed to that crown
the Duchy of Normandy, the counties of Anjou,
Brittany, and Maine, together with Guienne,
Poitou, and Poitou. He afterwards guided Ire-
land, which he subdued in 1172. This island,
which had never been conquered, either by the
Romans or the barbarians who had desolated
it, was, at that time, divided into five prin-
cipal sovereignties, viz. Munster, Ulster, Con-
naught, Leinster, and Meath, whose several chiefs
assumed the title of kings. One of these princes

enjoyed the dignity of monarch of the island; but
he had neither authority sufficient to secure in-
ternal tranquillity, nor power enough to repel with
success the attacks of enemies from without. It
was this state of weakness that induced Henry to
attempt the conquest of the island. He obtained
the sanction of Pope Adrian IV., by a bull in 1155,
and undertook, in a formal engagement, to subject
the Irish to the jurisdiction of the Holy See, and
the payment of *Peter's pence*.³⁵ The expulsion of
Dermot, King of Leinster, who had rendered him-
self odious by his pride and his tyranny, furnished
Henry with a pretext for sending troops into that
island, to assist the dethroned prince in recovering
his dominions. The success of the English, and
the victories which they gained over Roderic, King
of Connaught, who at that time was chief monarch
of the island, determined Henry to undertake, in
person, an expedition into Ireland (in October
1172). He soon reduced the provinces of Lein-
ster and Munster to submission; and after having
constructed several forts, and nominated a vicary
and other crown officers, he took his departure
without completing the conquest of the island.
Roderic, King of Connaught, submitted in 1175;
but it was not till the reign of Queen Elizabeth
that the entire reduction of Ireland was accom-
plished.

In England, the rashness and rapacity of John,
son of Henry II., occasioned a mighty revolution
in the government. The discontented nobles, with
the Archbishop of Canterbury at their head, joined
in a league against the King. Pope Innocent III.
formally deposed him, made over his kingdom to
the Crown of France, and proclaimed a crusade
against him in every country of Europe. John
obtained an accommodation with the Pope; and
in order to secure his protection, he consented to
become a vassal of the Church, both for England
and Ireland; engaging to pay his Holiness, besides
Peter's pence, an annual tribute of a thousand
marks. But all in vain; the nobles persisted in
their revolt, and forced the King to grant them
the grand charter of *Magna Charta*, 19th June, 1215,
by which he and his successors were for ever de-
prived of the power of exacting subsidies without
the counsel and advice of Parliament; which did
not then include the Commons. He granted to
the city of London, and to all cities and burghs in
the kingdom, a renewal of their ancient liberties
and privileges, and the right of not being taxed
except with the advice and consent of the common
council. Moreover, the lives and properties of
the citizens were secured by this charter; one
clause of which expressly provided, that no subject
could be either arrested, imprisoned, dispossessed
of his fortune, or deprived of his life, except by a
legal sentence of his peers, conform to the ancient
law of the country. This charter, which was re-
newed in various subsequent reigns, forms, at this
day, the basis of the English Constitution.

King John, meantime, rebelled against this
charter, and caused it to be rescinded by Pope In-
nocent III., who even issued a bull of excommuni-
cation against the barons; but they, far from
being disconcerted or intimidated, made an offer
of their crown to Louis, son of Philip Augustus
King of France. This prince repaired to England,
and there received the fealty and homage of the
grandees of the nation. John, abandoned by all

the apostle and the conqueror of Finland (1157); he established also a Swedish colony in Nyland, and subdued the provinces of Helsingland and Lapland. Charles I., son of Swerkar, united the kingdom of Gothland to Sweden, and was the first that took the title of these two kingdoms. Eric, surnamed *Laspe*, or the *Lisper*, resumed the crusading system of warfare; and, in the character of a missionary, conquered Tavastland and the eastern part of Bothnia. Birger, a prince of the Folkungian dynasty, who ascended the throne of Sweden in 1250, conquered, under the same pretext, Carelia and Savolax, and fortified Viburg. He compelled the inhabitants of these countries to embrace the Christian religion (1293), and annexed them to Finland. We find, also, several of the Swedish kings undertaking missionary expeditions against their Pagan neighbours the Estonians, who, from time to time, committed dreadful ravages on the coasts of Sweden. These expeditions, which were always esteemed sacred, served as an excuse for the sovereigns of the North in avoiding the crusades to the Holy Land, in which they took no part.³⁹

Prussia and the Prussians are totally unknown in history before the end of the tenth century.⁴⁰ The author of the *Life of St. Adelbert*, of Prague, who suffered martyrdom in Prussia in the reign of Otto III., is the first that mentions them under his new name (997). Two hundred years after, the Abbot of Oliva, surnamed the Christian, became the apostle of the Prussians, and was appointed by Pope Innocent III. the first bishop of Prussia (1215). This idolatrous nation, haughty and independent, and attached to the reigning superstition, having repulsed all the efforts that were repeatedly made to convert them to Christianity, Pope Honorius III., in the true spirit of his age, published a crusade against them (1218), to proselytize them by force. Armies of crusaders were poured into Prussia, and overran the whole country with fire and sword. The Prussians took cruel vengeance on the Polonese of Masovia, who had made common cause against them with the crusaders of the East. At length Conrad, Duke of Masovia, finding himself too weak to withstand the fury of the Prussians, called in the Teutonic knights to his aid; and, anxious to secure for ever the assistance and protection of that order, he made them a grant of the territory of Culm; and moreover promised them whatever lands he might conquer from the common enemy (1226). This contract having been sanctioned by the Emperor Frederick II., the knights speedily came into possession of their new dominions (1230). They extended themselves by degrees over all Prussia, after a long and murderous war, which they had carried on against the idolatrous natives. That country, which had been peopled by numerous German colonies in succession, did not submit to the yoke of the Teutonic order, until the greater part of its ancient inhabitants had been destroyed. The knights took care to confirm their authority and their religion in Prussia, by constructing cities and forts, and founding bishoprics and convents. The city of Königsberg,⁴¹ or the *Pregel*, was built in 1255; and that of Marienburg, on the *Nogat*, which became the capital of the Order, is supposed to have been founded in 1280.

The Teutonic knights completed the conquest

of that country (1283), by the reduction of Sudavia, the last of the eleven provinces which composed ancient Prussia. We can scarcely conceive how a handful of these knights should have been able, in so short a time, to vanquish a warlike and powerful nation, inspired with the love of liberty, and emboldened by fanaticism, to make the most intrepid and obstinate defence. But we ought to take into consideration, that the indulgences of the court of Rome allured continually into Prussia a multitude of crusaders from all the provinces of the Empire; and that the knights gained these over to their ranks, by distributing among them the lands which they had won by conquest. In this way, their numbers were necessarily recruited by new colonies of crusaders, and the nobles flocked in crowds to their standard, to seek territorial acquisitions in Prussia.

The increase of commerce on the Baltic, in the twelfth century, led the Germans to discover the coasts of Livonia. Some merchants from Bremen, on their way to Wisby, in the Island of Gotland, a sea-port on the Baltic very much frequented at that time, were thrown by a tempest on the coast near the mouth of the Dwina (1158). The desire of gain induced them to enter into a correspondence with the natives of the country; and, from a wish to give stability to a branch of commerce which might become very lucrative, they attempted to introduce the Christian religion into Livonia. A monk of Segeberg, in Holstein, named Mainard, undertook this mission. He was the first bishop of Livonia (1192), and fixed his residence at the castle of Uxkull, which he strengthened by fortifications. Berthold, his successor, wishing to accelerate the progress of Christianity, as well as to avoid the dangers to which his mission exposed him, caused the Pope to publish a crusade against the Livonians. This zealous prelate perished, sword in hand, fighting against the people whom he intended to convert. The priests, after this, were either massacred or expelled from Livonia; but, in a short time, a new army of crusaders marched into the country, under the banner of Albert, the third bishop, who built the city of Riga (1200), which became the seat of his bishopric, and afterwards the metropolitan see of all Prussia and Livonia. The same prelate founded a military order of the *Knights of Christ* or *Sword-bearers*, to whom he ceded the third of all the countries he had conquered. This Order, confirmed by Pope Innocent III. (1204), finding themselves too weak to oppose the Pagans of Livonia, agreed to unite with the Teutonic order (1237), who, at that time, nominated the generals or provincial masters in Livonia, known by the names of *Heermeister* and *Landmeister*. Pope Gregory IX., in confirming the union of these two Orders, exacted the surrender of the districts of Revel, Wesenberg, Weisenstein, and Hapsal, to Valdemar II., which the knights, with consent of the Bishop of Dorpat, had taken from him during his captivity. This retrocession was made by an act passed at Stralsund (1238). Several documents which still exist in the private archives of the Teutonic order at Königsberg, and especially two, dated 1249 and 1254, prove that at this period, the bishops of Riga still exercised superiority, both temporal and spiritual, over these knights sword-bearers, although they were united with the Teutonic order, which was

independent of these bishops. The combination of these two Orders rendered them so powerful, that they gradually extended their conquests over all Prussia, Livonia, Courland, and Semigalia; but they could never succeed farther than to subject these nations to a rigorous servitude, under pretence of conversion.

Before we speak of Russia and the other Eastern countries of Europe, it will be necessary to turn our attention for a little to the Moguls, whose conquests and depredations extended, in the thirteenth century, from the extremity of Northern Asia, over Russia and the greater part of Europe. The native country of this people is found to be those some regions which they still inhabit in our day, and which are situated to the north of the great wall of China, between Eastern Tartary and modern Bukharia. They are generally confounded with the Tartars, from whom they differ essentially, both in their appearance and manners, as well as in their religion and political institutions. This nation is divided into two principal branches, the *Eluths* or *Oclots*, better known by the name of Calmaucs, and the *Moguls*, properly so called. These latter, separated from the Calmaucs by the mountains of Altai, are now subject to the dominion of China.

The Moguls, scarcely known at present in the history of Europe, owe their greatness to the genius of one man—the famous Zinghis Khan. This extraordinary person, whose real name was *Temudgin*, or, according to Pallas, *Dcumutchin*, was born in the year 1163, and originally nothing more than the chief of a particular horde of Moguls, who had settled on the banks of the rivers Onon and Kerlon, and were tributary to the empire of Kin. His first exploits were against the other hordes of Moguls, whom he compelled to acknowledge his authority. Emboldened by success, he conceived the romantic idea of aspiring to be the conqueror of the world. For this purpose, he assembled near the source of the river Onon, in 1206, all the chiefs of the Mogul hordes, and the generals of his armies. A certain pretender to inspiration, whom the people regarded as a holy man, appeared in the assembly, and declared that it was the will of God that Temudgin should rule over the whole earth,—that all nations should submit to him,—and that henceforth he should bear the title of *Tschinghis-Khan*, or *Most Great Emperor*.⁴²

In a short time, this new conqueror subdued the two great empires of the Tartars; one of which, called also the empire of *Kin*, embraced the whole of Eastern Tartary, and the northern part of China; the other, that of Kara-Kitai, or the Khitans, extended over Western Tartary, and had its capital at Kaseghar in Bukharia.⁴³ He afterwards attacked the Carismian Sultans, who ruled over Turkestan, Transoxiana, Charasm, Chorasan, and all Persia, from Derbent to Irak-Arabia and the Indies. This powerful motarehly was overtaken and by Zinghis-Khan, in the course of six campaigns; and it was during this war that the Moguls, while marching under the conduct of Touthi, the eldest son of Zinghis-Khan, against the Kipzæcs or Capchaucs, to the north of the Caspian Sea, made their first inroad into the Russian empire. Zinghis, after having subdued the whole of Tangout, died in the sixty-fifth year of his age (1227). Historians

have remarked in him the traits of a great man, born to command others, but whose noble qualities were tarnished by the ferocity of his nature, which took delight in carnage, plunder, and devastation. Humanity shudders at the recital of the inexpressible horrors exercised by this barbarian, whose maxim was to exterminate, without mercy, all who offered the least resistance to his victorious arms.

The successors of this Mogul conqueror followed him in his career of victory. They achieved the conquest of all China, overturned the caliphate of Bagdat, and ordered the sultans of Leonia their tributaries.⁴⁴ Octai-Khan, the immediate successor of Zinghis, despatched from the centre of China two powerful armies, the one against Corea and the other against the nations that lie to the north and north-west of the Caspian Sea. The latter expedition, which had for its chiefs Gáyou, son of Octai, and Batou, eldest son of Touthi, and grandson of Zinghis-Khan, after having subdued Kipzæc, penetrated into Russia, which they conquered in 1237. Hence they spread over Poland, Silesia, Moravia, Hungary, and the countries bordering on the Adriatic Sea; they plundered cities, laid waste the country, and carried terror and destruction wherever they went.⁴⁵ All Europe trembled at the sight of these barbarians, who seemed as if they wished to make the whole earth one vast empire of desolation. The empire of the Moguls attained its highest point of elevation under Cublai, grandson of Zinghis, towards the end of the tenth century. From south to north, it extended from the Chinese Sea and the Indies, to the extremity of Siberia; and from east to west, from Japan to Asia Minor, and the frontiers of Poland in Europe. China and Chinese Tartary formed the seat of the empire, and the residence of the Great Khan, while the other parts of the dominions were governed by princes of the family of Zinghis Khan, who either acknowledged the Great Khan as their supreme master, or had their own particular kings and chiefs that paid him tribute. The principal subordinate Khans of the race of Zinghis were those of Persia, Zagatai, and Kipzæc. Their dependence on the Great Khan, or emperor of China, ceased entirely on the death of Cublai (1294), and the power of the Moguls soon became extinct in China.⁴⁶

As for the Moguls of Kipzæc, their dominion extended over all the Tartar countries situated to the north of the Caspian and the Euxine, as also over Russia and the Crimea. Batou-Khan, eldest son of Touthi, was the founder of this dynasty. Being addicted to a wandering life, the Khans of Kipzæc encamped on the banks of the Wolga, passing from one place to another with their tents and flocks, according to the custom of the Moors and Tartar nations.⁴⁷ The principal seat of these Khans was called the *Grand or Golden Horde*, or the *Horde of Kipzæc*, which was long an object of the greatest terror to the Russians, Poles, Lithuanians, and Hungarians. Its glory declined towards the end of the fourteenth century, and entirely disappeared under the last Khan Achmet, in 1481. A few separate hordes were all that remained, detached from the grand horde, such as those of Casan, Astracan, Siberia, and the Crimea,—all of which were, in their turn, subdued or extirpated by the Russians.⁴⁸

A crowd of princes, descendants of Vladimir

the Great, had shared a portion of Russia. One of the dignity of Grand-dukes, acted the part of Peter on each other. The dukes were Kiow, which metropolis of the empire of Batou, having assumed (157), fixed his residence at Kliasma, and thus political schism, the most fatal to the Russian Empire, with its dependent provinces by degrees finally became a people.

In the midst of these evils, and when Russia was in a state of anarchy against the Bulgarian barbarous tribes in had the misfortune to be invaded by Zinghis Khan. The conqueror, having marched to attack the Polowians, the princes of the Great people. The battle on the banks of the river was sanguinary recorded were totally defeated; six thousand of the field of battle; and Russia was laid open to the penetration as far as the whole country on their march. They returned by the same route, and their ravages far exceeded the second invasion, under the command of Touthi, and governed the Mogul empire. They conquered the Polowizians, and the whole country of Kipzæc, where he took it to pieces an army of Genna. Several other towns were sacked by the Moguls in the following year. Touthi, on June 27, perished, and he himself fell in the hands of the Moguls near the city Torshok, in the year 1241. For some years he continued to hold of Western Russia, and took Kiow, Kaminiac, and Halitsch. From this time the Grand Duchy of Kiow, which, with its dependent provinces, came into the hands of the Lithuanians and Poles. In 1252, Vladimir, which conformed to the northern Russia, was a Tartar, whose terrible yoke lasted for a hundred years.⁴⁹

An extraordinary person, a disastrous crisis, preserved from sinking into total ruin, Alexander, son of the Grand Duke, obtained the epithet of a victor, which he earned from a victory which he won over the Livonians, near the Ne-

Great, had shared among them the vast dominions of Russia. One of these princes, invested with the dignity of Grand Duke, exercised certain rights of superiority over the rest, who, nevertheless, acted the part of petty sovereigns, and made war on each other. The capital of these grand-dukes was Kiow, which was also regarded as the metropolis of the empire. Andrew I., Prince of Suzdal, having assumed the title of grand duke (1157), fixed his residence at Vladimir, on the river Kliasma, and thus gave rise to a kind of political schism, the consequences of which were most fatal to the Russians. The Grand Duchy of Kiow, with its dependent principalities, detached themselves by degrees from the rest of the empire, and finally became a prey to the Lithuanians and Poles.

In the midst of these divisions and intestine feuds, and when Russia was struggling with difficulty against the Bulgarians, Polowzians,⁴⁹ and other barbarous tribes in the neighbourhood, she had the misfortune to be attacked by the Moguls, under Zinghis Khan. Toushi, eldest son of that conqueror, having marched round the Caspian, in order to attack the Polowzians, encountered, on his passage, the princes of Kiow, who were allies of that people. The battle which he fought (1223), on the banks of the river Kalka, was one of the most sanguinary recorded in history. The Russians were totally defeated; six of their princes perished in the field of battle; and the whole of Western Russia was laid open to the conqueror. The Moguls penetrated as far as Novogorod, wasting the whole country on their march with fire and sword. They returned by the same route, but without extending their ravages farther. In 1237 they made a second invasion, under the conduct of Baton, son of Toushi, and governor of the northern parts of the Mogul empire. This prince, after having vanquished the Polowzians and Bulgarians, that is, the whole country of Kipzax, entered the north of Russia, where he took Rugen and Moscow, and cut to pieces an army of the Russians near Konna. Several other towns in this part of Russia were sacked by the Moguls, in the commencement of the following year. The family of the Grand Duke, Juri', perished in the sack of Vladimir; and he himself fell in the battle which he fought with the Moguls near the river Sita. Baton extended his conquests in northern Russia as far as the city Torshok, in the territory of Novogorod. For some years he continued his ravages over the whole of Western Russia; where, among others, he took Kiow, Kaminnic in Podolia, Vladimir, and Halitsch. From this we may date the fall of the Grand Duchy of Kiow, or Western Russia, which, with its dependent principalities, in the following century, came into the possession of the Lithuanians and Poles. As for the Grand Duchy of Vladimir, which comprehended Eastern and Northern Russia, it was subdued by the Moguls or Tartars, whose terrible yoke it wore for more than two hundred years.⁵⁰

An extraordinary person who appeared at this disastrous crisis, preserved that part of Russia from sinking into total ruin. This was Prince Alexander, son of the Grand Duke, Jaroslans II., who obtained the epithet or surname of *Newski*, from a victory which he gained over the Knights of Livonia, near the Neva (1241). Elevated by

the Khan Baton to the dignity of Grand Duke (1245), he secured, by his prudent conduct, his punctuality in paying tribute, and preserving his allegiance to the Mogul emperors, the good will of these new masters of Russia, during his whole reign. When this great prince died in 1261, his name was enrolled in their calendar of saints. Peter the Great built, in honour of his memory, a convent on the banks of the Neva, to which he gave the name of Alexander Newski; and the Empress Catherine I. instituted an order of knighthood that was also called after the name of that prince.

Poland, which was divided among several princes of the Piast dynasty, had become, at the time of which we speak, a prey to intestine factions, and exposed to the incursions of the neighbouring barbarians. These divisions, the principal source of all the evils that afflicted Poland, continued down to the death of Boleslaus II. (1138), who, having portioned his estates among his sons, ordered that the eldest should retain the district of Cracow, under the title of Monarch, and that he should exercise the rights of superiority over the provincial dukes and princes, his brothers. This clause, which might have prevented the dismemberment of the state, served only to kindle the flame of discord among these collegatory princes. Udalaislaus, who is generally considered as the eldest of these sons, having attempted to dispossess his brothers (1146), they rose in arms, expelled him from Poland, and obliged his descendants to content themselves with Silesia. His sons founded, in that country, numerous families of dukes and princes, who introduced German colonies into Silesia; all of which, in course of time, became subject to the kings of Bohemia. Conrad, son of Casimir the Just, and grandson of Boleslaus III., was the ancestor of the dukes of Cujavia and Masovia. It was this prince who called in the assistance of the Teutonic knights against the pagans of Prussia, and established that Order in the territory of Culm (1230).

The Moguls, after having vanquished Russia, took possession of Poland (1240). Having gained the victory at the battle of Schiedlow, they set fire to Cracow, and then marched to Lignitz in Silesia, where a numerous army of crusaders were assembled under the command of Henry, Duke of Breslau. This prince was defeated, and slain in the action. The whole of Silesia, as well as Moravia, was cruelly pillaged and desolated by the Moguls.

Hungary, at this period, presented the spectacle of a warlike and barbarous nation, the ferocity of whose manners cannot be better attested than by the laws passed in the reigns of Ladislaus and Coloman, about the end of the eleventh and beginning of the twelfth century. Crimes were then punished either with the loss of liberty, or of some member of the body, such as the eye, the nose, the tongue, &c. These laws were published in their general assemblies, which were composed of the king, the great officers of the crown, and the representatives of the clergy and the free men. All the other branches of the executive power pertained to the kings, who made war and peace at their pleasure; while the counts, or governors of provinces, claimed no power either personal or hereditary.⁵¹

Under a government so despotic, it was easy for the kings of Hungary to enlarge the boundaries of their states. Ladislaus took from the Greeks the duchy of Sirmium (1080), comprising the lower part of Slavonia. This same prince extended his conquests into Croatia, a country which was governed for several ages by the Slavian princes, who possessed Upper Slavonia, and ruled over a great part of ancient Illyria and Dalmatia, to which they gave the name of Croatia. Dircislaus was the first of these princes that took the title of king (in 984). Demetrius Swinimir, one of his successors, did homage to the Pope, in order to obtain the protection of the Holy See (1076). The line of these kings having become extinct some time after, Ladislaus, whose sister had been married to Demetrius Swinimir, took advantage of the commotion that had arisen in Croatia, and conquered a great part of that kingdom (1091), and especially Upper Slavonia, which was one of its dependencies. Coloman completed their conquest in 1102, and the same year he was crowned at Belgrade King of Croatia and Dalmatia. In the course of a few years he subdued the maritime cities of Dalmatia, such as Spalatro, Trau, and Zara, which he took from the republic of Venice.⁵² The kingdom of Rama, or Bosnia, fell at the same time under his power. He took the title of King of Rama (1103); and Bela II., his successor, made over the duchy of Bosnia to Ladislaus, his younger son. The sovereignty of the kings of Hungary was also occasionally acknowledged by the princes and kings of Bulgaria and Servia, and even by the Russian princes of Halitseh and Wolodimir.

These conquests gave rise to an abuse which soon proved fatal to Hungary. The kings claimed for themselves the right of disposing of the newly conquered provinces in favour of their younger sons, to whom they granted them under the title of duchies, and with the rights of sovereignty. These latter made use of their supreme power to excite factions and stir up civil wars.

The reign of King Andrew II. was rendered remarkable by a revolution which happened in the government (1217). This prince having undertaken an expedition to the Holy Land, which he equipped at an extravagant and ruinous expense, the nobles availed themselves of his absence to augment their own power, and usurp the estates and revenues of the crown. Corruption had pervaded every branch of the administration; and the king, after his return, made several ineffectual efforts to remedy the disorders of the government, and recruit his exhausted finances. At length he adopted the plan of assembling a general Diet (1222), in which was passed the famous decree, or *Golden Bull*, which forms the basis of that defective constitution which prevails in Hungary at this day. The property of the clergy and the nobles were there declared exempt from taxes and military cess; the nobles acquired hereditary possession of the royal grants which they had received in recompense for their services; they were freed from the obligation of marching at their own expense on any expedition out of the kingdom; and even the right of resistance was allowed them, in case the king should infringe any article of the decree. It was this king also (Andrew II.) that conferred several important privileges and immunities on the Saxons, or Germans of Transylvania,

who had been invited thither by Geisa II. about the year 1142.

Under the reign of Bela IV. (1241) Hungary was suddenly inundated with an army of Moguls, commanded by several chiefs, the principal of whom were Baton, the son of Tonsui, and Gaykonk, son of the great Khan Octai. The Hungarians sunk in effeminacy and living in perfect security had neglected to provide in time for their defence. Having at length rallied round the banner of their king, they pitched their camp very negligently on the banks of the Sajo, where they were surprised by the Moguls, who made terrible havoc of the Coloman, the king's brother, was slain in the action; and the king himself succeeded with difficulty in saving himself among the isles of Dalmatia. The whole of Hungary was now at the mercy of the conqueror, who penetrated with his victorious troops into Slavonia, Croatia, Dalmatia, Bosnia, Servia, and Bulgaria; everywhere glutting his fury with the blood of the people, which he shed in torrents. These barbarians seemed determined to fix their residence in Hungary, when the news of the death of the Khan Octai, and the accession of his son Gaykonk to the throne of China, induced them to abandon their conquest in less than two years, and return to the East loaded with immense booty. On hearing this intelligence, Bela retreated from his place of retreat, and repaired to Hungary, where he assembled the remains of his subjects, who were wandering in the forests, concealed among the mountains. He rebuilt the cities that were laid in ashes, imported new colonies from Croatia, Bohemia, Moravia, and Saxony, and, by degrees, restored life and vigour to the state, which had been almost annihilated by the Moguls.

The Empire of the Greeks, at this time, was gradually verging towards its downfall. Harassed on the east by the Seljukian Turks, infested on the side of the Danube by the Hungarians, the Patagians, the Uzes, and the Cumans;⁵³ and torn by factions and intestine wars, that Empire was making but a feeble resistance to the insidious attacks of its enemies, when it was suddenly threatened with entire destruction by the efforts of the fourth crusade. The Emperor Isaac Angelus had been dethroned by his brother, Alexius II. (1195), who had cruelly caused his eyes to be put out. The son of Isaac, called also Alexius, fled to Dalmatia (1203), to implore the aid of the Crusaders, who, after having assisted the Venetians to recover that rebellious city, were on the point of setting sail for Palestine. The young Alexius offered to indemnify the Crusaders for the expense of any expedition which they might undertake in his favour; he gave them reason to expect a reunion of the two churches, and considerable supplies, both in men and money, to assist them in reconquering the Holy Land. Yielding to the solicitations, the allied chiefs, instead of passing directly to Syria, set sail for Constantinople. They immediately laid siege to the city, expelled the usurper, and restored Isaac to the throne, in conjunction with his son Alexius.

Scarcely had the Crusaders quitted Constantinople, when a new revolution happened there. Another Alexius, surnamed *the Younger*, excited an insurrection among the Greeks; and hav-

secured the death of the emperor Alexius, he made himself master of the city. The Crusaders immediately retreated to Constantinople, and elected a new emperor in the person of Baldwin, Count of Flanders, and in consequence of this event transferred the empire to the Latins (1204). It was five years before the Latins were able to establish themselves in the churches, which, however, were not permanent, as it terminated with the fall of the Latin power at Constantinople. Meantime the Crusaders had recovered the provinces of the empire, of which they had a great part, which yet remained to be recovered. The Archipelago, the Provinces, the islands of the Cyclades, the coast of the Adriatic, the Republic of Venice, Bonifrat, and commander-in-chief, and his share of the spoils, all that belonged to the empire. He afterwards returned to the empire, who took the other chiefs of the empire, the dismemberment, however, were to be assigned them, as usual to the Empire, at the death of Baldwin.

In the midst of this general confusion, the Greek princes at Constantinople, who were the able remains of their empire, son-in-law of the Emperor, and the King of the East, arrived on the conquest of Asia. He made himself master of the coast of the Archipelago, and was crowned emperor (1206). About the same time, the emperor, grandsons of the emperor, having taken shelter in the foundation of a new capital the city of Trebizond. At length Michael Angelus, son of the Emperor, possession of Durazzo, a considerable state, extended to Lepanto, and Thessaly, and the principality of Etolia, and these princes assumed the title of emperors. The most powerful of these emperors, Theodore Lascaris, Emperor, found little difficulties, their superiority of which they reduced them at Constantinople, of which the emperor of Nice, under the assistance of the Greek emperor, himself master of it in consequence of the fall of the Latin empire, and the emperor of Trebizond, whence he proceeded to become the emperor of the House of Paleologus, and the emperor of Constantinople until the taking of the city by the Turks in 1453.

It now remains for us to mention the revolutions of Asia, close to Europe, on account of the relations to the Holy Land.

...ceded the death of the Emperors Isaac and Alexius, he made himself master of the throne. The Crusaders immediately returned, again laid siege to Constantinople, which they took by assault; and, after having slain the usurper, they elected a new emperor in the person of Baldwin, Count of Flanders, and one of the noble Crusaders.⁵⁴ This event transferred the Greek Empire to the Latins (1204). It was followed by a union of the churches, which, however, was neither general nor permanent, as it terminated with the reign of the Latins at Constantinople.

Meantime the Crusaders divided among themselves the provinces of the Greek Empire,—those of which they had already seized, and those which yet remained to be conquered. The greater part of the maritime coasts of the Adriatic, Greece, the Archipelago, the Propontis, and the Euxine; the islands of the Cyclades and Sporades, and those of the Adriatic, were adjudged to the republic of Venice. Boniface, Marquis of Monterrat, and commander-in-chief of the crusade, obtained for his share the island of Crete or Candia, and all that belonged to the Empire beyond the Bosphorus. He afterwards sold Candia to the Venetians, who took possession of it in 1207. The other chiefs of the Crusaders had also their portions of the dismembered provinces. None of them, however, were to possess the countries that were assigned them, except under the title of vassals to the Empire, and by acknowledging the sovereignty of Baldwin.

In the midst of this general overthrow, several of the Greek princes attempted to preserve the noble remains of their Empire. Theodore Lascaris, son-in-law of the Emperor Alexius III., resided on the conquest of the Greek provinces of Asia. He made himself master of Bithynia, Lydia, part of the coasts of the Archipelago, and Georgia, and was crowned emperor at Nice in 1206. About the same period, Alexius and David Comnenus, grandsons of the Emperor Andronicus I., having taken shelter in Pontus, laid there the foundation of a new Empire, which had for its capital the city of Trebizond.

At length Michael Angelus Comnenus took possession of Durazzo, which he erected into a considerable state, extending from Durazzo to the Gulf of Lepanto, and comprehending Epirus, Thessaly, Etolia, and part of Thessaly. All these princes assumed the rank and dignity of emperors. The most powerful among them was Theodore Lascaris, Emperor of Nice. His successors found little difficulty in resuming, by degrees, their superiority over the Latin emperors. They reduced them at last to the single city of Constantinople, of which Michael Paleologus, Emperor of Nice, undertook the siege; and, with the assistance of the Genoese vessels, he made himself master of it in 1261. Baldwin II., the last of the Latin emperors, fled to the Isle of Negropont, whence he passed into Italy; and his successor became the ancestor of all the emperors of the House of Paleologus, that reigned at Constantinople until the taking of that capital by the Turks in 1453.

It now remains for us to cast a glance at the revolutions of Asia, closely connected with those of Europe, on account of the crusades and expeditions to the Holy Land. The Empire of the

Seljukian Turks had been divided into several dynasties, or distinct sovereignties; the Atabeks of Irak, and a number of petty princes, reigned in Syria and the neighbouring countries; the Fatamite Caliphs of Egypt were masters of Jerusalem, and part of Palestine, when the mania of the crusades converted that region of the East into a theatre of carnage and devastation. For two hundred years Asia was seen contending with Europe, and the Christian nations making the most extraordinary efforts to maintain the conquest of Palestine and the neighbouring states, against the arms of the Mahometans.

At length there arose among the Mussulmans a man of superior genius, who rendered himself formidable by his warlike prowess to the Christians in the East, and deprived them of the fruits of their numerous victories. This conqueror was the famous Saladin, or Salaheddin, the son of Ayoub, or Job, and founder of the dynasty of the Ayoubites. The Atabek Nonreddin, son of Amadoddin Zenghi, had sent him into Egypt (1168), to assist the Fatamite Caliph against the Franks, or Crusaders of the West. While there, he was declared vizier and general of the armies of the Caliph; and so well had he established his power in that country, that he effected the substitution of the Abbassid Caliphs in place of the Fatamites; and ultimately caused himself to be proclaimed sultan on the death of Nonreddin (1171), under whom he had served in the quality of lieutenant. Having vanquished Egypt, he next subdued the dominions of Nonreddin in Syria; and, after having extended his victories over this province, as well as Mesopotamia, Assyria, Armenia, and Aralia, he turned his arms against the Christians in Palestine, whom he had hemmed in, as it were, with his conquests. These princes, separated into petty sovereignties, divided by mutual jealousy, and a prey to the distractions of anarchy, soon yielded to the valour of the heroic Mussulman. The battle which they fought (1187) at Hittin, near Tiberias (or Tabaria), was decisive. The Christians sustained a total defeat; and Guy of Lusignan, a weak prince without talents, and the last King of Jerusalem, fell into the hands of the conqueror. All the cities of Palestine opened their gates to Saladin, either voluntarily or at the point of the sword. Jerusalem surrendered after a siege of fourteen days. This defeat rekindled the zeal of the Christians in the West; and the most powerful sovereigns in Europe were again seen conducting innumerable armies to the relief of the Holy Land. But the talents and bravery of Saladin rendered all their efforts unavailing; and it was not till after a murderous siege of three years, that they succeeded in retaking the city of Ptolemais, or Acre; and thus arresting, for a short space, the total extermination of the Christians in the East.

On the death of Saladin, whose heroism is extolled by Christian as well as Mahometan authors, his Empire was divided among his sons. Several princes, his dependants, and known by the name of Ayoubites, reigned afterwards in Egypt, Syria, Armenia, and Yemen, or Arabia the Happy. These princes quarrelling and making war with each other, their territories fell, in the thirteenth century, under the dominion of the Mamelukes. These Mamelukes (an Arabic word which signifies a slave) were Turkish or Tartar captives, whom

the Syrian merchants purchased from the Moguls, and sent into Egypt under the reign of the Sultan Saleh, of the Ayoubite dynasty. That prince bought them in vast numbers, and ordered them to be trained to the exercise of arms in one of the maritime cities of Egypt.⁵⁵ From this school he raised them to the highest offices of trust in the state, and even selected from them his own body guard. In a very short time these slaves became so numerous and so powerful, that, in the end, they seized the government, after having assassinated the Sultan Touran Shah (son and successor of Saleh), who had in vain attempted to disentangle himself of their chains, and recover the authority which they had usurped over him. This revolution (1250) happened in the very presence of St. Louis, who, having been taken prisoner at the battle of Mansoura, had just concluded a truce of ten years with the Sultan of Egypt. The Mameluke Ibeg, who was at first appointed regent, or Atabek, was soon after proclaimed Sultan of Egypt.

The dominion of the Mamelukes existed in Egypt for the space of 263 years. Their numbers being constantly recruited by Turkish or Circas-

sian slaves, they disposed of the throne of Egypt at their pleasure; and the crown generally fell to the share of the most audacious of the gang, provided he was a native of Turkistan. These Mamelukes had even the courage to attack the Moguls, and took from them the Kingdoms of Damascus and Aleppo in Syria (1210), of which the latter had dispossessed the Ayoubite prince. All the princes of this latter dynasty, with those of Syria and Yemen, adopted the expedient of submitting to the Mamelukes; who, in order to become masters of all Syria, had only to reduce the cities and territories which the Franks, Christians of the West, still retained in their possession. They first attacked the principality of Antioch, which they soon conquered (1187). They next turned their arms against the county of Tripoli, the capital of which they took by assault (1289). The city of Ptolemais shared the same fate; after an obstinate and murderous siege, was carried sword in hand. Tyre surrendered on capitulation; and the Franks were entirely expelled from Syria and the East in the year 1291.

PERIOD V.

FROM POPE BONIFACE VIII. TO THE TAKING OF CONSTANTINOPLE BY THE TURKS. A. D. 1300—1453.

At the commencement of this period the Pontifical power was in the zenith of its grandeur. The Popes proudly assumed the title of Masters of the World; and asserted that their authority, by divine right, comprehended every other, both spiritual and temporal. Boniface VIII. went even farther than his predecessors had done. According to him, the secular power was nothing else than a mere emanation from the ecclesiastical; and this double power of the Pope was even made an article of belief, and founded on the sacred Scriptures. "God has intrusted" (said he) "to St. Peter and his successors, two swords, the one spiritual, and the other temporal. The former can be exercised by the church alone; the other, by the secular princes, for the service of the church, and in submission to the will of the Pope. This latter, that is, the temporal sword, is subordinate to the former; and all temporal authority necessarily depends on the spiritual, which judges it; whereas God alone can judge the spiritual power. Finally, (added he,) it is absolutely indispensable to salvation, that every human creature be subject to the Pope of Rome." This same Pope published the first Jubilee (1300), with plenary indulgence for all who should visit the churches of St. Peter and St. Paul at Rome. An immense crowd from all parts of Christendom flocked to this capital of the Western world, and filled its treasury with their pious contributions.¹

The spiritual power of the Popes, and their jurisdiction over the clergy, was moreover increased every day, by means of *dispensations* and *appeals*, which had multiplied exceedingly since the introduction of the Decretals of Gregory IX. They

disposed, in the most absolute manner, of the dignities and benefices of the Church, and imposed taxes at their pleasure on all the clergy in Christendom. Collectors or treasurers were established by them, who superintended the levying of the dues they had found means to exact, under a multitude of different denominations. These collectors were empowered, by means of ecclesiastical censure, to proceed against those who should refuse pay. They were supported by the authority of legates who reside in the ecclesiastical provinces, and seized with avidity every occasion to extend the usurpation of the Pope. Moreover, in support of these legates appeared a vast number of Religious and Mendicant Orders, founded in the ages of ignorance; besides legions of monks dispersed over all the states of Christendom.

Nothing is more remarkable than the influence of the papal authority over the temporalities of princes. We find them interfering in all their quarrels, addressing their commands to all without distinction—enjoining some to lay down their arms—receiving others under their protection—rescinding and annulling their acts and proceedings—summoning them to their court, and acting as arbitrators in their disputes. The history of the Popes is the history of all Europe. They assumed the privilege of legitimating the sons of kings, in order to qualify them for the succession; they forbade sovereigns to tax the clergy; they claimed a feudal superiority over all, and exercised it over a very great number; they conferred royalty on those who were ambitious of power; they released subjects from the oath of allegiance; dethroned sovereigns at their pleasure; and laid kingdoms and empires under

terdict, to avenge the death of a pope, and in disposing of the kingdoms, as well as those of islands and kingdoms; the property of infants; the rights of Catholics who were under the yoke of a tyrannical government. Thus, it is obvious that the time of which we speak is a period of preponderance in the power of the papacy, not in the ordinary course of power, vast and formidable, but in the fourteenth century, when the mightiest empires had reached the highest stage of their power, and the first step of their decline. It was a more enlightened age, which turned to support the throne of the popes against the crowns of the kings. Those who were in the Holy See gradually increased the power of the clergy, who were in this spiritual despotism, by their success in representing the pope within proper bounds, and by their incessant encroachments. Among the causes which contributed to the power of the pontifical power, were the power itself, and the Popes. By issuing bulls and interdicts, they rendered themselves formidable; and by their great princes, they learned to be boundless in their course of this may be regarded as a period which arose between Philip the Fair, King of France, and his instituting himself judge of his vassal, the Count of Flanders, who maintained, that the King of France had no right in the clergy without the consent of the right of *Regale* (or *Procurator*) which the Count of Flanders should not be tolerated, and the profane of insanity the profane, and sent an order to all the nobles to appear in person to Rome, in order to advise measures for reforming the state. The King was subjected to a spiritual despotism, and superior on earth, and the supreme Pontiff. Philip ordered the pope to be extravagant assertions of his ecclesiastical power, and King twice assembled in London (1302-3), he had the approbation, measure of the court, and the extension of the court, who appeared in the assemblies, declared the King, and the independence, the consequence, the exception had threatened against the actual. Philip made a treaty, to which the

ardlict, to avenge their own quarrels. We find them disposing of the states of excommunicated princes, as well as those of heretics and their followers; of islands and kingdoms newly discovered; the property of infidels or schismatics; and even of Catholics who refused to bow before the potent tyranny of the Popes.²

Thus, it is obvious that the court of Rome, at the time of which we speak, enjoyed a conspicuous preponderance in the political system of Europe. Not in the ordinary course of human affairs, this power, vast and formidable as it was, began, from the fourteenth century, gradually to diminish. The mightiest empires have their appointed term; and the highest stage of their elevation is often the first step of their decline. Kings, becoming more and more enlightened as to their true interests, began to support the rights and the majesty of their crowns against the encroachments of the Popes. Those who were vassals and tributaries of the Holy See gradually shook off the yoke; and the clergy, who groined under the weight of this spiritual despotism, joined the secular princes in repressing these abuses, and restraining within proper bounds a power which was making incessant encroachments on their just prerogatives.

Among the causes which operated the downfall of the pontifical power may be ranked the excess of the power itself, and the abuses of it made by the Popes. By issuing too often their anathemas and interdicts, they rendered them useless and contemptible; and by their haughty treatment of the greatest princes, they learned to become inflexible and boundless in their own pretensions. An instance of this may be recorded, in the famous dispute which arose between Boniface VIII. and Philip the Fair, King of France. Not content with instituting himself judge between the King and his vassal, the Count of Flanders, that pontiff maintained, that the King could not exact subsidies from the clergy without his permission; and that the right of *Regale* (or the revenues of vacant bishoprics) which the Crown enjoyed, was an abuse which should not be tolerated.³ He treated as a crime of insanity the prohibition of Philip against exporting either gold or silver out of the kingdom; and sent an order to all the prelates in France to bring in person to Rome on the 1st of November, to advise measures for correcting the King and reforming the state. He declared, formally, that the King was subject to the Pope, as well in temporal as in spiritual matters; and that it was foolish persuasion to suppose that the King had any superior on earth, and was not dependent on the supreme Pontiff.

Philip ordered the papal bull which contained these extravagant assertions to be burnt; he forbade his ecclesiastics to leave the realm; and when twice assembled the States-General of the kingdom (1302-3), he adopted, with their advice and approbation, measures against these dangerous pretensions of the court of Rome. The Three Estates, who appeared for the first time in these assemblies, declared themselves strongly in favour of the King, and the independence of the crown. In consequence, the excommunication which the Pope had threatened against the King proved ineffectual. Philip made his appeal to a future assembly, to which the three orders of the State were summoned.⁴

The Emperor Louis of Bavaria, a prince of superior merit, having incurred the censures of the Church for defending the rights and prerogatives of his crown, could not obtain absolution, notwithstanding the most humiliating condescensions, and the offer which he made to resign the Imperial dignity, and surrender himself, his crown and his property, to the discretion of the Pope. He was loaded with curses and anathemas, after a series of various proceedings which had been instituted against him. The bull of Pope Clement VI., on this occasion, far surpassed all those of his predecessors. "May God (said he, in speaking of the Emperor) smite him with madness and disease; may heaven crash him with its thunderbolts; may the wrath of God, and that of St. Peter and St. Paul, fall on him in this world and the next; may the whole universe combine against him; may the earth swallow him up alive; may his name perish in the first generation, and his memory disappear from the earth; may all the elements conspire against him; may his children, delivered into the hands of his enemies, be massacred before the eyes of their father." The indignity of such proceedings roused the attention of the princes and states of the Empire; and on the representation of the Electoral College, they thought proper to check these boundless pretensions of the Popes, by a decree which was passed at the Diet of Frankfort in 1338. This decree, regarded as the fundamental law of the Empire, declared, in substance, that the Imperial dignity was held only of God; that he whom the Electors had chosen emperor by a plurality of suffrages, was, in virtue of that election, a true king and emperor, and needed neither confirmation nor coronation from the hands of the Pope; and that all persons who should maintain the contrary, should be treated as guilty of high treason.

Among other events prejudicial to the authority of the Popes, one was, the translation of the pontifical see from Rome to Avignon. Clement V., archbishop of Bourdeaux, having been advanced to the papacy (1305), instead of repairing to Rome, had his coronation celebrated at Lyons; and thence he transferred his residence to Avignon (1309), out of complaisance to Philip the Fair, to whom he owed his elevation. The successors of this Pope continued their court at Avignon until 1367, when Gregory XI. again removed the see to Rome. This sojourn at Avignon tended to weaken the authority of the Popes, and diminish the respect and veneration which till then had been paid them. The prevailing opinion beyond the Alps admitted no other city than that of Rome for the true capital of St. Peter; and they despised the Popes of Avignon as aliens, who, besides, were there surrounded with powerful princes, to whose caprice they were often obliged to yield, and to make condescensions prejudicial to the authority they had usurped. This circumstance, joined to the lapse of nearly seventy years, made the residence at Avignon be stigmatized by the Italians, under the name of the *Babylonish Captivity*. It occasioned also the diminution of the papal authority at Rome, and in the Ecclesiastical States. The Italians, no longer restrained by the presence of the sovereign pontiffs, yielded but a reluctant obedience to their representatives; while the remembrance of their ancient republicanism induced

them to lend a docile ear to those who preached up insurrection and revolt. Historians inform us, that Nicolas Gabrini de Rienzo, or Cola di Rienzi, a man of great eloquence, and whose audacity was equal to his ambition, took advantage of these republican propensities of the Romans, to constitute himself master of the city, under the popular title of Tribune (1347). He projected the scheme of a new government, called the *Good Estate*, which he pretended would obtain the acceptance of all the princes and republics of Italy; but the despotic power which he exercised over the citizens, whose liberator and lawgiver he affected to be, soon reduced him to his original insignificance; and the city of Rome again assumed its ancient form of government. Meantime the Popes did not recover their former authority; most of the cities and states of the Ecclesiastical dominions, after having been long a prey to faction and discord, fell under the power of the nobles, who made an easy conquest of them; scarcely leaving to the Pope a vestige of the sovereign authority. It required all the insidious policy of Alexander VI., and the vigilant activity of Julius II., to repair the injury which the territorial influence of the pontiffs had suffered from their residence at Avignon.

Another circumstance that contributed to humble the papal authority was the schisms which rent the Church, towards the end of the fourteenth, and beginning of the fifteenth century. Gregory XI., who had abandoned Avignon for Rome, being dead (1378), the Italians elected a Pope of their own nation, who took the name of Urban VI., and fixed his residence at Rome. The French cardinals, on the other hand, declared in favour of the Cardinal Robert of Geneva, known by the name of Clement VII., who fixed his capital at Avignon. The whole of Christendom was divided between these two Popes; and this grand schism continued from 1378 till 1417. At Rome, Urban VI. was succeeded by Boniface IX., Innocent VII., and Gregory XII.; while Clement VII. had Benedict XIII. for his successor at Avignon. In order to terminate this schism, every expedient was tried to induce the rival Popes to give in their abdication; but both having refused, several of the Cardinals withdrew their allegiance, and assembled a council at Pisa (1409), where the two refractory Popes were deposed, and the pontifical dignity conferred on Alexander V., who was afterwards succeeded by John XXIII. This election of the council only tended to increase the schism. Instead of two Popes, there arose three; and if his Pisan Holiness gained partisans, the Popes of Rome and Avignon contrived also to maintain each a number of supporters. All these Popes, wishing to maintain their rank and dignity with that splendour and magnificence which their predecessors had displayed before the schism, set themselves to invent new means of oppressing the people; hence the immense number of abuses and exactions, which subverted the discipline of the church, and roused the exasperated nations against the court of Rome.

A new General Council was convoked at Constance (1414) by order of the Emperor Sigismund; and it was there that the maxim of the unity and permanency of Councils was established, as well as of its superiority over the Pope, in all that

pertains to matters of faith, to the extirpation of schism, and the reformation of the Church, both its supreme head, and in its subordinate members. The grand schism was here terminated by the abdication of the Roman pontiff, and the deposition of those of Pisa and Avignon. It was the famous Council that gave their decision against John Huss, the Reformer of Bohemia, and a follower of the celebrated Wickliff. His doctrines were condemned, and he himself burnt at Constance; was Jerome of Prague, one of his most zealous partizans. As to the measures that were taken at Constance for effecting the reformation of the Church, they practically ended in nothing. Their main object was to reform the court of Rome, by suppressing or limiting the new prerogatives which the Popes for several centuries had usurped, and which referred, among other things, to the subject of benefices and pecuniary exactions; all those who had an interest in maintaining the abuses, instantly set themselves to defeat the proposed amendments, and elude redress. The Council had formed a committee, composed of deputies of different nations, to advise means of accomplishing this reformation, which the whole world so ardently desired. This committee, known by the name of the *College of Reformers*, had already made considerable progress in their task, when a question was started, Whether it was proper to proceed to any reformation without the consent and co-operation of the visible Head of the Church? It was carried in the negative, through the intrigues of the cardinals; and, before they could accomplish this salutary work of reformation, the election of a new Pope had taken place (1417). The choice fell on Orlo de Colonna, who assumed the name of Martin V., and conformity with a previous decision of the Council he then laid before them a scheme of reformation, this proceeding having been disapproved by the different nations of Europe, the whole matter was remitted to the next Council; and in the mean while, they did nothing more than pass some concordats, with the new Pope, as to what steps should be taken until the decision of the approaching Council.

This new Council, which was assembled at Basel (1431) by Martin V., resumed the suspended scheme of reformation. The former decrees, that a General Council was superior to the Pope, and could not be dissolved or prorogued except by their free consent, were here renewed; and the great part of the reserves, reversions, annats, and other exactions of the Popes, were regularly abolished. The liberty of appeals to the court of Rome was also circumscribed. Eugenius IV., successor of Martin V., alarmed at the destruction thus aimed at his authority, twice proclaimed the dissolution of the Council. The first dissolution, which occurred on the 17th of December, 1431, was revoked, at the urgent application of the Emperor Sigismund, by a bull of the same Pope, issued the 15th of December, 1433. In this he acknowledged the validity of the Council, and annulled all that he had formerly done to invalidate its authority. The second dissolution took place on the 1st of October, 1437. Eugenius then transferred the Council to Ferrara, and from Ferrara to Florence, on pretext of his negotiating a union with the Greek church. This conduct of the Popes

inspired a new schism, which was maintained at Basle institution; they first suspended him; they finally deposed him. A synod was elected in Avignon, and recognized Felix V., and recognized the Council as the legitimate head of the church. This schism lasted ten years in his demission; and withdrawn from Basle to Ferrara in 1440.

The French nation was divided by the Council of Constance, which was drawn up at Bourges (1400) and served as the basis of the *Pragmatic Sanction of the Gallican Church*. The French nation was speedily divided into those who acceded to these decrees, in 1439. The Council of Constance obtained a part of those rights of which the Council of Constance, by the concordats of 1414-18 with Nicholas V. (1456) with Leo X. They have now spoken the language of the arbitrary power of the papacy to the principle of the priority of General Councils. The Council of Constance put a check to the power of the court of Rome; and it was the first step to recover by degrees the independence of the Popes, the weakness, and of the necessity of the sovereigns, to draw the attention and respect of the world. At length the new light of the fourteenth century, the darkness of superstition, and the distractions of the court of Rome, and the general learned and intricate disputes, who, while in the course of the new power of the court of Rome, to revive the doctrine of the rights, and to examine the rights of the sacerdotal authority, these reformers was a man, who undertook the Fair, King of France, and the Council of Constance. His example was followed by the Emperor Louis of Bavaria, Marsilo de Padua, William Ockam, Leopold, and the crowd of writers after the grand schism, particularly distinguished by the names of Nicholas de Clemange, a man of letters met with general productions, how they had taste. The philosophy, Arabic translations, and sciences, reigned in all parts of the human mind, and the vestige of useful

assumed a new schism. The prelates who remained at Basle instituted a procedure against him; they first suspended him for contumacy, and finally deposed him. Amadeus VIII., ex-Duke of Savoy, was elected in his place, under the name of Felix V., and recognised by all the partisans of the Council as the legitimate Pope. This latter schism lasted ten years. Felix V. at length gave up his demission; and the Council, which had withdrawn from Basle to Lausanne, terminated its sittings in 1449.

The French nation adopted several of the decrees of the Council of Basle in the famous Pragmatic Sanction, which Charles VII. caused to be drawn up at Bourges (1438); and whose stipulations served as the basis of what is called the *Liberties of the Gallian Church*. The example of the French was speedily followed by the Germans, who acceded to these decrees, at the Diet of Mayence, in 1449. The court of Rome at length remained a part of those honourable and lucrative rights of which the Council of Basle had deprived them, by the concordats which the Germans concluded (1418) with Nicholas V., and the French (1516) with Leo X. The Councils of which we have now spoken tended materially to limit the prohibitive power of the Roman pontiffs, by giving sanction to the principle which established the superiority of General Councils over the Popes. This maxim put a check to the enterprising ambition of the court of Rome; and kings availed themselves of it to recover by degrees the prerogatives of their crowns. The Popes, moreover, sensible of their weakness, and of the need they had for the protection of the sovereigns, learned to treat them with more attention and respect.

At length the new light which began to dawn about the fourteenth century, hastened on the progress of this revolution, by gradually dissipating the darkness of superstition into which the nations of Europe were almost universally sunk. In the midst of the distractions which agitated the Empire and the Church, and during the papal schism, several learned and intrepid men made their appearance, who, while investigating the origin and abuse of the new power of the Popes, had the courage to revive the doctrine of the ancient canons, to enlighten the minds of sovereigns as to their rights, and to examine with care into the just limits of the sacerdotal authority. Among the first of these reformers was John of Paris, a famous Dominican, who undertook the defence of Philip the Fair, King of France, against Pope Boniface VIII. His example was followed by the celebrated poet, Dante Alighieri, who took the part of the Emperor Louis of Bavaria against the court of Rome. Marsilio de Padua, John de Janduno, William Ockam, Leopold de Babenberg, &c., marched in the track of the Italian poet; and among the crowd of writers that signalized themselves after the grand schism, three French authors particularly distinguished themselves, Peter d'Ailly, Nicholas de Clemange, and John Gerson, whose writings met with general applause. Most of these early productions, however, were characterized by bad taste. The philosophy of Aristotle, studied in Arabic translations, and disguised by scholastic subtleties, reigned in all the schools, imposed its yoke on the human mind, and nearly extinguished every vestige of useful knowledge. The belles

lettres were quite neglected, and as yet had shed no lustre on the sciences. Sometimes, however, genius broke with a transient splendour through the darkness of this moral horizon; and several extraordinary persons, despising the vain cavils of the schools, began to study truth in the volume of nature, and to copy after the beautiful models of antiquity. Such was Roger Bacon (who died in 1294), an Englishman, and a Franciscan friar, who has become so famous by his discoveries in chemistry and mechanical philosophy. Dante, nurtured in the spirit of the ancients, was the first that undertook to refine the Italian language into poetry, and gave it the polish of elegance and grace in his compositions (he died in 1321). He was succeeded by two other celebrated authors, Petraera (who died in 1374), and Boccacio (1375).

The period of which we speak gave birth to several new inventions, which proved useful auxiliaries to men of genius, and tended to accelerate the progress of knowledge, letters, and arts. Among the principal of these may be mentioned the invention of writing paper, oil-painting, printing, gunpowder, and the mariner's compass; to the effects of which Europe, in a great measure, owes its civilization, and the new order of things which appeared in the fifteenth century.

Before the invention of paper from linen, parchment was generally used in Europe for the transcribing of books, or the drawing out of public deeds. Cotton paper, which the Arabs brought from the East, was but a poor remedy for the scarceness and dearth of parchment. It would appear, that the invention of paper from linen, and the custom of using it in Europe, is not of older date than the thirteenth century. The famous Montfaucon acknowledges, that, in spite of all his researches, both in France and Italy, he could never find any manuscript or charter, written on our ordinary paper, older than the year 1270, the time when St. Louis died. The truth is, we know neither the exact date of the invention of this sort of paper, nor the name of the inventor.⁵ It is certain, however, that the manufacture of paper from cotton must have introduced that of paper from linen; and the only question is, to determine at what time the use of linen became so common in Europe, as to lead us to suppose they might convert its rags into paper. The cultivation of hemp and flax being originally peculiar to the northern countries, it is probable that the first attempts at making paper of linen rags were made in Germany, and the countries abounding in flax and hemp, rather than in the southern provinces of Europe. The most ancient manufactory of paper from linen to be met with in Germany was established at Nuremberg (1390).

The invention of oil-painting is generally ascribed to the two brothers Van-Eick, the younger of whom, known by the name of John of Bruges, had gained considerable celebrity about the end of the fourteenth century. There is, however, reason to believe that this invention is of an older date. There are two authors who have carried it back to the eleventh century, viz., Theophilus and Eraclius, whose works in manuscript have been preserved in the library at Woffenbützel, and in that of Trinity College, Cambridge; and who speak of this art as already known in their times. According to them, all sorts of colours could be mixed up with linseed

son, who resided at Bockholt, in Westphalia; and Michael Wolgemuth of Nuremberg, the master of the celebrated Albert Durer, who made so conspicuous a figure about the end of the fifteenth and beginning of the sixteenth century.

Next to the invention of printing, there is no other that so much arrests our attention as that of gunpowder, which, by introducing artillery, and a new method of fortifying, attacking, and defending cities, wrought a complete change in the whole art and tactics of war. This invention comprises several discoveries which it is necessary to distinguish from each other. 1. The discovery of nitre, the principal ingredient in gunpowder, and the cause of its detonation. 2. The mixture of nitre with sulphur and charcoal, which, properly speaking, forms the invention of gunpowder. 3. The application of powder to fire-works. 4. Its employment as an agent or propelling power for throwing stones, bullets, or other heavy and combustible bodies. 5. Its employment in spring-guns, and destroying fortifications.

All these discoveries belong to different epochs. The knowledge of saltpetre or nitre, and its explosive properties, called detonation, is very ancient. Most probably it was brought to us from the East (India or China), where saltpetre is found in a natural state of preparation. It is not less probable that the nations of the East were acquainted with the composition of gunpowder before the Europeans, and that it was the Arabs who first introduced the use of it into Europe. The celebrated Roger Bacon, an English monk or friar of the thirteenth century, was acquainted with the composition of gunpowder, and its employment in fire-works and public festivities; and according to all appearances, he obtained this information from the Arabic authors, who excelled in their skill of the chemical sciences. The employment of gunpowder in Europe as an agent for throwing balls and stones is ascertained to have been about the commencement of the fourteenth century; and it was the Arabs who first availed themselves of its advantages in their wars against the Spaniards. From Spain the use of gunpowder and artillery passed to France, and thence it gradually extended over the other States of Europe. As to the application of gunpowder to mines, and the destruction of fortified works, it does not appear to have been in practice before the end of the fifteenth century.¹² The introduction of bombs and mortars seems to have been of an earlier date (1467). The invention of these in Europe is attributed to Sigismund Pandolf Malatesta, Prince of Rimini; but in France they were not in use till about the reign of Louis XIII. Muskets and matchlocks began to be introduced early in the fifteenth century. They were without spring-locks till 1517, when for the first time muskets and pistols with spring-locks were manufactured at Nuremberg.

Several circumstances tended to check the progress of fire-arms and the improvement of artillery. Custom made most people prefer their ancient engines of war; the construction of cannon was but imperfect;¹³ the manufacture of gunpowder bad; and there was a very general aversion to the newly invented arms, as contrary to humanity, and calculated to extinguish military bravery. Above all, the knights, whose science was ren-

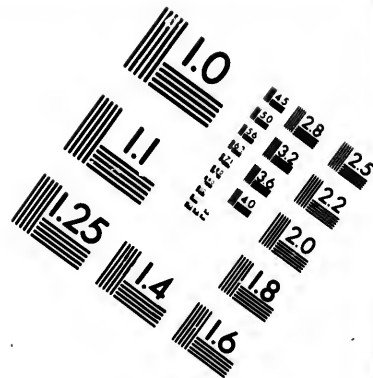
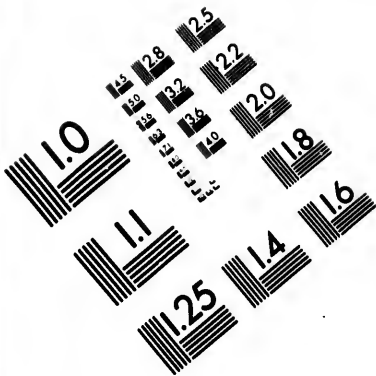
dered completely useless by the introduction of fire-arms, set themselves with all their might to oppose this invention.

From what we have just said it is obvious, that the common tradition which ascribes the invention of gunpowder to a certain monk, named Berthold Schwartz, merits no credit what ever. This tradition is founded on mere hearsay; and no writers agree as to the name, the country, or the circumstances of this pretended inventor; nor as to the time and place when he made this extraordinary discovery. Lastly, the mariner's compass, so essential to the art of navigation, was likewise the production of the barbarous ages to which we now refer. The ancients were aware of the properties of the magnet to attract iron; but its direction, the use of the needle, and the manner of communicating its magnetic virtues to iron and steel, were unknown to all those nations of antiquity who are renowned for their navigation and commerce. This discovery is usually attributed to a citizen of Amalfi, named Flavio Gioia, who is said to have lived about the beginning of the fourteenth century. This tradition, ancient though it be, cannot be admitted, because we have incontestable evidence, that, before this period, the polarity of the loadstone and the magnetic needle were known in Europe; and that, from the commencement of the thirteenth century, the Præncal mariners made use of the compass in navigation.¹⁴

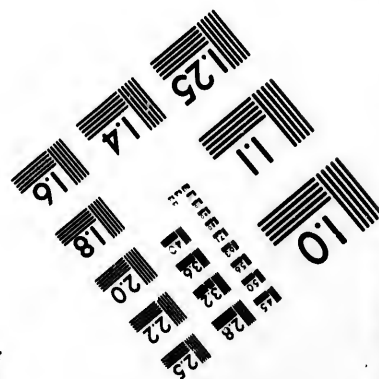
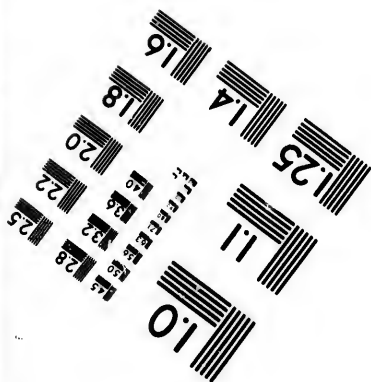
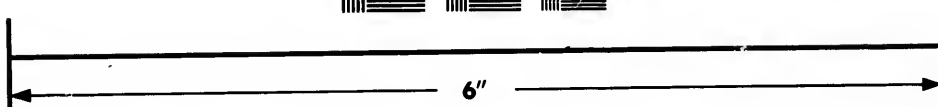
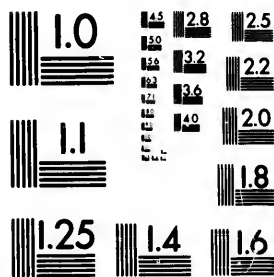
It must be confessed, however, that we can neither point out the original author of this valuable discovery, nor the true time when it was made. All that can be well ascertained is, that the mariner's compass was rectified by degrees; and that the English had no small share in these corrections. It is to this polar virtue or quality of the loadstone, and the magnetic needle, that we owe the astonishing progress of commerce and navigation in Europe, from the end of the fifteenth century. These were already very considerable at the time of which we speak, although navigation was yet confined to the Mediterranean, the Baltic, and the shores of the Indian Ocean.

The cities of Italy, the Hanseatic towns, and those of the Low Countries, engrossed, at that time, the principal commerce of Europe. The Venetians, the Genoese, and the Florentines, were masters of the Levant. The Genoese had more especially the command of the Black Sea, while the Venetians laid claim exclusively to the commerce of India and the East, which they carried on through the ports of Egypt and Syria. This rivalry in trade embroiled these two republics in frequent disputes, and involved them in long and sanguinary wars. The result turned in favour of the Venetians, who found means to maintain the empire of the Mediterranean against the Genoese. The manufactories of silk, after having passed from Greece into Sicily, and from Sicily into the other parts of Italy, at length fixed their principal residence at Venice. This city came at length to furnish the greater part of Europe with silk mercery, and the productions of Arabia and India. The Italian merchants, commonly known by the name of Lombards, extended their traffic through all the different states of Europe. Favoured by the privileges and immunities which various sovereigns had granted them, they soon became mas-





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.5 2.8
1.8 3.2
2.2 3.6
2.5 4.0
3.0 4.5
3.6 5.4
4.5 6.3
5.4 7.2
6.3 8.1
7.2 9.0
8.1 9.9
9.0 10.8
10.8 12.6
12.6 14.4
14.4 16.2
16.2 18.0
18.0 19.8
19.8 21.6
21.6 23.4
23.4 25.2
25.2 27.0
27.0 28.8
28.8 30.6
30.6 32.4
32.4 34.2
34.2 36.0
36.0 37.8
37.8 39.6
39.6 41.4
41.4 43.2
43.2 45.0
45.0 46.8
46.8 48.6
48.6 50.4
50.4 52.2
52.2 54.0
54.0 55.8
55.8 57.6
57.6 59.4
59.4 61.2
61.2 63.0
63.0 64.8
64.8 66.6
66.6 68.4
68.4 70.2
70.2 72.0
72.0 73.8
73.8 75.6
75.6 77.4
77.4 79.2
79.2 81.0
81.0 82.8
82.8 84.6
84.6 86.4
86.4 88.2
88.2 90.0
90.0 91.8
91.8 93.6
93.6 95.4
95.4 97.2
97.2 99.0
99.0 100.8
100.8 102.6
102.6 104.4
104.4 106.2
106.2 108.0
108.0 109.8
109.8 111.6
111.6 113.4
113.4 115.2
115.2 117.0
117.0 118.8
118.8 120.6
120.6 122.4
122.4 124.2
124.2 126.0
126.0 127.8
127.8 129.6
129.6 131.4
131.4 133.2
133.2 135.0
135.0 136.8
136.8 138.6
138.6 140.4
140.4 142.2
142.2 144.0
144.0 145.8
145.8 147.6
147.6 149.4
149.4 151.2
151.2 153.0
153.0 154.8
154.8 156.6
156.6 158.4
158.4 160.2
160.2 162.0
162.0 163.8
163.8 165.6
165.6 167.4
167.4 169.2
169.2 171.0
171.0 172.8
172.8 174.6
174.6 176.4
176.4 178.2
178.2 180.0
180.0 181.8
181.8 183.6
183.6 185.4
185.4 187.2
187.2 189.0
189.0 190.8
190.8 192.6
192.6 194.4
194.4 196.2
196.2 198.0
198.0 199.8
199.8 201.6
201.6 203.4
203.4 205.2
205.2 207.0
207.0 208.8
208.8 210.6
210.6 212.4
212.4 214.2
214.2 216.0
216.0 217.8
217.8 219.6
219.6 221.4
221.4 223.2
223.2 225.0
225.0 226.8
226.8 228.6
228.6 230.4
230.4 232.2
232.2 234.0
234.0 235.8
235.8 237.6
237.6 239.4
239.4 241.2
241.2 243.0
243.0 244.8
244.8 246.6
246.6 248.4
248.4 250.2
250.2 252.0
252.0 253.8
253.8 255.6
255.6 257.4
257.4 259.2
259.2 261.0
261.0 262.8
262.8 264.6
264.6 266.4
266.4 268.2
268.2 270.0
270.0 271.8
271.8 273.6
273.6 275.4
275.4 277.2
277.2 279.0
279.0 280.8
280.8 282.6
282.6 284.4
284.4 286.2
286.2 288.0
288.0 289.8
289.8 291.6
291.6 293.4
293.4 295.2
295.2 297.0
297.0 298.8
298.8 300.6
300.6 302.4
302.4 304.2
304.2 306.0
306.0 307.8
307.8 309.6
309.6 311.4
311.4 313.2
313.2 315.0
315.0 316.8
316.8 318.6
318.6 320.4
320.4 322.2
322.2 324.0
324.0 325.8
325.8 327.6
327.6 329.4
329.4 331.2
331.2 333.0
333.0 334.8
334.8 336.6
336.6 338.4
338.4 340.2
340.2 342.0
342.0 343.8
343.8 345.6
345.6 347.4
347.4 349.2
349.2 351.0
351.0 352.8
352.8 354.6
354.6 356.4
356.4 358.2
358.2 360.0
360.0 361.8
361.8 363.6
363.6 365.4
365.4 367.2
367.2 369.0
369.0 370.8
370.8 372.6
372.6 374.4
374.4 376.2
376.2 378.0
378.0 379.8
379.8 381.6
381.6 383.4
383.4 385.2
385.2 387.0
387.0 388.8
388.8 390.6
390.6 392.4
392.4 394.2
394.2 396.0
396.0 397.8
397.8 399.6
399.6 401.4
401.4 403.2
403.2 405.0
405.0 406.8
406.8 408.6
408.6 410.4
410.4 412.2
412.2 414.0
414.0 415.8
415.8 417.6
417.6 419.4
419.4 421.2
421.2 423.0
423.0 424.8
424.8 426.6
426.6 428.4
428.4 430.2
430.2 432.0
432.0 433.8
433.8 435.6
435.6 437.4
437.4 439.2
439.2 441.0
441.0 442.8
442.8 444.6
444.6 446.4
446.4 448.2
448.2 450.0
450.0 451.8
451.8 453.6
453.6 455.4
455.4 457.2
457.2 459.0
459.0 460.8
460.8 462.6
462.6 464.4
464.4 466.2
466.2 468.0
468.0 469.8
469.8 471.6
471.6 473.4
473.4 475.2
475.2 477.0
477.0 478.8
478.8 480.6
480.6 482.4
482.4 484.2
484.2 486.0
486.0 487.8
487.8 489.6
489.6 491.4
491.4 493.2
493.2 495.0
495.0 496.8
496.8 498.6
498.6 500.4
500.4 502.2
502.2 504.0
504.0 505.8
505.8 507.6
507.6 509.4
509.4 511.2
511.2 513.0
513.0 514.8
514.8 516.6
516.6 518.4
518.4 520.2
520.2 522.0
522.0 523.8
523.8 525.6
525.6 527.4
527.4 529.2
529.2 531.0
531.0 532.8
532.8 534.6
534.6 536.4
536.4 538.2
538.2 540.0
540.0 541.8
541.8 543.6
543.6 545.4
545.4 547.2
547.2 549.0
549.0 550.8
550.8 552.6
552.6 554.4
554.4 556.2
556.2 558.0
558.0 559.8
559.8 561.6
561.6 563.4
563.4 565.2
565.2 567.0
567.0 568.8
568.8 570.6
570.6 572.4
572.4 574.2
574.2 576.0
576.0 577.8
577.8 579.6
579.6 581.4
581.4 583.2
583.2 585.0
585.0 586.8
586.8 588.6
588.6 590.4
590.4 592.2
592.2 594.0
594.0 595.8
595.8 597.6
597.6 599.4
599.4 601.2
601.2 603.0
603.0 604.8
604.8 606.6
606.6 608.4
608.4 610.2
610.2 612.0
612.0 613.8
613.8 615.6
615.6 617.4
617.4 619.2
619.2 621.0
621.0 622.8
622.8 624.6
624.6 626.4
626.4 628.2
628.2 630.0
630.0 631.8
631.8 633.6
633.6 635.4
635.4 637.2
637.2 639.0
639.0 640.8
640.8 642.6
642.6 644.4
644.4 646.2
646.2 648.0
648.0 649.8
649.8 651.6
651.6 653.4
653.4 655.2
655.2 657.0
657.0 658.8
658.8 660.6
660.6 662.4
662.4 664.2
664.2 666.0
666.0 667.8
667.8 669.6
669.6 671.4
671.4 673.2
673.2 675.0
675.0 676.8
676.8 678.6
678.6 680.4
680.4 682.2
682.2 684.0
684.0 685.8
685.8 687.6
687.6 689.4
689.4 691.2
691.2 693.0
693.0 694.8
694.8 696.6
696.6 698.4
698.4 700.2
700.2 702.0
702.0 703.8
703.8 705.6
705.6 707.4
707.4 709.2
709.2 711.0
711.0 712.8
712.8 714.6
714.6 716.4
716.4 718.2
718.2 720.0
720.0 721.8
721.8 723.6
723.6 725.4
725.4 727.2
727.2 729.0
729.0 730.8
730.8 732.6
732.6 734.4
734.4 736.2
736.2 738.0
738.0 739.8
739.8 741.6
741.6 743.4
743.4 745.2
745.2 747.0
747.0 748.8
748.8 750.6
750.6 752.4
752.4 754.2
754.2 756.0
756.0 757.8
757.8 759.6
759.6 761.4
761.4 763.2
763.2 765.0
765.0 766.8
766.8 768.6
768.6 770.4
770.4 772.2
772.2 774.0
774.0 775.8
775.8 777.6
777.6 779.4
779.4 781.2
781.2 783.0
783.0 784.8
784.8 786.6
786.6 788.4
788.4 790.2
790.2 792.0
792.0 793.8
793.8 795.6
795.6 797.4
797.4 799.2
799.2 801.0
801.0 802.8
802.8 804.6
804.6 806.4
806.4 808.2
808.2 810.0
810.0 811.8
811.8 813.6
813.6 815.4
815.4 817.2
817.2 819.0
819.0 820.8
820.8 822.6
822.6 824.4
824.4 826.2
826.2 828.0
828.0 829.8
829.8 831.6
831.6 833.4
833.4 835.2
835.2 837.0
837.0 838.8
838.8 840.6
840.6 842.4
842.4 844.2
844.2 846.0
846.0 847.8
847.8 849.6
849.6 851.4
851.4 853.2
853.2 855.0
855.0 856.8
856.8 858.6
858.6 860.4
860.4 862.2
862.2 864.0
864.0 865.8
865.8 867.6
867.6 869.4
869.4 871.2
871.2 873.0
873.0 874.8
874.8 876.6
876.6 878.4
878.4 880.2
880.2 882.0
882.0 883.8
883.8 885.6
885.6 887.4
887.4 889.2
889.2 891.0
891.0 892.8
892.8 894.6
894.6 896.4
896.4 898.2
898.2 900.0
900.0 901.8
901.8 903.6
903.6 905.4
905.4 907.2
907.2 909.0
909.0 910.8
910.8 912.6
912.6 914.4
914.4 916.2
916.2 918.0
918.0 919.8
919.8 921.6
921.6 923.4
923.4 925.2
925.2 927.0
927.0 928.8
928.8 930.6
930.6 932.4
932.4 934.2
934.2 936.0
936.0 937.8
937.8 939.6
939.6 941.4
941.4 943.2
943.2 945.0
945.0 946.8
946.8 948.6
948.6 950.4
950.4 952.2
952.2 954.0
954.0 955.8
955.8 957.6
957.6 959.4
959.4 961.2
961.2 963.0
963.0 964.8
964.8 966.6
966.6 968.4
968.4 970.2
970.2 972.0
972.0 973.8
973.8 975.6
975.6 977.4
977.4 979.2
979.2 981.0
981.0 982.8
982.8 984.6
984.6 986.4
986.4 988.2
988.2 990.0
990.0 991.8
991.8 993.6
993.6 995.4
995.4 997.2
997.2 999.0
999.0 1000.8
1000.8 1002.6
1002.6 1004.4
1004.4 1006.2
1006.2 1008.0
1008.0 1009.8
1009.8 1011.6
1011.6 1013.4
1013.4 1015.2
1015.2 1017.0
1017.0 1018.8
1018.8 1020.6
1020.6 1022.4
1022.4 1024.2
1024.2 1026.0
1026.0 1027.8
1027.8 1029.6
1029.6 1031.4
1031.4 1033.2
1033.2 1035.0
1035.0 1036.8
1036.8 1038.6
1038.6 1040.4
1040.4 1042.2
1042.2 1044.0
1044.0 1045.8
1045.8 1047.6
1047.6 1049.4
1049.4 1051.2
1051.2 1053.0
1053.0 1054.8
1054.8 1056.6
1056.6 1058.4
1058.4 1060.2
1060.2 1062.0
1062.0 1063.8
1063.8 1065.6
1065.6 1067.4
1067.4 1069.2
1069.2 1071.0
1071.0 1072.8
1072.8 1074.6
1074.6 1076.4
1076.4 1078.2
1078.2 1080.0
1080.0 1081.8
1081.8 1083.6
1083.6 1085.4
1085.4 1087.2
1087.2 1089.0
1089.0 1090.8
1090.8 1092.6
1092.6 1094.4
1094.4 1096.2
1096.2 1098.0
1098.0 1100.0

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100
101
102
103
104
105
106
107
108
109
110
111
112
113
114
115
116
117
118
119
120
121
122
123
124
125
126
127
128
129
130
131
132
133
134
135
136
137
138
139
140
141
142
143
144
145
146
147
148
149
150
151
152
153
154
155
156
157
158
159
160
161
162
163
164
165
166
167
168
169
170
171
172
173
174
175
176
177
178
179
180
181
182
183
184
185
186
187
188
189
190
191
192
193
194
195
196
197
198
199
200
201
202
203
204
205
206
207
208
209
210
211
212
213
214
215
216
217
218
219
220
221
222
223
224
225
226
227
228
229
230
231
232
233
234
235
236
237
238
239
240
241
242
243
244
245
246
247
248
249
250
251
252
253
254
255
256
257
258
259
260
261
262
263
264
265
266
267
268
269
270
271
272
273
274
275
276
277
278
279
280
281
282
283
284
285
286
287
288
289
290
291
292
293
294
295
296
297
298
299
300
301
302
303
304
305
306
307
308
309
310
311
312
313
314
315
316
317
318
319
320
321
322
323
324
325
326
327
328
329
330
331
332
333
334
335
336
337
338
339
340
341
342
343
344
345
346
347
348
349
350
351
352
353
354
355
356
357
358
359
360
361
362
363
364
365
366
367
368
369
370
371
372
373
374
375
376
377
378
379
380
381
382
383
384
385
386
387
388
389
390
391
392
393
394
395
396
397
398
399
400
401
402
403
404
405
406
407
408
409
410
411
412
413
414
415
416
417
418
419
420
421
422
423
424
425
426
427
428
429
430
431
432
433
434
435
436
437
438
439
440
441
442
443
444
445
446
447
448
449
450
451
452
453
454
455
456
457
458
459
460
461
462
463
464
465
466
467
468
469
470
471
472
473
474
475
476
477
478
479
480
481
482
483
484
485
486
487
488
489
490
491
492
493
494
495
496
497
498
499
500
501
502
503
504
505
506
507
508
509
510
511
512
513
514
515
516
517
518
519
520
521
522
523
524
525
526
527
528
529
530
531
532
533
534
535
536
537
538
539
540
541
542
543
544
545
546
547
548
549
550
551
552
553
554
555
556
557
558
559
560
561
562
563
564
565
566
567
568
569
570
571
572
573
574
575
576
577
578
579
580
581
582
583
584
585
586
587
588
589
590
591
592
593
594
595
596
597
598
599
600
601
602
603
604
605
606
607
608
609
610
611
612
613
614
615
616
617
618
619
620
621
622
623
624
625
626
627
628
629
630
631
632
633
634
635
636
637
638
639
640
641
642
643
644
645
646
647
648
649
650
651
652
653
654
655
656
657
658
659
660
661
662
663
664
665
666
667
668
669
670
671
672
673
674
675
676
677
678
679
680
681
682
683
684
685
686
687
688
689
690
691
692
693
694
695
696
697
698
699
700
701
702
703
704
705
706
707
708
709
710
711
712
713
714
715
716
717
718
719
720
721
722
723
724
725
726
727
728
729
730
731
732
733
734
735
736
737
738
739
740
741
742
743
744
745
746
747
748
749
750
751
752
753
754
755
756
757
758
759
760
761
762
763
764
765
766
767
768
769
770
771
772
773
774
775
776
777
778
779
780
781
782
783
784
785
786
787
788
789
790
791
792
793
794
795
796
797
798
799
800
801
802
803
804
805
806
807
808
809
810
811
812
813
814
815
816
817
818
819
820
821
822
823
824
825
826
827
828
829
830
831
832
833
834
835
836
837
838
839
840
841
842
843
844
845
846
847
848
849
850
851
852
853
854
855
856
857
858
859
860
861
862
863
864
865
866
867
868
869
870
871
872
873
874
875
876
877
878
879
880
881
882
883
884
885
886
887
888
889
890
891
892
893
894
895

ters of the commerce and the current money of every country where they established themselves; and, in all probability, they were the first that adopted the practice of letters or bills of exchange, of which we may discover traces towards the middle of the thirteenth century.

The Hanseatic League, which the maritime cities on the Baltic had formed in the thirteenth century, for the protection of their commerce against pirates and brigands, gained very considerable accessions of strength in the following century, and even became a very formidable maritime power. A great number of the commercial cities of the Empire, from the Scheld and the isles of Zealand, to the confines of Livonia, entered successively into this League; and many towns in the interior, in order to enjoy their protection, solicited the favour of being admitted under its flag. The first public act of a general confederation among these cities was drawn up at the assembly of their deputies, held at Cologne, in 1364. The whole of the allied towns were subdivided into *quarters* or *circles*; the most ancient of which were the Venetian quarter, containing the southern and eastern coasts of the Baltic; the Westphalian, for the towns on the western side; and the Saxon, comprehending the inland and intermediate towns. A fourth circle or quarter was afterwards added, that of the cities of Prussia and Livonia. The boundaries of these different circles and their capital towns varied from time to time. The general assemblies of the League were held regularly every three years, in the city of Lubeck, which was considered as the capital of the whole League; while each of the three or four circles had also their particular or provincial assemblies.

The most flourishing epoch of this League was about the end of the fourteenth and the early part of the fifteenth century. At that time, the deputies of more than fourscore cities appeared at its assemblies; and even some towns who had not the privilege of sending deputies were, nevertheless, regarded as allies of the League. Having the command of the whole commerce of the Baltic, their cities exercised at their pleasure the rights of peace and war, and even of forming alliances. They equipped numerous and powerful fleets, and offered battle to the sovereigns of the North, whenever they presumed to interfere with their monopoly, or to restrict the privileges and exemptions which they had had the weakness to grant them. The productions of the North, such as hemp, flax, timber, potash, tar, corn, hides, furs, and copper, with the produce of the large and small fisheries on the coasts of Schonen, Norway, Lapland, and Iceland,¹⁵ formed the staple of the Hanseatic commerce. They exchanged these commodities, in the western parts of Europe, for wines, fruits, drugs, and all sorts of cloths, which they carried back to the North in return. Their principal factories and warehouses were at Bruges for Flanders, at London for England, at Novogorod for Russia, and at Bergen for Norway. The merchandise of Italy and the East was imported into Flanders, in Genoese or Venetian bottoms, which, at that time, carried on most of the commerce of the Levant and the Mediterranean.

Extensive as the trade of the Hanseatic cities was, it proved neither solid nor durable. As they were themselves deficient in the articles of raw

materials and large manufactories, and entirely dependent on foreign traffic, the industry of other nations, especially of those skilled in the arts, had a ruinous effect on their commerce; and, in course of time, turned the current of merchandise into other channels. Besides, the want of union among these cities, their factions and intestine divisions, and their distance from each other, prevented them from ever forming a territorial or colonial power, or obtaining possession of the Sound, which alone was able to secure them the exclusive commerce of the Baltic. The sovereigns of Europe, perceiving at length more clearly their true interests, and sensible of the mistake they had committed in surrendering the whole commerce of their kingdom to the Hanseatic merchants, used every means to limit and abridge their privileges more and more. This, in consequence, involved the confederate towns in several destructive wars with the Kings of the North, which exhausted their finances, and induced one city after another to abandon the League. The English and the Dutch, encouraged by the Danish kings, took advantage of this favourable opportunity to send their vessels to the Baltic; and by degrees they appropriated to themselves the greater part of the trade that had been engrossed by the Hanseatic Union. But what is of more importance to remark, is, that this League, as well as that of Lombardy, having been formed in consequence of the state of anarchy into which the Empire had fallen in the middle ages, the natural result was, that it should lose its credit and its influence in proportion as the feudal anarchy declined, and when the administration of the Empire had assumed a new form, and the landed nobility, emboldened by the accessions which the seventeenth century had made to their power, had found means to compel their dependent cities to return to their allegiance, after having made repeated efforts to throw off their authority, encouraged as they were by the protection which the League held out to them.

In this manner did the famous Hanseatic League, so formidable at the time of which we now speak, decline by degrees during the course of the seventeenth century, and in the early part of the eighteenth; and during the thirty years war it became entirely extinct. The cities of Lubeck, Hamburg and Bremen, abandoned by all their confederates, entered into a new union for the interests of their commerce, and preserved the ancient custom of treating in common with foreign powers, under the name of the Hanse Towns.

The cities of Italy and the North were not the only ones that made commerce their pursuit in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. Ghent, Bruges, Antwerp, and other towns in the Netherlands, contributed greatly to the prosperity of trade by their manufactures of cloth, cotton, camlets, and tapestry; articles with which they supplied the greater part of Europe. The English exchanged their raw wool with the Belgians, for the finished manufactures of their looms, while the Italians furnished them with the productions of the Levant, and the silk stuffs of India. Nothing is more surprising than the immense population of these cities, whose wealth and affluence raised their rulers to the rank of the most powerful princes in Europe. The city of Bruges was, as it were, the centre and principal repository for the merchandise of the

North and the South necessary, at a time when infancy. For this purpose were extremely proper easy communication of the continent; and manufactures, together which their rivers vast concourse of for as the commercial city Bruges retained till century, when it lost was then transferred.

The intestine dissensions of Flanders and its restraints which were commerce, and the Low Countries, great many Flemish tenth century, and take refuge in England their cloth manufacture of the crown more particularly of the Dutch commerce of salting and barrelling in the fourteenth century William Beukelszoo Sluys. The new passage opened up about favourable accident which immediately commerce of the sea quented by the Han

We now return to the Imperial throne, always 1308, on the princes who occupied it till Hapsburg obtained under the reign of government of the been vacillating and constitutional form, laws. That which Frankfort in 1338, the Empire against by a League, ratified and known by the name the Electors. The Emperor Charles IV, Emperor Charles IV, renberg and Metz, electing the Emperor coronation. It ought be determined by a seven electors—and who might happen included. Moreover divisions, which had tions and civil wars irrevocably the right palatines, then entitled division of these princes introduced the principle of succession, a line from the same Bull determined no privileges of the electors of the Palatinate royalty or government. interregnum.

North and the South. Such an entrepôt was necessary, at a time when navigation was yet in its infancy. For this purpose, Flanders and Brabant were extremely proper, as these provinces had an easy communication with all the principal nations of the continent; and as the great number of their manufactories, together with the abundance of fish which their rivers afforded, naturally attracted a vast concourse of foreign traders. This superiority, as the commercial capital of the Low Countries, Bruges retained till nearly the end of the fifteenth century, when it lost this preponderance, which was then transferred to the city of Antwerp.

The intestine dissensions with which the cities of Flanders and Brabant were agitated, the restraints which were necessarily imposed on their commerce, and the frequent wars which desolated the Low Countries, induced, from time to time, a great many Flemish operatives about the fourteenth century, and the reign of Edward III., to take refuge in England, where they established their cloth manufactories under the immediate protection of the crown. One circumstance which more particularly contributed to the prosperity of the Dutch commerce, was the new method of salting and barrelling herring, which was discovered in the fourteenth century by a man named William Beukelszoon, a native of Biervliet, near Sluis. The new passage of the Texel, which the sea opened up about the same time, proved a most favourable accident for the city of Amsterdam, which immediately monopolized the principal commerce of the fisheries, and began to be frequented by the Hansentia traders.

We now return to the history of Germany. The Imperial throne, always elective, was conferred, in 1308, on the princes of the House of Luxembourg, who occupied it till 1438, when the House of Hapsburg obtained the Imperial dignity. It was under the reign of these two dynasties that the government of the Empire, which till then had been vacillating and uncertain, began to assume a constitutional form, and a new and settled code of laws. That which was published at the Diet of Frankfurt in 1338, secured the independence of the Empire against the Popes. It was preceded by a League, ratified at Rensé by the Electors, and known by the name of the *General Union of the Electors*. The Golden Bull, drawn up by the Emperor Charles IV. (1356), in the Diets of Nuremberg and Metz, fixed the order and the form of electing the Emperors, and the ceremonial of their coronation. It ordained that this election should be determined by a majority of the suffrages of the seven electors—and that the vote of the elector who might happen to be chosen should also be included. Moreover, to prevent those electoral divisions, which had more than once excited factions and civil wars in the empire, this law fixed irrevocably the right of suffrage in the Principalities, then entitled Electorates. It forbade any division of these principalities, and for this end it introduced the principle of birth-right, and the order of succession, called *agnate*, or direct male line from the same father. Finally, the Golden Bull determined more particularly the rights and privileges of the electors, and confirmed to the electors of the Palatinate and Saxony the vicereignty or government of the empire during any interregnum.

The efforts which the Council of Basle made for the reformation of the church excited the attention of the Estates of the empire. In a diet held at Mayence (1439), they adopted several decrees of that Council, by a solemn act drawn up in presence of the ambassadors of the Council, and of the Kings of France, Castile, Arragon, and Portugal. Among these adopted decrees, which were not afterwards altered, we observe those which establish the superiority of Councils above the Popes, which prohibited those appeals called *omisso medio*, or *immediate*, and enjoined the Pope to settle all appeals referred to his court, by commissioners appointed by him upon the spot. Two concordats, concluded at Rome and Vienna (1447-48), between the Papal court and the German nation, confirmed these stipulations. The latter of these concordats, however, restored to the Pope several of the reserves, of which the Pragmatic Sanction had deprived him. He was also allowed to retain the right of confirming the prelates, and enjoying the annats and the alternate months.

The ties which united the numerous states of the German empire having been relaxed by the introduction of hereditary feudalism, and the downfall of the imperial authority, the consequence was, that those states which were more remote from the seat of authority by degrees asserted their independence, or were reduced to subjection by their more powerful neighbours. It was in this manner that several provinces of the ancient kingdom of Burgundy, or Arles, passed in succession to the crown of France. Philip the Fair, taking advantage of the disputes which had arisen between the archbishop and the citizens of Lyons, obliged the archbishop, Peter de Savoy, to surrender to him, by treaty (1312), the sovereignty of the city and its dependencies. The same kingdom acquired the province of Dauphiny, in virtue of the grant which the last dauphin, Humbert II., made (1349) of his estates to Charles, grandson of Philip de Valois, and first dauphin of France. Provence was likewise added (1481) to the dominions of that crown, by the testament of Charles, last Count of Provence, of the House of Anjou. As to the city of Avignon, it was sold (1348) by Joan I., Queen of Naples, and Countess of Provence, to Pope Clement VI., who at the same time obtained letters-patent from the Emperor Charles IV., renouncing the claims of the Empire to the sovereignty of that city, as well as to all lands belonging to the church.

A most important revolution happened about this time in Switzerland. That country, formerly dependent upon the kingdom of Burgundy, had become an immediate province of the Empire (1218), on the extinction of the Dukes of Zähringen, who had governed it under the title of regents. About the beginning of the fourteenth century, Switzerland was divided into a number of petty states, both secular and ecclesiastical. Among these, we find the Bishop of Basle, the Abbé of St. Gall, the Counts of Hapsburg, Toggenburg, Savoy, Gruyères, Neuchâtel, Werdenberg, Bucheck, &c. The towns of Zurich, Soleure, Basle, Berne, and others, had the rank of free and imperial cities. A part of the inhabitants of Uri, Schwytz, and Underwalden, who held immediately of the Empire, were governed by their own magistrates, under the name of Cantons. They

were placed by the Emperor under the jurisdiction of governors, who exercised, in his name and that of the Empire, the power of the sword in all these cantons. Such was the constitution of Switzerland, when the Emperor Albert I., of Austria, son of Rodolph of Hapsburg, conceived the project of extending his dominion in that country, where he already had considerable possessions, in his capacity of Count of Hapsburg, Kyburg, Baden, and Lentzburg. Being desirous of forming Switzerland into a principality in favour of one of his sons, he made, in course of time, several new acquisitions of territory, with the view of enlarging his estates. The Abbeys of Murbach, Einsiedel, Interlaken, and Disentis, and the Canons of Lucerne, sold him their rights and possessions in Glaris, Lucerne, Schweiz, and Underwalden. He next directed his policy against the three immediate cantons of Uri, Schweiz, and Underwalden; and endeavoured to make them acknowledge the superiority of Austria, by tolerating the oppressions which the governors exercised, whom he had appointed to rule them in the name of the Empire. It was under these circumstances that three intrepid individuals, Werner de Stauffach, a native of the canton of Schweiz, Walter Fürst, of Uri, and Arnold de Melchthal, of Underwalden, took the resolution of delivering their country from the tyranny of a foreign yoke.¹⁰ The conspiracy which they formed for this purpose, broke out on the 1st of January, 1308. The governors, surprised in their castles by the conspirators, were banished the country, and their castles razed to the ground. The deputies of the three cantons assembled, and entered into a league of ten years for the maintenance of their liberties and their privileges; reserving, however, to the Empire its proper rights, as also those claimed by the superiors, whether lay or ecclesiastical. Thus a conspiracy, which was originally turned only against Austria, terminated in withdrawing Switzerland from the sovereignty of the German Empire. The victory which the confederates gained over the Austrians at Morgarten, on the borders of the canton of Schweiz, encouraged them to renew their league at Brunnen (1315); and to render it perpetual. As it was confirmed by oath, the confederates, from this circumstance, got the name of *Eidgenossen*, which means, *bound by oath*. This league became henceforth the basis of the federal system of the Swiss, who were not long in strengthening their cause by the accession of other cantons. The city of Lucerne, having shaken off the yoke of Hapsburg, joined the league of Brunnen in 1332, Zurich in 1351, Glaris and Zug in 1353, and Berne in 1355. These formed the eight ancient cantons.

The situation of the confederates, however, could not fail to be very embarrassing, so long as the Austrians retained the vast possessions which they had in the very centre of Switzerland. The proscription which the Emperor Sigismund and the Council of Constance issued against Frederic, Duke of Austria (1415), as an adherent and protector of John XXIII., at length furnished the Swiss with a favourable occasion for depriving the house of Austria of their possessions. The Bernese were the first to set the example; they took from the Austrian dukes, the towns of Zoffingen, Arau, and Bruck, with the counties of Hapsburg and Lentzburg, and the greater part of Aargau. Kyburg

fell into the hands of the Zurichers; the Lucernese made themselves masters of Sursée; and the free bailiwicks, with the county of Baden, the towns of Mellingen and Bremgarten, were subdued by the combined forces of the ancient cantons, who, since then, have possessed them in common.

In the kingdom of Lorraine a new power rose about this time (1363), that of the dukes of Burgundy. Philip the Hardy, younger son of John the Good, King of France, having been created Duke of Burgundy by the king his father, married Margaret, daughter and heiress of Louis III., last Count of Flanders. By this marriage he obtained Flanders, Artois, Franche-Comté, Nevers, Rethel, Malines, and Antwerp, and transmitted these estates to his son John the Fearless, and his grandson, Philip the Good. This latter prince increased them still more by several new acquisitions. The Count of Namur sold him his whole patrimony (1428). He inherited from his cousin, Philip of Burgundy, the duchies of Brabant and Limbourg (1430). Another cousin, the famous Jaqueline de Bavaria, made over to him by treaty (1433) the counties of Hainaut, Holland, Zealand, and Friesland. Finally, he acquired also the duchy of Luxembourg and the county of Chiny, by a compact which he made with the Princess Eliza (1443), niece of the Emperor Sigismund. These different accessions were so much the more important, as the Low Countries, especially Flanders and Brabant, were at that time the seat of the most flourishing manufactures, and the principal mart of European commerce. Hence it happened, that the Dukes of Burgundy began to compete with the first powers in Europe, and even to rival the Kings of France.

Among the principal reigning families of the Empire, several revolutions took place. The ancient Slavonic dynasty of the Dukes and Kings of Bohemia became extinct with Wenceslaus V., who was assassinated in 1306. The Emperor Henry VII. the House of Luxembourg, seized this opportunity of transferring to his own family the kingdom of Bohemia, in which he invested his son John (1309), who had married the Princess Elizabeth, sister to the last King of Bohemia. John, having made considerable acquisitions in Bohemia was induced to cede, by treaty with Poland, the sovereignty of that province. The Emperor Charles IV., son of John, incorporated Silesia, as also Lusatia, with the kingdom of Bohemia, by the Pragmatics which he published in 1355 and 1370. The war with the Hussites broke out on the death of the Emperor Wenceslaus, King of Bohemia (1418), because the followers of John Huss, and Jerome of Prague, had refused to acknowledge, as successor of that prince, the Emperor Sigismund, his brother and heir, whom they blamed for the martyrdom of their leaders. This war, one of the most sanguinary which the spirit of intolerance and fanaticism ever excited, continued for a long series of years. John de Trocznova, surnamed Ziska, general-in-chief of the Hussites, defeated several times those numerous armies of crusaders, which were sent against him into Bohemia; and it was not till long after the death of that extraordinary man, that Sigismund succeeded in allaying the tempest, and re-establishing his own authority in that kingdom.

The house of Wittelsback, which possessed at

the same time the divided into two parts the Electors Palatine. By the treaty of division at Pavia (1329), the cession of the two branches should happen direct line of the election House, happen Emperor Sigismund, the claims of the younger that Electorate the Empire, on Frederic Misnia, who had rendered the war against the two grandsons, Ernest descended the two parts divide the House of

The Ascanian dynasty electorate of Saxony, was also deprived, in electorate of Brandenburg, a scion of this latter electorate, of his descendants in the century. The Emperor bestowed it on his eldest son, the Duke of Anhalt. The Bavarians long preserve this electorate (1373) to the Emperor Sigismund, ceded it to Brandenburg, of the House advanced him considerable expeditions into Hungary invested with the elect at the Council of Constance the ancestor of all the Electors of Brandenburg, as well

The numerous rebellions in Italy, in the twelfth century, were torn to pieces by the Emperor Frederick II. contributed to augment in that unhappy country a series of years, no emperor, or made the supreme imperial authority in the efforts of Henry VI. Charles IV., only served the royal prerogative was everywhere liberty and republicanism, the Italians grieved at length with so fatal to them, some the plan of choosing were subjected, again more powerful of the Este seized Modena and retained the ducal dignity. Frederic III. Mantua, who possessed that so of Margraves, and after which was conferred Charles V. in 1530. Italian republics fell to Milan. The person of their house was M

the same time the Palatinate and Bavaria, was divided into two principal branches, viz., that of the Electors Palatine and the Dukes of Bavaria. By the treaty of division which was entered into at Pavia (1329), they agreed on a reciprocal succession of the two branches, in case the one or the other should happen to fail of heirs-male. The direct line of the electors of Saxony, of the Ascanian House, happening to become extinct, the Emperor Sigismund, without paying any regard to the claims of the younger branches of Saxony, conferred that Electorate (1423), as a vacant fief of the Empire, on Frederic, the Warlike, Margrave of Misnia, who had rendered him signal assistance in the war against the Hussites. This prince had two grandsons, Ernest and Albert, from whom are descended the two principal branches, which still divide the House of Saxony.

The Ascanian dynasty did not lose merely the electorate of Saxony, as we have just stated; it was also deprived, in the preceding century, of the electorate of Brandenburg. Albert, surnamed the Bear, a scion of this house, had transmitted this latter electorate, of which he was the founder, to his descendants in direct line, the male-heirs of which failed about the beginning of the fourteenth century. The Emperor Louis, of Bavaria, then bestowed it on his eldest son, Louis (1324), to the exclusion of the collateral branches of Saxony and Anhalt. The Bavarian princes, however, did not long preserve this electorate; they surrendered it (1373) to the Emperor Charles IV., whose son, Sigismund, ceded it to Frederic, Burgrave of Nuremberg, of the House of Hohenzollern, who had advanced him considerable sums to defray his expeditions into Hungary. This prince was solemnly invested with the electoral dignity by the Emperor, at the Council of Constance (1417), and became the ancestor of all the Electors and Margraves of Brandenburg, as well as of the Kings of Prussia.

The numerous republics which had sprung up in Italy, in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, were torn to pieces by contending factions, and a prey to mutual and incessant hostilities. What contributed to augment the trouble and confusion in that unhappy country was, that, during a long series of years, no emperor had repaired thither in person, or made the smallest attempt to restore the imperial authority in those states. The feeble efforts of Henry VII., Louis of Bavaria, and Charles IV., only served to prove, that in Italy the royal prerogative was without vigour or effect. Anarchy everywhere prevailed; and that spirit of liberty and republicanism which had once animated the Italians gradually disappeared. Disgusted at length with privileges which had become so fatal to them, some of these republics adopted the plan of choosing new masters; while others were subjected, against their inclinations, by the more powerful of the nobles. The Marquises of Este seized Modena and Reggio (1336), and obtained the ducal dignity (1452) from the Emperor Frederic III. Mantua fell to the house of Gonzaga, who possessed that sovereignty first under the title of Margraves, and afterwards under that of Dukes, which was conferred on them by the Emperor Charles V. in 1530. But the greater part of these Italian republics fell to the share of the Visconti of Milan. The person who founded the prosperity of their house was Matthew Visconti, nephew of

Otho Visconti, Archbishop of Milan. Invested with the titles of Captain and Imperial Viceroy in Lombardy, he contrived to make himself be acknowledged as sovereign of Milan (1315), and conquered in succession all the principal towns and republics of Lombardy. His successors followed his example: they enlarged their territories by several new conquests, till at length John Galeas, great grandson of Matthew Visconti, obtained, from the Emperor Wenceslaus (1395), for a sum of one hundred thousand florins of gold, which he paid him, the title of Duke of Milan for himself and all his descendants. The Visconti family reigned at Milan till 1447, when they were replaced by that of Sforza.

Among the republics of Italy who escaped the catastrophe of the fourteenth century, the most conspicuous were those of Florence, Genoa, and Venice. The city of Florence, like all the others in Tuscany, formed itself into a republic about the end of the twelfth century. Its government underwent frequent changes, after the introduction of a democracy about the middle of the thirteenth century. The various factions which had agitated the republic induced the Florentines to elect a magistrate (1292), called *Gonfaloniere de Justice*, or Captain of Justice: invested with power to assemble the inhabitants under his standard, whenever the means for conciliation were insufficient to suppress faction and restore peace. These internal agitations, however, did not prevent the Florentines from enriching themselves by means of their commerce and manufactures. They succeeded, in course of time, in subjecting the greater part of the free cities of Tuscany, and especially that of Pisa, which they conquered in 1406. The republic of Lucca was the only one that maintained its independence, in spite of all the efforts which the Florentines made to subdue it. The republican form of government continued in Florence till the year 1530, when the family of the Medici usurped the sovereignty, under the protection of the Emperor Charles V.

The same rivalry which had set the Genoese to quarrel with the Pisans excited their jealousy against the Venetians. The interests of these two republics thwarted each other, both in the Levant and the Mediterranean. This gave rise to a long and disastrous series of wars, the last and most memorable of which was that of Chioggia (1376-82). The Genoese, after a signal victory which they obtained over the Venetians, before Pola, in the Adriatic Gulf, penetrated to the very midst of the lagoons of Venice, and attacked the port of Chioggia. Peter Doria made himself master of this port; he would have even surprised Venice, had he taken advantage of the first consternation of the Venetians, who were already deliberating whether they should abandon their city and take refuge in the isle of Candia. The tardiness of the Genoese admiral gave them time to recover themselves. Impelled by a noble despair, they made extraordinary efforts to equip a new fleet, with which they attacked the Genoese near Chioggia. This place was retaken (24th June, 1380), and the severe check which the Genoese there received, may be said to have decided the command of the sea in favour of the Venetians. But what contributed still more to the downfall of the Genoese, was the instability of their government, and the internal

Anjou conquests.

ds of her cruel
self master of
(1382), imme-
tained himself
sary, Louis of
of the Queen's
ovence, which
together with
es. Joan II,
urazzo, having
u, who wished
which had de-
Louis I., the
o V., King of
clared her heir
narrelled with
on, and passed
favour of that
st made war
ther and suc-
n of the king-
n II. (1435).
g of Aragon
ope Eugénie
um, which he
erdinand, de-
the Kings of
e of Aragne
gs of France,
481).
variety of so-
ometan, pre-
cate or distinct
st nothing in
The Kings of
reeing among
nternal affairs
leisure to en-
terprise. Of
od, the most
Moors, was
gs of Morocco
es, laid siege
b, where Al-
gal, ventured
of that place.
r the Moors
e conquest of
among others,
ending their
ose of Arra-
were obliged
They pos-
Catalonia, in
aymond Be-
eiress of the
y added the
y or lordship
ell as Cata-
rance. Don
of Valencia
th Rousillon
r younger son,
of Majorca,
Montpellier
ing of Arra-
took Sicily,
I. of Anjou.
Don Pedro,

Sicily and Sardinia.
John, king of Portugal.
Edward II. claims France.

PERIOD V. A.D. 1300—1453.

Wars of England
and France.
Victories of Henry V. 73

formed a separate branch of the Kings of Sicily, on the extinction of which (1409), that kingdom reverted to the crown of Arragon. Sardinia was incorporated with the kingdom of Arragon by Don James II., who had conquered it from the Pisans. Finally, Alphonso V., King of Arragon, having deprived the Angevines of the kingdom of Naples, established a distinct line of Neapolitan kings. This kingdom was at length united with the monarchy of Arragon by Ferdinand the Catholic. In Portugal, the legitimate line of kings, descendants of Henry of Burgundy, had failed in Don Ferdinand, son and successor of Don Pedro II. This prince had an only daughter, named Beatrix, born in criminal intercourse with Eleonora Tellez de Meneses, whom he had taken from her lawful husband. Being desirous to make this princess his successor, he married her, at the age of eleven, to John I., King of Castile; securing the throne to the son who should be born of this union, and falling him, to the King of Castile, his son-in-law. Ferdinand dying soon after this marriage, Don Juan, his natural brother, and grand-master of the order of Aviez, knowing the aversion of the Portuguese for the Castilian sway, turned this to his own advantage, by seizing the regency, of which he had deprived the Queen-dowager. The King of Castile immediately laid siege to Lisbon; but having miscarried in this enterprise, the States of Portugal assembled at Coimbra, and conferred the crown on Don Juan, known in history by the name of *John the Bastard*. This prince, aided with troops from England, engaged the Castilians and their allies, the French, at the famous battle fought on the plains of Aljubarota (14th August, 1385). The Portuguese remained masters of the field, and John the Bastard succeeded in maintaining himself on the throne of Portugal. The war, however, continued several years between the Portuguese and the Castilians, and did not terminate till 1411. By the peace which was then concluded, Henry III., son of John I., King of Castile, agreed never to urge the claims of Queen Beatrix, his mother-in-law, who had no children. John the Bastard founded a new dynasty of kings, who occupied the throne of Portugal from 1385 to 1580. In France, the direct line of kings, descendants of Hugh Capet, having become extinct in the persons of Philip the Fair, the crown passed to the collateral branch of Valois (1328), which furnished a series of thirteen kings, during a period of 261 years. The rivalry between France and England, which had sprung up during the preceding period, assumed a more hostile character on the accession of the family of Valois. Till then, the quarrels of the two nations had been limited to some particular territory, or province; but now they disturbed even the succession to the throne of France, which the kings of England claimed as their right. Edward III., by his mother, Isabella of France, was nephew to Charles IV., the last of the Capetian kings in a direct line. He claimed the succession in opposition to Philip VI., surnamed de Valois, who, being cousin-german to Charles, was one degree more remote than the King of England. The claim of Edward was opposed by the Salic law, which excluded females from the succession to the throne; but, according to the interpretation of that

prince, the law admitted his right, and must be understood as referring to females personally, who were excluded on account of the weakness of their sex, and not to their male descendants. Granting that his mother, Isabella, could not herself aspire to the crown, he maintained that she gave him the right of proximity, which qualified him for the succession. The States of France, however, having decided in favour of Philip, the King of England did fealty and homage to that prince for the duchy of Guienne; but he laid no claim to the crown until 1337, when he assumed the title and arms of the King of France. The war which began in 1338 was renewed during several reigns, for the space of a hundred years, and ended with the entire expulsion of the English from France. Nothing could be more wretched than the situation of this kingdom during the reign of Charles VI. That prince having fallen into a state of insanity in the flower of his age, two parties, those of Burgundy and Orleans, who had disputed with each other about the regency, divided the Court into factions, and kindled the flames of civil war in the four corners of the kingdom. John the Fearless, Duke of Burgundy, and uncle to the king, caused Louis, Duke of Orleans, the king's own brother, to be assassinated at Paris (1407). He himself was assassinated in his turn (1419) on the bridge of Montreuil, in the very presence of the Dauphin, who was afterwards king, under the name of Charles VII. These discussions gave the English an opportunity for renewing the war. Henry V. of England gained the famous battle of Agincourt (1415), which was followed by the conquest of all Normandy. Isabella of Bavaria then abandoned the faction of Orleans, and the party of her son, the Dauphin, and joined that of Burgundy. Philip the Good, Duke of Burgundy, and son of John the Fearless, being determined to revenge the death of his father, which he laid to the charge of the Dauphin, entered into a negotiation with England, into which he contrived to draw Queen Isabella and the imbecile Charles VI. By the treaty of peace concluded at Troyes in Champagne (1420), it was agreed that Catharine of France, daughter of Charles VI. and Isabella of Bavaria, should espouse Henry V., and that, on the death of the King, the crown should pass to Henry, and the children of his marriage with the Princess of France; to the exclusion of the Dauphin, who, as an accomplice in the murder of the Duke of Burgundy, was declared to have lost his rights to the crown, and was banished from the kingdom. Henry V. died in the flower of his age, and his death was followed soon after by that of Charles VI. Henry VI., son of Henry V. and Catharine of France, being then proclaimed King of England and France, fixed his residence at Paris, and had for his regents his two uncles, the Dukes of Bedford and Gloucester. Such was the preponderance of the English and Burgundian party in France at this period, that Charles VII., commonly called the Dauphin, more than once saw himself upon the point of being expelled the kingdom. He owed his safety entirely to the appearance of the famous Joan of Arc, called the Maid of Orleans. This extraordinary woman revived the drooping courage of the French. She compelled the English to raise the siege of Orleans, and brought the king to be crowned at

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

de prisoner at the battle of Fablekeoping (1389). The whole of Sweden, from that time, acknowledged the authority of Queen Margaret. Being desirous of uniting the three kingdoms into one single body-politic, she assembled their respective states at Calmar (1397), and there caused her son and nephew Eric, son of Wratislaus, Duke of Silesia, and Mary of Mecklenburg, daughter of Ingeburg, her own sister, to be received and crowned as her successor. The act which ratified this perpetual and irrevocable union of the three kingdoms was approved in that assembly. It was provided, that the united states should, in future, be ruled by one and the same king, who should be chosen by the common consent of the Senators and Deputies of the three kingdoms; that they should always give the preference to the descendants of Eric, if there were any; that the three kingdoms should assist each other with their combined forces against all foreign enemies; that each kingdom should preserve its own constitution, its laws, and national legislature, and be governed conformably to its own laws.

This union, how formidable soever it might appear at first sight, was by no means firmly consolidated. A federal system of three monarchies, divided by mutual jealousies, and by dissimilarity of their laws, manners, and institutions, could prefer nothing either solid or durable. The prediction, besides, which the kings of the union who succeeded Margaret showed for the Danes; the preference which they gave them in the distribution of favours and places of trust, and the tone of superiority which they affected towards their subjects, tended naturally to foster animosity and hatred, and, above all, to exasperate the Swedes against the union. Eric, after a very turbulent reign, was deposed, and his nephew, Christopher of Bavaria, was elected king of the union in his place. This latter prince having died without issue, the Swedes took this opportunity of breaking the union, and choosing a king of their own, Charles Canutusson Bonde, known by the title of Charles VIII. It was he who induced the Danes to venture likewise on a new election; and this same year they transferred their crown to Christian, son of Thierry, and Count of Oldenburg, descended from the female side from the race of their ancient kings. This prince had the good fortune to renew the union with Norway (1450); he likewise governed Sweden from the year 1457, when Charles II. was expelled by his subjects, till 1464, when he was recalled. But what deserves more particularly to be remarked, is the acquisition which Christian made of the provinces of Sleswick and Holstein, to which he succeeded (1459), by a disposition of the States of these provinces, after the death of Duke Adolphus, the maternal uncle of the King of Denmark, and last male heir of the counts of Holstein, of the ancient House of Schauenburg. Christian I. was the progenitor of all the kings who have since reigned in Denmark and Norway. His grandson lost Sweden; but, in the 16th century, the thrones both of Russia and Sweden were occupied by princes of his family. In Russia, during the whole of this period, groaned under the degrading yoke of the Moguls and the Tartars. The grand dukes, as well as the other Russian princes, were obliged to solicit the confirmation of their dignity from the Khan of Kip-

zac, who granted or refused it at his pleasure. The dissensions which arose among these northern princes were in like manner submitted to his decision. When summoned to appear at his horde, they were obliged to repair thither without delay, and often suffered the punishment of ignominy and death.¹⁷ The contributions which the khans at first exacted from the Russians in the shape of gratuitous donations were converted, in course of time, into regular tribute. Hereke Khan, the successor of Batou, was the first who levied this tribute by officers of his own nation. His successors increased still more the load of these taxes; they even subjected the Russian princes to the performance of military service.

The grand ducal dignity, which for a long time belonged exclusively to the chiefs of the principalities of Vladimir and Kiasso, became common, about the end of the fourteenth century, to several of the other principalities, who shared among them the dominion of Russia. The princes of Rezan, Twer, Smolensko, and several others, took the title of grand dukes, to distinguish themselves from the petty princes who were established within their principalities. These divisions, together with the internal broils to which they gave rise, emboldened the Lithuanians and Poles to carry their victorious arms into Russia; and by degrees they dismembered the whole western part of the ancient empire.

The Lithuanians,¹⁸ who are supposed to have been of the same race with the ancient Prussians, Letonians, Livonians, and Estonians, inhabited originally the banks of the rivers Niemen and Wilia; an inconsiderable state, comprehending Samogitia and a part of the ancient Palatinates of Troki and Wilna. After having been tributaries to the Russians for a long time, the princes of Lithuania shook off their yoke, and began to aggrandise themselves at the expense of the grand dukes, their former masters. Towards the middle of the eleventh century, they passed the Wilia, founded the town of Kiernow, and took from the Russians Braclaw, Novgorodek, Grodno, Borzese, Bielsk, Piask, Mozy, Polotsk, Minsk, Witepsk, Orza, and Mscislaw, with their extensive dependencies. Ringold was the first of these princes that assumed the dignity of grand duke, about the middle of the thirteenth century. His successor, Mendog or Mindow, harassed by the Teutonic knights, embraced Christianity about the year 1252, and was declared King of Lithuania by the Pope; though he afterwards returned to Paganism, and became one of the most cruel enemies of the Christian name. Gedimin, who ascended the throne of the grand duke (1315), rendered himself famous by his new conquests. After a series of victories which he gained over the Russian princes, who were supported by the Tartars, he took possession of the city and principality of Kiow (1320). The whole of the grand duchy of Kiow, and its dependant principalities on this side the Dnieper, were conquered in succession. The Grand Dukes of Lithuania, who had become formidable to all their neighbours, weakened their power by partitioning their estates among their sons; reserving to one, under the title of grand duke, the right of superiority over the rest. The civil dissensions which resulted from these divisions, gave the Poles an opportunity of seizing the

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

principalities of Leopold, Przemysl, and Halitsch (1340), and of taking from the Lithuanians and their grand duke, Olgerd, the whole of Volhynia and Podolia, of which they had deprived the Russians (1349).

Nothing more then remained of the ancient Russian Empire except the grand duchy of Wolodimir, so called from the town of that name on the river Kiarma, where the Grand Dukes of Eastern and Northern Russia had their residence, before they had fixed their capital at Moscow; which happened about the end of the thirteenth or the beginning of the fourteenth century. This grand duchy, which had several dependant and subordinate principalities, was conferred by the Khan of Kipzæ (1320) on Iwan or John Danilovitch, Prince of Moscow, who transmitted it to his descendants. Demetrius Iwanovitch, grandson of Iwan, took advantage of the turbulence which distracted the grand horde, and turned his arms against the Tartars. Assisted by several of the Russian princes his vassals, he gained a signal victory near the Don (1380), over the Khan Temnic-Mamai, the first which gained the Russians any celebrity, and which procured Demetrius the proud epithet of *Donski*, or conqueror of the Don. This prince, however, gained little advantage by his victory; and for a long time after, the Tartars gave law to the Russians and made them their tributaries. Toktamish Khan, after having vanquished and humbled Mamai, penetrated as far as Moscow, sacked the city, and massacred a great number of the inhabitants. Demetrius was forced to implore the mercy of the conqueror, and to send his son a hostage to the horde in security for his allegiance.

The chief residence of the Teutonic order, which had formerly been at Verden, was fixed at Marienburg, a city newly built, which from that time became the capital of all Prussia. The Teutonic knights did not limit their conquests to Prussia; they took from the Poles Dantzic or Eastern Pomerania (1311), situated between the Netze, the Vistula, and the Baltic Sea, and known since by the name of Pomerelia. This province was definitely ceded to them, with the territory of Culm, and Michelau, by a treaty of peace which was signed at Kalitz (1343). The city of Dantzic, which was their capital, increased considerably under the dominion of the Order, and became one of the principal entrepôts for the commerce of the Baltic. Of all the exploits of these knights, the most enterprising was that which had for its object the conquest of Lithuania. Religion, and a pretended gift of the Emperor Louis of Bavaria, served them as a pretext for attacking the Lithuanians, who were Pagans, in a murderous war, which continued almost without interruption for the space of a century. The Grand Dukes of Lithuania, always more formidable after their defeat, defended their liberties and independence with a courage and perseverance almost miraculous; and it was only by taking advantage of the dissensions which had arisen in the family of the grand duke, that they succeeded in obtaining possession of Samogitia, by the treaty of peace which was concluded at Raciänz (1404).

The Knights of Livonia, united to the Teutonic order under the authority of one and the same Grand Master, added to their former conquests the province of Estonia, which was sold to them

by Valdemar IV., King of Denmark.¹⁹ The Teutonic knights were at the zenith of their greatness about the beginning of the fifteenth century, at that time they were become a formidable power in the North, having under their dominion the whole of Prussia, comprehending Pomerania, the New March, as also Samogitia, Courland, Livonia and Estonia.²⁰ A population proportionate to the extent of their dominions, a well regulated treasury, and a flourishing commerce, seemed to guarantee them a solid and durable Empire. Nevertheless, the jealousy of their neighbours, the union of Lithuania with Poland, and the conversion of the Lithuanians to Christianity, which deprived the knights of the assistance of the crusaders, soon became fatal to their order, and accelerated their downfall. The Lithuanians obtained possession of Samogitia, which, with Sudaiva, was ceded to them by the various treaties which they concluded with that Order, between 1411—1436.

The oppressive government of the Teutonic knights—their own private dissensions, and the intolerable burden of taxation—the fatal consequence of incessant war—induced the nobles of Prussia and Pomerania to form a confederacy against the Order, and to solicit the protection of the Kings of Poland. This was granted them, on their signing a deed of submission to that kingdom (1454). The result was a long and bloody war with Poland, which did not terminate till the peace of Thorn (1466). Poland then obtained the cession of Culm, Michelau, and Dantzic; that is to say, all the countries now comprehended under the name of Polish Prussia. The rest of Prussia was retained by the Teutonic order, on promise, by means of their Grand Master, of fealty and homage for it to the Kings of Poland. The chief residence of the Order was then transferred to Königsberg, where it continued until the time when the knights were deprived of Prussia by the House of Brandenburg.

At length, however, Poland recovered from that state of weakness into which the unfortunate dissensions of Boleslaus III. and his descendants had plunged it. Uladelslaus IV., surnamed the Duke, having combined several of these principalities, was crowned King of Poland at Cracow (1386). From that time the royal dignity became permanent in Poland, and was transmitted to all the successors of Uladelslaus.²¹ The immediate successor of that prince was his son Casimir the Great, who renounced his rights of sovereignty over Silesia in favour of the King of Bohemia; afterwards compensated this loss by the acquisition of several of the provinces of ancient Russia. He likewise took possession of Red Russia (1349), and also of the provinces of Volhynia, Podolia, Chelm, and Belz, which he conquered from the Grand Dukes of Lithuania (1349), who had formerly dismembered them from the Russian Empire.

Under Casimir the Great, another revolution happened in the government of Poland. The Prince, having no children of his own, and wishing to bequeath the crown to his nephew Louis, his sister's son, by Charles Robert, King of Hungary, convoked a general assembly of the nobles at Cracow (1339), and there got the succession to the Hungarian Prince ratified, in opposition to the legitimate rights of the Piast dynasty, who reigned

Masovia and Silesia. The hereditary right of the Piasts, gave the Polish nobles an influence in the election of the throne became common. He invited them an opportunity of their kings, and lay the secular and aristocratic power sent into Hungary of Casimir, who obliged his successor, to succeed that, on his accession himself, and his nobility of all nobility of all nobility he should never, nobles from them; he could claim nothing for any place during his reign. The Piast sovereigns, Casimir (1370), after having ruled his kingdom for several years, his successor in Poland named the Great. He obtained the concurrence which he had made, as his son-in-law, nobles. But on the death of Jagello, and conferred a younger daughter of Poland, that she should be the wife of Lithuania, with Poland and Lithuania with Poland embrace Christianity. Jagello was baptised, and Uladelslaus, in Poland and Cracow (1386). Jagello, that Poland in their interest, each other, were under the authority of Poland, nevertheless, for nearly preserved its own government, the sovereignty of Poland, properly speaking, till the death of Jagello, which the union of Poland and Lithuania accomplished (1569). Jagello had Poland the province of Poland. It became fatal to the Teutonic order, who succeeded the Poles and Lithuania. Uladelslaus Jagello died, and the Polish nobility to Poland, by adding new nobles, which had obtained from Poland. The first of the Polish nobles, proposing an extraordinary Diet, Nuncios or Deputies, a general Diet (1404), and provincial diets, and the crown until the end of the thirteenth century. The nobles; and although the nobles might regard the nobles of the kingdom, the age of reign, it was not to be conferred by nobility. In Hungary, the male descendants of Duke A

Masovia and Silesia. This subversion of theeditary right of the different branches of the royal family, gave the Polish nobles a pretext for interfering in the election of their kings, until at last the throne became completely elective. It also afforded them an opportunity for limiting the power of their kings, and laying the foundation of a republican and aristocratic government. Deputies were sent into Hungary (1355), even during the reign of Casimir, who obliged King Louis, his immediate successor, to subscribe an act which provided that, on his accession to the crown, he should abdicate himself, and his successors, to disburden the Polish nobility of all taxes and contributions; and he should never, under any pretext, exact subsidies from them; and that, in travelling, he should claim nothing for the support of his court, and his place during his journey. The ancient race of the Piast sovereigns of Poland ended with Casimir (1370), after having occupied the throne of Poland for several centuries.

His successor in Poland and Hungary was Louis, surnamed the Great. In a Diet assembled in 1382, he obtained the concurrence of the Poles, in the election which he had made of Sigismund of Luxemburg, as his son-in-law and successor in both kingdoms. But on the death of Louis, which happened immediately after, the Poles broke their engagement, and conferred the crown on Hedwiga, the younger daughter of that prince. It was stipulated, that she should marry Jagello, Grand Duke of Lithuania, who agreed to incorporate Lithuania with Poland, to renounce Paganism, to embrace Christianity, himself and all his subjects. Jagello was baptized, when he received the crown of Poland, and was crowned King of Poland and of Cracow (1386).²² It was on the accession of Jagello, that Poland and Lithuania, long separated in their interests, and implacable enemies to each other, were united into one body politic, and the authority of one and the same king, prevailed over nearly two centuries, Lithuania preserved its own grand dukes, who acknowledged the sovereignty of Poland; and it was not till the reign of Sigismund Augustus, that the union of the two states was finally accomplished (1569). This important union transferred Poland the preponderating power of the North. It became fatal to the influence of the Teutonic order, who soon yielded to the united efforts of the Poles and Lithuanians.

Uladislaus Jagello did not obtain the assent of the Polish nobility to the succession of his son, but he obtained it by adding new privileges to those which he had obtained from his predecessor. He was the first of the Polish kings who, for the purpose of imposing an extraordinary taxation, called in the Nuncios or Deputies of the Nobility to the general Diet (1404), and established the use of the provincial or provincial diets. His descendants enjoyed the crown until they became extinct, in the sixteenth century. The succession, however, was elective; and although the princes of the House of Jagello might regard themselves as hereditary possessors of the kingdom, nevertheless, on every change of reign, it was necessary that the crown should be conferred by the choice and consent of the nobility.

In Hungary, the male race of the ancient kings, the descendants of Duke Arpad, had become extinct

in Andrew III. (1301). The crown was then contested by several competitors, and at length fell into the hands of the House of Anjou, the reigning family of Naples. Charles Robert, grandson of Charles II. King of Naples, by Mary of Hungary, outstripped his rivals, and transmitted the crown to his son Louis, surnamed the Great (1308). This prince, characterized by his eminent qualities, made a distinguished figure among the Kings of Hungary. He conquered from the Venetians the whole of Dalmatia, from the frontiers of Istria, as far as Durazzo; he reduced the Princes of Moldavia, Walachia, Bosnia and Bulgaria, to a state of dependence; and at length mounted the throne of Poland on the death of his uncle Casimir the Great.²³ Mary his eldest daughter succeeded him in the kingdom of Hungary (1382). This princess married Sigismund of Luxembourg, who thus united the monarchy of Hungary to the Imperial crown.

The reign of Sigismund in Hungary was most unfortunate, and a prey to continual disturbances. He had to sustain the first war against the Ottoman Turks; and, with the Emperor of Constantinople as his ally, he assembled a formidable army, with which he undertook the siege of Nicopolis in Bulgaria. Here he sustained a complete defeat by the Turks. In his retreat he was compelled to embark on the Danube, and directed his flight towards Constantinople. This disaster was followed by new misfortunes. The malecontents of Hungary offered their crown to Ladislaus, called the Magnanimous, King of Naples, who took possession of Dalmatia, which he afterwards surrendered to the Venetians. Desirous to provide for the defence and security of his kingdom, Sigismund acquired, by treaty with the Prince of Serbia, the fortress of Belgrade (1425), which, by its situation at the confluence of the Danube and the Save, seemed to him a proper bulwark to protect Hungary against the Turks. He transmitted the crown of Hungary to his son-in-law, Albert of Austria, who reigned only two years. The war with the Turks was renewed under Uladislaus of Poland, son of Jagello, and successor to Albert. That prince fought a bloody battle with them near Varna in Bulgaria (1444). The Hungarians again sustained a total defeat, and the King himself lost his life in the action.²⁴ The safety of Hungary then depended entirely on the bravery of the celebrated John Hunniades, governor of the kingdom during the minority of Ladislaus, the posthumous son of Albert of Austria. That general signalized himself in various actions against the Turks, and obliged Mahomet II. to raise the siege of Belgrade (1456), where he lost above twenty-five thousand men, and was himself severely wounded.

The Greek Empire was gradually approaching its downfall, under the feeble administration of the House of Paleologus, who had occupied the throne of Constantinople since the year 1261. The same vices of which we have already spoken, the great power of the patriarchs and the monks, the rancour of theological disputes, the fury of sectaries and schismatics, and the internal dissension to which they gave rise, aggravated the misfortunes and disorders of the state, and were instrumental in hastening on its final destruction. John I. and his successors, the last Emperors of Constantinople, being reduced to the sad necessity of pay-

ing tribute to the Turks, and marching on military expeditions, at the command of the sultans, owed the preservation of their shattered and declining Empire, for some time, entirely to the reverses of fortune which had befallen the Ottomans; and to the difficulties which the siege of their capital presented to a barbarous nation unacquainted with the arts of blockade.

The power of the Ottoman Turks took its rise about the end of the thirteenth century. A Turkish emir, called Ottoman, or Osman, was its original founder in Asia Minor. He was one of the number of those emirs, who, after the subversion of the Seljukians of Roum or Iconium, by the Moguls, shared among them the spoils of their ancient masters. A part of Bithynia, and the whole country lying round Mount Olympus, fell to the share of Ottoman, who afterwards forced an alliance with the other emirs, and invaded the possessions of the Greek Empire, under the feeble reign of the Emperor Andronicus II. Prusa, or Bursa, the principal city of Bithynia, was conquered by Ottoman (1327). He and his successors made it the capital of their new state, which, in course of time, gained the ascendancy over all the other Turkish sovereignties, formed, like that of Ottoman, from the ruins of Iconium and the Greek Empire.

Orchan, the son and successor of Ottoman, instituted the famous Order of the Janissaries, to which in a great measure the Turks owed their success. He took from the Greeks the cities of Nice and Nicomedia in Bithynia; and, after having subdued most of the Turkish emirs in Asia Minor, he took the title of sultan or king, as well as that of pacha, which is equivalent to the title of emperor. His son Soliman crossed the Hellespont, by his orders, near the ruins of ancient Troy, and took the city of Gallipoli, in the Thracian Chersonesus (1358). The conquest of this place opened a passage for the Turks into Europe, when Thrace and the whole of Greece was soon inundated by these new invaders. Amurath I., the son and successor of Orchan, made himself master of Adrianople and the whole of Thrace (1360); he next attacked Macedonia, Servia and Bulgaria, and appointed the first *Beglerbeg*, or Governor-General of Roumelia. Several Turkish princes of Asia Minor were obliged to acknowledge his authority; he made himself master of Klutaja, the metropolis of Phrygia, which afterwards became the capital of Anatolia, and the residence of the governor of that province (1389). Amurath was slain at the battle of Cassova, which he fought with the despot of Servia, assisted by his numerous allies. In this bloody battle the despot himself was slain, and both sides equally claimed the victory. Bajazet I., the successor of Amurath, put an end to all the Turkish sovereignties which still subsisted in Asia Minor. He completed the reduction of Bulgaria, and maintained the possession of it by the signal victory which he gained at Nicopolis (1396) over Sigismund, King of Hungary. The Greek Empire would have yielded to the persevering efforts of that prince, who had maintained, for ten years, the siege of Constantinople, had he not been attacked, in the midst of these enterprises, by the famous Timour, the new conqueror of Asia.

Timour, commonly called Tamerlane, was one of those Mogul Emirs who had divided amongst

them the sovereignty of Transoxiana, after the extinction of the Mogul dynasty of Zagatal. Transoxiana was the theatre of his first exploits; he usurped the whole power of the Khans, or Emperors of Zagatal, and fixed the capital of his dominions at the city of Samarcand (1369). Part of the whole of Upper Asia, Kipzack, and Hindostan, were vanquished by him in successive wherover he marched, he renewed the same scenes of horror, bloodshed, and carnage, which he marked the footsteps of the first Mogul conqueror. Timour at length attacked the dominions of Bahour in Anatolia (1402). He fought a bloody and decisive battle near Angora, in the ancient Gallatracia, which proved fatal to the Ottoman Empire. Bajazet sustained an entire defeat, and fell himself into the hands of the conqueror. All Anatolia was then conquered and pillaged by the Moguls, and there Timour fixed his winter quarters. Much time he treated his captive Bajazet with kindness and generosity; and the anecdote of the iron cage in which he is said to have confined his prisoner merits no credit. Sherefeddin Ali, who accompanied Timour in his expedition against Bajazet, makes no mention of it; on the contrary, he says that Timour consented to leave him the Empire, and that he granted the investiture of it to him and two of his sons. Bajazet did not long survive his misfortune; he died of an attack of apoplexy (1403) with which he was struck in the camp at Timour in Caramania.

Timour, a short time after, formed the project of an expedition into China; but he died on his route in (1405), at the age of sixty-nine. His dominions were dismembered after his death. One of his descendants, named Bahour, founded a powerful Empire in India, the remains of which are still preserved under the name of the Empire of the Great Mogul. The invasion of Timour retarded for some time the progress of the Turkish Empire. The fatal dissensions, which arose among the sons of Bajazet, set them at open war with each other. At length Amurath II., the son of Mahomet I., and grandson of Bajazet, succeeded in putting a stop to these divisions, and restoring the Empire to its primitive splendour. He deprived the Greeks of all the places which still remained in their hands on the Black Sea, along the coast of Thrace, in Macedonia and Thessaly. He even took, by assault, the wall and forts which they had constructed at the entrance of the isthmus of Corinth, and carried his ravages to the very centre of the Peloponnesus.

The two heroes of the Christians, John Huniades and Scanderbeg, arrested the progress of the Ottoman Sultan. The former, who was general of the Hungarians, boldly repulsed the Sultan of Servia, whom he was ambitious to conquer. The other, a Greek prince, who possessed one of the petty states of Albania of which Croja was the capital, resisted with success the repeated attacks of the Turks. Supported by a small but well-disciplined army, and favoured by the mountains with which his territory was surrounded, he twice compelled Amurath to raise the siege of Croja. At length appeared Mahomet II., the son and successor of Amurath (1451). This prince, who was raised to the Ottoman throne in the twentieth year of his age, conceived the design of achieving the conquest of the Greek Empire, by the taking

Constantinople. In the difficulties which several of the head of an army supported by a fleet the 6th April, 1453, by from 8000 to superior force of the and redoubled efforts of vigorous defence of the city, 20th of the unrestrained pillage, the surnamed Dragaperors, perished in the hands of that great into slavery.⁶⁰ Most of the sack, saw in solitude. Wishing to see the inhabitants of this city, he ordered the seat of his Empire to be removed to the city of Constantinople, and by the election of a new sultan, he was succeeded by the honours of the city, and, by the death of the sultans of the Venetians, which he had

FROM THE TA

The revolution which produced a new system was not achieved by profound policy, nor by the force which general governments. It was a series of changes which was and understanding, by the improvement of printing, of gunpowder, and arts was great. Military improvements, and governments, which shook off the yoke, and fanaticism, which century had imposed the principal state of strength, and grand which they have since. Several extraordinary measures to accelerate the progress of letters and the splendour, after the death of the celebrated Petrarchio and John of Rost, brought the Italians a

Constantinople. He succeeded in overcoming the difficulties which obstructed this enterprise, which several of his predecessors had failed. the head of an army of 300,000 combatants, reported by a fleet of 300 sail, he appeared before that capital, and commenced the siege the 6th April, 1453. The besieged, having only from 8000 to 10,000 men to oppose the superior force of the enemy, yielded to the powerful and redoubled efforts of the Turks, after a valorous defence of fifty-three days. The city was tried by assault, 20th May, and delivered up to unrestrained pillage of the soldiers. Constantinople, surnamed Dragases, the last of the Greek emperors, perished in the first onset; and all the inhabitants of that great and opulent city were carried into slavery.²⁶ Mahomet, on entering the very bowels of the sack, saw nothing but one vast and dismal solitude. Wishing afterwards to attract new inhabitants to this city, which he proposed to make the seat of his Empire, he guaranteed an entire liberty of conscience to the Greeks who might come to settle there; and authorized them to proceed to the election of a new patriarch, whose dignity he promised by the honours and privileges which he attached to it. He restored also the fortifications of the city, and, by way of precaution against the incursions of the Venetians and other western nations, which he had some reason to dread, he

constructed the famous castle of the Dardanelles, at the entrance of the Hellespont.

This conquest was followed by that of Servia, Bosnia, Albania, Greece, and the whole Peloponnesus or Morea, as well as most of the islands of the Archipelago. The Greek Empire of Trebizond, on the coast of Asia Minor, submitted in like manner to the law of the conqueror (1460). David Comnenus, the last emperor, fell by the swords of the Mahometans, and with him perished many of his children and relations. Such a rapid succession of conquests created an alarm among the powers of Christendom. In an assembly, which Pope Pius II. held at Mantua (1459), he proposed a general association among the powers of the West against the Turks. A crusade was published by his orders, and he was on the point of setting out in person at the head of this expedition, when he was suddenly cut off by death at Ancona (1464), where he had appointed the general rendezvous of the confederate troops. This event, added to the terror which the arms of Mahomet had created among the nations of the West, disconcerted the plans of the crusaders, and was the means of dissolving their confederacy. The Turkish Empire thus became firmly established in Europe, and the Tartars of the Crimea put themselves at the same time under the protection of the Porte.

PERIOD VI.

FROM THE TAKING OF CONSTANTINOPLE BY THE TURKS TO THE PEACE OF WESTPHALIA. A.D. 1453—1648.

The revolution which happened in the fifteenth century entirely changed the face of Europe, and introduced a new system of politics. This revolution was not achieved by any combinations of blood policy, nor by the operation of that physical force which generally subverts thrones and governments. It was the result of those progressive changes which had been produced in the ideas and understandings of the nations of Europe, by the improvements and institutions of preceding times; as well as by the invention of paper printing, of gunpowder, and the mariner's compass. By means of these, the empire of letters and arts was greatly extended, and various military improvements made in the religion, manners, and governments of Europe. The people by Greece shook off the yoke of barbarism, superstition, and fanaticism, which the revolution of the sixteenth century had imposed on them; and from that time the principal states of Europe began to acquire strength, and gradually to assume the form, which they have since maintained.

Several extraordinary events, however, conspired to accelerate these happy changes. The sciences and the fine arts broke out with new splendour, after the downfall of the Greek Empire. The celebrated Petrarch, and his disciples Boetius and John of Ravenna, were the first that brought the Italians acquainted with ancient literature,

as the true source and standard of good taste. They prepared the way for a vast number of the Grecian literati, who, to escape the barbarity of the Turks, had fled into Italy, where they opened schools, and brought the study of Greek literature into considerable repute. The most celebrated of these Greek refugees were, Manuel Chrysoloras, Cardinal Bessarion, Theodore Gaza, George of Trebizond, John Argyrophilus, and Demetrius Chalcondyles. Protected by the family of the Medicis at Florence, they assisted in forming those fine geniuses which arose in Italy during the sixteenth century, such as Leonardo Aretino, the two Guarini, Poggio of Florence, Angelo Politian, and many others. Academies, or free societies, were founded at Rome, Naples, Venice, Milan, Ferrara and Florence, for the encouragement of ancient literature.

From Italy the study of the ancient arts passed to the other states of Europe. They soon diffused their influence over every department of literature and science, which by degrees assumed an aspect totally new. The scholastic system, which till then had been in vogue in the pulpits and universities, lost its credit, and gave place to a more refined philosophy. Men learned to discriminate the vices of the feudal system, and sought out the means of correcting them. The sources of disorder and anarchy were gradually dried up, and gave

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

place to better organized governments. Painting, sculpture, and the arts in general, cleared from the Gothic rust which they had contracted during the barbarous ages, and finished after the models of the ancients, shone forth with renewed lustre. Navigation, under the direction of the compass, reached a degree of perfection which attracted universal attention; and while the ancients merely coasted along their own shores in the pursuit of commerce or maritime exploits, we find the modern Europeans extending the navigation over the whole globe, and bringing both hemispheres under their dominion.

America, unknown to the ancients, was discovered during this period; as well as the route to India and the East, round the continent of Africa. The notion of a fourth quarter of the world had long been prevalent among the ancients. We all recollect the Atlantes of Plato, which, according to the assertion of that philosopher, was larger than Asia and Africa; and we know that Ælian the historian, who lived in the reign of Adrian, affirmed in like manner the existence of a fourth continent of immense extent. This opinion had got so much into fashion, during the fourth and fifth centuries of the Christian era, that Lactantius and St. Augustine thought themselves bound in duty to combat it in their writings; inveighing against the antipodes by reasons and arguments, the frivolousness of which is now very generally admitted; but, whatever were the notions which the ancients might have entertained as to a fourth quarter of the globe, it is very certain that they knew it only from conjecture, and that their navigation never extended so far.

The honour of this important discovery belongs to modern navigators, more especially to Christopher Columbus, a native of Genoa. From the knowledge which this celebrated man had acquired in the sciences of navigation, astronomy, and geography, he was persuaded that there must be another hemisphere lying to the westward, and unknown to Europeans, but necessary to the equilibrium of the globe. These conjectures he communicated to several of the courts of Europe, who all regarded him as a visionary; and it was not till after many solicitations, that Isabella, Queen of Castile, granted him three vessels, with which he set sail in quest of the new continent, 3rd August, 1492. After a perilous navigation of some months, he reached the Island Guanahani or Cat Island, one of the Lucayos or Bahamas, to which he gave the name of St. Salvador. This discovery was followed soon after by that of the Islands of St. Domingo and Cuba; and in the second and third voyages which that navigator undertook to America (1493-1498), he discovered the mainland or continent of the New World; especially the coast of Paria, as far as the point of Araya, making part of the province known at present by the name of Cumana.

The track of the Genoese navigator was followed by a Florentine merchant, named Amerigo Vesputio. Under the conduct of a Spanish captain, called Alfonso de Ojeda, he made several voyages to the New World after the year 1497. Different coasts of the continent of South America were visited by him; and in the maps of his discoveries which he drew up, he usurped a glory which did not belong to him, by applying his own name

to the new continent; which it has since retained.

The Spaniards conquered the islands and great part of the continent of America; extending their victories along with their discoveries. Stimulated by the thirst of gold, which the New World offered to them in abundance, they committed crimes and barbarities which make humane shudder. Millions of the unfortunate natives were either massacred or buried in the sea, in spite of the efforts which the Spanish bishop, Bartholomæ de Las Casas, vainly made to arrest the fury of his countrymen.¹ In the year after the first discovery of Columbus, Ferdinand the Catholic, King of Spain, obtained a bull from Pope Alexander VI. by which that pontiff made him a gift of all the countries discovered, or to be discovered, towards the west and the south; drawing an imaginary line from one pole to the other, at the distance of a hundred leagues westward of Cape Verde and the Azores. This decision having given offence to the King of Portugal, who deemed it prejudicial to his discoveries in the East, an accommodation was contrived between the two courts, in virtue of which the same Pope, by another bull, removed the line in question further west, to the distance of four hundred and seventy leagues; so that all the countries lying to the westward of this line should belong to the King of Spain, while those which might be discovered to the eastward, should fall to the possession of the King of Portugal.² It was on this pretended title that the Spaniards founded their right to demand the submission of the American nations to the Spanish crown. The principal conquests in the New World commenced from the reign of the Emperor Charles V. It was in his name that Ferdinand Cortes, with a mere handful of troops, overthrew the vast Empire of Mexico (1521); the last emperors of which, Montezuma and Guatimozin, were slain, and a prodigious number of the Mexicans put to the sword. The conqueror of Peru was Francis Pizarro (1533). He entered the country, at the head of 300 men, at the very time when Atabalipa was commencing his reign as Inca, or sovereign, of Peru. That prince was slain, and the whole of Peru subdued by the Spaniards.

[The Spaniards founded various colonies and establishments in that part of America which they had subjected to their dominion. The character of these colonies differed from that of the establishments which the Portuguese had founded in India, and the Dutch, the English, and the French, in different parts of the world. As the Spaniards were by no means a commercial nation, the precious metals alone were the object of their cupidity. They applied themselves, in consequence, to the working of mines; they imported negroes to labour in them, and made slaves of the natives. In process of time, when the number of Europeans had increased in these countries, and the precious metals became less abundant, the Spanish colonists were obliged to employ themselves in agriculture, and in raising what is commonly called colonial produce. What we have now said, accounts for the limitations and restrictions which were imposed on the trade of these colonies by the Spanish government; they wished to reserve to themselves exclusively the profits of the mines. Commerce, which at first had been confined to the single ene-

repôt of Seville, number of merchant foreigners. As in America, they were metropolitan seas, cities. The Inquisition the hierarchy which augmenting the power of complete reigns.]

The discovery of these. Alvares Cortes, while on his contrary winds, took possession of King of Portugal. of time, became his mines of diamonds there.

The Spaniards and only masters of America establishments were other maritime navigation English colony was conducted to North (1584-1610), settlement till was afterwards followed which had settled on continent, on account by the Stuart king. The first settlements were those which Barbadoes and St. they added the island from the Spaniards establishments in Carolina of Francis I. and Edward and 1604. The city 1608. It was at a colony established themselves of their colonies in generally referred to a footing in St. Don flourishing state of begin, properly spent establishments which formed in America in this respect they Spanish colonies.

The discovery of Indies round Africa. It forms often take their for causes. John I., founder of the kingdom of affording to his so themselves, and ear planned an expedition equipped a fleet, neighbourhood of made himself master in the grand mosque the Portuguese began and maritime encouraged by the Viscau, and one of had particularly disposition of which we who was well skilled

depôt of Seville, fell into the hands of a small number of merchants, to the entire exclusion of foreigners. As for the Spanish possessors in America, they were planted with Episcopal and metropolitan sees, missions, convents, and universities. The Inquisition was also introduced; but the hierarchy which was founded there, instead of augmenting the power of the popes, remained in a state of complete dependence upon the sovereigns.]

The discovery of Brazil belongs to the Portuguese. Alvarez Cabral, the commander of their fleet, while on his route to India, was driven, by contrary winds, on the coast of Brazil (1500), and took possession of the country in the name of the King of Portugal. This colony, in the course of time, became highly important, from the rich mines of diamonds and gold which were discovered there.

The Spaniards and Portuguese were at first the only masters of America; but in a short time, establishments were formed there by some of the other maritime nations of Europe. The first English colony was that of Virginia, which was conducted to North America by Sir Walter Raleigh (1584-1616), but it did not gain a permanent settlement till the reign of James I. This was afterwards followed by several other colonies which had settled in that part of the American continent, on account of the persecution carried on by the Stuart kings against the nonconformists. The first settlements of the English in the Antilles were those which they formed in the islands of Barbadoes and St. Christopher (1629); to these they added the island of Jamaica, which they took from the Spaniards (1655). The date of the French establishments in Canada is as old as the reigns of Francis I. and Henry IV., in the years 1534 and 1604. The city of Quebec was founded in 1608. It was at a later period when the French established themselves in the Antilles. The origin of their colonies in Martinique and Guadeloupe is generally referred to the year 1635. They gained a footing in St. Domingo as early as 1630, but the flourishing state of that remarkable colony did not begin, properly speaking, till 1722. All the establishments which the English and French had formed in America were purely agricultural; and in this respect they were distinguished from the Spanish colonies.

The discovery of a passage by sea to the East Indies round Africa belongs also to the Portuguese. It forms one of those great events which often take their first impulse from very slender causes. John I., surnamed the Bastard, the new founder of the kingdom of Portugal, being desirous of affording to his sons an opportunity of signaling themselves, and earning the honour of knighthood, planned an expedition against the Moors in Africa; he equipped a fleet, with which he landed in the neighbourhood of Ceuta (1415), of which he soon made himself master, and created his sons knights in the grand mosque of that city. After this event, the Portuguese began to have a taste for navigation and maritime discoveries. In this they were encouraged by the Infant Don Henry, Duke of Viscau, and one of the sons of King John, who had particularly distinguished himself in the expedition of which we have just spoken. That prince, who was well skilled in mathematics and the art

of navigation, established his residence at Cape St. Vincent, on the western extremity of Algarva. There he ordered vessels to be constructed at his own expense, and sent them to reconnoitre the coasts of Africa. From that time the Portuguese discovered, in succession, the islands of Madeira (1420), the Canaries (1424), the Azores (1431), and Cape Verd (1460). There they founded colonies; and, advancing by degrees along the southern shores of Africa, they extended their navigation as far as the coasts of Guinen and Nigritia. The Islands which they had newly discovered, were confirmed to the kings of Portugal by several of the Popes. The Canaries, however, having been claimed by the Spaniards, a treaty was negotiated between the two kingdoms, in virtue of which these islands were abandoned to Spain (1481).

It was under the reign of John II. that the Portuguese extended their navigation as far as the most southerly point of Africa. Barthelemi Diaz, their admiral, was the first who doubled the Cape, which he called the Stormy Cape; a name which King John changed into that of Good Hope. At length, after twelve years of toils, Vasco di Gama, another Portuguese admiral, had the glory of carrying his national flag as far as India. He landed at the Port of Calicut (1498), on the Malabar coast, in the third year of the reign of Immanuel. Several other celebrated Portuguese navigators, such as Almeida, Albuquerque, Acunga, Silveira, and de Castro, following the track of Vasco di Gama, laid the foundation of the power of the Portuguese in India. Francis Almeida defeated the fleet of the Mameluke Sultan of Egypt, in conjunction with that of the kings of India (1509). Alfonso Albuquerque conquered Goa (1511), and made it the capital of all the Portuguese settlements in that part of the world. About the same time, the Portuguese established themselves in the Molucca Islands, with some opposition on the part of the Spaniards. Anthony Silveira signaled himself by his able defence of Diu (1588). He repulsed the Turks, and ruined the fleet which Soliman the Great had sent to the siege of that place (1547). The King of Cambay having resumed the siege, he experienced likewise a total defeat from John de Castro, who then conquered the whole kingdom of Diu.

The Portuguese found powerful kingdoms in India, and nations rich and civilized. Their nature and the industry of the natives, produced or fabricated those articles of commerce and merchandize which have since become an object of luxury to Europeans; at least until the activity of the Venetians had furnished the inhabitants of this part of the world with them in such abundance, as to make them be regarded as articles of absolute necessity. This circumstance was the reason why the Portuguese never formed any other than mercantile establishments in India, which they erected on the coasts, without extending them into the interior. The working of the mines, and the cares of agriculture, were abandoned entirely to the natives.

This era produced a total change in the commerce of the East. Formerly the Venetians were the people that carried on the principal traffic to India. The Jewish or Mahometan merchants purchased, at Goa, Calicut, and Cochlin, those spices

and other productions of the East, which they imported into Syria by the Persian gulf, and into Egypt by the Red Sea. They were then conveyed by a laborious and expensive land-carriage, either to the port of Alexandria, or that of Bairout in Syria. Thither the Venetians repaired in quest of the luxuries of India; they fixed their price, and distributed them over all Europe. This commerce proved a source of vast wealth to these republicans; it furnished them with the means of maintaining a formidable marine, and of very often dictating the law to the other European powers; but after the discovery of the new passage round the Cape, and the conquests of the Portuguese in India, the Venetians saw themselves compelled to abandon a traffic in which they could not compete with the Portuguese. This was a terrible blow to that republic, and the principal cause of its downfall. The Portuguese, however, did not profit by this exclusive commerce as they might have done. They did not, like other nations, constitute companies, with exclusive commercial privileges; they carried it on by means of fleets, which the government regularly despatched at fixed periods. In this manner, the commodities of the East were imported to Lisbon; but the indolence of the native merchants left to other nations the care of distributing them through the markets of Europe. The Dutch were the people that profited most by this branch of industry; they cultivated it with so much success, and under such favourable circumstances, that they at length succeeded in excluding the Portuguese themselves from this lucrative traffic, by dispossessing them of their colonies in the East.

If the events which we have now briefly detailed proved fatal to the Venetians, and afflicting to humanity, by the wars and misfortunes which they occasioned, it is nevertheless certain, that commerce and navigation gained prodigiously by these new discoveries. The Portuguese, after having maintained for some time the exclusive possession of the navigation and trade of the East, found afterwards powerful competitors in the Spaniards, the Dutch, English, French, and Danes, who all established mercantile connexions both in India and America.³ Hence innumerable sources of wealth were opened up to the industry of the Europeans; and their commerce, formerly limited to the Mediterranean, the Baltic, and the Northern Seas, and confined to a few cities in Italy, Flanders, and Germany, was now, by means of their colonies in Africa, and the East and West Indies, extended to all parts of the globe.⁴ The intercourse of the Portuguese with China was as early as the year 1517, and with Japan it began in 1542. Ferdinand Magellan undertook the first voyage round the world (1519), and his example found afterwards a number of imitators.⁵ By degrees the maritime power of Europe assumed a formidable aspect; arts and manufactures were multiplied; the states, formerly poor, became rich and flourishing. Kingdoms at length found, in their commerce, resources for augmenting their strength and their influence, and carrying into execution their projects of aggrandisement and conquest.

[Among the causes of this revolution, which took place in commerce, it is necessary to take into account a discovery apparently of trivial importance, but which exercised a most extraordinary in-

fluence over the civilization of Europe, viz., that of horse-posts for the conveyance of letters. Before the sixteenth century, the communications between distant countries were few and difficult. Messengers, travelling on short journeys, on foot or on horseback, were their only couriers. About the beginning of the seventeenth century, and during the reign of Maximilian I., an Italian gentleman, of the name of Francis de la Tour et Taxis, established the first posts in the Low Countries. Their object at first was merely for the conveyance of letters, for which he provided regular relays. By and by, for the sake of despatch, the use of horses was introduced, placed at certain distances. From the Low Countries this system found its way into Germany, where it was conferred on the family of Taxis as a regular right; and from thence it spread over every civilized country in the world.]

A revolution, not less important, is that which took place in religion about the beginning of the sixteenth century. The abuses which disgraced the court of Rome, the excess of the power, and the depravity of the morals of the clergy, had excited a very general discontent. A reformation had for a long time been deemed necessary, but there was a difference of opinion as to the method of effecting it. The common notion was, that his task could be legally accomplished only by General Councils, convoked under the authority of the popes. It was easy, however, to perceive the inefficacy of any remedy left at the disposal of those very persons from whom the evil proceeded; and the unsuccessful results of the Councils of Constance and Basle had taught the people, that in order to obtain redress for the abuses of which they complained, it was necessary to have recourse to some other scheme than that of general councils. This scheme was attempted by the Reformers of the sixteenth century, who were persuaded, that, in order to restrain the exorbitant power of the clergy, they ought to reject the infallibility of the pope, as well as that of general councils; admitting no other authority in ecclesiastical matters, than that of the sacred Scriptures, interpreted by the lights of reason and sound criticism.

The immediate and incidental cause of this change in religion was the enormous abuse of indulgences. Pope Leo X., who was of the family of the Medicis, and well known for his extensive patronage of literature and the fine arts, having exhausted the treasury of the church by his luxury and his munificence, had recourse to the expedient of indulgences, which several of his predecessors had already adopted as a means of recruiting their finances. The ostensible reason was, the basilica of St. Peter's at Rome, the completion of which was equally interesting to the whole of Christendom. Offices for the sale of indulgences were established in all the different states of Europe. The purchasers of these indulgences obtained absolution of their sins, and exemption from the pains of purgatory after death. The excesses committed by the emissaries who had the charge of these indulgences, and the scandalous means which they practised to extort money, brought on the schism to which we are about to advert.

Two theologians, Martin Luther and Ulrich Zuinglie, opposed these indulgences, and inveighed against them in their sermons and their writings;

the former at Wittenberg, and the latter at Einsiedeln, in Switzerland. Leo X. was in contempt. The storm, until the heat of dispute, then to the voice of the means which he rather to retract he launched a thundering which, so far from abating, tended, on the will more. He published together with the canon (member), in presence of students from and assembled for the Luther and Zuinglie the abuses of the indetermined this system attacked various others the Romish church, the library of the priests, and the ecclesiastical state men, who agreed in opinions, soon attracted the people, long ago which had been so opposed the Reformers; and easily diffused by received with enthusiasm Europe.

John Calvin, another of the footsteps of Zuinglie in Picardy, and at Paris in 1532. At city on account of Switzerland (1534) burg, where he was a French preacher. His sermons gained him disciples to those who were the Lutharians or Calvinists, and under the command, on account of the against the decrees of which forbade them to religion, or to abolish a general council. This applied more particularly the Confession of Augst Faith, which they Charles V., at the famous 1530.

In this manner a great was the pope and the need either the doctrine Zuinglie and Calvin. The ark, Norway, Sweden, and Scotland, the principal part of Switzerland, in favour of the opinion the new doctrines made France, Hungary, Transylvania, and Poland.

This revolution did much; it influenced the form of government

the former at Wittemberg in Saxony; the other, first at Einsiedeln, afterwards at Zurich, in Switzerland. Leo X. first held these adversaries in contempt. He did not attempt to allay the storm, until the minds of men, exasperated by the heat of dispute, were no longer disposed to listen to the voice of calmness and conciliation. The means which he subsequently tried to induce Luther to retract having proved abortive, he launched a thundering Bull against him (1520), which, so far from abating the courage of the Reformer, tended, on the contrary, to embolden him still more. He publicly burnt the pope's bull, together with the canon law, at Wittemberg (10th December), in presence of a vast concourse of doctors and students from different nations, whom he had assembled for the purpose. From that moment Luther and Zuinglie never ceased to preach against the abuses of the indulgences. They completely undermined this system of abomination, and even attacked various other dogmas and institutions of the Romish church, such as monastic vows, the ubiquity of the priests, the supremacy of the pope, and the ecclesiastical hierarchy. These two celebrated men, who agreed in the greater part of their opinions, soon attracted a number of followers. The people, long ago prepared to shake off a yoke which had been so oppressive, applauded the zeal of the Reformers; and the new opinions, promptly and easily diffused by means of the press, were received with enthusiasm throughout a great part of Europe.

John Calvin, another Reformer, trod nearly in the footsteps of Zuinglie. He was a native of Noyon in Picardy, and began to distinguish himself at Paris in 1532. Being compelled to leave that city on account of his opinions, he withdrew to Switzerland (1538); thence he passed to Strasburg, where he was nominated to the office of French preacher. His erudition and his pulpitations gained him disciples, and gave the name of Calvinists to those who had at first been called Singlians. The Lutherans, as well as the Singlians or Calvinists, in Germany, were comprehended under the common appellation of Protestants, on account of the *Protest* which they took against the decrees of the Diet of Spire (1529), which forbade them to make any innovations in religion, or to abolish the mass, until the meeting of a general council. The name of Lutherans was applied more particularly to those who adhered to the Confession of Augsburg, that is, the Confession of Faith, which they presented to the Emperor Charles V., at the famous Diet of Augsburg, held in 1530.

In this manner a great part of Europe revolted from the pope and the Romish church, and embraced either the doctrines of Luther, or those of Zuinglie and Calvin. The half of Germany, Denmark, Norway, Sweden, Prussia, and Livonia, adopted the Confession of Augsburg; while England, Scotland, the United Provinces, and the principal part of Switzerland, declared themselves in favour of the opinions of Zuinglie and Calvin. The new doctrines made likewise great progress in France, Hungary, Transylvania, Bohemia, Silesia, and Poland.

This revolution did not convulse merely the church; it influenced the politics, and changed the form of government, in many of the states of

Europe. The same men who believed themselves authorized to correct abuses and imperfections in religion, undertook to reform political abuses with the same freedom. New states sprang up; and princes took advantage of these commotions to augment their own power and authority. Constituting themselves heads of the church and of the religion of their country, they shook off the fetters of priestly influence; while the clergy ceased to form a counteracting or controlling power in the state. The freedom of opinion which characterized the Protestant faith awoke the human mind from its intellectual lethargy, infused new energy into it, and thus contributed to the progress of civilization and science in Europe. Even the systems of public instruction underwent a considerable change. The schools were reformed, and rendered more perfect. A multitude of new seminaries of education, academies, and universities, were founded in all the Protestant states. This revolution, however, was not accomplished without great and various calamities. A hierarchy, such as that of the Church of Rome, supported by all that was dignified and venerable, could not be attacked, or shaken to its foundation, without involving Europe in the convulsion. Hence we find that wars and factions arose in Germany, France, the Low Countries, Switzerland, Hungary, and Poland. The march of reformation was every where stained with blood.

[This, however, was not always shed on account of religion, which was made the pretext for the greater part of the wars that raged for two hundred years. All the passions of the human breast—the ambition of the great—and the turbulent spirits of the disaffected—assumed that mask. If the Reformation contributed ultimately to the progress of learning in the Protestant states, it arrested these improvements in the Catholic countries, and gave birth to a headlong fanaticism which shut men's eyes to the truth. Even in the Protestant states, it occupied the attention with the study of a theology full of scholastic subtleties, instead of directing the mind to the pursuit of more useful sciences. If this liberty of opinion, and the absence of all authority in matters of faith, gave new energy to human thought, it also led men into errors of which the preceding ages had seen no example. The republicanism which desolated France in the sixteenth century, the rebellions which distracted England in the seventeenth, the pestilent doctrines that were broached in the eighteenth, and the revolutionary spirit which overturned all Europe in the nineteenth, may justly be regarded as the consequences of the Reformation, whose evils have, in a great measure, counterbalanced its advantages.*]

The means that were employed to bring the quarrels of the church to an amicable conclusion, tended rather to exasperate than allay the mischief; and if the conferences among the clergy of different persuasions failed, it was not to be expected that a better agreement, or a re-union of parties, could be founded on the basis of a General Council. The Protestants demanded an uncontrolled liberty for the council. They wished it to be assembled by order of the Emperor, in one of the cities of the Empire; and that their divines should have a voice and a seat in its meetings. The pope was to sub-

* This is one of the paragraphs interpolated by M. Schoell, whose opinion of this matter we by no means subscribe to.—T.

same time, none of them were sufficiently contemptible in point of weakness, as not to be of some weight in the scale. Hence that rivalry and jealousy among them, which was incessantly watching over the progress of their neighbours; and hence, too, a series of wars and confederacies, whose object was to maintain some degree of equality among them; or at least a relative proportion, which might inspire the weaker with courage and confidence. The popes, who were exceedingly active in these transactions, employed all their policy to prevent any foreign power from interfering, or establishing itself in Italy. The doctrine of political equilibrium passed the Alps about the end of the fifteenth century. The House of Austria, which had suddenly risen to a high pitch of grandeur, was the first against which its efforts were directed.]

This House, which derived its origin from Rodolph of Hapsburg, who was elected Emperor of Germany towards the end of the thirteenth century, owed its greatness and elevation chiefly to the Imperial dignity, and the different marriage-alliances which this same dignity procured it. Maximilian of Austria, son of the emperor Frederic III., married Mary of Burgundy (1477), daughter and heiress of Charles the Rash, last duke of Burgundy. This alliance secured to Austria the whole of the Low Countries, including Franche-Comté, Flanders and Artois. Philip the Fair, the son of this marriage, espoused the Infanta of Spain, daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella of Castille. They had two sons, Charles and Ferdinand, the former of whom, known in history by the name of Charles V., inherited the Low countries in right of his father Philip (1506). On the death of Ferdinand, his maternal grandfather (1516), he became heir to the whole Spanish succession, which comprehended the kingdoms of Spain, Naples, Sicily, and Sardinia, together with Spanish America. To these vast possessions were added his patrimonial dominions in Austria, which were transmitted to him by his paternal grandfather the Emperor Maximilian I. About the same time (1519), the Imperial dignity was conferred on this prince by the electors; so that Europe had not seen, since the time of Charlemagne, a monarchy so powerful as that of Charles V.

This emperor concluded a treaty with his brother Ferdinand, by which he ceded to him all his hereditary possessions in Germany. The two brothers thus became the founders of the two principal branches of the House of Austria, viz. that of Spain, which began with Charles V. (called Charles I. of Spain), and ended with Charles II. (1700); and that of Germany, of which Ferdinand was the ancestor, and which became extinct in the male line in the Emperor Charles VI. (1740). These two branches, closely allied to each other, acted in concert for the advancement of their reciprocal interests; moreover they gained each their own separate advantages by the marriage-connections which they formed. Ferdinand I. of the German line, married Anne (1521), sister of Louis King of Hungary and Bohemia, who having been slain by the Turks at the battle of Mohacs (1526), these two kingdoms devolved to Ferdinand of the House of Austria. Finally, the marriage which Charles V. contracted with the Infant

Isabella, daughter of Emmanuel, King of Portugal, procured Philip II. of Spain, the son of that marriage, the whole Portuguese monarchy, to which he succeeded on the death of Henry, called the Cardinal (1580). So vast an aggrandisement of power alarmed the sovereigns of Europe, who began to suspect that the Austrian Princes, of the Spanish and German line, aimed at the universal monarchy. The unbounded ambition of Charles V., and his son Philip II., as well as that of Ferdinand II., grandson of Ferdinand I., tended to confirm these suspicions, and all felt the necessity of uniting to oppose a barrier to this overwhelming power. For a long time the whole policy of Europe, its wars and alliances, had no other object than to humble the ambition of one nation, whose preponderance seemed to threaten the liberty and independence of the rest.

[The system of political equilibrium, which from this period became the leading object of every European cabinet, until it was undermined by unjust and arbitrary interferences, and threatened to bury the independence of Europe in its ruins, did not aim at maintaining among the different states an equality of power or territorial possession. This would have been chimerical. The object of this system was to maintain a perfect equality of rights, in virtue of which the weaker might enjoy in security all that they held by a just claim. It was purely a defensive and preservative system; nor did it affect to put an end to all wars; it was directed solely against the ambition and usurpation of conquerors. Its fundamental principle was to prevent any one state from acquiring sufficient power to resist the united efforts of the others.]

France was the leading power that undertook the task of regulating the balance against the House of Austria. Francis I. and Henry II. used every effort to excite combinations against Charles V. Francis was the first sovereign in Europe that entered into treaties of alliance with the Turks against Austria; and in this way the Porte was, to a certain extent, amalgamated with the political system of Europe. So long as their object was to subvert the feudal aristocracy, and the Protestant religion in France, Francis and Henry were strenuous defenders of the Germanic system, and extended their protection to the sovereigns of the Protestant states of the empire, under the persuasion that all Europe would bend to the Austrian yoke, if the emperors of that house should succeed in rendering their power absolute and hereditary in the Empire. Henry IV., Louis XIII., and the Cardinals Richelieu and Mazarin, adopted the same line of policy.⁶ They joined in league with the Protestant Princes, and armed by turns the greater part of Europe against Austria, and the Emperor Ferdinand II., whose ambitious designs threatened to subvert the constitution of the Empire. This was the grand motive for the famous thirty years' war, which was put an end to by the treaties of Westphalia (1648), and of the Pyrenees (1659). France succeeded, not however without prodigious efforts, in supporting the balance against Austria; while the federative system of the Empire, consolidated by the former of these treaties, and guaranteed by France and Sweden, became a sort of artificial barrier, for preserving the equilibrium and the general tranquillity of Europe.

It was during this period that almost every kingdom in Europe changed their condition, and assumed by degrees, the form which they have still retained. The German Empire continued to experience those calamities to which every government is exposed, when its internal springs have lost their vigour and activity. Private wars and feuds, which the laws authorized, were then regarded as the chief bulwark of the national liberty; the noblesse and the petty states in general, knew no other justice than what the sword dispensed. Oppression, rapine and violence, were become universal; commerce languished; and the different provinces of the empire presented one melancholy scene of ruin and desolation. The expedients that were tried to remedy these disorders, the truces, the treaties (called the Peace of God), and the different confederacies of the Imperial states, served only to palliate, but not to cure the evil. The efforts which some of the Emperors made to establish the public tranquillity on some solid basis, proved equally abortive.

It was not until near the end of the fifteenth century that the states of the Empire, impressed with juster notions of government and civil subordination, consented to the total and entire abolition of feuds and intestine wars. This was accomplished under the reign of Maximilian I., by the *Perpetual Public Peace*, drawn up at the Diet of Worms in 1495. All violent means of redress among the members of the Germanic Body were rigorously interdicted; and all who had any complaint to make against each other, were enjoined to apply to the regular courts of justice. This ordinance of the public peace, which was afterwards renewed and enlarged in several diets, has been regarded, since that time, as one of the principal and fundamental laws of the Empire.

The establishment of the public peace rendered a reformation necessary in the administration of justice, which had long been in a languid and disordered state. For this purpose, the Imperial Chamber, which sat at first at Spire, and was afterwards transferred to Wetzlar, was instituted at the Diet of Worms (1495). Its object was to judge of any differences that might arise among the immediate members of the Germanic body; as also to receive any appeals that might be referred to them from the subordinate tribunals. It was composed of a chief or head, called the Judge of the Chamber, and of a certain number of assessors, chosen from among the electors and independent nobility. The institution of the Aulic Council, another sovereign court of the Empire, followed soon after that of the Imperial Chamber. Its origin is generally referred to the Diet of Cologne (1512). Of the same date also is the plan which they adopted of dividing the Empire into ten Circles, as a proper expedient for maintaining the public peace, and facilitating the execution of the sentences of the two Imperial Courts. Over each of these circles were placed conveners, directors, and colonels, whose duty it was to superintend and command the troops of their respective districts.

The custom of imperial capitulations was introduced at the time of the accession of Charles V. to the imperial throne (1519). The electors, apprehensive of the formidable power of that prince, thought proper to limit it by a capitulation,

which they made him sign and solemnly swear to observe. This compact between the emperor and the electors, renewed under every subsequent reign, has been always considered as the grand charter of the liberties of the Germanic body.

The dissensions on the score of religion that happened about the beginning of the sixteenth century, gave rise to a long series of troubles and civil wars, which proved of advantage to the House of Austria, by the confirmation of their power in the Empire. The first of these is known by the name of the war of Smalcalde, of which the following is a brief sketch. The Emperor Charles V., in the first diet which he held at Worms (1521), had issued an edict of proscription against Luther and his adherents, ordaining that they should be treated as enemies of the Empire, and prosecuted to the utmost rigour of the law. The execution of this edict was incessantly urged by the emperor and the pope's legates, until the whole Empire was in a state of combustion. The Catholic princes, at the instigation of Cardinal Campeggio, assembled at Ratisbon (1524), and there adopted measures of extreme rigour, for putting the edict into execution within their respective states. The case was by no means the same with the princes and states who adhered to the reformation, or who gave it their protection. To apply the conditions of the edict to them, it would have been necessary to come to a civil war, which the more prudent members of the Germanic body sought to avoid. This religious schism was still more aggravated at the Diet of Augsburg, where the emperor issued a decree condemning the Confession of Faith which the Protestant princes had presented to him. This decree limited a time within which they were commanded, in so far as regarded the articles in dispute, to conform to the doctrines of the Catholic Church. Thus urged to extremities, the Protestant leaders determined to assemble at Smalcalde before the end of this very year (1530), where they laid the foundation of a *Union*, or defensive alliance, which was afterwards renewed at different times. John Frederic, Elector of Saxony, and Philip, Landgrave of Hesse, declared themselves chiefs of this union. In opposition to this confederacy, the Catholic princes instituted the *Holy League*; so called because its object was the defence of the Catholic religion.

Everything seemed to announce a civil war, when a new irruption of the Turks into Hungary, and Austria induced the Catholics to sign, at Nuremberg (1530), a truce, or accommodation, with the princes of the union; in virtue of which, a peace between the states of the two religions was concluded, and approved by the emperor; to continue till a general council, or some new assembly, should decide otherwise. This peace was renewed in various subsequent assemblies. The Protestant princes, however, still persisted in their refusal to acknowledge the authority of councils convoked by the popes; and their confederacy daily receiving new accessions, the emperor, after having made peace with France, at Crepy (1544), and concluded an armistice of five years with the Turks, resolved to declare war against these schismatics, who, presuming on their union and their amicable relations with foreign powers, thought

themselves capable of issuing an edict against the two chiefs of the union, and to a secret alliance with a younger branch of the same family, in order to bear relation of the theatre of the war. The elector of Saxony (1547), fell into the hands of the Landgrave, and was detained two months after he was then dissolved. He was then master of the city, served the rest of his army was good. At this diet the Electorate of Saxony was made prisoner, John the new elector to what deserves in this diet is, that scheme for the entire reformation, by compulsion of the reformation to be effected by a formula known by the name of the preliminary articles, the use of the communion, and the marriage of their priests should be decided by the Diet.

The victories of Maurice had made him absolute master of the former glory of the empire, though indebted to the thought he might take of the condition to which the low state of his empire had brought him, to limit his ambition to a Protestant religion. Some of the princes had concluded a secret alliance with France, at Chamber, in order to oppose their rapidity against the emperor, who surprised him at Inspruck, and recourse to the mediation of a treaty was concluded, which was signed at Passau, and the Protestant princes agreed that they should be summoned to draw up a permanent peace between the two religions.

This diet, which was held in 1555. There a decision was made on the subject of religion, both Protestant and Catholic, and the perfect liberty of worship should ever be attained by the most equitable means. The revenues, which the emperor had introduced into their states, were provided, that every prince should renounce his ancient

themselves capable of dictating laws to the Empire. He issued an edict of proscription (1546) against the Elector of Saxony and the Landgrave of Hesse, the two chiefs of the union; and having entered into a secret alliance with Duke Maurice, a younger branch of the family of Saxony, and a near relation of the elector, he succeeded in transferring the theatre of war from the Danube to the Elbe. The elector being defeated by the emperor, in an action which took place at Mecklenburg (1547), fell into the hands of the conqueror; and the Landgrave of Hesse met with the same fate two months after. The union of Smalcalde was then dissolved, and the emperor, who now saw himself master of Germany, assembled a diet at Augsburg in which he acted the part of a dictator. A large detachment of his troops, billeted in the city, served as his body guard, while the rest of his army was encamped in the neighbourhood. At this diet he conferred on Duke Maurice the Electorate of Saxony, of which he had deprived his prisoner, John Frederick. The investiture of the new elector took place at Augsburg (1548); and what deserves to be particularly remarked in this diet is, that the emperor entered into a scheme for the entire ruin and extirpation of Protestantism, by compelling the princes and states of the reformation to rejoin the Catholic Church, by means of a formula which he made them adopt, known by the name of the *Interim*; and which, by its preliminary arrangement, allowed them only the use of the communion in both kinds, and the marriage of their priests, until the whole matter should be decided by a council.

The victories of Charles V., which seemed to have made him absolute master of the Empire, were soon followed by reverses, which eclipsed all the former glory of his reign. The Elector Maurice, though indebted to him for his new dignity, thought he might take advantage of the distressed condition to which that prince was reduced by the low state of his finances, to make a new attempt to limit his authority, and restore the Protestant religion. With this view, having enlisted some of the princes of the Empire in his cause, and concluded a secret treaty with Henry II. of France, at Chambord, he marched with such rapidity against the Emperor, that he nearly surprised him at Inspruck, and obliged him to have recourse to the mediation of his brother Ferdinand, when a treaty was concluded with Maurice, which was signed at Passau (1552). There the liberty of the Protestant worship was sanctioned; and it was agreed that a General Council should be summoned to draw up the articles of a solid and permanent peace between the states of both religions.

This diet, which was long retarded by political events, did not assemble at Augsburg till the year 1555. There a definitive peace was concluded on the subject of religion, and it was ordained that both Protestant and Catholic states should enjoy a perfect liberty of worship; and that no reunion should ever be attempted by any other than amicable means. The secularizing of the ecclesiastical revenues, which the Protestant princes had introduced into their states, was ratified; but there was one of the articles of the treaty which expressly provided, that every prelate or churchman, who renounced his ancient faith to embrace the Con-

fession of Augsburg, should lose his benefice. This latter clause, known by the name of *Ecclesiastical Reserve*, did not pass but with the most determined opposition.

Differences of more kinds than one sprang from this treaty of peace,—the articles of which each party interpreted to their own advantage. Hence those stratagems which at length occasioned a new war (1618)—that of the Thirty Years. The Protestant Princes and States, wishing to provide for their own security, and to put an end to those arbitrary measures, of which they thought they had reason to complain, assembled at Heilbronn (1594), and there laid the foundation of a new union, which was confirmed in the assemblies held at Halle, in Suabia, in the years 1608 and 1610. The chief promoter of this union was Henry IV. of France, who designed to use it as a check on the ambition of the House of Austria; and as a means for carrying into execution the grand project which he meditated with regard to the pacification of Europe. He concluded an alliance with the princes of the Union, and determined the number of troops to be furnished by each of the contracting parties. The Catholic princes and States, afraid of being taken unawares, renewed their League, which they signed at Wurtzburg (1609). The rich duchy of Juliers, which had become vacant this same year, was contested by several claimants; and as Austria was equally desirous of possessing it, this was made the occasion of raising powerful armies in France, Germany, Italy, and the Low Countries. A considerable number of troops had already taken the field about the beginning of the year 1610, when the unexpected death of Henry IV. disconcerted all their measures. This changed the politics of the French court, and also induced the princes of the Union to conclude a treaty with the League,—the articles of which were signed at Munich and Wildstett (1610).

In this manner the resentment of both parties was suspended for the moment; but the cause of their disunion still remained, which at length (1618) kindled a war that extended from Bohemia over all Germany, and involved, in course of time, a great part of Europe. The history of this tedious war, in which politics had as great a share as zeal for religion, may be divided into four principal periods, namely, the Palatine, the Danish, the Swedish, and the French war. Frederick V., Elector Palatine, and head of the Protestant Union, having been raised to the throne by the Bohemian States (1619), which had rebelled against the Emperor Ferdinand II., engaged in a war with that prince; but being deserted by his allies, and defeated at the battle of Prague (1620), he was driven from Bohemia, and stripped of all his dominions. The victorious arms of Austria soon extended their conquests over a great part of the Empire.

Christian IV., King of Denmark, who was in alliance with most of the Protestant princes, next undertook the defence of the federal system; but he was not more fortunate than the Elector Palatine had been. Being defeated by Tilly, at the famous battle of Lutzen (1626), he was compelled to abandon the cause of his allies, and to sign a separate peace with the Emperor at Lubeck (1629). Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sweden,

pursued the career of the Danish monarch. Encouraged by France, he put himself at the head of the Protestant princes, with the view of checking the ambitious projects of Ferdinand II., who, by means of his general, Wallenstein, whom he had created Duke of Friedland, and invested in the duchy of Mecklenburg, was detaching the law to the whole Empire, and even threatening the kingdoms of the North. Nothing could be more splendid than the campaigns of the Swedish hero in Germany, and the victories which he obtained at Leipsic (1631), and Lutzen (1632); but having been slain in the latter action, the affairs of the Swedes began to decline; and they were totally ruined by the defeat which they sustained at Nordlingen (1634). From that time the Elector of Saxony, John George I., renounced the alliance of Sweden; and in yielding up Lusace to the Emperor, he consented to a separate treaty of peace, which was signed at Prague (1635).

It was at this period that France, which till then had but feebly supported the Swedes and the Protestant princes, thought it of advantage to her interests to undertake their defence against Austria. Having declared war against Spain, she marched numerous armies at once into Italy, Spain, Germany, and the Low Countries. Bernard, Prince of Saxe Weimar, and the three French generals, Guebriant, Turenne, and the Duke d'Enghien, signalized themselves by their exploits in the Imperial war; while the disciples of Gustavus Adolphus, Banier, Torstenstoen, and Wrangel, distinguished themselves at the head of the Swedish armies, in the various campaigns which took place, from the year 1635 till the conclusion of the peace. Never were negotiations more tedious or more complicated than those which preceded the treaty of Westphalia. The preliminaries were signed at Hamburgh in 1641; but the opening of the Congress at Munster and Osnaburg did not take place till 1644. The Counts D'Avaux and Servien, the plenipotentiaries of France, shared with Oxenstiern and Salvius, the Swedish envoys, the principal glory of this negotiation, which was protracted on purpose, as the belligerent powers were daily expecting to see the events of the war change in their favour. It was not until the 24th of October, 1648, that the peace was finally signed at Munster and Osnaburg.

This peace, which was renewed in every subsequent treaty, and made a fundamental law of the Empire, fixed definitively the constitution of the Germanic body. The territorial rights of the states, known by the name of *superiority*—the privilege of making alliances with each other, and with foreign powers—and advising with the Emperor at the Diets, in everything that concerned the general administration of the Empire, were confirmed to them in the most authentic manner, and guaranteed by the consent of foreign powers. As to ecclesiastical affairs, the Religious Peace of 1555 was confirmed anew, and extended to those who were known by the name of the *Reformed*, or *Calvinists*. The state of religion, the forms of public worship, and the enjoyment of ecclesiastical benefices, throughout the whole Empire, were regulated according to the decree, called *Uti possidetis*, of the 1st of January, 1624, which was termed the *normal*, or *decretory* year. In this treaty, France obtained, by way of indemnity, the sove-

reignty of the three bishoprics, Metz, Toul, and Verdun, as well as that of Alsace. The compensation of the other parties interested was settled by a great measure at the expense of the Church, and by means of secularizing several bishoprics and ecclesiastical benefices.

Besides Pomerania and the city of Wissemburg Sweden got the archbishopric of Bremen and the bishopric of Verdun. To the House of Brandenburg they assigned Upper Pomerania, the archbishopric of Magdeburg, the bishoprics of Halberstadt, Minden, and Cammin. The House of Mecklenburg received, in lieu of the city of Wissemburg, the bishoprics of Schwerin and Ratzeburg. The princely abbey of Hirschfeld was adjudged to the Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel, and the alterity of the bishopric of Osnaburg to the House of Brunswick-Luneburg. An eighth Electorate was instituted in favour of the Elector Palatine, whom the Emperor, during the war, had divested of his dignity, which, with the Upper Palatinate, he had conferred on the Duke of Bavaria.

The greater part of the provinces known by the name of the Low Countries, made part of the ancient kingdom of Lorraine, which had been united to the German Empire since the tenth century. The principal of these had been acquired by the dukes of Burgundy, who made them over with other estates, to the House of Austria (1477). Charles V. added the provinces of Friesland, Groningen, and Gueldres, to the states to which he had succeeded in Burgundy. He united the seventeen provinces of the Low Countries into one and the same government; and ordered, by the *Pragmatic* which he published (1549), that they should never henceforth be disunited. This same prince, at the diet of Augsburg (1548), entered into a negotiation with the Germanic body, in virtue of which he consented to put these provinces under their protection; under condition of their observing the public peace, and paying into the exchequer of the Empire double the contribution of an electorate. He guaranteed to the princes of the Low Countries a vote and a seat at the Diet, as chiefs of the circle of Burgundy. These provinces, moreover, were to be considered as free and independent sovereignties, without being subject to the jurisdiction either of the Empire or of the Imperial Chamber, who were not authorized to proceed against them, except when they were found in arrears with the payment of their contingent, or when they infringed the law of the public peace.

Charles V. having transferred these countries to his son, Philip II. of Spain, they were then incorporated with the Spanish monarchy; and it was under the reign of this latter prince that those troubles began which gave rise to the republic of the United Provinces of the Low Countries. The true origin of these troubles is to be found in the despotism of Philip II., and in his extravagant and fanatical zeal for the Catholic religion. This prince, the declared enemy of the rights and liberties of the Belgic provinces, was mortified to witness the religious privileges which they enjoyed; under favour of which the doctrines of the Reformation were daily making new progress. Being resolved to extirpate this new faith, together with the political liberties which served to protect it, he introduced the tribunal of the Inquisition

589), as the most
spotism. With
ope Paul IV., he
the metropolitan
bishops and bi
France had exerci
stituted three ne
ray, and Malines
put thirteen no
ected, besides th
aving in this way
telites in the as
suppressed a gr
monasteries, the rev
the endowment of h
These innovations
the decrees of the C
orders, excited a
peated remonstran
aving produced no
Philip, the nobilit
of a confederacy a
of the *Compromise*.
request, which w
Austria, the natural
regent of the Low
Spain. Four hun
Henry de Brederodé
counts of Holland,
the Prince of O
(1566), and there
may be considered
troubles in the Low
recount that the nar
given to the Confed
amous in the history
About this same ti
sobs in several town
all upon the church
ng broken down th
introduced the exer
force. The exteri
Catholic worship wa
and the confederacy
of whom, distrustful
retired to foreign c
Orange, Louis of N
burg and Berg, and
in the number of
instead of adopting
demency, according
was determined to
manner, this outrage
majesty of his thron
of Alba, or Alva, in
stead of an army o
Regent then gave i
error overspread th
manufacturers and m
and, carrying along
industry. Hence th
of the Low Countri
the most flourishing
ecency.

The Duke of Al
established a tribuna
excesses that had
comotions. This
called the "Council
all those who had b

1559), as the most sure and infallible support of despotism. With the consent and authority of pope Paul IV., he suppressed, for this purpose, the metropolitan and diocesan rights which the archbishops and bishops of the Empire and of France had exercised in the Low Countries; he instituted three new bishoprics at Utrecht, Cambray, and Malines; and under their jurisdiction he put thirteen new bishoprics which he had erected, besides those of Arras and Tournay. Having in this way augmented the number of his satellites in the assembly of the States-General, he suppressed a great multitude of abbeys and monasteries, the revenues of which he applied to the endowment of his newly made bishoprics.

These innovations, added to the publication of the decrees of the Council of Trent, according to his orders, excited a very general discontent. The repeated remonstrances on the part of the States, having produced no effect on the inflexible mind of Philip, the nobility took the resolution of forming a confederacy at Breda, known by the name of the *Compromise*. The confederates drew up a request, which was addressed to Margaret of Austria, the natural daughter of Charles V., and Regent of the Low Countries, under the King of Spain. Four hundred gentlemen, headed by Henry de Brederodé, a descendant of the ancient Counts of Holland, and Louis of Nassau, brother of the Prince of Orange, repaired to Brussels (1566), and there presented this request, which may be considered as the commencement of the troubles in the Low Countries. It was on this account that the name of *Gueux*, or *Beggars*, was given to the Confederates, which has become so famous in the history of these wars.

About this same time, the populace collected in mobs in several towns of the Low Countries, and fell upon the churches and monasteries; and having broken down their altars and images, they introduced the exercise of the Protestant religion by force. The storm, however, was calmed; the Catholic worship was re-established everywhere; and the confederacy of the nobles dissolved, several of whom, distrustful of this apparent tranquillity, retired to foreign countries. William Prince of Orange, Louis of Nassau, the Counts de Culemburg and Berg, and the Count de Brederodé, were in the number of these emigrants. Philip II., instead of adopting measures of moderation and clemency, according to the advice of the Regent, was determined to avenge, in the most signal manner, this outrage against his religion and the majesty of his throne. He sent the famous Duke of Alba, or Alva, into the Low Countries, at the head of an army of 20,000 men (1567). The Regent then gave in her resignation. A general revolt overspread the country. Vast numbers of manufacturers and merchants took refuge in England, carrying along with them their arts and their industry. Hence the commerce and manufactures of the Low Countries, which had formerly been the most flourishing in Europe, fell entirely into decay.

The Duke of Alva, immediately on his arrival, established a tribunal or court, for investigating the excesses that had been committed during these commotions. This council, which the Flemings called the "Council of Blood," informed against all those who had been in any way concerned with

the *Beggars* (a sort of *Huguenots*); who had frequented their preachings, contributed to the support of their ministers or the building of their churches; or harboured and protected these heretics, either directly or indirectly. Before this council, whose only judges were the Duke of Alva and his confidant John de Vargas, were cited high and low, without distinction; and all those whose wealth excited their cupidity. There they instituted proceedings against the absent and the present, the dead and the living, and confiscated their goods. Eighteen thousand persons perished by the hands of the executioner, and more than 30,000 others were entirely ruined. Among the number of those illustrious victims of Alva's cruelty, were the Counts Egmont and Horn, who were both beheaded. Their execution excited a general indignation, and was the signal of revolt and civil war throughout the Low Countries.

The *Beggars*, who seemed almost forgotten, began to revive; and were afterwards distinguished into three kinds. All the malecontents, as well as the adherents of Luther and Calvin, were called simply by this name. Those were called *Beggars of the Woods*, who concealed themselves in the forests and marshes; never sallying forth but in the night, to commit all sorts of excesses. Lastly, the *Muritime or Marine Beggars*, were those who employed themselves in piracy; infesting the coasts, and making descents on the country.

It was in this situation of affairs that the Prince of Orange, one of the richest proprietors in the Low Countries, assisted by his brother, the Count of Nassau, assembled different bodies of troops in the Empire, with which he attacked the Low Countries in several places at once (1568). Failing in these first attempts, he soon changed his plan; and associating the *Marine Beggars* in the cause, he ventured to attack the Spaniards by sea. The *Beggars*, encouraged by that Prince, and William Count de la Mark, surnamed the *Boar of Ardenne*, took the city of Brill by surprise (1572), situated in the Isle of Voorn, and regarded as the stronghold of the new republic of the Belgic provinces. The capture of the port of Brill caused a revolution in Zealand. All the cities of that province, except Middleburg, opened their gates to the *Beggars*; and their example was followed by most of the towns in Holland. An assembly of the states of this latter province met this same year at Dort, where they laid the foundation of their new republic. The Prince of Orange was there declared *Stattholder* or governor of the provinces of Holland, Zealand, Friesland, and Utrecht; and they agreed never to treat with the Spaniards, except by common consent. The public exercise of the reformed religion was introduced, according to the form of Geneva.

This rising republic became more firmly established in consequence of several advantages which the Confederates had gained over the Spaniards, whose troops being badly paid, at length mutinied; and breaking out into the greatest disorders, they pillaged several cities, among others Antwerp, and laid waste the whole of the Low Countries. The States General, then assembled at Brussels, implored the assistance of the Prince of Orange and the Confederates. A negotiation was then opened at Ghent (1576), between the states of Brussels and those of Holland and Zealand; where a general

union, known by the name of the *Pacification of Ghent*, was signed. They engaged mutually to assist each other, with the view of expelling the Spanish troops, and never more permitting them to enter the Low Countries. The Confederates, who were in alliance with Queen Elizabeth of England, pursued the Spaniards every where, who soon saw themselves reduced to the single provinces of Luxemburg, Limburg, and Namur.

They were on the point of being expelled from these also, when the government of the Low Countries was intrusted to Alexander Farnesé, Prince of Parma. Equally distinguished as a politician and a warrior, this prince revived the Spanish interests. Taking advantage of the dissensions which had arisen among the Confederates from the diversity of their religious opinions, he again reduced the provinces of Flanders, Artois, and Hainault, under the Spanish dominion. He took the city of Maestricht by assault, and entered into a negociation with the States-General of the Low Countries at Cologne, under the mediation of the Emperor Rodolph II., the Pope, and some of the princes of the Empire. This negociation proved unsuccessful; but the Prince of Orange, foreseeing that the general confederacy could not last, conceived the plan of a more intimate union among the provinces; which he regarded as the most fit to make head against the Spaniards. He fixed on the maritime provinces, such as Holland, Zealand, and Friesland; and above all, on those whom the same religious creed, viz., the Calvinistic, had attached to the same interests. The commerce of Holland, and Zealand, and Friesland, began to make new progress daily. Amsterdam was rising on the ruins of Antwerp. The flourishing state of their marine rendered these provinces formidable by sea; and gave them the means not only of repelling the efforts of the Spaniards, but even of protecting the neighbouring provinces which might join this union. Such were the motives which induced the Prince of Orange to form the special confederacy of the Seven Provinces, the basis of which he laid by the famous treaty of union concluded at Utrecht (1579). That union was there declared perpetual and indissoluble; and it was agreed that the Seven Provinces, viz., those of Gueldres, Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, Overysse, Friesland, and Groningen, should henceforth be considered as one and the same province. Each of these, nevertheless, was guaranteed in the possession of their rights and privileges—that is, their absolute superiority in everything regarding their own internal administration.

[We may remark, however, that these insurrectionary provinces had not originally the design of forming a republic. Their intention, at first, was only to maintain their political privileges; and they did not absolutely shake off the Spanish authority until they despaired of reconciliation. Moreover, they repeatedly offered the sovereignty of their states to different foreign princes; and it was not till the union of Utrecht that the Seven Provinces became a federal republic. Consequently everything remained on its ancient footing; and some of the provinces even retained their Stadtholders or governors at the head of their administration. Hence that mixture of monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy, which prevailed in these countries; and hence, too, the feeble tie

which united them with each other, and which would probably have speedily broken, if Holland had not, by its riches and its power, obtained an influence and a preponderance which maintained the union.]

The declaration of the Independence of the United Provinces did not take place till 1581; when the Prince of Orange induced the States-General to make a formal proclamation of it, out of revenge for the furious edicts of proscription which the court of Spain had issued against him. The prince, however, was assassinated at Delft in 1584; and the Spaniards took advantage of the consternation which this event had spread among the Confederates, to reconquer most of the provinces of the Low Countries. The general Confederacy languished away by degrees; and the union of Utrecht was the only one maintained among the Seven Provinces. This new republic, which was in strict alliance with England, not only made head against the Spaniards, but gained a considerable increase of strength by the vast numbers of refugees from the different Belgic provinces, who took shelter there; as well as from France, where the persecution still raged violently against the Protestants. It is calculated that after the taking of Antwerp by the Prince of Parma in 1585, above a hundred thousand of these fugitives transported themselves to Holland and Amsterdam, carrying with them their wealth and their industry.

From this date the commerce of the Confederate States increased every day; and in 1595 they extended it as far as India and the Eastern Sea. The Dutch India Company was established in 1602. Besides the exclusive commerce of India, which was guaranteed to them by their charter, they became likewise a political body, under the sovereignty of the States-General of the United Provinces. Supported by a formidable marine, they acquired vast influence in the East by their conquests over the Portuguese, whom they dispossessed, by degrees, of all their principal establishments in India. The Spaniards, finding their efforts to reduce the Confederates by force of arms ineffectual, set on foot a negociation at Antwerp (1609), under the mediation of France and England; in consequence of which, a truce of twelve years was concluded between Spain and the United Provinces. It was chiefly during this time that the Confederates extended their commerce over all parts of the globe, while their marine daily increased in strength and importance; which soon raised them to the rank of being the second maritime power, and gave them a decisive influence over the political affairs of Europe.

At the expiry of this truce hostilities were renewed with Spain. The Dutch carried on the war for twenty-five years with great glory, under the auspices of their Stadtholders, Maurice and Henry Frederic, Princes of Orange, who discovered great military talents. One event, which proved favourable for the republicans, was the war that broke out between France and Spain, and which was followed by a strict alliance between France and the States-General. The partition of the Spanish Netherlands was settled by this treaty; and the allied powers entered into an engagement never to make peace or truce with Spain, except by common consent. This latter clause, however,

did not prevent the
ing at Munster a
the exclusion of F
the King of Spain a
inces as free and in
to them all the pla
Brabant, Flanders, E
Bergen-op-Zoom, E
their possessions in
Asia, Africa, and A
scheld, which was
Provinces, entirely
and shut out the
maritime commerce.

The feudal system
stantiated in the fourt
importance towards
reason of the success
war with Charles,
prince, who was of
constantly occupied
Taking advantage
finances of the Arc
he induced him to s
nu and Alsace, w
Peter de Hagenbach
had been appointed
the Duke, had opp
and harassed the wh
specially the Swiss.

made on this score
bered Hagenbach st
with the concurrence
pire, paid down, at
the contract for rep
and, by force of arms
rian prince in the p
nu. They even we
proceedings against
sequence beheaded a

The Duke, deter
assembled an army
he penetrated throu
erland. He was
which took place at
he reinforced his tre
Here he was again
killed 18,000 of his
his camp and baggag
ally of the Swiss, wa
of which the Duke o
This latter prince, i
siege to Nancy. Th
of this place, where
battle with the Duke
lain (1477).

These victories o
Burgundy, one of t
his time, raised the f
their friendship and
sovereigns in Europ
confederacy, which
of only eight canton
session of two new
which were enrolled

From this time th
to break the ties tha
body, as members of
The Diet of Worms
Emperor Maximilian

did not prevent the States-General from concluding at Munster a separate peace with Spain, to the exclusion of France (1648). By this peace the King of Spain acknowledged the United Provinces as free and independent States; he gave up to them all the places which they had seized in Brabant, Flanders, and Limburg, viz., Bois-le-Duc, Bergen-op-Zoom, Breda, and Maestricht; as also their possessions in the East and West Indies, in Asia, Africa, and America. The closing of the Scheld, which was granted in favour of the United Provinces, entirely ruined the city of Antwerp, and shut out the Spanish Netherlands from all maritime commerce.

The feudal system of the Swiss, which had originated in the fourteenth century, acquired a new importance towards the end of the fifteenth, by reason of the success of the confederates in their war with Charles, Duke of Burgundy. This prince, who was of a hot and turbulent spirit, was constantly occupied with projects of conquest. Taking advantage of the ruinous state of the finances of the Archduke Sigismund of Austria, he induced him to sell him the territories of Brisgau and Alsace, with the right of repurchase. Peter de Hagenbach, a gentleman of Alsace, who had been appointed governor of these countries by the Duke, had oppressed the Austrian subjects, and harassed the whole neighbouring states; especially the Swiss. The complaints which were made on this score to the Duke having only rendered Hagenbach still more insolent, the Swiss, with the concurrence of several states of the Empire, paid down, at Basle, the sums stipulated in the contract for repurchasing the two provinces; and, by force of arms, they re-established the Austrian prince in the possession of Alsace and Brisgau. They even went so far as to institute legal proceedings against Hagenbach, who was in consequence beheaded at Brisach in 1474.

The Duke, determined to avenge this insult, assembled an army of 100,000 men, with which he penetrated through Frauche-Comté into Switzerland. He was defeated in the first action, which took place at Granson (1476); after which he reinforced his troops, and laid siege to Morat. Here he was again attacked by the Swiss, who killed 18,000 of his men, and seized the whole of his camp and baggage. The Duke of Lorraine, an ally of the Swiss, was then restored to those states of which the Duke of Burgundy had deprived him. This latter prince, in a great fury, came and laid siege to Nancy. The Swiss marched to the relief of this place, where they fought a third and last battle with the Duke, who was here defeated and slain (1477).

These victories of the Swiss over the Duke of Burgundy, one of the most powerful princes of his time, raised the fame of their arms; and made their friendship and alliance be courted by the first sovereigns in Europe, especially by France. Their confederacy, which had formerly been composed of only eight cantons, was augmented by the accession of two new states, Friburg and Soleure, which were enrolled in the number of cantons.

From this time the Swiss were no longer afraid to break the ties that bound them to the Germanic body, as members of the ancient kingdom of Arles. The Diet of Worms, in 1495, having granted the Emperor Maximilian succours against the French

and the Turks, the Swiss alleged their immunities, and their alliance with France, as a pretext for refusing their contingent of supplies. This demand, however, was renewed at the Diet of Lindau, in 1496, which required them to renounce their alliance with France, and accede to the League of Swabia; as also to submit themselves to the Imperial Chamber, and the law of the public peace; and to furnish their quota for the support of that Chamber, and the other contributions of the Empire. All these demands were resisted by the Helvetic body, who regarded them as contrary to their rights and privileges. Meantime the Grisons had allied themselves with the Swiss, in order to obtain their protection under the existing differences between them and the Tyrolese.

The Emperor Maximilian seized this pretext for making war against the Cantons. Being desirous of vindicating the dignity of the Empire, which had been outraged by the Swiss, and of avenging the insults offered to his own family, he stirred up the League of Swabia to oppose them; and attacked them in different points at once. Eight battles were fought in succession, in course of that campaign; all of which, with one solitary exception, were in favour of the Swiss, while the Imperialists lost more than 20,000 men. Maximilian and his allies, the Swabian League, then came to the resolution of making their peace with the Cantons, which was concluded at Basle (1499). Both parties made a mutual restitution of what they had wrested from each other; and it was agreed, that the differences between the Emperor, as Count of Tyrol, and the Grisons, should be brought to an amicable termination. This peace forms a memorable era in the history of the Helvetic Confederacy, whose independence, with regard to the German emperor, was from that time considered as decided; although no mention of this was made in the treaty, and although the Swiss still continued for some time to request from the emperors the confirmation of their immunities. Two immediate cities of the Empire, those of Basle and Schaffhausen, took occasion, from these latter events, to solicit their admission into the Confederacy. They were received as allies, under the title of Cantons (1501); and the territory of Appenzel, which was admitted in like manner (1513), formed the thirteenth and last canton.

The alliance which the Swiss had kept up with France, since the reigns of Charles VII. and Louis XI., tended greatly to secure the independence of the Helvetic body.⁸ This alliance, which Louis XI. had made an instrument for humbling the power of the Duke of Burgundy, was never but once broken, in the reign of Louis XII., on account of the Holy League, into which the Swiss were drawn by the intrigues of the Bishop of Sion (1512). The French were then expelled from the Milanese territory by the Swiss, who placed there the Duke Maximilian Sforza. It was in gratitude for this service, that the duke ceded to the Swiss, by a treaty which was concluded at Basle, the four bailiwicks of Lugano, Locarno, Mendrisio, and Val-Maggio, which he dismembered from the Milanais. Though conquerors at the battle of Novara, the Swiss experienced a sanguinary defeat at Marignano; when they judged it for their interest to renew their alliance with France (1515). A treaty of perpetual peace was signed at Friburg

between these two states (1510), which was soon after followed by a new treaty of alliance, concluded with Francis I. at Lucerne (1521), and regularly renewed under the subsequent reigns.

The change which took place in religion, at the beginning of the sixteenth century, extended its influence to Switzerland, where it kindled the flame of civil discord. Four cantons, those of Zurich, Berne, Schaffhausen, and Basle, renouncing entirely the Romish faith, had embraced the doctrines of Zuingli and Calvin; while two others, viz., Glaris and Appenzel, were divided between the old and the new opinions. The Reformation having likewise found its way into the common balliwicks, the Catholic Cantons rose in opposition to it (1531); denying liberty of conscience to the inhabitants. Hence, a war arose between the Cantons of the two religions; which, however, was terminated the same year by a treaty of peace, guaranteeing to such parishes within the balliwicks as had embraced the new doctrines, the liberty of still adhering to them. The same revolution extended to Geneva, whose inhabitants had declared solemnly in favour of the reformed worship, and erected themselves into a free and independent republic (1534). The church of Geneva, under the direction of Calvin, became the centre and citadel of the Reformation; while the academy founded in that city, produced a vast number of theologians and celebrated scholars. It was at this time that the Duke of Savoy planned the blockade of Geneva, to enforce certain ancient rights which he claimed over that city; but the Bernese espoused the cause of the Genevans, in virtue of the treaties of common citizenship which subsisted between them. This Canton having entered into alliance with Francis I., declared war against the Duke of Savoy (1536); and in less than three months took from him the Pays de Vaud. Being desirous of interesting their neighbours the Friburgers in their cause, they invited them to take possession of all those places that might suit their convenience; and it was on this occasion that the city of Friburg acquired the principal part of its territory. These acquisitions were confirmed to the two Cantons, by the treaty which the Bernese concluded at Lausanne with the Duke of Savoy (1564).

The German Empire from time to time renewed its pretensions on Switzerland, and the Imperial Chamber usurped an occasional jurisdiction over one or other of the Cantons. Negotiations for a general peace having commenced at Munster and Osnaburg, the thirteen Cantons sent their minister or envoy to watch over the interests of the Helvetic Body at that congress; and they obtained, through the intervention of France and Sweden, that in one of the articles of the treaty it should be declared, that the city of Basle, and the other Swiss Cantons, were in possession of full liberty, and independent of the Empire, and in no respect subject to its tribunals.

In Italy, the authority of the Emperor of Germany, which had silently declined during the preceding century, languished more and more under the long and feeble reign of Frederic III. At length it was reduced to the mere ceremony of coronation, and the simple exercise of some honorary and feudal rights, such as the investitures which the Imperial Court continued to grant to the vassals of Lombardy. Although the Imperial

dignity implied the royalty of Italy, which was considered as indissolubly united to it, nevertheless it was the custom that the kings of Germany should have themselves crowned separately, kings of Italy at Milan, and emperors at Rome. Frederic III., having had certain reasons for avoiding his coronation at Milan, received from the hands of Pope Nicholas V., in his own capital, the two crowns of Italy and Rome. Maximilian I., being prevented by the Venetians from repairing to Italy for his coronation (1508), was content to take the title of *Emperor Elect*, which his successors in the Empire have retained till the present time. Charles V. was the last emperor to whom the Pope, Clement VII., administered this double coronation of king of Italy and emperor, at Bologna, in 1530.

The popes, the kings of Naples, the dukes of Milan, and the republics of Venice and Florence, were the principal powers that shared among them the dominion of Italy towards the end of the fifteenth century. The continual wars which these states waged with each other, added to the weakness of the German emperors, encouraged foreign powers to form plans of aggrandisement and conquest over these countries. The kings of France, Charles VIII., Louis XII., and Francis I., set away by a mania for conquest, undertook several expeditions into Italy, for enforcing their claims either on the kingdom of Naples, or the duchy of Milan. They were thwarted in their schemes by the kings of Spain, who, being already masters of Sicily and Sardinia, thought they behoved also to extend their views to the continent of Italy. Ferdinand the Catholic deprived the French of the kingdom of Naples (1500). His successor, Charles V., expelled them from the Milanais, and obliged Francis I., by the treaties of Madrid (1526), Cambrai (1529), and Crepy (1544), to give up his pretensions on the kingdom of Naples, and the duchy of Milan. From this time the Spaniards were the predominating power in Italy for more than a hundred years.

In the midst of these revolutions, there arose three new principalities within that kingdom; those of Florence, Parma, and Malta. The republic of Florence held a distinguished rank in Italy during the fifteenth century, both on account of the flourishing state of its commerce, and the large extent of its territory, which comprehended the greater part of Tuscany, and gave to this republic the means of holding the balance between the other powers of Italy. The opulent family of the Medici here exercised a great degree of influence; they ruled not only over her, but by their munificence, and the judicious use which they made of their great riches. The credit and popularity of the Medici excited envy and persecution against them, and caused them to be several times banished from Florence. They were expelled from this latter place at the same time that Pope Clement VII., who was of this family, was besieged by the Imperialists in Rome (1527). That pontiff, in making his peace with Charles V., obtained his consent that the Medici should be re-established at Florence, in the state in which they were before their last banishment. The Emperor even promised the Pope to give Alexander de' Medici his natural daughter in marriage, with a considerable dowry. The Florentines, however, having shown some re-

uctance to receive the Emperor's daughter, he was obliged to surrender by capitulation.

The Emperor, by a treaty on the 28th of August, gave the city of Florence to Alexander de' Medici, chief of the state; but he himself and his male heirs were to enjoy it according to the laws. He was authorized, as Grand Duke of Tuscany, to exercise an absolute authority over the citizens. As for the new prince of Florence, he belonged to the duchy of Naples, which the Emperor had given to Philip II.

Alexander de' Medici was a cruel and ambitious man. He was assassinated by one of his own near relations, the duke of Savoy, who annexed to the territory of the ancient republic of Florence the territory of Charles V., and conjoined it with Philip II. in name. The latter prince being at war with France, with whom Alexander de' Medici was allied, granted him the investiture of the duchy of Milan as a fief, by way of equivalent for the territory which he had advanced to carry on the siege of the Sienuois to the Duke of Savoy, who had the ports of Tuscany, Orbiello, Telamone, Montecatini, Longone, Piombino, and Livorno. With the exception of the name treaty, Cosmo II. was the Spaniards, for the kingdom of Naples.

At length the Medici grand dukes, on occasion of a war that had risen between them and the Duke of Savoy, on the subject of the inheritance of the Grand Duke of Tuscany (1569). The Emperor had granted that the Pope should exercise the dignities in Italy; to which he alleged below the dignity of his being king of Tuscany, that this affair had occasioned a schism between Rome and the Emperor. When the Emperor Francis de' Medici, the Grand Duke of Tuscany, died, Cosmo, the dignity of that he should acknowledge the Emperor, and not of that of the Emperor.

Among the number of the Visconti of Milan had the fourteenth century. They had the duchy of Milan until having been expelled by the allies of the Holy League, rendered by the Swiss some claim to them, &c.

y, which was t, nevertheless Germany should kings of Italy Frederick III. King his coronations of Pope e two crowns t., being pre- Italy ut to take the scessors in the present time, o whom the t this double or, at Bologna,

the dukes of and Florence, and among these end of these es which these to the weak- aged foreign ent and congs of France, Francis I., rttook several their claims the duchy of schemes by tly masters of oved also to f Italy. Fer- 'rench of the ssor, Charles and obliged (1526), Cam- up his pre- the duchy ards were the more than a

there arose kingdom; those e republic of Italy during of the flow- large extent the greater republic the other of the Medici ences, and f their great the Medici t them, and nished from n this latter ement VII. by the Impe- f, in making his consent shed at Flo- before they promised the his natural dowry, wn some re-

instance to receive the Medici, their city was besieged by the Imperial army, and compelled to surrender by capitulation (1530).

The Emperor, by a charter dated at Augsburg on the 28th of August following, preserved to the city of Florence its ancient republican forms. Alexander de' Medici was declared governor-in-chief of the state; but this dignity was vested in himself and his male descendants, who could only enjoy it according to the order of primogeniture. He was authorized, moreover, to construct a citadel at Florence, by means of which he afterwards exercised an absolute power over his fellow-citizens. As for the dual dignity with which the new prince of Florence was vested, it properly belonged to the duchy of Parma, in the kingdom of Naples, which the Emperor had conferred on him.

Alexander de' Medici did not long enjoy his new honours. He was universally abhorred for his cruelties, and assassinated by Laurentio de' Medici, one of his own near relations (1537). His successor in the duchy was Cosmo de' Medici, who annexed to the territory of Florence that of the ancient republic of Sienna, which the Emperor, Charles V., had conquered, and conferred on his son Philip II. in name of the Empire (1554). This latter prince being desirous of seducing Cosmo from his alliance with the Pope and the King of France, with whom the Spaniards were at war, granted him the investiture of the territory of Sienna, as a mesne-tenure holding of the crown of Spain, by way of equivalent for the considerable sums which he had advanced to Charles V. while he was carrying on the siege of Sienna. In transferring the Siennois to the Duke, Philip reserved for himself the ports of Tuscany, such as Porto Ercole, Orbiello, Telamone, Monte-Argentaro, St. Stefano, Longone, Piombino, and the whole island of Elba, with the exception of Porto Ferrajo. By the same treaty, Cosmo engaged to furnish supplies to the Spaniards, for the defence of Milan and the kingdom of Naples.

At length the Medici obtained the dignity of grand dukes, on occasion of the difference that had risen between them and the dukes of Ferrara, on the subject of precedency. The Pope terminated this dispute, by granting to Cosmo the title of Grand Duke of Tuscany, with the royal honours (1569). The Emperor, however, took it amiss that the Pope should undertake to confer secular dignities in Italy; thus encroaching on a right which he alleged belonged only to himself in virtue of his being king of Italy. The quarrels which this affair had occasioned between the court of Rome and the Empire, were adjusted in 1576, when the Emperor Maximilian II. granted to Francis de' Medici, the brother and successor of Cosmo, the dignity of Grand Duke, on condition that he should acknowledge it as a tenure of the Empire, and not of the Pope.

Among the number of those republics which the Visconti of Milan had subdued and overthrown in the fourteenth century, were those of Parma and Placentia. They had formed a dependency of the duchy of Milan until 1512, when Louis XII. having been expelled from the Milanais by the allies of the Holy League, these cities were surrendered by the Swiss to Pope Julius II., who laid some claim to them, as making part of the dowry

of the famous Countess Matilda. The Emperor Maximilian ceded them to the Pope by the treaty of peace which he made with him in 1512. Francis I. took these cities again from the court of Rome, when he reconquered the duchy of Milan (1515); but this prince having also been expelled from the Milanais (1521), the Pope again got possession of Parma and Placentia, in virtue of the treaty which he had concluded with Charles V., for the re-establishment of Francis Sforza in the duchy of Milan. These cities continued to form part of the ecclesiastical states until 1545, when they were dismembered from it by Paul III., who erected them into duchies, and conferred them on his son Peter Louis Farnese, and his heirs-male in the order of primogeniture; to be held under the title of fiefs of the holy see, and on condition of paying an annual tribute of 9000 ducats.

This elevation of a man, whose very birth seemed a disgrace to the pontiff, gave universal offence. The new Duke of Parma soon rendered himself so odious by his dissolute life, his crimes and scandalous excesses, that a conspiracy was formed against him; and he was assassinated in the citadel of Placentia in 1547. Ferdinand Gonzaga, who was implicated, as is alleged, in this assassination, then took possession of Placentia in name of the Emperor; and it was not till 1557 that Philip II. of Spain restored that city, with its dependencies, to Octavius Farnese, son and successor of the murdered Prince. The house of Farnese held the duchy of Parma as a fief of the ecclesiastical states, until the extinction of the male line in 1731.

The Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, after their expulsion from the Holy Land, had retired to the Isle of Cyprus, and from thence to Rhodes, in 1310, of which they had dispossessed the Greeks. They did not maintain possession of this place longer than 1523, when Soliman the Great undertook the siege of Rhodes, with an army of 200,000 men, and a fleet of 400 sail. The knights boldly repulsed the different attacks of the Turks; but being entirely dependent on their own forces, and receiving no succour from the powers of Christendom, they were compelled to capitulate, after an obstinate defence of six months. Leaving Rhodes, these knights took shelter in Viterbo, belonging to the states of the church, where they were cordially received by Pope Clement VII. There they remained until the Emperor Charles V. granted them the Isle of Malta, which became their principal residence (1530). That prince ceded to them the islands of Malta and Gozzo, with the city of Tripoli in Africa, on condition of holding them from him and his successors in the kingdom of Sicily, as noble fiefs, frank and free, without any other obligation than the annual gift of a falcon, in token of their domanial tenure, and presenting to the King of Sicily three of their subjects, of whom he was to choose one, on each vacancy of the bishopric of Malta. Charles V. added another clause, that if ever the Order should leave Malta and fix their residence elsewhere, that island should revert to the King of Sicily. The Knights of St. John continued in the sovereignty of Malta and Gozzo till 1798; but they lost Tripoli in 1551, which was taken from them by the Turks.

A memorable revolution happened at Genoa, about the beginning of the sixteenth century.

That republic, after having for a long time formed part of the duchy of Milan, recovered its ancient independence about the time when the French and Spaniards disputed the sovereignty of Italy, and the conquest of the Milanais. Expelled by the Imperialists from the city of Genoa in 1522, the French had found means to repossess it (1527), with the assistance of the celebrated Andrew Doria, a noble Genoese, who had been in the service of Francis I. This distinguished admiral, supplanted by favourites, and maltreated by the court, abandoned the cause of France in the following year, and espoused that of the Emperor Charles V.

The French then laid siege to the city of Naples, which was reduced to the last extremity and on the point of surrendering, when Doria, having hoisted the Imperial flag, set sail for Naples, with the galleys under his command, and threw abundance of provisions into the besieged city. The French army, now cut off from all communication by sea, soon began to experience those calamities from which the Imperialists had just been delivered. Their whole troops being destroyed by famine and contagious disease, the expedition to Naples fell to the ground, and the affairs of the French in Italy were totally ruined. It is alleged that Charles V., to recompense Doria for this important service, offered him the sovereignty of Genoa; and that, instead of accepting this honour, that great man stipulated for the liberty of his country, whenever it should be delivered from the yoke of France. Courting the glory of being the liberator of his native city, he sailed directly for Genoa, of which he made himself master, in a single night, without shedding one drop of blood (1528). The French garrison retired to the citadel and were obliged to capitulate for want of provisions.

This expedition procured Doria the title of Father of his Country, which was conferred on him by a decree of the senate. It was by his advice that a committee of twelve persons was chosen to organize a new scheme of government for the republic. A register was drawn up of all those families who were to compose the grand council, which was destined to exercise the supreme power. The doge was to continue in office ten years; and great care was taken to remove those causes which had previously excited factions and intestine disorders. Hence the establishment of the Genoese aristocracy, whose forms have since been preserved, with some few modifications which were introduced afterwards, in consequence of certain dissensions which had arisen between the ancient and the new nobility.

Venice, the eldest of the European republics, had reached the zenith of its greatness about the end of the fifteenth century. The vast extent of its commerce, supported by a powerful marine, the multiplied sources of its industry, and the monopoly of the trade in the East, had made it one of the richest and most formidable states in Europe. Besides several ports on the Adriatic, and numerous settlements which they had in the Archipelago, and the trading towns on the Levant, they gained ground more and more on the continent of Italy, where they formed a considerable territory. Guided by an artful and enterprising policy, this republic seized with marvellous avidity

every circumstance which favoured its views of aggrandisement. On the occasion of their quarrels with the Duke of Ferrara, they obtained possession of the province of Polesino de Rovigo, by a treaty which they concluded with that prince in 1484.

Afterwards, having joined the league which the powers of Italy had opposed to Charles VIII. and his projects of conquest, they refused to grant supplies to the King of Naples for the recovery of his kingdom, except by his consenting to yield up the cities of Trani, Otranto, Brindisi, and Gallipoli. Louis XII., being resolved to enforce his claims on the duchy of Milan, and wishing to gain over this republic to his interest, gave up to them, by the treaty of Blois (1490), the town of Cremona, and the whole country lying between the Oglio, the Adda, and the Po. On the death of Pope Alexander VI. (1503), they took that favourable opportunity of wresting from the ecclesiastical states several towns of the Romagna; among others, Rimini and Faenza.

Of all the acquisitions which the Venetians made, the most important was that of Cyprus. That island, one of the most considerable in the Mediterranean, had been conquered from the Greeks, by Richard Cœur de Lion, King of England, who surrendered it to Guy de Lusignan (1192), the last king of Jerusalem, in compensation for the loss of his kingdom. From Guy de Lusignan descended a long line of Cypriot kings; the last of whom, John III., left an only daughter, named Charlotte, who succeeded him in that kingdom, and caused her husband, Louis of Savoy, to be also crowned king. There still remained a bastard son of John III., called James, who was protected by the Sultan of Egypt, to whom the kings of Cyprus were tributaries, and who succeeded in expelling Charlotte and her husband, the prince of Savoy, from the throne (1460). James, who was desirous of putting himself under the protection of the Venetians, married Catherine Cornaro, daughter of Marco Cornaro, or Cornelio, a patrician of Venice. The Senate, in honour of this marriage, adopted Catherine, and declared her daughter of St. Mark, or the Republic. James died in 1473, leaving a posthumous son, who died also in the second year of his age. The republic then, considering the kingdom of Cyprus as their own inheritance, took possession of the natural children of James, and induced Queen Catherine, by various means, to retire to Venice, and there to resign her crown into the hands of the Senate, who assigned her a pension, with the castle of Azolo, in Trevisano, for her residence; and obtained for themselves the investiture of that island from the Sultan of Egypt (1490).

A career so prosperous was eventually followed by a reverse of fortune; and several circumstances concurred to accelerate the decline of this flourishing republic. They received a terrible blow by the discovery of the new passage to India round the Cape, which deprived them of the commerce of the East; thus drying up the principal source of their wealth, as well as of their revenue and their marine. In vain did they put in practice all the arts of their policy to defeat the commercial enterprises of the Portuguese in India; exciting against them, the first the sultans of Egypt, and afterwards the Turkish Emperors, and furnishing these Me-

metan powers with Portuguese surmounting a firm settlement of time, the power. Lisbon, in a port for the portetians could not his field of Eastern fortune which so lot of the republic, had or conquest. The taking encroachments sometimes forgetting they drew down upon ment of the pr

To this jealousy league, which Pope alian, Louis XII., eral of the Italian (1508), for the parti Terra Firma. L ry over the repub as followed by suc ests, that the senat onstermination; and fallibly lost, had lities. But the pope eaded the preponde ddenly abandoned arate treaties of pe us the Emperor M eir example. In e ans, after having be row, lost only, in t tory of Cremona a ties and ports of Ross was far surpasses enced in their fin anufactures, on acc hich they were oblig umerous enemies.

The ruin of this eted by the prodigie Ottoman, who t their best possession Mediterranean. Dra themselves, into the rks, they lost four go; among others ampalia, and Paro eace of Constantine e Turks, Malvasia nly two places whi lorea.

The Turks also to rus, the finest of the mean. The Sultan o conquer that islan ce (1570), although ground for hostilit of the cities of Nicosi eted the conquest o secours which the d granted to the Y in the approach of th et retired within ey were attacked t and of Don Juan Charles V. The C tory (1571). TI

Portuguese surmounted all these obstacles. They obtained a firm settlement in the East, where, in course of time, they became a very formidable power. Lisbon, in place of Venice, became the emporium for the productions of India; and the Venetians could no longer compete with them in this field of Eastern commerce. Besides, the good fortune which so long attended the undertakings of the republic, had inspired them with a passion for conquest. They took every opportunity of making encroachments on their neighbours; and, sometimes forgetting the counsels of prudence, they drew down upon themselves the jealousy and resentment of the principal states of Italy.

To this jealousy must be attributed the famous league, which Pope Julius II., the Emperor Maximilian, Louis XII., Ferdinand of Spain, and several of the Italian states, concluded at Cambray (1508), for the partition of the Venetian territory in *Terra Firma*. Louis XII. gained a signal victory over the republicans near Agnadello, which was followed by such a rapid succession of conquests, that the senate of Venice were struck with consternation; and the republic must have been finally lost, had Louis been supported by his allies. But the pope and the King of Spain, who resented the preponderance of the French in Italy, suddenly abandoned the league, and concluded separate treaties of peace with the republicans; nor was the Emperor Maximilian long in following their example. In consequence of this, the Venetians, after having been menaced with a total overthrow, lost only, in the course of the war, the territory of Cremona and Ghiera d'Ada, with the cities and ports of Romagna and Apulia. But this loss was far surpassed by that which they experienced in their finances, their commerce, and manufactures, on account of the expensive efforts which they were obliged to make in resisting their numerous enemies.

The ruin of this republic was at length completed by the prodigious increase of the power of the Ottomans, who took from them, by degrees, their best possessions in the Archipelago and the Mediterranean. Dragged, as it were, in spite of themselves, into the war of Charles V. against the Turks, they lost fourteen islands in the Archipelago; among others Chios, Patmos, Egina, Nio, Sampalia, and Paros; and were obliged, by the peace of Constantinople (1540), to surrender to the Turks, Malvasia and Napoli di Romagna, the only two places which remained to them in the Aegean.

The Turks also took from them the isle of Cyprus, the finest of their possessions in the Mediterranean. The Sultan, Selim II., being determined to conquer that island, attacked it with a superior force (1570), although the Venetians had given him no ground for hostilities. He made himself master of the cities of Nicosia and Famagusta; and completed the conquest of the whole island, before the news which the King of Spain and the pope, had granted to the Venetians, could join their fleets in the approach of the Christian army, the Turkish fleet retired within the Gulf of Lepanto, where they were attacked by the allies under the command of Don Juan of Austria, a natural son of Charles V. The Christians gained a complete victory (1571). The whole Turkish fleet was

destroyed, and the confederates took immense booty. The news of this defeat struck terror into the city of Constantinople, and made the Grand Signior transfer his court to Adrianople. The Christians, however, reaped no advantage from their victory. A misunderstanding arose among the confederates, and their fleets dispersed without accomplishing anything. The Venetians did not return to the isle of Cyprus; and knowing well that they could not reckon on any effectual aid on the part of their allies, they determined to make peace with the Turks (1573). By this treaty they left the Porte in possession of Cyprus, and consented to pay it a sum of 300,000 ducats, to obtain the restitution of their ancient boundaries in Dalmatia. From this epoch, the republic of Venice dates its entire decay. It was evident, that it must thenceforth resign its pretensions as a leading power, and adopt a system of neutrality which might put it in condition to maintain peace with its neighbours.

England, as we have mentioned above, had been the rival of France, while the latter now became the rival of Austria. This rivalry commenced with the marriage of Maximilian of Austria, to Mary, daughter and heiress of Charles, last Duke of Burgundy, by which the House of Austria succeeded to the whole dominions of that prince. The Low Countries, which at that time were the principal emporium for the manufactures and commerce of Europe, formed a part of that opulent succession. Louis XI., King of France, was unable to prevent the marriage of the Austrian prince with the heiress of Burgundy, but he took advantage of that event to detach from the territories of that princess whatever he found convenient. He seized on the duchy of Burgundy as a vacant fief of his crown, as well as the seigniories of Auxerrois, Maconnais, Bar-sur-Seine, and the towns of the Somme; and these different countries were preserved to France by the treaties of peace concluded at Arras (1482), and Senlis (1493). Such was the origin of the rivalry and bloody wars between France and Austria. The theatre of hostilities, which, under Louis XI., had been in the Low Countries, was transferred to Italy, under Charles VIII., Louis XII., and Francis I. From thence it was changed to Germany, in the reign of Henry II.

In Italy, besides this rivalry between the two powers, there was another motive, or pretext, for war, viz., the claims of France on the kingdom of Naples and the duchy of Milan. The claim of Louis XI. on the kingdom of Naples had devolved to him with the county of Provence, which he inherited in virtue of the will of Charles, Count of Provence, and the last male descendant of the House of Anjou (1481). Charles VIII., the son and successor of Louis XI., urged on by youthful ambition, was determined to enforce this claim. He undertook an expedition into Italy (1494), and took possession of the kingdom of Naples without striking a blow. But being opposed by a formidable confederacy of the Italian princes, with Maximilian at their head, he was obliged to abandon his conquests with the same facility he had made them; and he was fortunate in being able to effect his retreat, by the famous victory which he gained over the allies, near Foronovo, in the duchy of Parma.

The claim to the duchy of Milan was founded

on the contract of marriage between Louis, Duke of Orleans, the grandfather of Louis XII., and Valentine of Milan. That contract provided, that failing heirs-male of John Galeas, Duke of Milan, the duchy should fall to Valentine, and the children of her marriage with the Duke of Orleans. Louis XII. claimed the rights of Valentine, his grandmother, in opposition to the princes of the family of Sforza, who had taken possession of the duchy of Milan, on the extinction of the male heirs of the Visconti, which happened in 1447. The different expeditions which he undertook into Italy, both for the conquest of Milan and the kingdom of Naples, met with no better success than that of his predecessor had done, in consequence of a new league, called the *Holy League*, which Pope Julius II. raised against him, and into which he drew the Emperor Maximilian, the Kings of Aragon and England, with the Venetians and the Swiss. Louis XII. lost all the advantages of his conquests. The kingdom of Naples fell under the power of Ferdinand the Catholic, and the family of Sforza were reinstated in the duchy of Milan.

These Italian wars, which were renewed at different times under the reign of Francis I., cost France much blood and immense sums. In this struggle she was forced to succumb, and Francis I. bound himself, by the treaty of Crepy, to abandon his claims on Italy in favour of Charles V. The kingdom of Naples and the duchy of Milan remained incorporated with the Spanish monarchies. Francis I., nevertheless, had the glory of arresting the progress of his rival, and effectually counterbalancing a power which, at that time, made all Europe to tremble.

Henry II., the son and successor of Francis I., adopted a new line of policy. He attacked the House of Austria, in Germany, having entered into a league with Maurice, Elector of Saxony, and the Protestant princes of the Empire, to oppose Charles V. That league, which was ratified at Chambord (1552), procured for Henry II. possession of the bishoprics of Metz, Toul, and Verdun; and he even succeeded in forcing the Emperor to raise the siege of Metz, which that prince had undertaken about the end of the year 1552. A truce of five years was agreed on between these two sovereigns at Vaucelles; but, in the course of a few months, the war was renewed, and Philip II., who had succeeded his father, Charles V., induced his Queen, Mary of England, to join in it. Among the events of this war, the most remarkable are the victory of St. Quentin, gained by the Spaniards (1557), and the conquest of the city of Calais, by Francis, Duke of Guise, the last possession of the English in France (1558). The death of Queen Mary prepared the way for a peace, which was signed at Chateau-Cambresis (1559), between France, England, and Spain. The Duke of Savoy obtained there the restitution of his estates, of which Francis I. had deprived him in 1536. Calais remained annexed to France.

A series of wars, both civil and religious, broke out under the feeble reigns of the three sons and successors of Henry II. The great influence of the Guises, and the factions which distracted the court and the state, were the true source of hostilities, though religion was made the pretext. Francis II. having espoused Mary Stuart, Queen of Scotland, the whole power and authority of the

government passed into the hands of Francis, Duke of Guise, and the Cardinal de Lorraine, his brother, who were the queen's maternal uncles. The power which these noblemen enjoyed excited the jealousy of Anthony, King of Navarre, and his brother Louis, Prince of Condé, who imagined that the precedence in this respect was due to them as princes of the blood, in preference to the Lorraine family, who might be considered as strangers in France. The former being Calvinist, and having enlisted all the leaders of that party in their cause, it was not difficult for the Lorraine princes to secure the interest of all the most zealous Catholics.

The first spark that kindled these civil wars was the conspiracy of Amboise. The intention of the conspirators was to seize the Guises, to bring them to trial, and throw the management of affairs into the hands of the princes of the blood. The conspiracy having been discovered, the Prince of Condé, who was suspected of being at its head, was arrested; and he would have been executed had not the premature death of Francis II. happened in the meantime. The queen-mother, Catherine de' Medici, who was intrusted with the regency during the minority of Charles IX., was desirous of holding the balance between the two parties, set Condé at liberty, and granted the Calvinists the free exercise of their religion, in the suburbs and parts lying out of the towns. This famous edict (January 1562) occasioned the first civil war, the signal of which was the massacre of Vassy of Champagne.

Of these wars, there have been commonly reckoned eight under the family of Valois, viz. four in the reign of Charles IX., and four in that of Henry III. The fourth, under Charles IX. began with the famous massacre of St. Bartholomew, authorized and directed by the king (1572).

It is of some importance to notice here the *Edict of Pacification* of Henry III., of the month of May, 1576. The new privileges which this edict granted to the Calvinists, encouraged the Guises to concoct a league this same year, ostensibly for the maintenance of the Catholic religion, but whose real object was the dethronement of the reigning dynasty, and the elevation of the Guises. The Duke of Alençon, only brother of Henry III. being dead, and the King of Navarre, who professed the Calvinistic faith, having become presumptive heir to the crown, the chiefs of the Catholic League no longer made a secret of their measures. They concluded a formal alliance (1584) with Philip II. of Spain, for excluding the Bourbonns from the throne of France. Henry III. was obliged, by the Leaguers, to recommence the war against the Calvinists; but perceiving that the Duke of Guise, and the Cardinal his brother, took every occasion to render his government odious, he caused them both to be assassinated at Blois (1588), and threw himself on the protection of the King of Navarre. In conjunction with that Prince he undertook the siege of Paris, during which he was himself assassinated at St. Cloud, by a Jacobin of the name of James Clement (1589).

The dynasty of Valois ended with Henry III. after having occupied the throne for 261 years. Under this dynasty the royal authority had grown considerably, both by the annexation of the great fiefs to the crown-lands, and by the introduction

regular armies, which gave power. Louis XI. bringing the grand feud to an end to the monarchy. If these public order, it national liberty sufficient authority daily received that, so early as the considered as high to of assembling the St these assemblies, but successors of that present under the last who convoked them standing supplies. influence over the clergy included with Leo obtained the no tures; leaving to of the prelates, and nants.

The race of Valois Bourbonns, who were of Clermont, youngest the first king of the twenty-first degree of predecessor. This p more easily reduc publicly abjuring included a peace w lies of the League, unquillized the king nates, which he p rmed religion. By the Protestants perle the public exercise privilege of tilling all red them, at the sar granting them for places of security. ary and intestine fa pretext to their adva thing the edict, and se of the reformed r This great prince, unquillity of his kin encouraged arts and administration of his was assassinated by R ment when he wa and scheme which tion of Europe. named the reins c III., had nothing elusion of the Calvin his he accomplished which he waged again ge of Rochelle, v that great statesman nist the House of ce gave umbrage to opportunity of the va house the cause of e Courts of Vienna the Duke of Guastall gé in the duchy of nee which were con que (1631). Havir made war against t

of Francis, Duke of Lorraine, his brother-in-law, who excited the Navarre, and his who imagined meet was due preference to the considered as being Calvinist, of that party in for the Lorraine the most zealous

se civil wars was intention of the es, to bring them out of affairs into flood. The ce the Prince of being at its head e been executed.

Francis II. his queen-mother, Catherine, trusted with Charles IX., and between the two granted the Calvin religion, in the towns. This occasioned the massacre of St. Bartholomew.

been commonly of Valois, and four in the under Charles IX. of St. Bartholomew the king (1572).

see here the Edict of the month of which this edict enraged the Guise, ar, ostensibly for religion, but what at of the religion the Guises. The of Henry III. Navarre, who became presiding chiefs of their alliance (1584) including the Boe.

Henry III. commenced the war receiving that his brother, Louis, government odious assassinated at Blois protection of the with that Prince during which he was, by a Jacobin (1589).

with Henry III. for 261 years authority had gained the introduction

regular armies, which put an end to the feudal power. Louis XI. was chiefly instrumental in bringing the grandes under subjection, and putting an end to the cruelties and oppressions of anarchy. If these changes, however, contributed to public order, it is nevertheless true that the national liberty suffered by them; and that the royal authority daily received new augmentations; and that, so early as the reign of Louis XII., it was considered as high treason to speak of the necessity of assembling the States-General. The practice of these assemblies, however, was renewed under the successors of that prince; they even became frequent under the last kings of the House of Valois, who convoked them chiefly with the view of demanding supplies. Francis I. augmented his influence over the clergy by the concordat which he concluded with Leo X. (1516), in virtue of which he obtained the nomination to all vacant prebends; leaving to the Pope the confirmation of the prelates, and the liberty of receiving the benefices.

The race of Valois was succeeded by that of the Bourbons, who were descended from Robert, Count of Clermont, younger son of St. Louis. Henry IV., the first king of this dynasty, was related in the twenty-first degree to Henry III., his immediate predecessor. This prince, who was a Calvinist, more easily reduced the party of the League, by publicly abjuring his religion at St. Denis. He concluded a peace with the Spaniards, who were allies of the League, at Vervins; and completely tranquillized the kingdom by the famous edict of Nantes, which he published in favour of the reformed religion. By that edict he guaranteed to the Protestants perfect liberty of conscience, and the public exercise of their worship, with the privilege of tilling all offices of trust; but he rendered them, at the same time, a piece of disservice, by granting them fortified places, under the name of places of security. By thus fostering a spirit of party and intestine faction, he furnished a plausible pretext to their adversaries for gradually undermining the edict, and finally proscribing the exercise of the reformed religion in France.

This great prince, after having established the tranquillity of his kingdom at home and abroad, encouraged arts and manufactures, and put the administration of his finances into admirable order, as assassinated by Ravalliac (1610), at the very moment when he was employed in executing the grand scheme which he had projected for the pacification of Europe. Cardinal Richelieu, when he assumed the reins of government under Louis XIII., had nothing so much at heart as the expulsion of the Calvinists from their strongholds. This he accomplished by means of the three wars which he waged against them, and by the famous siege of Rochelle, which he reduced in 1628. That great statesman next employed his policy against the House of Austria, whose preponderance gave umbrage to all Europe. He took the opportunity of the vacant succession of Mantua to oppose the cause of the Duke of Nevers against the Courts of Vienna and Madrid, who supported the Duke of Guastalla; and maintained his protégé in the duchy of Mantua, by the treaties of peace which were concluded at Ratisbon and Quevenot (1631). Having afterwards joined Sweden, he made war against the two branches of Austria,

and on this occasion got possession of the places which the Swedes had seized in Alsace.

Louis XIV. was only four years and seven months old when he succeeded his father (1643). The queen-mother, Anne of Austria, assumed the regency. She appointed Cardinal Mazarin her prime minister, whose administration, during the minority of the King, was a scene of turbulence and distraction. The same external policy which had directed the ministry of Richelieu was followed by his successor. He prosecuted the war against Austria with vigour, in conjunction with Sweden and their confederates in Germany. By the peace which was concluded with the Emperor at Munster, besides the three bishoprics of Lorraine, France obtained the Landgraviate of Lower and Upper Alsace, Sungaw, and the prefecture of the ten Imperial cities of Alsace. Spain was excluded from this treaty; and the war continued between that kingdom and France until the peace of the Pyrenees, by which the counties of Roussillon and Cerdans were ceded to France, as well as several cities in Flanders, Hainault, and Luxembourg.

Spain, which had long been divided into several states, and a stranger, as it were, to the rest of Europe, became all of a sudden a formidable power, turning the political balance in her own favour. This elevation was the work of Ferdinand the Catholic, a prince born for great exploits; of a profound and fertile genius; but tarnishing his bright qualities by perfidy and unbounded ambition. He was heir to the throne of Arragon, and laid the foundation of his greatness by his marriage with Isabella (1469), sister to Henry VI. last King of Castile. That match united the kingdoms of Castile and Arragon, which were the two principal Christian states in Spain. Henry of Castile had left a daughter, named Jane, but she being considered as illegitimate by the Castilians, the throne was conferred on Isabella and her husband Ferdinand (1474). The Infanta Jane, in order to enforce her claims, betrothed herself to Alphonso V. King of Portugal; but that prince, being defeated by Ferdinand at the battle of Toro (1476), was obliged to renounce Castile and his marriage with the Infanta.

At the accession of Isabella to the throne of Castile, that kingdom was a prey to all the miseries of anarchy. The abuses of the feudal system were there maintained by violence and injustice. Ferdinand demolished the fortresses of the nobles who infested the country; he gave new vigour to the laws; liberated the people from the oppression of the great; and, under pretence of extirpating the Jews and Mahometans, he established the tribunal of the Inquisition (1478), which spread universal terror by its unheard of cruelties. Torquemada, a Dominican, who was appointed grand Inquisitor (1483), burnt in the space of four years near 6000 individuals.

The Moors still retained the kingdom of Grenada. Ferdinand took advantage of their dissensions to attempt the conquest of it, in which he succeeded, after a vigorous war of eighteen years. Abo Abdelli, the last King of Grenada, fled to Africa. An edict, which was published immediately after, ordered the expulsion of all the Jews; about 100,000 of whom fled from Spain, and took shelter, some in Portugal and others in Africa.

Ferdinand did not include the Moors in this proscription, whom he thought to gain over to Christianity by means of persecution; but having revolted in the year 1500, he then allowed them to emigrate. It was this blind and headlong zeal that procured Ferdinand the title of the *Catholic King*, which Pope Alexander III. conferred on him and his successors (1493). This prince also augmented his power by annexing to his crown the Grand Mastership of the Military Orders of Calatrava, Alcántara, and St. James of Compostella.

Everything conspired to aggrandize Ferdinand; and, as if the Old World had not been sufficient, a New one was opened up to him by the discovery of America. He was heir, by the father's side, to the kingdoms of Aragon, Sicily, and Sardinia. He got possession of Castile by his marriage, and of Grenada by force of arms; so that nothing was wanting except Navarre to unite all Spain under his dominion. The Holy League, which Pope Julius II. had organized against Louis XII. (1511), furnished him with a pretext for seizing that kingdom. Entering into an alliance with the Pope, he concerted with the King of England to invade Guicenne, on which the English had some ancient claims. They demanded of the King of Navarre that he should make common cause with the allies of the Holy League against Louis XII. That prince, however, wishing to preserve neutrality, they prescribed conditions so severe, that he had no other alternative left than to seek protection in France. Ferdinand then obtained possession of all that part of Navarre which lay beyond the Pyrenees. Twelve years before that time Ferdinand had, by the treaty of Grenada, planned with Louis XII. the conquest of the kingdom of Naples. Frederic of Arragon was then deprived of that kingdom, and his states were divided between the two allied kings; but Ferdinand having soon quarrelled with Louis XII. as to their respective boundaries, this was made a pretext for expelling the French from Naples, which was again united to the Spanish monarchy, in the years 1503 and 1505.

Charles V. of Austria, grandson of Ferdinand, and his successor in the Spanish monarchy, added to that crown the Low Countries and Franche-Comté, which he inherited in right of his father, Philip of Austria, and his grandmother Mary of Burgundy. He added likewise the kingdoms of Mexico and Peru, on the continent of America, and the duchy of Milan in Italy, in which he invested his son Philip, after having repeatedly expelled the French in the years 1522 and 1525.

These were all the advantages he derived from his wars against Francis I., which occupied the greater part of his reign. Blinded by his animosity against that prince, and by his ruling passion for war, he only exhausted his kingdom and impaired his true greatness. Charles resigned the Spanish monarchy to his son Philip II., which then comprehended the Low Countries, the kingdoms of Naples, Sicily and Sardinia, the duchy of Milan, and the Spanish possessions in America. The peace of Château Cambresis, which Philip II. signed in 1559, after a long war against France, may be regarded as the era of Spanish greatness. To the states which were left him by his father, Philip added the kingdom of Portugal, with the Portuguese possessions in Africa, Asia, and America;

but this was the termination of his prosperity. His reign after that was only a succession of misfortunes. His revolting despotism excited the Belgians to insurrection, and gave birth to the republic of the United Provinces. Elizabeth of England having joined with the confederates of the Low Countries, Philip, out of revenge, equipped a formidable fleet, known by the name of the *Invincible Armada*, which was composed of 130 vessels of enormous size, manned with 20,000 soldiers, exclusive of sailors, and armed with 1300 pieces of cannon. On entering the channel they were defeated by the English (21st of July, 1588), and the greater part of them destroyed by a storm.

From this calamity may be dated the decline of the Spanish monarchy, which was exhausted by its expensive wars. Philip, at his death, left an enormous debt, and the whole glory of the Spanish nation perished with him. The reigns of his feeble successors are only remarkable for their disasters. Philip III. did irreparable injury to his crown by the expulsion of the Moors or Moriscos (1610), which lost Spain nearly a million of her industrious subjects. Nothing can equal the misfortunes which she experienced under the reign of Philip IV. During the war which he had to support against France, the Catalans revolted, and put themselves under the protection of that crown (1640). Encouraged by their example, the Portuguese likewise shook off the yoke, and replaced the House of Braganza on their throne. Lastly, the Neapolitans, harassed by the Duke d'Olivarez, prime minister of Philip IV., revolted, and attempted to form themselves into a republic (1647). These reverses on the part of Spain added to the number of her enemies. The famous Cromwell, having entered into an alliance with France (1653), dispossessed the Spaniards of Jamaica, one of their richest settlements in America.

Towards the end of the fifteenth century, Portugal had reached a high pitch of elevation, which she owed to the astonishing progress of her navigation and her commerce. John II., whose fleets first doubled the Cape of Good Hope, augmented the royal authority, by humbling the exorbitant and tyrannical power of the grandees. In the diet which was assembled at Evora, he retracted the concessions which his predecessors had made to the nobles, to the prejudice of the crown. He abolished the power of life and death, which the lords exercised over their vassals, and subjected their towns and their territories to the jurisdiction of officers appointed by the king. The nobles, who were displeased at these innovations, having combined in defence of their privileges, and chosen the Duke of Braganza for their leader, John, without being disconcerted by this opposition, had the Duke brought to a trial, and his head cut off, while his brother was hanged in effigy. This example of severity intimidated the grandees, and made them submit to his authority. The most brilliant era of Portugal was that of Emanuel and John III., who reigned between the years 1482 and 1557. It was under these two princes that the Portuguese formed their powerful empire in India, of which nothing now remains but the ruins.

The glory of Portugal suffered an eclipse under the feeble reign of Sebastian, grandson and immediate successor of John. That prince, who came to the throne at the age of three years, had been

brought up by the
structing him in the
had given him the
had inspired him
but with a decided
Muley Mubomet,
requested his assistance
had dethroned him,
dition into Africa in
flower of his nobilit
near Alcazar, in the
the Portuguese sust
bastian was slain; a
able, his enemy Mole
the action, while M
in the flight.

(During the reign
fallen into decay; ev
had begun to degene
which had distinguis
mercantile adventur
higher classes; whil
nacy brought on a
governors of their ce
balance and unjustic
rative branches of ec
which Emanuel and
India, was neglecte
whole wealth of the c
solute power by mea
as no where more te

As Sebastian had ne
passed, at his death,
and uncle by the fat
advanced in life.

and that his death w
confusion, he summon
Lisbon (1570), in

the states appointed
ere to investigate the
states for the crow
as one of this num
ard to the decision

and he learned the de
sent the Duke of A
take possession of I
the troops of his op
into, one of the elin
himself king, pretendi

tion of the Infant Do
Anthony had no other
alter in France, ar
added to the yoke of

An inveterate antipa
ween the two nations,
rest their Spanish r
more increased, on

Portuguese sustain
their commerce and pos
lucrative traffic wh
Low Countries, call
supporting the merchan
ol, and hawking the
ing enabled them t
in, Philip II. though

prosperity, by fort
Portugal. That pri
his expectation. The
lucrative branch of

ing made some unsu

brought up by the Jesuits, who, instead of in-
strucing him in the important arts of government,
had given him the education of a monk. They
had inspired him with a dislike for matrimony,
but with a decided attachment for the crusades.
Muley Mahomet, King of Morocco, having re-
quested his assistance against his uncle Moleuc, who
had dethroned him, Sebastian undertook an expedi-
tion into Africa in person, carrying with him the
flower of his nobility. A great battle was fought
near Alcaçar, in the kingdom of Fez (1578), where
the Portuguese sustained a complete defeat. Se-
bastian was slain; and, what is sufficiently remark-
able, his enemy Moleuc died a natural death during
the action, while Muley Mahomet was drowned
in the flight.

[During the reign of this king, every thing had
fallen into decay; even the character of the nation
had begun to degenerate. The spirit of chivalry
which had distinguished them was exchanged for
mercantile adventures, which even infected the
higher classes; while avarice, luxury, and effemi-
nacy brought on a universal corruption. The
governors of their colonies indulged in all sorts of
cruelty and injustice. They seized the more lu-
crative branches of commerce. The military force,
which Emanuel and John III. had kept up in
India, was neglected. The clergy usurped the
whole wealth of the colonies, and exercised an ab-
solute power by means of the Inquisition, which
was no where more terrible than at Goa.]

As Sebastian had never been married, the throne
passed, at his death, to Henry the Cardinal, his
grand uncle by the father's side, who was already
far advanced in life. Perceiving his end approach-
ing, and that his death would involve the kingdom in
confusion, he summoned an assembly of the States
at Lisbon (1579), in order to fix the succession.
The states appointed eleven commissioners, who
were to investigate the claims of the different can-
didates for the crown. Philip II. of Spain, who
was one of this number, did not pay the least re-
gard to the decision of the States. No sooner
did he learn the death of Henry (1580), than
he sent the Duke of Alva, at the head of an army,
to take possession of Portugal. The duke defeated
the troops of his opponent, Anthony, Prior of
Coimbra, one of the claimants, who had proclaimed
himself king, pretending that he was the legitimate
son of the Infant Don Louis, son of Emanuel.
Anthony had no other alternative left than to take
refuge in France, and the whole of Portugal
was added to the yoke of the Spaniards.

An inveterate antipathy, however, subsisted be-
tween the two nations, which made the Portuguese
hate their Spanish masters. This hatred was
all more increased, on account of the losses which
the Portuguese sustained, in the mean time, in
their commerce and possessions in the East Indies,
by the lucrative traffic which the confederates in the
west countries, called the *Dutch*, carried on by
transporting the merchandise of the East from Por-
tugal, and hawking them over the north of Europe,
which enabled them to support the war against
Spain, Philip II. thought to strike a fatal blow at
their prosperity, by forbidding them all commerce
with Portugal. That prince, however, was deceived
in his expectation. The confederates, deprived of
this lucrative branch of their industry, and after
having made some unsuccessful attempts to find a

north-west passage to India, took the resolution of
sailing directly thither (1595), under the conduct
of Cornelius Houtman and Molinaer, in order to
seek, at the fountainhead, those commodities which
were refused them in Portugal. No sooner had
they attempted to form settlements in India than
the Portuguese determined to prevent them, and
fought with them, near Bantam, a town in Java, a
naval battle, which ended in favour of the con-
federates.

Encouraged by this first success, the Dutch un-
dertook to deprive the Portuguese of their principal
possessions in India. The conquest which they
made of the Moluccas procured them the spice
trade. They likewise formed settlements in the
island of Java, where they founded the city of Ba-
tavia, which became the capital and emporium of
their settlements in India. At length Goa and Diu
were the only places that remained to the Por-
tuguese of their numerous possessions in India.
These important losses greatly exasperated the
Portuguese against the Spaniards. What added
still more to their resentment was, that in the
court of Madrid they saw a premeditated design to
make vassals of the Portuguese; and to cut off the
most likely means of enabling them, sooner or
later, to recover their ancient independence. It
was with this view that their army and their
marine were disorganized, their crown revenues
dissipated, their nobility precluded from the ma-
nagement of affairs, and the nation exhausted by
exorbitant assessments.

The revolt of the Catalans, which happened in
1640, at length determined the Portuguese to
shake off the Spanish yoke. A conspiracy was
entered into by some of the grantees, in concert
with the Duke of Braganza, which broke out on
the 1st December that same year. On that day, at
eight o'clock in the morning, the conspirators, to
the number of about 400, repaired by different
routes to the palace of Lisbon, where the vice-
queen, Margaret of Savoy, and dowager of Mantua,
resided, with Vasconcellos the secretary of state,
who exercised the functions of prime minister of
the kingdom. Part of them disarmed the guard
of the palace, while others seized Vasconcellos,
who was the only victim that fell a sacrifice to
the public vengeance. They secured the person
of the vice-queen, and took measures to protect
her from insult or violence. The conspirators then
proclaimed the Duke of Braganza king, under the
title of John IV. That prince arrived at Lisbon
on the 8th December, and his inauguration took
place on the 15th. It is not a little surprising that
this revolution became general in eight days time,
and that it was not confined merely to Portugal,
but extended even to India and Africa. Every-
where the Portuguese expelled the Spaniards, and
proclaimed the Duke of Braganza. The city of
Ceuta in Africa was the only town which the
Spaniards found means to retain possession of.

John IV. was descended in a direct line from
Alphonso, natural son of John the Bastard, who
was created Duke of Braganza. The first care of
this new king of Portugal, on his accession to the
throne, was to convene an assembly of the states
at Lisbon, in order to make them acknowledge his
right to the crown. The states, conformably to
the fundamental laws of the kingdom, declared
that Catherine, daughter of the infant Don Edward,

and grandmother of King John, having become the true and legitimate heiress to the throne on the death of Henry the Cardinal, her grandson John IV. was entitled to the repossession of those rights of which that princess had been unjustly deprived by the Spaniards. The better to establish himself on the throne, John concluded treaties of peace with France, the United Provinces, the Netherlands, and Sweden; but confining his whole ambition to the maintaining the ancient limits of the kingdom, he remained completely inactive with regard to Spain, which being overpowered by numerous enemies, was quite incapable of carrying on the war with vigour against Portugal. The truce and alliance which that prince had entered into with the Dutch, did not prevent these republicans from continuing their conquests in India; where, in process of time, they stript the Portuguese of their finest settlements.

England, long before this time, had emerged from the state of turbulence and desolation into which she had been plunged by the destructive wars of the two Roses. A new family, that of the Tudors, had mounted the throne; Henry VII., who was its founder, claimed the crown in right of his mother Margaret Beaufort, alleged heiress of the house of Lancaster, or the Red Rose; and raised an insurrection against Richard III., the last king of the house of York. This prince being defeated and slain at the battle of Bosworth (1485), Henry, who was then proclaimed King of England, united the titles or claims of the two Roses, by his marriage with Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV., and heiress of York, or the White Rose. The country being thus restored to tranquillity after thirty years of civil war, everything assumed a more prosperous appearance. Agriculture and commerce began to flourish anew. Henry applied himself to the restoration of order and industry. He humbled the fictitious nobles, and raised the royal authority almost to a state of absolute despotism.

The reformation of religion in England began in the reign of his son Henry VIII. That prince, who was of a very capricious character, vacillating continually between virtue and vice, appeared at first as the champion of popery, and published a treatise against Luther, which procured him, from the court of Rome, the title of *Defender of the Faith*. But a violent passion, which he had conceived for Anne Boleyn, having induced him to attempt a divorce from Catherine of Arragon, daughter of Ferdinand the Catholic, he addressed himself for this purpose to Pope Clement VII., alleging certain scruples of conscience which he felt on account of his marriage with Catherine, who was within the degrees of affinity prohibited in the sacred Scriptures. The Pope being afraid to displease the Emperor Charles V., who was the nephew of Catherine, thought proper to defer judgment in this matter; but the King, impatient of delay, caused his divorce to be pronounced by Thomas Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury (1532), and immediately married Anne Boleyn. The sentence of the Archbishop was annulled by the Pope, who published a threatening bull against Henry. This incensed the King, who caused the Papal authority in England to be abrogated by the parliament, and installed himself in the capacity of supreme head of the English church (1534); a title

which was conferred on him by the clergy, and confirmed by the parliament. He also introduced the oath of supremacy, in virtue of which all who were employed in offices of trust, were obliged to acknowledge him as head of the church. A court of high commission was established, to judge ecclesiastical causes in name of the king, and from whose sentence there was no appeal. The convents or monasteries were suppressed, and their revenues confiscated to the crown (1536-1539). Henry even became a dogmatist in theology; and discarding the principles of Luther, as well as those of Calvin and Rome, he framed a religion according to his own fancy. Rejecting the worship of images, relics, purgatory, monastic vows, and the supremacy of the Pope, he gave his sanction, by the law of the Six Articles, to the doctrine of the real presence, the communion in one kind, the vow of chastity, the celibacy of the priests, the mass, and nuncial confession; inflicting very severe penalties on all who should deny or disobey one or other of these articles.

This monarch, who was the first of the English kings that took the title of King of Ireland (1542), was involved in the disputes which then embroiled the continental powers; but instead of holding the balance between France and Austria, he adhered in general to his friend and ally Charles V. against France. This conduct was regulated less by politics than by passion, and the personal interests of his minister Cardinal Wolsey, whom the emperor had attached to his cause, by the hope of the papal tiara.

The religion which Henry had planted in England did not continue after his death. Edward VI., his son and immediate successor, introduced pure Calvinism or Presbyterianism. Mary, daughter of Henry VIII., by Catherine of Arragon, on her accession to the throne, restored the Catholic religion (1553), and likewise received the new legate of the Pope into England. She inflicted great cruelties on the Protestants, many of whom were burnt at the stake; among others, Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Bishops of London and Worcester. With the view of more firmly establishing the Catholic religion in her dominions, she espoused Philip, presumptive heir to the Spanish monarchy (1554). The restrictions which the English parliament fettered his country of marriage with the Queen, so displeased the prince, that, finding himself without power of authority, he speedily withdrew from England. Mary's reign lasted only five years: she was succeeded by her sister Elizabeth (1558), daughter of Henry VIII. by Anne Boleyn. This princess once more abrogated the authority of the Pope, and claimed to herself the supreme administration both spiritual and temporal, within her kingdom. Though she adopted the Calvinistic principles in everything regarding the doctrines of the church, she retained many of the Romish ceremonies and the government of bishops. It was this that gave rise to the distinction between the *English High Church*, and the *Calvinistic or Presbyterian*.

About the time when the High Church party rose in England, a change of religion took place in Scotland, protected by Queen Elizabeth. The regency of that kingdom was then vested in the Queen-dowager, Mary of Lorraine, the widow

James V., and mother of Scotland and France, guided solely by the interests of Lorraine, had intruded to repress the following had formed a new *Congregation*. The malecontents, who were under a foreign yoke for assistance that was by no means readily foresaw, the master of Scotland, Mary's claims to the throne, partly on the assumption. A considerable number then marched to Scotland in conjunction with the Scottish king, who besieged the French in Edinburgh. The French capitulated. By the treaty the French and English were to be united in Scotland; Francis wife Mary Stuart, was to be the wife of the king, and the arms of the sovereignty were to be assumed; while a parliament was to be held at Edinburgh for the purpose of settling the Confession of Faith. The Presbyterian worship was introduced, and the parliament even withdrew the exercise of the Catholic religion. After her return to Scotland, her husband Francis II. died, and all these changes; a parliament was allowed the liberty to be attached to her court, and afterwards accused of the assassination of Henry D. and being obliged to seek shelter in England (and imprisoned by the English). After a captivity of several years, he died, and in 1587, as an accomplice in the murder, he had been formed a heretic.

The troubles which followed, and excited in Scotland, a kind of corrupt and irregularly in that island, were able to extirpate those who were vassals of the laws of England, and the whole country; and was in the hands of the king, although they acknowledged English kings, preserved the manners of their forefathers, and continued to seize every thing of the English yoke, which continued series of years. The Irish themselves, who in their part had no other possessions at that time, the kings of England, and the pope, for several centuries, in perpetuity, and sometimes a

James V., and mother of Mary Stuart, Queen of Scotland and France. That princess, who was guided solely by the councils of her brothers of Lorraine, had introduced a body of French troops to repress the followers of the new doctrines, who had formed a new league, under the name of the *Congregation*. These, reinforced by the Catholic malecontents, who were apprehensive of falling under a foreign yoke, took the resolution of applying for assistance to the English queen, which it was by no means difficult to obtain. Elizabeth readily foresaw, that so soon as Francis became master of Scotland, he would attempt to enforce Mary's claims to the throne of England, grounded partly on the assumption of her being illegitimate. A considerable number of English troops were then marched to Scotland, and having formed a junction with the Scottish malecontents, they besieged the French in the town of Leith, near Edinburgh. The latter were soon obliged to capitulate. By the articles signed at Leith (1560), the French and English troops were to evacuate Scotland; Francis II., King of France, and his wife Mary Stuart, were to renounce the titles and arms of the sovereigns of England, which they had assumed; while a parliament was to be assembled at Edinburgh for the pacification of the kingdom.

The parliament which met soon after, ratified the Confession of Faith, drawn up and presented by the Presbyterian ministers. The Presbyterian worship was introduced into Scotland; and the parliament even went so far as to prohibit the exercise of the Catholic religion. Mary Stuart, on her return to Scotland (1561), after the death of her husband Francis, was obliged to acquiesce in all these changes; and it was with difficulty she was allowed the liberty of having a Catholic chapel attached to her court. This unfortunate princess was afterwards accused of having caused the assassination of Henry Darnley, her second husband; and being obliged to fly the country, she took shelter in England (1568), where she was arrested and imprisoned by order of Queen Elizabeth. After a captivity of nineteen years she was sentenced to death, and beheaded (18th February, 1587), as an accomplice in the different plots which had been formed against the life of her royal relative.

The troubles which the reformation of religion had excited in Scotland, extended also to Ireland. A kind of corrupt feudal system had prevailed originally in that island, which Henry II. had not been able to extirpate. The English proprietors, who were vassals of the crown, and governed by the laws of England, possessed nearly one-third of the whole country; while the rest of the island was in the hands of the Irish proprietors, who, although they acknowledged the sovereignty of the English kings, preserved nevertheless the language and manners of their native land; and were inclined to seize every opportunity of shaking off the English yoke, which they detested. Hence, a continued series of wars and feuds, both among the Irish themselves, and against the English, who on their part had no other object than to extend their possessions at the expense of the natives. The kings of England, guided by an injudicious policy, for several centuries exhausted their resources in perpetual wars, sometimes against France, sometimes against Scotland, and some-

times against their own subjects, without paying the least attention to Ireland, of which they appear to have known neither the importance nor the effectual advantages which they might have reaped from it by means of a wise administration. The progress of agriculture and industry became thus completely impracticable; a deep-rooted hatred was established between the islanders and the English, who in fact seemed two distinct nations, enemies of each other, and forming no alliances either by marriage or reciprocal intercourse.

The resentment of the Irish against the English government was aggravated still more, at the time of the Reformation, by the vigorous measures that were taken, subsequently to the reign of Henry VIII., to extend to Ireland the laws framed in England against the court of Rome and the Catholic clergy. A general insurrection broke out in the reign of Elizabeth (1598), the chief instigator of which was Hugh O'Neal, head of a clan in the province of Ulster, and Earl of Tyrone. Having gained over the whole Irish Catholics to his cause, he planned an extensive conspiracy, with the design of effecting the entire expulsion of the English from the island. Philip II., King of Spain, supplied the insurgents with troops and ammunition; and Pope Clement VIII. held out ample indulgences in favour of those who should enlist under the banners of O'Neal, to combat the English heretics. This insurgent chief met at first with considerable success; he defeated the English in a pitched battle, and maintained his ground against the Earl of Essex, whom Elizabeth had despatched to the island with a formidable army. The rebels, however, ultimately failed in their enterprise, after a sanguinary war which lasted seven years. Charles, Lord Mountjoy, governor of Ireland, drove the insurgents to their last recesses, and had the glory of achieving the entire reduction of the island.⁹

The maritime greatness of England began in the reign of Elizabeth. That princess gave new vigour to industry and commerce; and her efforts were seconded by the persecuting zeal of the French and Spanish governments. The numerous refugees from France and the Netherlands found a ready asylum in England, under the protection of Elizabeth; and her kingdom became, as it were, the retreat and principal residence of their arts and manufactures. She encouraged and protected navigation, which the English, by degrees, extended to all parts of the globe. An Englishman, named Richard Chancellor, having discovered the route to Archangel in the icy Sea (1555), the Czar, John Basilovitz II., granted to an English company the exclusive privilege of trading with Russia (1569). The commerce of the English with Turkey and the Levant, which began in 1579, was likewise monopolized by a company of merchants. Sir Francis Drake, a distinguished navigator, and the rival of Magellan, was the first Englishman that performed a voyage round the world, between 1577 and 1580. The intercourse between England and the East Indies began in 1591; and the East India Company was instituted in 1600. Attempts were also made, about the same time, to form settlements in North America; and Sir Walter Raleigh, who had obtained a charter from the Queen (1584), endeavoured to found a colony in that part of the

American continent, now called Virginia, in compliment to Elizabeth. That colony, however, did not, properly speaking, take root or flourish till the reign of James I. The competition with Spain, and the destruction of the Invincible Armada of Philip II., by the combined fleets of England and Holland, gave a new energy to the English marine, the value of which they had learned to appreciate, not merely in guarding the independence of the kingdom, but in securing the prosperity of their commerce and navigation.

The House of Tudor ended with Queen Elizabeth (1603), after having occupied the throne of England about 118 years. It was replaced by that of Stuart. James VI., King of Scotland, son of Mary Stuart and Henry Darnley, succeeded to the throne of England, and took the title of King of Great Britain, which his successors still retain. This prince derived his right to the crown from the marriage of his great grandmother, Margaret Tudor, daughter of Henry VII., with James IV. of Scotland. Vain of his new elevation, and fond of prerogative, James constantly occupied himself with projects for augmenting his royal power and authority in England; and by instilling these principles into his son, he became the true architect of all the subsequent misfortunes of his house.

Charles I., the son and successor of James (1625), seldom convened the Parliament; and when they did assemble, he provoked them by the measures he proposed, and was then obliged to dissolve them. Being entirely guided by his ministers, Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, the Earls of Strafford and Hamilton, and his queen, Henrietta of France, he ventured to levy taxes and impositions without the advice of Parliament. This conduct on the part of the king produced a general discontent. The flames of civil war began to kindle in Scotland, where Charles had introduced Episcopacy, as more favourable than Presbyterianism to royalty. But the Scottish nobility having formed a confederacy, known by the name of the *Covenant*, for the maintenance of their ecclesiastical liberties, abolished Episcopacy (1638), and subsequently took up arms against the king. The Parliament of England, under such circumstances, rose also against Charles (1641), and passed an act that they should not be dissolved without previously obtaining redress for the complaints of the nation. This act, which deprived the king of his principal prerogative, proved fatal to the royal dignity. A trial was instituted by the Parliament against the king's ministers. The Earl of Strafford and Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, were beheaded (1640—1642); and Charles had the weakness to sign the death-warrant of his faithful servants.

The Presbyterians soon became the prevailing party, and excluded the bishops from the Upper House. The management of affairs fell then into the hands of the House of Commons; Episcopacy were abolished; and the Parliament of England acceded to the Scottish Covenant. War now broke out between the king and the Parliament; a battle was fought near York, in which the latter was victorious (1644). Charles, seeing his affairs ruined, took the determination to throw himself into the arms of the Scots (1646), who, he supposed, might still retain an affection for the race of their ancient kings. He soon found reason,

however, to repent of this step; the Scots did not hesitate to sell him to the English Parliament for a sum of £400,000 sterling, which they found necessary for the payment of their troops.

A new revolution, which soon after happened in the Parliament, completed the ruin of the king. The Presbyterians, or Puritans, who had suppressed the Episcopallians, were crushed, in their turn, by the Independents. These latter were a sort of fanatics, who admitted no subordination whatever in the church, entertained a perfect horror for royalty, and were inclined for a republican or democratic form of government. The head and soul of this faction was the famous Oliver Cromwell, who, with great dexterity, made it an engine for raising himself to the sovereign authority. The whole power of the Legislature fell entirely into the hands of the Independent party; who, by one act, expelled sixty members from the House of Commons. The Parliament, now completely under their dominion, appointed a commission of 150 persons, whom they vested with power to try the king. In vain did the Upper House oppose this resolution; in vain did the king object to the judges named by the House; the commission proceeded, and pronounced the famous sentence, by virtue of which Charles was beheaded on the 30th of January, 1649. His family were dispersed, and saved themselves by flight.

The revolutions in the North of Europe, about the period of which we now speak, were not less important than those which agitated the West and the South. These arose chiefly from the dissolution of the Union of Calmar, and the reformation in religion; both of which happened about the beginning of the sixteenth century. The Union of Calmar, between the three kingdoms of the North, had been renewed several times; but, being badly cemented from the first, it was at length irreparably broken by Sweden. This latter kingdom had been distracted by intestine feuds, occasioned by the ambition and jealousy of the nobles, which continued during the whole reign of Charles VIII., of the House of Bonde. After the death of that prince (1470), the Swedes, without renouncing the Union, had regularly appointed as administrators of the kingdom, from the year 1470 till 1520, three individuals of the family of Sture, viz. Steno Sture, called the *Old*, Suante Sture and Steno Sture, called the *Young*.

Meantime John, King of Denmark, and son of Christian I., had governed the three kingdoms since 1497, when Steno Sture the elder had resigned, until 1501, when he resumed the administration. At length, however, Christian II., son of John, made war on Steno Sture, surnamed the *Young*, with a view to enforce the claims which he derived from the act of union. Being victorious at the battle of Bogesund, where Sture lost his life, he succeeded in making himself acknowledged by the Swedes as king, and was crowned at Stockholm (1520). Within a short time after this ceremony, he violated the amnesty which he had publicly announced; and to gratify the revenge of Gustavus Trolle, Archbishop of Upsal, whom the Swedes had deposed, he caused ninety-four of the most distinguished personages in the kingdom to be arrested, and publicly beheaded at Stockholm.

This massacre caused a revolution, by which

Sweden recovered independence. Gustavus Vasa, the Dalecarlian, and of his country (1523) and two years after, the Danes, who, indignant of Christian II., deposed him, and crowned on Frederic, a prince to that prince wandered about the prisoner by the Danes, the rest of his days having renewed, frictions to the Swedes, the three crowns on broke out on this subject and it was not till that the Danes acknowledged of Sweden.

Denmark then had so long maintenance of the king's change. A corrupt of the national liberties of the nobles overruled the election to themselves general, which they they encroached even was curtailed more prerogatives of the conditions which the on their accession to of religion took place Frederic I., the successor employed an election, and several promulgated the Protocol. In a diet held made a public profession of the remonstrance, in virtue of which was established, and priests and monks to renewed in another diet (1530); where the king presented to him similar to what had at the Diet of Augsburg.

At length Christian III., brought these changes, during the king, desirous of power, colluded with all the bishops in having then assembled Copenhagen, he abolished the public exercise of the castles, fortresses, and benefices and revenues to the support of public schools, and the laws were left at liberty, or remain the bishops were replaced by whom the while each congregation

Sweden recovered its ancient state of independence. Gustavus Vasa put himself at the head of the Dalecarlians, ambitious to become the liberator of his country (1521). He was declared Regent, and two years after, King of Sweden (1523). The example of the Swedes was soon followed by the Danes, who, indignant at the excesses and cruelties of Christian II., deposed him, and conferred their crown on Frederic, Duke of Holstein, and paternal uncle to that prince. Christian, after having long wandered about the Low Countries, was made prisoner by the Danes, and remained in captivity the rest of his days. The Kings of Denmark having renewed, from time to time, their pretensions to the Swedish throne, and still continued the three crowns on their escutcheon, several wars broke out on this subject between the two nations; and it was not till the peace of Stettin (1570), that the Danes acknowledged the entire independence of Sweden.

Denmark then lost the ascendancy which she had so long maintained in the North. The government of the kingdom underwent a radical change. A corrupt aristocracy rose on the ruins of the national liberty. The senate, composed wholly of the nobles, usurped all authority; they overruled the election of the kings, and appropriated to themselves the powers of the States-general, which they had not convoked since 1536; they encroached even on the royal authority, which was curtailed more and more every day; while the prerogatives of the nobility were extended by the conditions which the senate prescribed to the kings on their accession to the crown. The reformation of religion took place in Denmark, in the reign of Frederic I., the successor of Christian II. That prince employed an eloquent preacher, named Johnansen, and several other disciples of Luther, to promulgate the Protestant doctrines in his kingdom. In a diet held at Odensee (1527), the king made a public profession of the new faith; and, in spite of the remonstrances of the bishops, he passed a decree, in virtue of which liberty of conscience was established, and permission granted to the priests and monks to marry. These articles were renewed in another diet, assembled at Copenhagen (1530); where the king ratified the Confession of Faith presented to him by the Protestant ministers, similar to what had taken place the same year at the Diet of Angsburg.

At length Christian III., who was elected in 1534, brought these changes in religion to a close. The bishops, during the last interregnum, had done everything to stop the progress of the Reformation. The king, desirous of annihilating their temporal power, concluded with the principal nobility to have all the bishops in the kingdom arrested; and having then assembled a meeting of the States at Copenhagen, he abolished Episcopacy, and suppressed the public exercise of the Catholic religion. The castles, fortresses, and vast domains of the nobles were annexed to the crown; and the other emoluments and revenues of the clergy were appropriated to the support of the ministers of religion, public schools, and the poor. The monks and nuns were left at liberty, either to quit their convents, or remain there during their lives. The bishops were replaced by superintendents, the nomination of whom was vested in the king; while each congregation retained the privilege of

choosing its own pastors. From Denmark this revolution passed to Norway, which at that time, on account of having joined the party of Christian II., who was deposed by the Danes, lost its independence, and was declared a province of the kingdom of Denmark.

The House of Oldenburg, which had occupied the throne of Denmark since 1448, was separated in the reign of Christian III. into two powerful branches, viz. the royal, descended from that prince; and the family of Holstein-Gottorp, descended from his brother, the Duke Adolphus. This latter branch was afterwards divided into three others, viz. those of Russia, Sweden, and Holstein-Oldenburg. As the law of primogeniture was not established in the duchies of Sleswick and Holstein, which had fallen into the succession of the House of Oldenburg, the Kings of Denmark soon found themselves under the necessity of dividing these duchies among the younger princes of their family. The treaty of partition, which was entered into (1544) between Christian III. and his brother, had been preceded by a treaty of perpetual union, annexing these duchies to the kingdom, and intended to preserve the throne, which was elective, in the House of Oldenburg; as well as to prevent any portion of these two duchies from falling into the possession of strangers. The union was to endure as long as the descendants of Frederic I. reigned in Denmark. They promised to settle, by arbitration, whatever differences might arise between the states of the union; to afford each other mutual succour against every external enemy; and to undertake no war but by common consent.

The treaty of 1544, which regulated this partition, made several exceptions of matters that were to be managed and administered in common; such as the customs, jurisdiction over the nobles, the bishops, and certain cities. This gave rise to a sort of copartnership of power, common to all the princes of the union. Everything regarding either the general safety as stipulated in the treaty, or the exercise of these privileges included in the exceptions, was to be discussed and settled by unanimous consent; and for this purpose a council of regency, an exchequer, and common courts were established. This union and community of rights were followed, as a natural consequence, by long and destructive feuds between the Kings of Denmark and the Dukes of Holstein-Gottorp, in which the other powers of the North were also implicated.

Christian IV., grandson of Christian III., was distinguished not more by the superiority of his talents, than by the indefatigable zeal with which he applied himself to every department of the administration (1588). It was in his reign that the Danes extended their commerce as far as India. He founded the first Danish East India Company (1616), who formed a settlement in Tranquebar, on the Coromandel coast, which had been ceded to them by the Rajah of Tanjore. Various manufactures of silk stuffs, paper, and arms, were constructed, and several towns built under the auspices of Christian IV. The sciences were also much indebted to him; he gave a new lustre to the University of Copenhagen, and founded the Academy of Soroe in Zealand, besides a number of colleges. If he was unsuccessful in his wars

den, who gained by the peace of Bromsbro (1645) the freedom of the Sound, as also the possession of the provinces and islands of Jamptland, Hergelalen, Gothland, Oesel, and Halland. Lastly, the peace of Westphalia secured to Sweden considerable possessions on the southern coast of the Baltic Sea, such as Wismar, Breiten and Verden, and part of Pomerania.

The power of the Teutonic knights, which had been greatly reduced during the preceding period, by the defection of a part of Prussia, was completely annihilated in the North, in consequence of the changes introduced by the reformation of religion. Albert of Brandenburg, grandson of the Elector Albert Achilles, on his elevation to the dignity of Grand Master of the Order, made an attempt to withdraw from Poland that fealty and homage to which the knights had bound themselves by the treaty of Thorn in 1466. This contest furnished matter for a war between them; which began in 1519, and ended in 1521, by a truce of four years; at the expiration of which the grand master, who saw the doctrines of Luther disseminated in Prussia, and who had himself imbibed these principles in Germany, found means to settle all differences with the King of Poland, by a treaty which he concluded with him at Cracow (1525). He there engaged to do homage and fealty to the crown of Poland as usual; and Sigismund I., who was his maternal uncle, granted him Teutonic Prussia, with the title of Duchy, as a hereditary fief, both for himself and his male heirs, and for his brothers of the House of Brandenburg and Franconia, and their feudal heirs; reserving the right of reversion in favour of Poland, failing the male descendants of these princes.

The Teutonic knights thus lost Prussia, after having possessed it for nearly three hundred years. Retiring to their possessions in Germany, they established their principal residence at Mergentheim in Franconia, where they proceeded to the election of a new grand master, in the person of Walter de Cronberg. The Poles, in getting quit of the Teutonic knights, whom they had regarded with jealousy, and substituting the House of Brandenburg in their place, never dreamed of adopting an enemy still more dangerous, who would one day concert the ruin and annihilation of their country.

Immediately after the treaty of Cracow, the new Duke of Prussia made a public profession of the Lutheran religion, and married a daughter of the King of Denmark. This princess dying without male issue, he married for his second wife a princess of the Brunswick family, by whom he had a son, Albert Frederic, who succeeded him in the duchy of Prussia. The race of these new dukes of Prussia (1568), as well as that of Franconia, which should have succeeded them, appearing to be nearly extinct, Joachim II., Elector of Brandenburg, obtained from the King of Poland the investiture of Prussia, in fief, conjunctly with the reigning dukes. This investiture, which was renewed in favour of several of his successors, secured the succession of that duchy in the electoral family of Brandenburg; to whom it devolved on the death of Albert Frederic (1618), who left no male descendants. He was succeeded by the Elector John Sigismund, who had been coinvested with him in the duchy. That prince, who had

married Anne, eldest daughter of Albert Frederic, obtained likewise, in right of that princess, part of the succession of Juliers, viz., the duchy of Cleves, the counties of Murek and Ravensberg, which had been adjudged to the house of Brandenburg, by the provisional act of partition concluded at Santen (1614), and converted into a definitive treaty at Cleves. The grandson of John Sigismund, the Elector Frederic Willam, was a prince of superior genius, and the true founder of the greatness of his family. Illustrious in war as in peace, and respected by all Europe, he acquired by the treaty of Westphalia, a part of Pomerania, the archbishopric of Magdeburg under the title of a duchy, with the bishoprics of Halberstadt, Minden, and Cammin, under the title of principalities. His son Frederic was the first King of Prussia.

[The Teutonic knights had nearly lost Livonia at the beginning of the sixteenth century; but that province was saved by the courage and talents of the Provincial Master, Walter de Plattenberg. The Grand Duke Ivan, or John III., having threatened Livonia with an invasion, Plattenberg concluded a defensive alliance at Walk (1501), with Alexander II., Grand Duke of Lithuania, and the bishops of that country. After having assembled troops to the number of 14,000 men, he defeated the Russian army, which was 40,000 strong, at Maholm; a second victory, which he gained with the same number of troops over 100,000 Russians at Pleskow (1502), is one of the most famous exploits in the history of the North. Next year he concluded a truce of six years with the Livonian order, which was afterwards renewed for fifty years.

It is commonly said that Walter, the provincial master, taking advantage of the distresses of the Teutonic knights, and urging the repeated succours which he had furnished them against the Poles, purchased from them his own independence, and that of his Order; but a recent author (Le Comte de Bray) has shown that this was not exactly the case. By a first agreement signed at Koningsberg (1520), Albert of Brandenburg, who was then only Grand Master of the Teutonic Order, confirmed to the knights of Livonia the free right of electing a chief of their own number, promising to sustain the individual whom they should nominate. He secured them the possession of the whole sovereignty of Revel and Narva; the countries of Altenkirchen, Jerwon, and Wierland; as also the town and castle of Wesenberg, with their dependencies. This agreement was revived and ratified by a second, signed at Grobin (1525), when it was formally stipulated, that the relations between the knights of Livonia and the Teutonic order should be maintained as they were, and that the Livonians should continue to regard the Grand Master as their true head, and render him homage and obedience. They were forbidden to solicit from the Emperor or the Pope any privilege derogatory of their allegiance. It appears, consequently, that Walter de Plattenberg did not purchase the independence of his Order, but that he regarded those ties which existed between it and the Teutonic order as broken, when Albert of Brandenburg was declared Duke of Prussia. He next renewed those connections with the German Empire which had existed since the thirteenth century; and was declared by Charles V. (1527) a prince

of the Empire, having a vote and a seat in the diet.

It was during the mastership of Plattenberg that the Lutheran doctrines penetrated into Livonia, where they made rapid progress, especially in the cities. Walter dexterously turned the disturbances caused by the opposition of the clergy to the new tenets, into an occasion for establishing his authority over all Livonia and Esthonia, which the Order had formerly shared with the bishops. The citizens of Riga acknowledged him as their only sovereign, and expelled the archbishop. The burghesses of Revel followed their example. The clergy were so frightened at these movements, that the archbishop of Riga, and the bishops of Dorpat, Oesel, Courland, and Revel, formally submitted to the Order. The clergy themselves soon after embraced the reformed religion.]

The dominion of the Knights Sword-bearers had continued in Livonia until the time of the famous invasion of that country by the Czar, John Basilovitz IV. That prince, who had laid open the Caspian Sea by his conquest of the Tartar kingdoms of Casan and Astrachan, meditated also that of Livonia, to obtain a communication with Europe by the Baltic. Gotthard Kettler, who was then Grand Master, finding himself unable to cope with an enemy so powerful, implored first the assistance of the Germanic body, of whom he was a member; but having got nothing but vague promises, he next addressed himself to Sigismund Augustus, King of Poland, and, in concert with the Archbishop of Riga, he concluded with that prince a treaty of submission at Wilna (1561); in virtue of which, the whole of Livonia, with Esthonia, Courland, and Semigallia, comprising not only what was still in the possession of the Order, but those parts which had been seized by the enemy, were ceded to the crown of Poland and the Grand Duke of Lithuania, on condition that the use of the Confession of Augsburg should be preserved on the same footing as it then was, and that all orders of the state should be maintained in their goods, properties, rights, privileges, and immunities.

By this same treaty, Courland and Semigallia were reserved to Gotthard Kettler, the last Grand Master of Livonia, to be enjoyed by himself and his heirs male, with the title of duchy, and as a fief of the king and crown of Poland. The new duke, on taking the oath of fidelity to the King of Poland, solemnly laid aside all the badges of his former dignity. He married Anne, daughter to the Duke of Mecklenburg-Schwerin, and transmitted the duchy of Courland to his male descendants, who did not become extinct until the eighteenth century. The Order of Livonia was entirely suppressed, as were also the archbishoprics of Riga, and the bishoprics under its jurisdiction.

The revolution in Livonia caused a violent commotion among the powers of the North, who were all eager to share in the plunder. While the Grand Master of the Order was in treaty with Poland, the city of Revel, and the nobles of Esthonia, left without aid, and oppressed by the Russians, put themselves under the protection of Eric XIV., King of Sweden, who obtained possession of that province. The Isle of Oesel, on the contrary, and the district of Wyck in Esthonia, were sold to Frederic II., King of Denmark, by the last

bishop of the island, who also ceded to him the bishopric and district of Pilten in Courland. Poland at first held the balance, and maintained Livonia against the Russians, by the peace which she concluded with that power at Kieworova-Horea (1582). A struggle afterwards ensued between Poland and Sweden for the same object, which was not finally terminated until the peace of Oliva (1660).

Russia, during the period of which we now treat, assumed an aspect entirely new. She succeeded in throwing off the yoke of the Moguls, and began to act a conspicuous part on the theatre of Europe. The Horde of Kipzæc, called also the *Grand*, or the *Golden Horde*, had been greatly exhausted by its territorial losses, and the intestine wars which followed; while the Grand Dukes of Moscow gained powerful accessions by the reunion of several of these petty principalities, which had for a long time divided among them the sovereignty of Northern Russia. John Basilovitz III., who filled the grand ducal throne about the end of the fifteenth century, knew well how to profit by these circumstances to strengthen his authority at home, and make it he respected abroad. In course of several expeditions, he subdued the powerful republic of Novogorod, an ancient ally of the Muscovitic towns, and which had for a long time effected an entire independence. He was also the first sovereign of Russia that dared to refuse a humiliating ceremony, according to which the grand dukes were obliged to walk on foot before the envoys that came from the Khan of Kipzæc. He even suppressed the residence of Tartar envoys at his court; and at length shook off that yoke entirely, refusing to pay the tribute which the grand dukes had owed to the khans for several centuries. Achmet, Khan of Kipzæc, having despatched certain deputies with an order, under the great seal, to demand payment of this tribute, the grand duke trampled the order under his feet, spit upon it, and then put all the deputies to death except one, whom he sent back to his master.

The khan, with the view of revenging that insult, invaded Russia several times, but the grand duke vigorously repulsed all his attacks; and while he was arresting the progress of his arms on the borders of the Ugra, he despatched a body of troops to the centre of the Grand Horde, who laid every thing desolate (1481). The Nogai Tartars joined the Russians to finish the destruction of the Grand Horde, whose different settlements on the Wolga they laid completely in ruins; so that nothing more remained of the powerful empire of Kipzæc than a few detached hordes, such as those of Casan, Astracan, Siberia, and the Crimea. Iwan rendered himself formidable to the Tartars; he subdued the Khans of Casan, and several times disposed of their throne. The entire reduction of that Tartar state was accomplished by his grandson, John Basilovitz IV., who twice undertook the siege of Casan, and seized and made prisoner of the last khan (1552). The fall of Casan was followed by that of Astracan. But John was by no means so fortunate in his enterprises against Livonia, which, as we have already said, he was obliged to abandon to Poland by the peace of Kieworova-Horea.

John IV. was inspired with noble views of policy. Being anxious to civilize his subjects, he

sent for workmen who requested Charles V. well-versed in the difficulties. He introduced the art of establishing the first printing-press, and the nobles in election. One of the events of certain chief of the Dynasty who employed him-

of the Wolga and the by a detachment of families of Siberia. at the head of 7000 several victories over their Khan Kutschin of Sibir, in 1581). Jermak, in of the czar, made a mered; which was and the troops of the Siberia (1583).

country, however, did of the Czar Theodore and successor of John (1587), which has since Fedor Iwanovitz, and body, was entirely mother-in-law Boris now of opening a way used the young Den-

he assassinated (15 a long series of the death of Fedor (1598) children, the reigning signs of Russia, the distinct; after having an eight hundred ye-

After this, the Russians of different houses rked by various pro- me of Demetrius, oles. During fifteen

locking spectacle of length, as a remedy for bestowing the crown on Charles Philip,olphus of Sweden; us, the son of Sigis-

these resolutions ter borders of the state. ge of them to seize I rod; while the Pol-

sko and its depende The Russians, now ge of a precipice, a ge czar of their own Michael Fedrovitz, a new dynasty, that

from Russia attained ss. That prince, gu father Fedor Romanov rectified all the rchased peace of th them Ingria and R es which he made considerable. By the of the peace of Wi from the vast territories of Novogorod, with t

...ded to him the
Courland. Pe
maintained Li
no peace whi
at Kievoro
ards ensued be
the same obje
until the peas
...which we now
new. She suc
the Moguls, an
in the theatre
enclosed also
had been great
and the intes
Grand Dukes
s by the remon
ities, which had
the sovereignty
ovitz III., wh
t the end of th
o profit by the
hority at home.
In course of
the powerful re
ly of the Habs
a long time of
He was also the
red to refuse a
to which the
ck on foot before
han of Kizava
e of Tartar ex
shook off their
e tribute which
chans for seven
Kipzav, having
an order, under
of this tribute
r under his feet
epaties to death
his master.
enging that its
but the grand
acks; and while
his arms on the
a body of troops
who laid every
i Tartars joined
on of the Great
s on the Wolga
to that nothing
pire of Kipzav
those of Casan
sa. Iwan re
artars; he sub
veral times dis
reduction of
ed by his grand
vice undertook
made prisoner
t of Casan was
t John was by
terprises again
dy said, he was
y the peace of
noble views of
his subjects, he

...ent for workmen and artists from England. He requested Charles V. to send him men of talents, well versed in the different trades and manufactures. He introduced the art of printing at Moscow, and established the first permanent army in the country, that of the *Strelitzes*, which he employed in keeping the nobles in check. The discovery of Siberia is one of the events that belonged to his reign. A certain chief of the Don Cossacks, named Jermak, who employed himself in robberies on the borders of the Wolga and the Caspian Sea, being pursued by a detachment of Russian troops, retired to the confines of Siberia. He soon entered these regions at the head of 7000 Cossacks, and having gained several victories over the Tartars of Siberia, and their Khan Kutschem, he got possession of the city of Sibir, which was their principal fortress (1581). Jermak, in order to obtain his pardon of the czar, made him an offer of all he conquered; which was agreed to by that prince, and the troops of the Russians then took possession of Siberia (1583). The total reduction of the country, however, did not take place until the reign of the Czar Theodore or Fedor Ivanovitz, the son and successor of John, who built the city of Tobolsk (1577), which has since become the capital of Siberia. Fedor Ivanovitz, a prince weak both in mind and body, was entirely under the counsels of his mother-in-law Boris Godunow, who, with the view of opening a way for himself to the throne, caused the young Demetrius, Fedor's only brother, to be assassinated (1591). This crime gave rise to a long series of troubles, which ended in the death of Fedor (1598). With him, as he left no children, the reigning family of the ancient sovereigns of Russia, the descendants of Ruric, became extinct; after having occupied the throne for more than eight hundred years. After this, the Russian crown was worn by persons of different houses. Their reigns were disturbed by various pretenders, who assumed the name of Demetrius, and were supported by the poles. During fifteen years Russia presented a shocking spectacle of confusion and carnage. At length, as a remedy for these disasters, they thought of bestowing the crown on a foreign prince. Some chose Charles Philip, the brother of Gustavus Adolphus of Sweden; and others voted for Uladislaus, the son of Sigismund IV., King of Poland. These resolutions tended only to increase the disorders of the state. The Swedes took advantage of them to seize Ingria and the city of Novogorod; while the Poles took possession of Smolensko and its dependencies. The Russians, now seeing their monarchy on the verge of a precipice, adopted a plan of electing a new czar of their own nation. Their choice fell on Michael Fedrovitz, who became the founder of the new dynasty, that of Romanow (1613), under whom Russia attained to the zenith of her greatness. That prince, guided by the sage counsels of his father Fedor Romanow, Archbishop of Rostow, soon rectified all the disorders of the state; he increased peace of the Swedes, by surrendering them Ingria and Russian Carelia. The sacrifices which he made to Poland were not less considerable. By the truce of Diviliina (1618), and the peace of Wiasma (1634), he ceded to the vast territories of Smolensko, Tschernigou, and Novogorod, with their dependencies.

Poland, at this time, presented a corrupt aristocracy, which had insensibly degenerated into complete anarchy. The nobles were the only persons that enjoyed the rights of citizenship; they alone were represented in the diets, by the nuncios or deputies which they elected at the Dietines; the honours and dignities both in church and state, and in general all prerogatives whatever, were reserved for them; while the burgesses and peasantry alone supported the whole burthen of expenses. This constitution, at the same time, was under the control of a sort of democracy, in as far as the nobles, without exception, were held to be perfectly equal in their rights and dignities. Imperfect as a government must have been, established on such a basis, it still continued, nevertheless, to preserve some degree of vigour; and Poland supported, though feebly, the character of being the ruling power of the North, so long as the House of Jagello occupied the throne. Besides Prussia, of which she had dispossessed the Teutonic Knights, she acquired Livonia, and maintained it in spite of Russia.

The reformation of religion was likewise promulgated in Poland, where it was particularly patronized by Sigismund II. A great part of the senate, and the better half of the nobility, made, with their king, a profession of the new opinions; and if the reformation did not take deeper root in that kingdom, or if it had not a more conspicuous influence on the civilization of the people, it was from not being supported by the middle classes, which were not to be found in that kingdom.

The male line of Jagello, having become extinct with Sigismund II. (1572), the throne became purely elective; and it was ordained that, during the King's life, no successor could be appointed; but that the states, on his demise, should enjoy for ever a perfect freedom of election on every vacancy of the throne. Such was the origin of the diets of election, which, from their very constitution, could not fail to be always tumultuous in their proceedings. The nobles in a body appeared at these diets; thither they repaired in arms and on horseback, ranked according to the order of the Palatinates, in a camp prepared for the purpose near Warsaw. The custom of the *Pacta Conventa* took its rise about the same time. Henry de Valois, who was elected king on the death of Sigismund II., was the first that swore to these conventional agreements, [by which he engaged, that no foreigner should be introduced either in a civil or military department.] These *Pacta*, which had all the force of a fundamental law, specified those conditions under which the throne was conferred on the new monarch. The royal authority was thus curtailed more and more, and the prerogatives of the nobility exalted in proportion.

Poland, in consequence, soon lost its influence; the government was altered from its basis, and the kingdom plunged into an abyss of calamities. Among the elective kings who succeeded Henry de Valois, the last that supported the dignity of the crown against Russia, was Uladislaus IV., the son of Sigismund III., of the House of Vasa. In an expedition which he undertook into the interior of Russia (1618), he penetrated as far as Moscow; and in a second which he made (1634), he compelled the Russians to raise the siege of Smolensko; and shut them up so closely in their camp,

that they were obliged to capitulate for want of provisions. He then made a new attack on the capital of Russia; and at the peace of Wiasma, he obtained conditions most advantageous to Poland.

In the history of Hungary, the most splendid era was the reign of Matthias Corvin, who, at the age of scarcely sixteen, had been raised to the throne by the pure choice of the nation (1458). Like his father the valorous John Hunniades, he was the terror of the Turks during his whole reign; he took Bosnia from them, and kept Transylvania, Wallachia, Moldavia, Slavonia, and Servia in dependence on his crown, in spite of the incessant efforts which the Turks made to rescue these provinces. He likewise conquered Moravia, Silesia, and Lusatia; he even took Austria from the Emperor Frederic III., and came to fix his residence at Vienna (1485). It was in that city that he terminated his brilliant career, at the early age of forty-seven (1490). That great prince added to his military talents, a love for elegant literature, of which, from the first revival of letters, he showed himself a zealous protector.

The glory of Hungary suffered an eclipse in the loss of Matthias. His successors, Uladislav II., the son of Casimir IV., King of Poland, and Louis the son of Uladislav, who held at the same time the crown of Bohemia, were weak and indolent princes, who saw Hungary torn by factions, and ravaged with impunity by the Turks. Soliman the Great, taking advantage of the youth of Louis, and the distressed state in which Hungary was, concerted his plans for conquering the kingdom. He attacked the fortress of Belgrade (1521), and made himself master of that important place, before the Hungarians could march to its relief. His first success encouraged him to return to the charge. Having crossed the Danube and the Drave without meeting with any resistance, he engaged the Hungarians near Mohacz (1526), in that famous battle which cost them the life of their king and their principal nobility. Twenty-two thousand Hungarians were left on the field of battle, and the whole kingdom lay at the mercy of the conqueror. Soliman now proceeded as far as the Raab; but instead of completing the conquest of Hungary as he might have done, he contented himself with the laying waste all that part of the country with fire and sword; and carrying several hundred thousand prisoners into slavery.

The premature death of the young king, who left no progeny, occasioned a vacancy in the throne of Hungary and Bohemia. Ferdinand of Austria, who married Anne, sister to Louis, claimed the succession in virtue of the different treaties signed in the years 1463, 1468, 1491, and 1513, between the Austrian princes and the last kings of Hungary. But though the Bohemian States were disposed to listen to the pretensions of Ferdinand, it was not so with those of Hungary, who transferred the crown to John de Zapolya, Count of Zips, and Palatine of Transylvania. That prince being hardly pressed by Ferdinand, at length determined to throw himself under the protection of the Turks. Soliman marched in person to his assistance, and laid siege to the city of Vienna (1529). In this enterprise, however, he failed, after sacrificing the lives of nearly 80,000 men.

In 1538, a treaty was agreed on between the two competitors, in virtue of which the whole

kingdom of Hungary, on the death of John Zapolya, was to devolve on Ferdinand. This treaty was never carried into execution. John at his death having left a son named John Sigismund, then an infant in his cradle, Bishop George Martinuzzi, prime minister of the defunct king, proclaimed the young prince, and secured for him the protection of the Turks. Soliman undertook a new expedition into Hungary in his favour (1541); but by a piece of signal perfidy, he took this occasion to seize the city of Buda, the capital of the kingdom, and several other places; and banished the prince with his mother the queen-dowager, to Transylvania, which he gave up to him, with several other districts in Hungary. The city of Buda with the greater part of Hungary and Slavonia remained in the power of the Turks; and Ferdinand was obliged to pay an annual tribute for the protection of that kingdom, the possession of which was guaranteed to him by the truce which he concluded with them in 1562.

In the midst of these unfortunate events, the Austrian princes had again the imprudence to alienate the affections of the Hungarians, by the intolerant spirit they displayed, and the efforts which they incessantly made to extirpate the Protestant religion in that kingdom. The opinions of Luther and Calvin had already been propagated in Hungary during the reign of Louis, the predecessor of Ferdinand. They had even made great progress; especially in Transylvania, where the German language and literature were generally cultivated. The oppressions which the partisans of the new doctrines experienced, added to the attempts which the Austrian princes made from time to time to subvert the ancient constitution of the kingdom, excited fresh troubles, and favoured the designs of the discontented and ambitious, who were watching their opportunity to agitate the state, and make encroachments on the government. Stephen Botschkaï, Bethlen Gabor, and George Ragotz, princes of Transylvania, were successively the chiefs or leaders of these malecontents in the reigns of Rodolph II., Ferdinand II., and Ferdinand III., Emperors of Germany. According to the pacification of Vienna (1606), and that of Lintz (1646), as well as by the decrees of the Diet of Odenburg (1622), and of Presburg (1647), these princes were compelled to tolerate the public exercise of the reformed religion; and to redress the political complaints of the Hungarian malecontents.

The same troubles on the score of religion, which infested Hungary, extended likewise to Bohemia, where the new doctrines met with a much better reception, as they were in unison with the religious system of the Hussites, who had already numerous partisans in that kingdom. It was chiefly under the reign of the mild and tolerant Maximilian II. that Protestantism made its way in Bohemia. All those who were formerly called *Utraquists*, from their professing the communion in both kinds, joined the followers either of Luther or Calvin. Rodolph II., the son and successor of Maximilian, was obliged, at the Diet of Prague (1609), to grant them the free exercise of their worship, without distinction of place; and even to extend this indulgence to the Protestants of Silesia and Lusatia by letters patent, known by the name *Letters of Majesty*; copies of which were made at Prague on the 11th of July and 29th of

August 1609. The King Matthias, on Bohemia; as also by acknowledged by adopted son and succeeded. The different into these letters occasion by the name of the Emperor Matthias happened these disturbances, taking his crown as Ferdinand II. (1619) Frederic, the Elector of Saxony, in alliance with the states of Lusatia, they declared supported, on the Catholic princes of Saxony.

The famous battle of the Elector of Saxony in Bohemia. The execution were executed confiscated. Ferdinand as a conquered states had forfeited and, in the new course consented to restore expressly excepting retained in the elect Letters of Majesty Protestants the free exercise his prince did not their religious liberties their rights of citizenship were published went so far as to deny testaments, or contrary their ministers, within the kingdom; and they employed to bring the sole of the Catholic enjoined, by an edict who persisted in the kingdom within six the best families in the hundred and eighty-five Bohemia, transporting industry to the neighbour Brandenburg, Prussia Ferdinand judged the elector of Saxony Sweden, which he special peace with which he made over which he had dismembered Bohemia, to reimburse which he claimed, Austria against the of Bohemia. That Elector John George, as a fief of the express condition, the electoral branch, it is but that it should the of Bohemia to use the ing to the female heir had been mortgaged amounted to seven hundred, 2,200,000 florins.

The Turkish Empire

August 1609. These letters were confirmed by King Matthias, on his accession to the throne of Bohemia; as also by Ferdinand III., when he was acknowledged by the Bohemian States as the adopted son and successor of Matthias.

The different interpretations which were put on these letters occasioned the war, known in history by the name of the Thirty Years' War. The Emperor Matthias happening to die in the midst of these disturbances, the Bohemian States, regarding their crown as elective, annulled the election of Ferdinand II. (1619), and conferred the crown on Frederic, the Elector Palatine. Being in strict alliance with the states of Silesia, Moravia, and Lusatia, they declared war against Ferdinand, who was supported, on the other hand, by Spain, the Catholic princes of the Empire, and the elector of Saxony.

The famous battle of Prague (1620), and the fall of the Elector Palatine, brought about a revolution in Bohemia. The ringleaders of the insurrection were executed at Prague, and their goods confiscated. Ferdinand, who treated that kingdom as a conquered country, declared that the states had forfeited their rights and privileges; and, in the new constitution which he gave them, he consented to restore these, only on condition of expressly excepting the rights which they had claimed in the election of their kings, as well as the Letters of Majesty which granted to the Protestants the free exercise of their worship. But this prince did not stop with the suppression of their religious liberties, he deprived them also of their rights of citizenship. Laws the most atrocious were published against them, and he even went so far as to deny them the liberty of making testaments, or contracting legal marriages. All their ministers, without exception, were banished the kingdom; and the most iniquitous means were employed to bring back the Protestants to the pale of the Catholic Church. At length it was enjoined, by an edict in 1607, that all Protestants who persisted in their opinions should quit the kingdom within six months. Thirty thousand of the best families in the kingdom, of whom a hundred and eighty-five were nobility, abandoned Bohemia, transporting their talents and their industry to the neighbouring states, such as Saxony, Brandenburg, Prussia, &c.

Ferdinand judged it for his interest to detach the elector of Saxony from the alliance with Sweden, which he had joined. He concluded a special peace with him at Prague, in virtue of which he made over to him the two Lusatias, which he had dismembered from the kingdom of Bohemia, to reimburse the elector for those sums which he claimed, as having been the ally of Austria against the Elector Palatine, then King of Bohemia. That province was ceded to the Elector John George, for himself and his successors, as a fief of the Bohemian crown, under the express condition, that failing the male line of the electoral branch, it should pass to the female heirs; but that it should then be at the option of the King of Bohemia to use the right of redemption, by repaying to the female heirs the sum for which Lusatia had been mortgaged to Saxony. This sum amounted to seventy-two tons of gold, valued at 7,200,000 florins.

The Turkish Empire received new accessions of

territory, both in Asia and Europe, under the successors of Mahomet II., who had fixed their capital at Constantinople. The conquest of Bessarabia belongs to the reign of Bajazet II., about the year 1484. That prince had a brother named Jem or Zizim, who had been his competitor for the throne; and having fled to Rome, he was imprisoned by order of Pope Alexander VI., at the instance of Bajazet, who had engaged to pay the Pope a large pension for him. Charles VIII. of France, when he made his expedition into Italy for the conquest of Naples, compelled the Pope to surrender up the unfortunate Zizim, whom he designed to employ in the expedition which he meditated against the Turks, but which never took place. Selim I., the son and successor of Bajazet, taking advantage of a revolution which happened in Persia, and of the victory which he gained near Tauris over the Schah Ismail Sophi I. (1514), conquered the provinces of Diarbekir and Algezira, beyond the Euphrates.

The same prince overturned the powerful Empire of the Mamelukes, who reigned over Egypt, Syria, Palestine, and part of Arabia. He defeated the last Sultans, Cansoul-Algouri, and Tounamby (1516), and totally annihilated that dynasty. Cairo, the capital of the Empire of Egypt, was taken by assault (1517), and the whole of the Mameluke states incorporated with the Ottoman Empire. The Scheriff of Mecca likewise submitted to the Porte, with several tribes of the Arabs.

Soliman the Great, who succeeded his father Selim, raised the Turkish Empire to the highest pitch of glory. Besides the island of Rhodes, which he took from the Knights of St. John, and the greater part of Hungary, he reduced the provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia to a state of dependence, and made their princes vassals and tributaries of his Empire. He likewise conquered Bagdad and Irak-Arabia, which happened, according to the Turkish authors, about the year 1534.

That prince distinguished his reign by the efforts which he made to increase the maritime strength of the Empire, which his predecessors had neglected. He took into his service the famous pirate Barbarossa, King of Algiers, whom he created Captain Pacha, or Grand Admiral. Barbarossa equipped a fleet of more than a hundred sail, with which he chased the imperialists from the Archipelago; and infested the coasts of Spain, Italy and Sicily (1565). Soliman miscarried, however, in his enterprise against Malta. The courageous defence made by the knights, together with the arrival of the fleet from Sicily, obliged the Ottomans to retreat.

The decline of the Ottoman Empire began with the death of Soliman the Great (1566). The sultans, his successors, surrendering themselves to luxury and effeminacy, and shut up in their seraglios and harems, left to their grand viziers the government of the Empire, and the management of the army. The sons of these sultans, educated by women and eunuchs, and secluded from all civil and military affairs, contracted from their earliest infancy all the vices of their fathers, and no longer brought to the throne that vigorous and enterprising spirit, which had been the soul of the Ottoman government, and the basis of all their institutions. Selim II., the son of Soliman, was

of Malines, the marquise of Antwerp, Upper
Flanders, the counties of Namur, Hainault and
Artois, Cambrai and Cambresis, which he alleged
belonged to him, in virtue of the *right of devolu-
tion*, according to the usages of that country. Ac-
cording to that right, the property of goods passed
to the children of the first marriage, when their
parents contracted another. Maria Theresa, Queen
of France, was the daughter, by the first marriage,
of Philip IV. King of Spain; whereas Charles II.,
his successor in that monarchy, was descended of
the second marriage. Louis XIV. contended, that
on the moment of Philip's second marriage, the
property of all the countries, which were affected
by the right of devolution, belonged to his queen;
and that, after the death of her father, that princess
could enjoy the succession. In opposition to
these claims of France, the Spaniards alleged, that
the right of devolution, being founded merely on
custom, and applicable only to particular suc-
cessions, could not be opposed to the fundamental
laws of Spain, which maintained the indivisibility
of that monarchy, and transferred the whole suc-
cession to Charles II. without any partition what-
ever.

In course of the campaign of 1667, the French
made themselves masters of several cities in the
Low Countries, such as Bruges, Furnes, Armentiers,
Charleroi, Binch, Ath, Tournay, Douay, Bour-
bourg, Oudenarde, and Lille; and in course of
the following winter, they got possession of
Franche-Comté. The Pope and several princes
volunteered their good offices for the re-
storation of peace, they proposed a congress at
Aix-la-Chapelle; but the principal scene of the
negotiation was at the Hague, where Louis sent
the Count d'Estrades to treat separately with the
States-General. This negotiation was greatly ac-
celerated by the famous Triple Alliance, concluded
at the Hague 1668, between Great Britain,
Sweden, and the States-General. By the terms
of this treaty, the allied powers offered Louis the
alternative, either to leave him in possession of the
places which he had conquered, during the cam-
paign of 1667, or to cede to him either the duchy
of Luxembourg, or Franche-Comté with the cities
of Cambrai, Douay, Aire, St. Omer, and Furnes,
with their dependencies. The Spaniards having
rejected the former of these alternatives, the
treaty of peace was agreed on, and signed
by the ministers of France, England, and
the States-General; and this scheme served as the
basis of the treaty which was concluded at Aix-
la-Chapelle, between France and Spain (May 2d
1668). In consideration of the restitutions which
Louis had made to Spain, France retained, in terms
of this treaty, the towns of Charleroi, Binch, Ath,
Douay, Tournay, Oudenarde, Lille, Armentiers,
Bourbourg, Bergues, and Furnes, with their baili-
wicks and dependencies.

This peace was soon followed by a new war,
which Louis XIV. undertook against the republic
of the Seven United Provinces (1672). Wishing
to be avenged on the Dutch, whom he knew to be
the principal authors of the Triple Alliance, and
sustaining only his own propensity for war, he
used as a pretext, certain insulting medals
which had been struck in Holland, on the
occasion of Aix-la-Chapelle, and the Triple Alliance,
which vain did the States-General offer him every

satisfaction; he persisted in his purpose of de-
claring war; and the better to succeed in his
design, he endeavoured first to dissolve the Triple
Alliance. Colbert de Croissy, whom he sent to
England, found means to detach Charles II. from
the alliance, and to draw him over to side with
Louis against the Republic. The same success at-
tended the negotiation which he set on foot with
the Court of Stockholm. Following the example
of England, the Swedes renounced the Triple Al-
liance, and joined with France. Several princes of the
Empire, such as the Elector of Cologne and the
Bishop of Munster, adopted the same line of con-
duct. The war broke out in 1672; and so rapid
were the conquests of Louis, that he subdued in
one single campaign the provinces of Gueldres,
Utrecht, Overysse, and part of Holland. He
would have carried the city of Amsterdam, if the
Dutch had not cut their dikes and inundated the
country.

Alarmed at these extraordinary successes, and
apprehending the entire subversion of the Re-
public, the Emperor Leopold I., the King of Spain,
the elector of Brandenburg, and the Imperial
States, league'd in their favour, and marched to
their relief. The Parliament of England obliged
Charles II. to make peace with the republic, by re-
fusing to grant him supplies (1674). The Elector
of Cologne and the Bishop of Munster did the
same thing. Louis XIV. then thought proper to
abandon his conquests in Holland; and directed
his principal strength against Spain and the Ger-
manic states. He subdued Franche-Comté in
the spring of 1674; and in course of the same
year, the Prince of Condé gained the battle of
Senef. In the following winter Turenne attacked
the quarters of the Imperialists in Alsace, and
chased them from that province, in spite of their
superior numbers. That great general was slain
at Saspach in Ortenau, in the campaign against
Monteceneuli (11th Aug. 1674). Next year Ad-
miral du Quesne gained two naval victories, near
the islands of Lipari and Messina, over De Ruyter,
who died of the wounds he had received.

The Swedes, according to the secret articles of
their alliance with France, had penetrated, in the
month of December 1674, into the Electorate of
Brandenburg, to cause a diversion against the
Electoral Frederic William, who commanded the
Imperial army on the Rhine; but the Elector sur-
prised them by forced marches at Rathenow, and
completely routed their army near Fehrbellin
(1675). The Emperor then declared war against
Sweden; and the Elector, in concert with the
princes of Brunswick, the Bishop of Munster, and
the King of Denmark, stript the Swedes of the
greater part of their possessions in the Empire.

At length, in the years 1678-79, a peace was
concluded at Nimeguen, under the mediation of
England. Louis XIV. contrived to divide the
allies, and to make a separate treaty with the
Dutch, by which he restored to them the city of
Maastricht, which he had seized. The example of
the Dutch was followed by the Spaniards, who in
like manner signed a special treaty with France;
in virtue of which, they gave up to her Franche-
Comté, with several cities in Flanders and Hainault,
such as Valenciennes, Bouchain, Condé, Cambrai,
Aire, St. Omer, Ypres, Warwick, Warneton,
Poperingen, Bailleul, Cassel, Bavay, and Mau-

beuge, with their dependencies. The peace of Munster was renewed by that concluded at Nimeguen, between France, the Empire, and the Emperor. France, on renouncing her right to a garrison in Phillipsburg, got possession of the city of Friburg in Brisgaw, but refused to restore what she had wrested from the Duke of Lorraine, except on conditions so burdensome, that the Duke would not accept them, and preferred to abandon the re-possession of his duchy. As to the peace which France and Sweden had negotiated with Denmark and her allies the Princes of the Empire, it was renewed by different special treaties, concluded in course of the year 1679.

No sooner was the peace of Nimeguen concluded, than there sprung up new troubles, known by the name of the *Troubles of the Re-unions*. Louis XIV., whose ambition was without bounds, had instituted a *Chamber of Re-union*, in the parliament of Metz, for the purpose of examining the nature and extent of the territories ceded to him by the treaties of Westphalia, the Pyrenees, Aix-la-Chapelle, and Nimeguen. This Chamber, as well as the parliament of Besançon, and the Sovereign Council of Alsace, adjudged to the King, by their decree, several towns and seignories, as being fiefs or dependencies of Alsace; as also the three bishoprics, Franche-Comté, and the territories which had been ceded to him in the Netherlands.

The king's views were principally directed to Alsace. He had already tendered his claims on this province, shortly after the peace of the Pyrenees, when the matter had been referred to the decision of arbiters chosen by the emperor himself. The work of arbitration was not far advanced, when it was interrupted by the Dutch war, in which the Emperor and the Empire were both implicated. The peace of Nimeguen having confirmed the treaty of Munster, he preferred the method of re-union to that of arbitration, for reclaiming his alleged rights. Taking advantage of the general terms in which the cession of Alsace was announced in the seventy-third and seventy-fourth articles of the said treaty, he claimed the absolute sovereignty of the whole province, and obliged the immediate states, included in it, to acknowledge his sovereignty, and do him fealty and homage, notwithstanding the reservations which the eighty-seventh article of the same treaty had stipulated in favour of these very States. M. de Louvois appeared before Strasburg at the head of the French army, and summoned that city to submit to the King. Accordingly, it surrendered by capitulation on the 30th September, 1681. These re-unions extended also to the Netherlands, where the French seized, among others, the cities of Courtrai, Dixmunde, and Luxemburg.

Louis XIV., in thus taking upon himself alone the interpretation of these treaties of peace, could not but offend the powers interested in maintaining them. A new general league was projected against France, and at the Diet of Ratisbon they deliberated on the means of setting on foot an Imperial army; but the want of unanimity among the members of the Germanic body, the troubles in Hungary, which were immediately succeeded by a war with the Porte, and the march of a Turkish army on Vienna, threw them into a state of consternation, and prevented the Imperial Diet from

adopting any vigorous resolution. Spain, exhausted by protracted wars, and abandoned by England and Holland, was quite incapacitated from taking arms. Nothing, therefore, remained for the parties concerned, than to have recourse to negotiation. Conferences were opened at Frankfurt, which, after having languished for fifteen months in that city, were transferred to Ratisbon, where a truce of twenty years was signed (18th August, 1684) between France and Spain; as also between France, the Emperor, and the Empire. By the former of these treaties, Louis retained Luxemburg, Boyines, and Chimay, with their dependencies; restoring back all the places which he had occupied in the Netherlands prior to the 20th August, 1683. As to the treaty between France and the Emperor, the former retained, during the truce, the city of Strasburg, and the fort of Kehl, besides all the places and seignories which they had taken possession of since the commencement of the troubles till the 1st of August, 1681. In all the places that were surrendered to him, Louis preserved the exercise of his sovereign rights, leaving to the proprietors or seigniors the entire enjoyment of the fruits and revenues belonging to their territorial rights.

It was nearly about this same time that Louis XIV. undertook to extirpate Calvinism in France. Incensed against the Protestants by the old Chancellor Letellier, and his minister Louvois, the chancellor's son, he circumscribed, by repeated declarations, the privileges which they enjoyed in virtue of former edicts. The holding of general synods was forbidden; the two Chambers were suppressed; and they were all, without exception, debarred from exercising any public function. At last, Louis went so far as to send, immediately after the truce of Ratisbon (1684), dragoons over all France, to endeavour, as was said, to convert the Protestants by gentle compulsion. This measure was next followed by the famous Edict of 1685, which revoked that of Nantes, published in 1598, and that of Nismes in 1629. All exercise of their religion—all assemblies for worship, even in the house, were forbidden to the Protestants, under pain of imprisonment and confiscation of goods. Their churches were ordered to be demolished. Parents were enjoined to have their children baptized by the Catholic clergy, and to bring them up in the religion of the state. The ministers were banished, and the other Protestants were forbidden to depart the country, under pain of the gallies for men, and imprisonment and confiscation for women. The rigour of these prohibitions, however, did not prevent a vast multitude of the French Protestants from removing to foreign countries, and transferring the seat of their industry to Germany, England, and Holland.

This blindfold zeal for religion, however, did not hinder Louis from vigorously supporting the rights of his crown against the encroachments of the pope of Rome. Among the different disputes that arose between him and the popes, that which regarded the *Regale* deserves to be particularly remarkable. The King, by declarations issued in 1673 and 1675, having extended that right to all the archbishoprics and bishoprics within the kingdom, the bishops of Aleth and Pamiers, who pretended to be exempt from it, applied to the Pope, claiming his protection. Innocent XI. interposed, by ver-

ment briefs which favour of the bishop voked an assembly of besides the extensi them to draw up which are regarded the Gallican church 1. That the power things spiritual, and matters. 2. That spiritual affairs is su 3. That it is even li tons, and constitut Gallican church. 4 pope's authority is u

The truce which years at Ratisbon co of which Louis agri to have got informat only waited till the the Turks, to make inferred, that prudent anticipate his enemy, t unvented. In pro the treaty concluded the emperor, the K general, Sweden, the D tical states of the E the treaties conclude moreover to enforce t of Orleans, his sister- tion of the palatinu ister of Charles, the family of Simmern, v not dispute the vie in the electorate; she comprehended a con nate; while the new the family of Neuburg to the laws and usage sion belonged to whatever.

Besides these mot uth in a long manife e kept concealed, t prevent the expedition madholder of the U spring to send to Eng brother-in-law, who whole English nation. or France to mainta Britain, a prince who could always espouse ay to foresee, that if declared enemy of Lo rague of Augsburg, sh r own of England to t set fail to employ this mbined force of both ply method of preven the true interests of ren, doubtless, to equ camp on the frontie France knew this w themselves with sendi hich took possession of the whole palatinu electorate of Treves (1688). Louvois, the F esse operations, had

ment brief which he addressed to the king in favour of the bishops. This induced Louis to convoke an assembly of the French clergy, in which, besides the extension of the Regale, he caused them to draw up the four famous propositions, which are regarded as the basis of the liberties of the Gallican church. These propositions were:—
1. That the power of the pope extends only to things spiritual, and has no concern with temporal matters. 2. That the authority of the pope in spiritual affairs is subordinate to a general council. 3. That it is even limited by the canons, the customs, and constitution of the kingdom and the Gallican church. 4. That in matters of faith the pope's authority is not infallible.

The truce which had been concluded for twenty years at Ratisbon continued only four; at the end of which Louis again took up arms. He pretended to have got information, that the Emperor Leopold only waited till the conclusion of the peace with the Turks, to make war upon him; and he thence inferred, that prudence required him rather to anticipate his enemy, than allow himself to be circumvented. In proof of this assertion, he cited the treaty concluded at Augsburg in 1606, between the emperor, the King of Spain, the States-General, Sweden, the Duke of Savoy, and the principal states of the Empire, for the maintenance of the treaties concluded with France. Louis wished moreover to enforce the claims which the Duchess of Orleans, his sister-in-law, alleged to the succession of the palatinate. That princess was the sister of Charles, the last elector palatine, of the family of Simmern, who died in 1685. She did not dispute the fiefs with her brother's successor in the electorate; she claimed the freeholds, which comprehended a considerable part of the palatinate; while the new Elector, Philip William, of the family of Neuburg, maintained that, according to the laws and usages of Germany, the entire succession belonged to him, without any partition whatever.

Besides these motives which Louis XIV. set forth in a long manifesto, there was another which he kept concealed, the object of which was, to prevent the expedition which the Prince of Orange, stadtholder of the United Provinces, was preparing to send to England, against James II. his father-in-law, who had become odious to the whole English nation. It was of great importance for France to maintain, on the throne of Great Britain, a prince whom she protected, and who would always espouse her interests; while it was easy to foresee, that if the Prince of Orange, the declared enemy of Louis, and the author of the league of Augsburg, should succeed in uniting the crown of England to the stadtholdership, he would fail to employ this new influence, and turn the combined force of both states against France. The only method of preventing an event so prejudicial to the true interests of that kingdom would have been, doubtless, to equip an expedition, and pitch his camp on the frontiers of Holland. The court of France knew this well, and yet they contented themselves with sending an army to the Rhine, which took possession of Philipsburg, Mayence, and the whole palatinate, as well as a part of the electorate of Treves (September and October 1688). Louvois, the French minister who directed these operations, had flattered himself that the

Dutch, when they beheld the war breaking out in their vicinity, would not dare to take any part in the troubles of England. In this opinion he was deceived; the Prince of Orange, supported by the Dutch fleet, effected a landing in England (16th November, 1688). The revolution there was soon completed, by the dethronement of James II.; and Louis XIV., ending where he should have begun, then declared war against the States-General. This mistaken policy of the French minister became the true source of all the subsequent reverses that eclipsed the reign of Louis XIV.

A powerful league was now formed against France, which was joined successively by the emperor, the Empire, England, Holland, Spain, and Savoy (1688). Louis XIV., in order to make head against these formidable enemies, recalled his troops from those places which they occupied in the palatinate, and on the banks of the Rhine; but in withdrawing them, he ordered a great number of the towns to be burnt to ashes, and laid waste the whole country. By this barbarity, which circumstances by no means called for, he only aggravated the hatred and increased the ardour of his enemies. War was commenced by sea and land; in Italy, Spain, Ireland, the Low Countries, and on the Rhine. Louis supported it nobly against a great part of Europe, now combined against him. His armies were victorious everywhere. Marshal Luxembourg signalized himself in the campaign of Flanders, by the victories which he gained over the allies at Fleurus (1st July, 1690), Steinkirk (3rd August, 1692), and Landen or Nerwinden (29th July, 1693). In Italy, Marshal Catina gained the battle of Staffarda (18th August, 1690), and Marsailles (1st October, 1693), over the Duke of Savoy. The naval glory of France was well supported by the Count de Tourville at the battles of Beachy-head (10th July, 1690), and La Hogue (29th May, 1692).

However brilliant the success of her arms might be, the prodigious efforts which the war required could not but exhaust France, and make her anxious for the return of peace. Besides, Louis XIV. foresaw the approaching death of Charles II. of Spain; and it was of importance for him to break the grand alliance as soon as possible; as one of its articles secured the succession of the Spanish monarchy to the emperor and his descendants, to the exclusion of the King of France. In this case, he wished, for his own interest, to give every facility for the restoration of peace; and by the treaty which he concluded separately with the Duke of Savoy, he granted that Prince, besides the fortress of Pignerol, and the marriage of his daughter with the Duke of Burgundy, the privilege of royal honours for his ambassadors. This treaty, concluded at Turin (29th August, 1696), was a preliminary to the general peace, signed at Ryswick, between France, Spain, England, and Holland (20th September, 1697). Each of the contracting parties consented to make mutual restitutions. France even restored to Spain all the towns and territories which she had occupied in the Low Countries, by means of the re-unions; with the exception of eighty-two places, mentioned in a particular list, as being dependencies of Charlemont, Maubeuge, and other places ceded by the preceding treaties. Peace between France, the emperor, and the Empire was also signed at

Ryswick. The treaties of Westphalia and Nimwegen were there renewed; and the decrees of the Chamber of Re-union at Metz, and of the sovereign courts at Besançon and Brisach, were rescinded and annulled. Louis XIV. engaged to restore to the Empire all that he had appropriated to himself, by means of the re-unions, either before or during the war; that is to say, all places situated or acquired beyond the bounds of Alsace. The city of Strasburg was ceded to France, by a particular article of the treaty; but the fortress of Kehl, the cities of Friburg, Brisach, and Philippsburg, were surrendered to the emperor. Leopold, Duke of Lorraine, and son of Charles V., was reinstated in his duchy, without any other reservation than that of Saar-Louis, and the city and prefecture of Longwy. As to the claims of the Duchess of Orleans on the palatinate, they were submitted to the arbitration of the emperor and the King of France; to be referred to the decision of the Pope, should these two sovereigns happen to differ in opinion.

The peace of Ryswick was followed by the war of the Spanish succession, which embroiled Europe afresh, and occasioned considerable changes in its political state. Charles II., King of Spain, son of Philip IV., and last male descendant of the Spanish branch of the House of Austria, having neither son, nor daughter, nor brother, the Spanish monarchy, according to a fundamental law of the kingdom, which fixed the succession in the *cognate line*, appeared to belong to Maria Theresa, Queen of France, eldest sister of Charles, and to the children of her marriage with Louis XIV. To this title of Maria Theresa was opposed her express renunciation, inserted in her marriage-contract, and confirmed by the peace of the Pyrenees; but the French maintained, that that renunciation was null, and that it could not prejudice the children of the queen, who held their right, not from their mother, but by the fundamental law of Spain.

Admitting the validity of the queen's renunciation, the lineal order devolved the Spanish succession on her younger sister, Margaret Theresa, who had married the Emperor Leopold I., and left an only daughter, Maria Antoinette, spouse to the Elector of Bavaria, and mother of Joseph Ferdinand, the Electoral Prince of Bavaria.

The Emperor, who wished to preserve the Spanish monarchy in his own family, availed himself of the renunciation which he had exacted from his daughter, the Archduchess Maria Antoinette, when she married Maximilian, the Elector of Bavaria, to appear as a candidate himself, and advance the claims of his mother, Maria Anna, daughter of Philip III., King of Spain, and aunt to Charles II. He alleged, that the Spanish succession had been secured to this latter princess, both by her marriage-contract, and by the testaments of the Kings of Spain; and as he had two sons, the Archdukes Joseph and Charles, by his marriage with the Princess Palatine of Neuburg, he destined the elder for the Imperial throne and the States of Austria, and the younger for the Spanish monarchy.

These different claims having excited apprehensions of a general war, England and Holland, from a desire to prevent it, drew up a treaty of partition, in concert with Louis XIV. (11th Oct.

1698), in virtue of which the Spanish monarchy was secured to Joseph Ferdinand, in case of the death of Charles II.; while the kingdom of the Two Sicilies, with the ports of Tuscani, the marquisate of Finale, and the province of Guipuscoa, were reserved to the Dauphin of France. The Archduke Charles, son to the Emperor, was to have the duchy of Milan. Although the King of Spain disapproved of the treaty, in so far as it admitted a partition, nevertheless, in his will, he recognised the Prince of Bavaria as his successor in the Spanish monarchy.

A premature death having frustrated all the high expectations of that prince, the powers who had concluded the first treaty of partition drew up a second, which was signed at London (March 13, 1700). According to this, the Archduke Charles, eldest son of the Emperor Leopold, was destined the presumptive heir to the Spanish monarchy. They awarded to the Dauphin the duchy of Lorraine, with the kingdom of the Two Sicilies, and the province of Guipuscoa; assigning to the Duke of Lorraine the duchy of Milan in exchange. Louis XIV. used every effort to have this new treaty of partition approved by the court of Vienna. He sent thither the Marquis Villars, who, after having been long amused with vague promises, failed entirely in his negotiation; and the Emperor, whose main object was to conciliate the court of Madrid, lost the only favourable moment which might have fixed the succession of the Spanish monarchy in his family, with the consent of Louis XIV. and the principal courts of Europe.

At Madrid this affair took a turn diametrically opposite to the views and interests of the court of Vienna. Charles II., following the counsels of his prime minister, Cardinal Portocarrero, and after having taken the advice of the Pope, and of the most eminent theologians and lawyers in his kingdom, determined to make a second will, in which he recognised the rights of Maria Theresa, his eldest sister; and declared, that as the renunciation of that princess had been made solely to prevent the union of Spain with the kingdom of France, that motive ceased on transferring the Spanish monarchy to one of the younger sons of the Dauphin. Accordingly, he nominated Philip of Anjou, the Dauphin's second son, heir to his whole dominions; failing him, the Duke of Berry, his younger brother; next, the Archduke Charles, and lastly, the Duke of Savoy; expressly forbidding all partition of the monarchy.

Charles II. having died on the 1st of November following, the Junta, or Council of Regency, which he had appointed by his will, sent to Louis XIV. praying him to accede to the settlement of that late king, and give up his grandson to the wishes of the Spanish nation. The same courier had orders to pass on to Vienna, in case of a refusal on his part, and make the same offer to the archduke. The court of France then assembled a grand council, in which they held a deliberation as to what step it was best to adopt, in an affair which so nearly concerned the general repose of Europe. The result of this council was, that they ought to accede to the will of Charles II., and renounce the advantages which the second treaty of partition held out to France. It was alleged, as the reason of this resolution, that by refusing to accept that will, Louis must either abandon altogether his

pretensions to the Spanish monarchy, or engage in an expensive war to carry into effect a treaty of partition as proposed, in this latter case, in which the cooperation of the two powers, Louis XIV. having acceded to the will, Philip of Anjou, by the Spaniards, and Madrid on the 14th of October, 1700, European powers, such as Sweden, England, Holland, the North, acknowledged Portugal and the Duke of Savoy, in violation of political affairs. The North, was such, that for Louis XIV., with the preservation of the Spanish monarchy; but he sought everything to raise all the powers, that he aimed at a universal monarchy, a union with Spain. Instead of opposition, he gave it when he was departing of preserving his rights, the Dutch dreaded no French; making envoys to the Netherlands, which the barrier against France appeared to be equally

It would have been these maritime points, who, since the death of Orange, to the crown were in their hand without being swayed. Maintained authority from produce a French army; and on this occasion were quartered in various parts, according to a stipulation in Spain, were disarmed. A powerful motive in the States-General against the difficulty, however, the British Parliament to give that House were availed of the Continent; and entered the minds and interests of Louis XIV. having formed a plan of that prince as the English Parliament had joined the Dutch alliance. A new and powerful alliance against Louis. The Empress, the Empire, the Russian, and the Duke of Prussia, and the Duke of Saxe. The allies of the Spanish Netherlands, the Kingdom of the Two Sicilies; and never to part with Spain.

At the commencement of the time maintained the arms, notwithstanding the necessities he had to of a campaign of 1704 that on one reverse was of

pretensions to the Spanish monarchy, or undertake an expensive war to obtain by conquest what the treaty of partition assigned him; without being able, in this latter case, to reckon on the effectual co-operation of the two maritime courts.

Louis XIV. having therefore resolved to accede to the will, Philip of Anjou was proclaimed king by the Spaniards, and made his solemn entry into Madrid on the 14th of April, 1701. Most of the European powers, such as the States of Italy, Sweden, England, Holland, and the kingdoms of the North, acknowledged Philip V.; the King of Portugal and the Duke of Savoy even concluded treaties of alliance with him. Moreover the situation of political affairs in Germany, Hungary, and the North, was such, that it would have been easy for Louis XIV., with prudent management, to preserve the Spanish crown on the head of his grandson; but he seemed, as if on purpose, to do everything to raise all Europe against him. It was alleged, that he aimed at the chimerical project of universal monarchy, and the re-union of France with Spain. Instead of trying to do away this supposition, he gave it additional force, by issuing letters-patent in favour of Philip, at the moment when he was departing for Spain, to the effect of preserving his rights to the throne of France. The Dutch dreaded nothing so much as to see the French making encroachments on the Spanish Netherlands, which they regarded as their natural barrier against France; the preservation of which appeared to be equally interesting to England.

It would have been prudent in Louis XIV. to give these maritime powers some security on this point, who, since the elevation of William, Prince of Orange, to the crown of Great Britain, held as it were in their hands the balance of Europe. Without being swayed by this consideration, he obtained authority from the Council of Madrid to introduce a French army into the Spanish Netherlands; and on this occasion the Dutch troops, who were quartered in various places of the Netherlands, according to a stipulation with the late King of Spain, were disarmed. This circumstance became a powerful motive for King William to rouse the States-General against France. He found some difficulty, however, in drawing over the British Parliament to his views, as a great majority of that House were averse to mingle in the quarrels of the Continent; but the death of James II. altered the minds and inclinations of the English. Louis XIV. having formerly acknowledged the right of that prince as King of Great Britain, the English Parliament had no longer any hesitation in joining the Dutch and the other enemies of France. A new and powerful league was formed against Louis. The Emperor, England, the United Provinces, the Empire, the Kings of Portugal and Russia, and the Duke of Savoy, all joined it in succession. The allies engaged to restore to Austria the Spanish Netherlands, the duchy of Milan, the kingdom of the Two Sicilies, with the ports of Sicily; and never to permit the union of France with Spain.

At the commencement of the war, Louis for some time maintained the glory and superiority of his arms, notwithstanding the vast number of reverses he had to oppose. It was not until the campaign of 1704 that fortune abandoned him; and even one reverse was only succeeded by another.

The Duke of Marlborough and Prince Eugene defeated Marshal de Tallard at Hochstett, or Blenheim (Aug. 13), where he lost 30,000 men, and was himself carried prisoner to England. This disaster was followed by the loss of Bavaria, and all the French possessions beyond the Rhine. The battle which Marlborough gained (May 23, 1706) at Ramillies, in Brabant, was not less disastrous; it secured to the allies the conquest of the greater part of the Netherlands; and to increase these misfortunes, Marshal de Marsin lost the famous battle of Turin against Prince Eugene (Sept. 7), which obliged the French troops to evacuate Italy. The battle which was fought at Oudenarde, in Flanders (July 11, 1708), was not so decisive. Both sides fought with equal advantage; but the Duke of Burgundy, who was commander-in-chief of the French army, having quitted the field of battle during the night, contrary to the advice of Vendôme, Marlborough made this an occasion for claiming the victory.

At length the dreadful winter of 1709, and the battle of Malplaquet, which Marlborough gained over Villars (Sept. 11), reduced France to the greatest distress, and brought Louis under the necessity of suing for peace, and even descending to the most humiliating conditions. M. de Torcy, his minister for foreign affairs, was despatched to the Hague; and, among a number of preliminary articles, he agreed to make restitution of all the conquests which the French had made since the peace of Munster. He consented to surrender the city of Strasburg, and henceforth to possess Alsace according to the literal terms of the treaty of Munster; the throne of Spain was reserved for the archduke; and Louis consented to abandon the interests of Philip. But the allies, rendered haughty by their success, demanded of the king that he should oblige his grandson voluntarily to surrender his crown, otherwise they would compel him by force of arms, and that within the short space of two months. The conferences, which had been transferred from the Hague to Gertruydenberg, were consequently broken off, and the war continued.

In this critical state of things two unexpected events happened, which changed the face of affairs; and Louis XIV., far from being constrained to submit to the articles of the preliminaries at Gertruydenberg, saw himself even courted by England, and in a condition to dictate the law to several of the powers that were leagued against him. The Emperor Joseph I. died (April 11, 1711) without leaving any male offspring. His brother, the Archduke Charles, who took the title of King of Spain, now obtained the Imperial dignity, and became heir of all the states belonging to the German branch of the House of Austria. It appeared, therefore, that the system of equilibrium could not possibly admit the same prince to engross likewise the whole Spanish monarchy. This event was coupled with another, relative to the change which had taken place in the ministry and Parliament of Great Britain. The Whigs, who had been the ruling party since the Revolution of 1689, were suddenly supplanted by the Tories. This overthrow brought the Duke of Marlborough into disgrace, who had long stood at the head of affairs in England, as chief of the Whig faction. Queen Anne, who stood in awe of him, found no other

expedient for depriving him of his influence, than to make peace with France. L'Abbé Gualtier, who resided at London in quality of almoner to the ambassador of Charles of Austria, was despatched by her Majesty to France, to make the first overtures of peace to Louis. A secret negotiation was set on foot between the two courts, the result of which was a preliminary treaty signed at London (October 8th, 1711).

A congress was opened at Utrecht, with the view of a general pacification. The conferences which took place there after the month of February, 1712, met with long interruptions; both on account of the disinclination of several of the allied powers for peace, and because of the matters to be separately treated between France and England, which retarded the progress of the general negotiation. The battle of Denain, which Marshal Villars gained over the Earl of Albemarle (July 24), helped to render the allies more tractable. Peace was at length signed at Utrecht in the month of April, 1713, between France and the chief belligerent powers. The Emperor alone refused to take part in it, as he could not resolve to abandon his claims to the Spanish monarchy.

The grand aim of England in that transaction was to limit the overwhelming power of France; for this purpose she took care, in that treaty, to establish as a fundamental and inviolable law, the clause which ordained that the kingdoms of France and Spain never should be united. To effect this, it was necessary that Philip of Anjou should formally renounce his right to the crown of France; while his brother, the Duke de Berri, as well as the Duke of Orleans, should do the same in regard to the claims which they might advance to the Spanish monarchy. The deeds of these renunciations, drawn up and signed in France and in Spain, in presence of the English ambassadors, were inserted in the treaty of Utrecht; as were also the letters-patent which revoked and annulled those that Louis had given for preserving the right of the Duke of Anjou to the succession of the French crown. Louis XIV. promised for himself, his heirs and successors, never to attempt either to prevent or elude the effect of these renunciations; and failing the descendants of Philip, the Spanish succession was secured to the Duke of Savoy, his male descendants, and the other princes of his family, to the exclusion of the French princes.

Another fundamental clause of the treaty of Utrecht bore, that no province, city, fortress, or place, in the Spanish Netherlands, should ever be ceded, transferred, or granted to the crown of France; nor to any prince or princess of French extraction, under any title whatever. These provinces, designed to serve as a barrier for the Low Countries against France, were adjudged to the Emperor and the House of Austria, together with the kingdom of Naples, the ports of Tuscany, and the duchy of Milan; and as the Emperor was not a party to the treaty, it was agreed that the Spanish Netherlands should remain as a deposit in the hands of the States-General, until that prince should arrange with them respecting the barrier-towns. The same stipulation was made in regard to that part of the French Netherlands which Louis had ceded in favour of the Emperor; such as Menin, Tournay, Furnes, and Furnes-Ambacht,

the fortress of Kenock, Ypres, and their dependencies.

England, in particular, obtained by this treaty various and considerable advantages. Louis XIV. withdrew his protection from the Pretender, and engaged never to give him harbour in France. The succession to the throne of Great Britain was guaranteed to the House of Hanover. They agreed to raze the fortifications of the port of Dunkirk, which had so much excited the jealousy of England; while France likewise ceded to her Hudson's Bay and Straits, the Island of St. Christopher, Nova Scotia, and Newfoundland in America. Spain gave up Gibraltar and Minorca, both of which had been conquered by the English during the war; they secured to her, besides, for thirty years, the privilege of furnishing negroes for the Spanish American colonies.

The King of Prussia obtained the Spanish part of Gueldres, with the city of that name, and the district of Kessel, in lieu of the principality of Orange, which was given to France; though he had claims to it as the heir of William III., King of England. The kingdom of Sicily was adjudged to the Duke of Savoy, to be possessed by him and his male descendants; and they confirmed to him the grants which the Emperor had made him, of that part of the duchy of Milan which had belonged to the Duke of Mantua, as also Alexandria, Valencia, the Irmellino, and the Valley of Sesia. Finally, Sardinia was reserved for the Elector of Bavaria, the ally of France in that war.

As the Emperor had not acceded to the treaty of Utrecht, the war was continued between him and France. Marshal Villars took Landau and Friberg in Brisgaw; afterwards a conference took place between him and Prince Eugene at Badenstadt; new preliminaries were there drawn up, and a congress was opened at Baden in Switzerland, where the peace was signed (September 7th, 1714). The former treaties, since the peace of Westphalia, were there renewed. The Elector of Cologne and Bavaria, who had been put to the ban of the Empire, and deprived of their estates, were there fully re-established. Sardinia, which had been assigned to the Elector of Bavaria by the treaty of Utrecht, remained in possession of the Emperor, who likewise recovered Brisach and Friberg in Brisgaw, instead of Landau, which had been ceded to France.

Louis XIV. did not long survive this latter treaty. Never did any sovereign patronize literature and the fine arts like him. Many celebrated academies owe their origin to his auspices, such as the Academy of Inscriptions, Belles-Lettres, Sciences, Painting, and Architecture. His reign was illustrious for eminent men, and talents of every description, which were honoured and encouraged by him. He even extended his favour to the philosophers and literati of foreign countries. This prince has been reproached for his great partiality to the Jesuits, his confessors, and for the high importance which he attached to the dispute between the Jansenists and the Molinists, which gave rise to the famous bull *Unigenitus*, approved by the clergy, and published by the king as a law of the state over all France. This illustrious prince ended his days after a reign of seventy-two years, fertile in great events; he transmitted the crown to his great grandson, Louis XV.

who was only five years on the throne (Sept. 1, 1740).

In the course of the events happened in the reign of Leopold I., having a right to demand subsidies to settle certain matters which had decided, the situation continued to the present had been declared permanent Empire. The peace was an eighth electorate of Wittenbaeh; the emperor, in favour of the House of Brunswick family, known by the name, or Hanover, was whom the emperor intended to his heirs, obliging to furnish Austria and troops, for carrying off the Turks. This innovation in the Empire, hostile to it; and the shared, that the new emperor, their dignity, and tenacity. The Duke especially protested against as given to the young emperor, in spite of a law of primogeniture established in Brunswick.

A confederacy was formed. A confederacy was the electorate. The allied assembly held at Nuremberg apply to the powers of the Westphalia. France these princes; she concluded Denmark, a treaty of a ninth electorate, and of the Empire, that she was a blow aimed at the course of time, however delayed. The princes separate, and the introduction took place in 1708. A pact, which annexed a Catholic electors should voting vote, in cases where electors should Catholics. By the same permit, who had formerly the election of the emperor, and the deliberations of the College, on condition, an electoral qualification.

The imperial capitulation was very new, about the beginning of the century. A difference between the members of the German article of public thing illegal, that the right of drawing they maintained, with these compacts should be mental law of the Empire should have the de whole diet. The present there should be laid

who was only five years of age when he mounted the throne (Sept. 1, 1715).

In the course of this period, several memorable events happened in Germany. The emperor, Leopold I., having assembled a diet at Ratisbon, to demand subsidies against the Turks, and to settle certain matters which the preceding diet had left undecided, the sittings of that assembly were continued to the present time, without ever having been declared permanent by any formal law of the Empire. The peace of Westphalia had instituted an eighth electorate for the palatine branch of Wittelsbach; the emperor, Leopold I., erected a ninth, in favour of the younger branch of the House of Brunswick. The first elector of this family, known by the name of Brunswick-Lunenbourg, or Hanover, was the Duke Ernest Augustus, whom the emperor invested in his new dignity, to descend to his heirs male, on account of his engaging to furnish Austria with supplies in money and troops, for carrying on the war against the Turks. This innovation met with decided opposition in the Empire. Several of the electors were hostile to it; and the whole body of princes declared, that the new electorate was prejudicial to their dignity, and tended to introduce an electoral oligarchy. The Duke of Brunswick-Wolfenbützel especially protested against the preference which was given to the younger branch of his house over the elder, in spite of family compacts, and the right of primogeniture established in the House of Brunswick.

A confederacy was thus formed against the ninth electorate. The allied princes resolved, in an assembly held at Nuremberg, to raise an army, and apply to the powers that had guaranteed the treaty of Westphalia. France espoused the quarrel of these princes; she concluded with the King of Denmark, a treaty of alliance and subsidy against the ninth electorate, and declared, before the diet of the Empire, that she regarded this innovation as a blow aimed at the treaty of Westphalia. In

course of time, however, these animosities were allayed. The princes recognized the ninth electorate, and the introduction of the new elector took place in 1708. A decree was passed at the diet, which annexed a clause to his admission, that the Catholic electors should have the privilege of a casting vote, in cases where the number of Protestant electors should happen to equal that of the Catholics. By the same decree, the King of Bohemia, who had formerly never been admitted but at the election of the emperors, obtained a voice in all the deliberations of the Empire and the Electoral College, on condition of his paying, in time coming, an electoral quota for the kingdom of Bohemia.

The imperial capitulations assumed a form entirely new, about the beginning of the eighteenth century. A difference had formerly existed among the members of the Germanic body on this important article of public law. They regarded it as a thing illegal, that the electors alone should claim the right of drawing up the capitulations; and they maintained, with much reason, that before these compacts should have the force of a fundamental law of the Empire, it was necessary that they should have the deliberation and consent of the whole diet. The princes, therefore, demanded, that there should be laid before the diet a scheme

of perpetual capitulation, to serve as a rule for the electors on every new election. That question had already been debated at the Congress of Westphalia, and sent back by it for the decision of the diet. There it became the subject of long discussion; and it was not till the interregnum, which followed the death of the Emperor Joseph I., that the principal points of the perpetual capitulation were finally settled. The plan then agreed to was adopted as the basis of the capitulation, which they prescribed to Charles VI. and his successors. Among other articles, a clause was inserted regarding the election of a king of the Romans. This, it was agreed, should never take place during the emperor's life, except in a case of urgent necessity; and that the proscription of an elector, prince, or state of the Empire, should never take place, without the consent of the diet, and observing the formalities enjoined by the new capitulation.

There were three electoral families of the Empire who were raised to the royal dignity; viz., those of Saxony, Brandenburg, and Brunswick-Lunenbourg. Augustus II., Elector of Saxony, after having made a profession of the Catholic religion, was elected to the throne of Poland; a dignity which was afterwards conferred, also by election, on his son Augustus III. That change of religion did not prevent the Electors of Saxony from remaining at the head of the Protestant interest in the Diet of the Empire, as they had given them assurance that they would make no innovations in the religion of their country, and that they would appoint a council entirely composed of Protestant members, for administering the affairs of the Empire. These princes, however, lost part of their influence; and so far was the crown of Poland, which was purely elective, from augmenting the greatness and real power of their house, that, on the contrary, it served to exhaust and enfeeble Saxony, by involving it in ruinous wars, which ended in the desolation of that fine country, the alienation of the electoral domains, and the increase of the debts and burdens of the state.

If the royal dignity of Poland was prejudicial to the House of Saxony, it was by no means so to Prussia, which the House of Brandenburg acquired soon after. The elector, John Sigismund, on succeeding to the duchy of Prussia, had acknowledged himself a vassal and tributary of the crown of Poland. His grandson, Frederic William, took advantage of the turbulent situation in which Poland was placed at the time of the invasion of Charles X. of Sweden, to obtain a grant of the sovereignty of Prussia, by a treaty which he concluded with that republic at Weau (19th September, 1657). Poland, in renouncing the territorial rights which she exercised over Ducal Prussia, stipulated for the reversion of these same rights, on the extinction of the male line of the electoral House of Brandenburg.

Frederic I., the son and successor of Frederic William, having become sovereign of Ducal Prussia, thought himself authorized to assume the royal dignity. The elevation of his cousin-german, the Prince of Orange, to the throne of Great Britain, and of his next neighbour, the Elector of Saxony, to the sovereignty of Poland, tempted his ambition, and induced him to enter into a negotiation on the subject with the court of Vienna. The

Emperor Leopold promised to acknowledge him as King of Prussia, on account of a supply of 10,000 men which Frederic promised to furnish him in the war of the Spanish succession, which was then commencing. To remove all apprehensions on the part of Poland, who might perhaps offer some opposition, the elector signed a reversal, bearing, that the royal dignity of Prussia should in no way prejudice the rights and possessions of the king and states of Poland over Polish Prussia; that neither he nor his successors should attempt to found claims on that part of Prussia; and that the clause in the treaty of Welau, which secured the reversion of the territorial right of Ducal Prussia, on the extinction of the heirs male of Frederic William, should remain in full force and vigour, never to be infringed by the new king or any of his successors. After these different conventions, the elector repaired to Konigsberg, where he was proclaimed King of Prussia (18th January, 1701). It is worthy of remark, that on the ceremony of his coronation, he put the crown on his own head.

All the European powers acknowledged the new king, with the exception of France and Spain, with whom he soon engaged in war. The Teutonic knights, bearing in mind their ancient claims over Prussia, deemed it their duty to support them by a protest, and their example was followed by the Court of Rome. Nothing is so remarkable as the opinion which the author of the *Memoirs of Brandenburg* delivers on this event. "Frederic," says he, "was flattered with nothing so much, as the externals of royalty, the pomp of ostentation, and a certain whimsical self-conceit, which was pleased with making others feel their inferiority. What at first was the mere offspring of vanity, turned out in the end to be a masterpiece of policy. The royal dignity liberated the House of Brandenburg from that yoke of servitude under which Austria had, till then, held all the princes of Germany. It was a kind of bait which Frederic held out to all his posterity, and by which he seemed to say, I have acquired for you a title, render yourselves worthy of it; I have laid the foundation of your greatness, yours is the task of completing the structure." In fact, Austria, by promoting the House of Brandenburg, seemed to have injured her own greatness. In the very bosom of the Empire, she raised up a new power, which afterwards became her rival, and seized every opportunity of aggrandizement at her expense.

As for the electoral House of Brunswick-Lunen- burg, it succeeded, as we have observed, to the throne of Great Britain, in virtue of a fundamental law of that monarchy, which admitted females to the succession of the crown. Ernest Augustus, the first elector of the Hanoverian line, had married Sophia, daughter of the Elector Palatine Frederic V., by the Princess Elizabeth of England, daughter of James I., King of Great Britain. An act of the British Parliament in 1701, extended the succession to that princess, then Electress-Dowager of Hanover and to her descendants, as being nearest heirs to the throne, according to the order established by former acts of parliament, limiting the succession to princes and princesses of the Protestant line only. The Electress Sophia, by that act, was called to the succession, in case William III., and Anne, the youngest daughter of James II., left no issue; an event which took place

on the death of Anne, in 1714, Queen of Great Britain. The Electress Sophia was not alive at that time, having died two months before the princess. George, Elector of Hanover, and son of Sophia by Ernest Augustus, then mounted the British throne (Aug. 12, 1714), to the exclusion of all the other descendants of the Princess Elizabeth, who, though they had the right of precedence, were excluded by being Catholics, in virtue of the act of parliament 1089, 1701, 1705.

The war of the Spanish succession had occasioned great changes in Italy. Spain, after having been long the leading power in that country, gave place to Austria, to whom the treaties of Utrecht and Baden had adjudged the duchy of Milan, the kingdoms of Naples and Sardinia, and the ports of Tuscany. To these she added the duchy of Mantua, of which the Emperor Joseph I. had dispossessed Duke Charles IV. of the House of Gonzaga for having espoused the cause of France in the War of the Succession. The Duke of Mirandola met with a similar fate, as the ally of the French in that war. His duchy was confiscated by the emperor, and sold to the Duke of Modena. The new aggrandizement of Austria in Italy excited the jealousy of England, lest the princes of that house should take occasion to revive their obsolete claims to the royalty of Italy and the imperial dignity; and it was this which induced the court of London to favour the elevation of the dukes of Savoy, in order to counterbalance the power of Austria in Italy.

The origin of the House of Savoy is as old as the beginning of the eleventh century, when we find a person named Berthold in possession of Savoy, at that time a province of the kingdom of Burgundy or Arles. The grandson of Berthold married Adelaide de Suza, daughter and heiress of Mainfroi, Marquis of Italy and Lord of Suza. The marriage brought the House of Savoy considerable possessions in Italy, such as the marquise of Susa, the duchy of Turin, Piedmont, and Val d'Aosta (1097). Humbert II., Count of Savoy, conquered the province of Tarentum. Thomas, one of his successors, acquired by marriage the barony of Faucigny. Amadeus V. was invested by the Emperor Henry VII. in the city and county of Aosta. Amadeus VII. received the voluntary submission of the inhabitants of Nice, which he had dismembered from Provence, together with the counties of Tenda and Boglio; having taken advantage of the intestine dissensions in that country, and the conflict between the factions of Duran and Anjou, who disputed the succession of Naples and the county of Provence. Amadeus VIII. purchased from Otho de Villars the county of Geneva, which was created, by the Emperor Sigismund, first Duke of Savoy (Feb. 19, 1416).

The rivalry which had subsisted between France and Austria since the end of the fifteenth century, placed the House of Savoy in a situation extremely difficult. Involved in the wars which had arisen between these two powers in Italy, it became necessarily more than once the victim of political circumstances. Duke Charles III., having allied himself with Charles V., was deprived of his estates by France; and his son Philibert, noted for his exploits in the campaigns of Flanders, did not obtain restitution of them until the peace of Chateau Cambresis. The Dukes Charles Emanuel II., and

ator Amadeus II., in the wars which during the seventeenth century, terminated by the treaty of Utrecht in the years 1713, in the Spanish succession, was first for his son-in-law taking upon himself the French army in the danger of an advantageous offer, he thought proper to form a grand alliance with almost again been France and Italy, taken the siege of Geneva forced their arms to the place, and the emperor granted different estates by his accession to the conferrat, the province, the country by the Lumelline, was to be possessed by the dukes, as fiefs holding empire. The peace of Utrecht was to the duke; and the equilibrium of power, by that treaty, and of Sicily, which that island was ceded to the duke, that on the contrary, that kingdom of the same treaty they of that house, the Spanish monarchy; a solemn law passed by subsequent treaties between the powers and Europe, of Spain at Palmbishop of that city refused to acknowledge the emperor and in proportion as declined in power, the government, the want of qualifications, favourites. At length, the weakness of France despoiled her by those cessions she treaties of Aix-la-Chapelle. Charles II. of the Spanish line of the house of Bourbon (Nov. 1700), a long succession, as well competitors appeared in the person of Louis XIV., grandson of Louis XIV. and the wishes of the Emperor Austria, younger son of the Emperor, was supported by a great number of powers had raised a claim to the throne of Philip, who had been assisted by the allies of the Emperor, and several years, when assisted by the allies

for Amadeus II., experienced similar indignity, in the wars which agitated France and Spain during the seventeenth century, and which were terminated by the treaties of the Pyrenees and Utrecht in the years 1659, 1696. In the war of the Spanish succession, Victor Amadeus II. declared first for his son-in-law, Philip King of Spain, then taking upon himself the chief command of the French army in Italy; but afterwards, perceiving the danger of his situation, and seduced by the advantageous offers which the emperor made him, he thought proper to alter his plan, and joined the grand alliance against France. Savoy and Piedmont again became the theatre of the war between France and Italy. The French having undertaken the siege of Turin, the duke and Prince Eugene forced their army in its entrenchments before the place, and obliged them to abandon Italy. The emperor granted the duke the investiture of the different estates which he had secured to him, by his accession to the grand alliance; such as Montserrat, the provinces of Alexandria and Valencia, the country between the Tanaro and the Po, the Lumelline, Val Sessia, and the Vigevanaso, to be possessed by him and his male descendants, as fiefs holding of the emperor and the empire.

The peace of Utrecht confirmed these possessions to the duke; and England, the better to secure the equilibrium of Italy and Europe, granted him, by that treaty, the royal dignity, with the island of Sicily, which she had taken from Spain. That island was ceded to him under the express clause, that, on the extinction of the male line of Savoy, that kingdom should revert to Spain. By the same treaty they secured to the male descendants of that house, the right of succession to the Spanish monarchy; and that clause was confirmed by a solemn law passed in the cortes of Spain, and by subsequent treaties concluded between these powers and Europe. The duke was crowned king of Spain at Palermo (Dec. 21, 1713), by the bishop of that city; and the only persons who refused to acknowledge him in that new capacity were the emperor and the pope.

In proportion as France increased, Spain had declined in power, in consequence of the vices of her government, the feebleness of her princes, and the want of qualifications in their ministers and favourites. At length, under the reign of Charles II., the weakness of that monarchy was such, that France despoiled her with impunity, as appears by those cessions she was obliged to make by the treaties of Aix-la-Chapelle, Nimeguen, and Ryswick. Charles II. was the last prince of the Spanish line of the house of Austria. At his death (Nov. 1700), a long and bloody war ensued about the succession, as we have already related. Two competitors appeared for the crown. Philip of Anjou, grandson of Louis XIV., had on his side the will of Charles II., the efforts of his grandfather, and the wishes of the Spanish nation. Charles of Austria, younger son of the Emperor Leopold I., was supported by a formidable league, which political considerations and a jealousy of the other powers had raised against France.

Philip, who had been placed on the throne by the Spaniards, had already resided at Madrid for several years, when the Austrian prince, his rival, assisted by the allied fleet, took possession of Bar-

celona (Oct. 9, 1705), where he established his capital. The incessant defeats which France experienced at this period, obliged Philip twice to abandon his capital and seek his safety in flight. He owed his restoration for the first time to Marshal de Berwick, and the victory which that general gained over the allies near Almanza, in New Castile (April 25, 1707). The archduke having afterwards advanced as far as Madrid, the Duke de Vendôme undertook to repulse him. That general, in conjunction with Philip V., defeated the allies, who were commanded by General Stahrenberg, near Villa Viciosa (Dec. 10, 1710). These two victories contributed to establish Philip on his throne. The death of Joseph I., which happened soon after, and the elevation of his brother, the Archduke Charles, to the Imperial throne and the crowns of Hungary and Bohemia, accelerated the conclusion of the peace of Utrecht, by which the Spanish monarchy was preserved to Philip V. and his descendants. They deprived him, however, in virtue of that treaty, of the Netherlands and the Spanish possessions in Italy, such as the Milanais, the ports of Tuscany, and the kingdoms of Naples, Sicily, and Sardinia.

The conditions which England had exacted at the treaty of Utrecht, to render effectual the renunciation of Philip V. to the crown of France, as well as that of the French princes to the monarchy of Spain, having made it necessary to assemble the Cortes or States-General, Philip took advantage of that circumstance to change the order of succession which till then had subsisted in Spain, and which was known by the name of the *Castilian Succession*. A law was passed at the Cortes (1713), by which it was ordained that females should never be admitted to the crown, except in default of the male line of Philip; that the male heirs should succeed according to the order of primogeniture; that, failing the male line of that prince, the crown should fall to the eldest daughter of the last reigning king and her descendants; and, failing them, to the sister or nearest relation of the last king; always keeping in force the right of primogeniture, and the preference of the male heirs in the order of succession.

France, by the sixtieth article of the treaty of the Pyrenees, having renounced the protection of Portugal, the war between Spain and this latter power was resumed with new vigour. Alphonso VI., King of Portugal, finding himself abandoned by his allies, resolved to throw himself on the favour of England. The English granted him supplies, in virtue of a treaty which he concluded with them (June 23, 1661), and by which he ceded to them the city of Tangiers in Africa, and the Isle of Bombay in India. France, who well knew that it was her interest not to abandon Portugal entirely, rendered her likewise all the secret assistance in her power. The Count Schomberg passed over to that kingdom with a good number of officers, and several companies of French troops. The Portuguese, under the command of that general, gained two victories over the Spaniards at Almeyda, near Estremos (1663), and at Montes Claros, or Villa Viciosa (1665), which re-established their affairs, and contributed to secure the independence of Portugal. When the war took place about the Right of Devolution, the court of Lisbon formed a new alliance with France. Spain then learned

that it would be more for her interest to abandon her projects of conquering Portugal, and accept the proposals of accommodation tendered to her by the mediation of England.

It happened, in the meantime, that Alphonso VI., a prince of vicious habits, and of a ferocious and brutal temper, was dethroned (Nov. 23, 1667), and the Infant Don Pedro, his brother, was declared regent of the kingdom. The queen of Alphonso, Mary of Savoy, who had managed the whole intrigue, obtained, from the court of Rome, a dissolution of her marriage with Alphonso, and espoused the regent, her brother-in-law (April 2, 1668). That prince would willingly have fulfilled the engagements which his predecessor had contracted with France, but the English ambassador having drawn over the Cortes of Portugal to his interests, the regent was obliged to make peace with Spain, which was signed at Lisbon, February 13th, 1668. The Spaniards there treated with the Portuguese as a sovereign and independent nation. They agreed to make mutual restitution of all they had taken possession of during the war, with the exception of the city of Ceuta, in Africa, which remained in the power of Spain. The subjects of both states obtained the restoration of all property alienated or confiscated during the war. That peace was followed by another, which Portugal concluded at the Hague, with the United Provinces of the Netherlands (July 31, 1669), who were permitted to retain the conquests they had made from the Portuguese in the East Indies.

The court of Lisbon was soon after involved in the war of the Spanish Succession, which divided all Europe. Don Pedro II. had at first acknowledged Philip V., and even contracted an alliance with him; but yielding afterwards to the influence of the British minister, as well as of the court of Vienna, he joined the Grand Alliance against France.³ The Portuguese made a distinguished figure in that war, chiefly during the campaign of 1706, when, with the assistance of the English, they penetrated as far as Madrid, and there proclaimed Charles of Austria.

The Portuguese, by one of the articles of their treaty of accession to the grand alliance, had been given to expect, that certain important places in Spanish Estremadura and Galicia would be ceded to them at the general peace. That engagement was never fulfilled. The treaty of peace, concluded at Utrecht (6th February, 1715), between Spain and Portugal, had ordered the mutual restitution of all conquests made during the war. The treaty of Lisbon, of 1668, was then renewed, and especially the articles which stipulated for the restitution of all confiscated property. The only point which they yielded to the Portuguese was that which referred to the colony of St. Sacramento, which the Portuguese governor of Rio Janeiro had established (1680) on the northern bank of the river La Plata, in South America, which was opposed by Spain. By the sixth article of her treaty with Portugal, she renounced all her former claims and pretensions over the above colony.

A similar dispute had arisen between France and Portugal, relative to the northern bank of the Amazons river, and the territories about Cape North, in America, which the French maintained belonged to them, as making part of French Guiana. The Portuguese having constructed there

the fort of Macapa, it was taken by the French governor of Cayenne. By the treaty of Utrecht, it was agreed, between France and Portugal, that both banks of the river Amazons should belong entirely to Portugal; and that France should renounce all right and pretensions whatever to the territories of Cape North, lying between the rivers Amazons and Japoc, or Vincent Pinson, in South America.

In England, an interregnum of eleven years followed the death of Charles I. Oliver Cromwell, the leader of the Independent party, passed two Acts of Parliament, one of which abolished the House of Lords, and the other the royal dignity. The kingly office was suppressed, as useless to the nation, oppressive and dangerous to the interests and liberties of the people; and it was decided, that whoever should speak of the restoration of the Stuarts should be regarded as a traitor to his country. The kingdom being thus changed into a republic, Cromwell took on himself the chief direction of affairs. This ambitious man was not long in monopolizing the sovereign authority (1653). He abolished the parliament called the *Rump*, which had conferred on him his power and military commission. He next assembled a new parliament of the three kingdoms, to the number of 144 members; and he took care to have it composed of individuals whom he knew to be devoted to his interests. Accordingly, they resigned the whole authority into his hands. An act, called the Act of Government, conferred on him the supreme authority, under the title of Protector of the three kingdoms; with the privilege of making war and peace, and assembling every three years a parliament, which should exercise the legislative power conjointly with himself.

Cromwell governed England with a more uncontrolled power than that of her own kings had been. In 1651, he passed the famous Navigation Act, which contributed to increase the commerce of Great Britain, and gave her marine a preponderance over that of all other nations. That extraordinary man raised England in the estimation of foreigners, and made his protectorate be respected by all Europe. After a war which he had carried on against the Dutch, he obliged them, by the treaty of Westminster (1654), to lower their flag to British vessels, and to abandon the cause of the Stuarts. Entering into alliance with France against Spain, he took from the latter the island of Jamaica (1655) and the port of Dunkirk (1658).

After his death, the generals of the army combined to restore the old parliament, called the *Rump*. Richard Cromwell, who succeeded his father, soon resigned the Protectorate (April 25, 1659). Dissensions having arisen between the parliament and the generals, Monk, who was governor of Scotland, marched to the assistance of the parliament; and, after having defeated the Independent Generals, he proceeded to assemble a new parliament composed of both houses. No sooner was this parliament assembled, than they decided for the restoration of the Stuarts, in the person of Charles II. (18th May, 1660).

That prince made his public entry into London, in the month of May, 1660. His first care was to take vengeance on those who had been chiefly instrumental in the death of his father. He rescinded all Acts of Parliament passed since the

year 1633, and re-
 England and Scotch
 usity for absolute
 maxims which he ha
 ers, he adopted me
 the parliament; an
 than once to prom
 eign, in consequ
 and agitation, wh
 new revolution.⁴ T
 Tories, so famous
 ise about this time.
 Gordon (Charles for h
 consideration of the
 of his character. But
 I., who succeeded
 rone (16th Feb., 16
 the minds of his s
 honour, and his ex
 of Rome, and the Jes
 was he raised to the
 to change the religio
 ven still more desp
 tione. Encouraged
 him money and troo
 England that had ke
 nance, and caused t
 the king can dispen
 himself of this decis
 several statutes issue
 permitted them the
 tion within the thr
 ave them a preferen
 ough, he even solici
 to reside at his court;
 and Dada, to whom
 this mission, he gave
 entry to Windsor (16
 refused to publish the
 sholes, were treated
 imprisoned by his ord
 During these trans
 Modena, happened t
 20th June, 1688), kn
 of the Pretender. A
 children for more tha
 to gain credit to a re
 was a spurious child.
 nage with Anne Hy
 Clarendon, had two
 and regarded, till th
 Mary, the eldest, wa
 of Orange, and Ann
 younger son of Fred
 The English Protest
 that all their wrongs
 nimate with the dea
 session of the Prince
 being disappointed i
 irth of the Prince o
 to dethrone the king
 with the Whigs in off
 of Orange. William
 feet, made a descer
 5,000 men at Torb
 experiencing the sma
 James, who, seeing hi
 ary, took the resoluti
 where he had alread
 the young Prince of

by the French
of Utrecht,
and Portugal,
which should
be should be
whatever to
between the
Pinson, in South

eleven years
Oliver Cromwell
arty, passed
which abolished
the royal dignity,
as useless to
to the interests
it was decided,
the restoration
a traitor to his
was changed into
himself the chief
ous man was not
reign authority
ment called the
him his power
ext assembled a
kingdoms, to the
he took care to
from he knew
Accordingly, they
his hands. An
not, conferred on
the title of Proth
the privilege
assembling every
should exercise
with himself.

With a more un
own kings had
ous Navigation
e the commerce
urine a propo
ions. That ca
the estimation
ectorate he us
ar which he ha
bliged them, by
to lower their
ndon the cause
ce with France
er the island of
nkirk (1658).
the army com
ent, called the
succeeded his
rate (April 22,
a between the
k, who was go
the assistance of
g defeated the
d to assemble a
n houses. No
led, than they
Stuarts, in the
60).

ity into London,
first care was
ad been chiefly
ather. He res
ssed since the

year 1633, and re-established Episcopacy both in England and Scotland. Instigated by his propensity for absolute power, and following the maxims which he had imbibed from his predecessors, he adopted measures which were opposed by the parliament; and even went so far as more than once to pronounce their dissolution. His reign, in consequence, was a scene of faction and agitation, which proved the forerunners of a new revolution.⁴ The appellation of *Whigs* and *Tories*, so famous in English history, took its rise about this time. We could almost, however, pardon Charles for his faults and irregularities, in consideration of the benevolence and amiableness of his character. But it was otherwise with James II., who succeeded his brother on the British throne (16th Feb., 1685). That prince alienated the minds of his subjects by his haughty demeanour, and his extravagant zeal for the church of Rome, and the Jesuits his confessors. Scarcely was he raised to the throne, when he undertook to change the religion of his country, and to govern still more despotically than his brother had done. Encouraged by Louis XIV., who offered him money and troops, he was the first King of England that had kept on foot an army in time of peace, and caused the legislature to decide, that the king can dispense with the laws. Availing himself of this decision, he dispensed with the several statutes issued against the Catholics; he permitted them the public exercise of their religion within the three kingdoms, and gradually gave them a preference in all places of trust. At length, he even solicited the pope to send a nuncio to reside at his court; and on the arrival of Ferdinand Dada, to whom Innocent XI. had confided this mission, he gave him a public and solemn banquet to Windsor (1687). Seven bishops, who had refused to publish the declaration respecting Catholics, were treated as guilty of sedition, and imprisoned by his order in the Tower.

During these transactions, the Queen, Mary of Modena, happened to be delivered of a prince (20th June, 1688), known in history by the name of the Pretender. As her Majesty had had no children for more than six years, it was not difficult to gain credit to a report, that the young prince was a spurious child. James II., by his first marriage with Anne Hyde, daughter of the Earl of Clarendon, had two daughters, both Protestants, and regarded, till then, as heirs to the crown. Mary, the eldest, was married to William, Prince of Orange, and Anne, the youngest, to George, younger son of Frederic III., King of Denmark. The English Protestants had flattered themselves that all their wrongs and misfortunes would terminate with the death of James II. and the accession of the Princess of Orange to the throne. Being disappointed in these expectations by the birth of the Prince of Wales, their only plan was to dethrone the king. The Tories even joined with the Whigs in offering the crown to the Prince of Orange. William III., supported by the Dutch fleet, made a descent on England, and landed 15,000 men at Torbay (5th Nov., 1688), without experiencing the smallest resistance on the part of James, who, seeing himself abandoned by the military, took the resolution of withdrawing to France, where he had already sent his queen and his son, the young Prince of Wales. He afterwards re-

turned to Ireland, where he had a strong party; but being conquered by William, at the battle of the Boyne (11th July, 1690), he was obliged to return to France, where he ended his days.

Immediately after the flight of James, the parliament of England declared, by an act, that as he had violated the fundamental law of the constitution, and abandoned the kingdom, the throne was become vacant. They, therefore, unanimously conferred the crown on William III., Prince of Orange, and Mary his spouse (February 22, 1689); intrusting the administration of affairs to the prince alone. In redressing the grievances of the nation, they set new limits to the royal authority. By an Act, called the *Declaration of Rights*, they decreed, that the king could neither suspend, nor dispense with the laws; that he could institute no new courts, nor levy money under any pretence whatever, nor maintain an army in time of peace without the consent of parliament. Episcopacy was abolished in Scotland (1694), and the liberty of the press sanctioned. The succession of the crown was regulated by different Acts of Parliament, one of which fixed it in the Protestant line, to the exclusion of Catholics. Next, after William and Mary and their descendants, was the Princess Anne and her descendants. A subsequent Act conferred the succession on the House of Hanover (1701), under the following conditions:—That the king or queen of that family, on their accession to the throne, should be obliged to conform to the High Church, and the laws of 1689; that, without the consent of Parliament, they should never engage the nation in any war for the defence of their hereditary dominions, nor go out of the kingdom; and that they should never appoint foreigners to offices of trust.

The rivalry between France and England assumed a higher tone under the reign of William III.; and was increased by the powerful efforts which France was making to improve her marine, and extend her navigation and her commerce. The colonies which she founded in America and the Indies, by bringing the two nations more into contact, tended to foment their jealousies, and multiply subjects of discord and division between them. From that time England eagerly seized every occasion for occupying France on the Continent of Europe; and the whole policy of William, as we have seen, had no other aim than to thwart the ambitious views of Louis XIV. If this rivalry excited and prolonged wars which inflicted many calamities on the world, it became, likewise, a powerful stimulus for the contending nations to develop their whole faculties; to make the highest attainments in the sciences, of which they were susceptible; and to carry arts and civilization to the remotest countries in the world.

William III. was succeeded by Anne (in 1702). It was in her reign that the grand union between England and Scotland was accomplished, which incorporated them into one kingdom, by means of the same order of succession, and only one parliament. That princess had the honour of maintaining the balance of Europe against France, by the clauses which she got inserted into the treaty of Utrecht. At her death (12th August, 1714), the throne of Great Britain passed to George I., the Elector of Hanover, whose mother, Sophia, de-

rived her right to the British throne from James I. her maternal grandfather.

The power and political influence of the United Provinces of the Netherlands had increased every day, since Spain acknowledged their independence by the treaty of Munster (1648). Their extensive commerce to all parts of the globe, and their flourishing marine, attracted the admiration of all Europe. Sovereigns courted their alliance; and the Hague, the capital of the States-General, became, in course of time, the centre of European politics. That republic was the rival of England in all her commercial relations; and she ventured also to dispute with her the empire of the sea, by refusing to lower her flag to British vessels. These disputes gave rise to bloody wars between the two states, in which the famous Dutch Admirals, Tromp and De Ruyter, distinguished themselves by their maritime exploits. De Ruyter entered the Thames with the Dutch fleet (1667), advanced to Chatham, burnt the vessels in the roads there, and threw the City of London into great consternation. Nevertheless, by the treaties of Breda (1667) and Westminster (1674), they agreed that their vessels and fleets should lower their flag when they met either one or more ships carrying the British flag, and that over all the sea, from Cape Finisterre, in Galicia, to the centre of Statt in Norway; but the States-General preserved Surinam, which they had conquered during the war; and at the treaty of commerce, which was signed at Breda, the Navigation Act was modified in their favour, in so far that the produce and merchandise of Germany were to be considered as productions of the soil of the republic.

It was during these wars that a change took place with regard to the Stadtholdership of the United Provinces. William II., Prince of Orange, had alienated the hearts of his subjects by his attempts against their liberties; and having, at his death, left his wife, the daughter of Charles I. of England, pregnant of a son (1659), the States-General took the opportunity of leaving that office vacant, and taking upon themselves the direction of affairs. The suspicions which the House of Orange had excited in Cromwell by their alliance with the Stuarts, and the resentment of John de Witt, Pensionary of Holland, against the Stadtholder, caused a secret article to be added to the treaty of Westminster, by which the States of Holland and West Friesland engaged never to elect William, the posthumous son of William II., to be Stadtholder; and never to allow that the office of captain-general of the republic should be conferred on him. John de Witt likewise framed a regulation known by the name of the *Perpetual Edict*, which separated the stadtholdership from the office of captain and admiral-general, and which enacted, that these functions should never be discharged by the same individual. Having failed, however, in his efforts to make the States-General adopt this regulation, which they considered as contrary to the union, John de Witt contented himself with obtaining the approbation of the States of Holland, who even went so far as to sanction the entire suppression of the stadtholdership.

Matters continued in this situation until the time when Louis XIV. invaded Holland. His alarming progress caused a revolution in favour of

the Prince of Orange. The ruling faction, at the head of which was John de Witt, then lost the good opinion of the people. He was accused of having neglected military affairs, and left the State without defence, and a prey to the enemy. The first signal of revolution was given by the small town of Veere in Zealand. William was there proclaimed Stadtholder (June 1672), and the example of Veere was soon followed by all the cities of Holland and Zealand. Everywhere the people compelled the magistrates to confer the stadtholdership on the young prince. The Perpetual Edict was abolished, and the stadtholdership confirmed to William III. by the Assembly of States. They even rendered this dignity, as well as the office of captain-general, hereditary to all the male and legitimate descendants of the prince. It was on this occasion that the two brothers, John and Cornelius de Witt, were massacred by the people assembled at the Hague.

After William was raised to the throne of Great Britain, he still retained the stadtholdership, with the offices of captain and admiral-general of the republic. England and Holland, united under the jurisdiction of the same prince, acted therefore in concert to thwart the ambitious designs of Louis XIV.; and he felt the effects of their power chiefly in the war of the Spanish Succession, when England and the States-General made extraordinary efforts to maintain the balance of the Continent, which they thought in danger. It was in consideration of these efforts that they guaranteed to the Dutch, by the treaty of the Grand Alliance, as well as by that of Utrecht, a barrier against France, which was more amply defined by the *Barrier Treaty*, signed at Antwerp (15th November, 1715), under the mediation and guarantee of Great Britain. The provinces and towns of the Netherlands, both those that had been possessed by Charles II., and those that France had surrendered by the treaty of Utrecht, were transferred to the Emperor and the House of Austria, on condition that they should never be ceded under any title whatever; neither to France, nor to any other prince except the heirs and successors of the House of Austria in Germany. It was agreed that there should always be kept, in the Low Countries, a body of Austrian troops, from 30,000 to 35,000 men, of which the Emperor was to furnish three-fifths, and the States-General the remainder. Finally, the States-General were allowed a garrison, entirely composed of their own troops, in the cities and castles of Namur, Tournay, Menin, Furnes, Warraton, and the fortress of Kenock; while the Emperor engaged to contribute a certain sum annually for the maintenance of these troops.

Switzerland, since the confirmation of her liberty and independence by the peace of Westphalia, had constantly adhered to the system of neutrality which she had adopted; and taken no part in the broils of her neighbours, except by furnishing troops to those powers with whom she was in alliance. The fortunate inability which was the natural consequence of her union, pointed out this line of conduct, and even induced the European states to respect the Helvetic neutrality.

This profound peace, which Switzerland enjoyed by means of that neutrality, was never interrupted, except by occasional domestic quarrels, which arose from the difference of their religious opinions

Certain families, from
and fled to Zurich
sirets, and had been
This stirred up a war
antons and the Zu
Bernese; but it was
of Baden, which ren
of 1531, relative to
Some attempts hav
against liberty of co
Toggenburg, by the
roke out (1712), b
antons, and the two
and Berne. These
St. Gall from his e
Catholics of the coun
ble part of the free b
to them by the treat
Abbt then saw himse
cantous; and it was
which he concluded w
that his successor obt
Sweden, during the
supported the first ra
North. The vigour o
the weakness of her n
advantages which the
dorf, Bromsbro, and V
secured this superior
influence in the Nor
South. Christina, t
Adolphus, held the
Sweden about the mid
out to gratify her pro
resolved to abdicate t
Gustavus, Count Pa
russin-german, succe
Charles X. Being m
and ambitious only
anxious to distinguish
Casimir, King of Po
by protesting against
Sweden, Charles made
the treaty of Stumsdo
and invaded Poland.
the Elector of Brande
to his interests, he ga
the Poles near Wars
crisis, the fate of Pola
of the Czar, Alexis M
war with the Poles, h
cause with her new e
more for his advanc
the Poles, and attack
ria, and Carolia. Th
King of Denmark f
Czar; and the Electo
aining the sovereignty
by the treaty which h
Welaun, acceded in lik
object of which was
of Poland, and main
North.

Attacked by so man
ties, the King of Sw
his troops from Pola
force against Denm
minster of Holstein,
passed the Belts on
his army and artillery

Certain families, from the canton of Schweiz, had fled to Zurich on account of their religious tenets, and had been protected by that republic. This stirred up a war (1656) between the Catholic cantons and the Zurichers, with their allies the Bernese; but it was soon terminated by the peace of Baden, which renewed the clauses of the treaty of 1531, relative to these very subjects of dispute. Some attempts having afterwards been made against liberty of conscience, in the county of Toggenburg, by the Abbé of St. Gall, a new war broke out (1712), between five of the Catholic cantons, and the two Protestant cantons of Zurich and Berne. These latter expelled the Abbé of St. Gall from his estates, and dispossessed the Catholics of the county of Baden, with a considerable part of the free bailiwicks, which were granted to them by the treaty concluded at Araw. The Abbé then saw himself abandoned by the Catholic cantons; and it was only in virtue of a treaty, which he concluded with Zurich and Berne (1718), that his successor obtained his restoration.

Sweden, during the greater part of this period, supported the first rank among the powers of the North. The vigour of her government, added to the weakness of her neighbours, and the important advantages which the treaties of Stolbova, Stumsdorf, Brumsbro, and Westphalia had procured her, secured this superiority; and gave her the same influence in the North that France held in the South. Christina, the daughter of Gustavus Adolphus, held the reins of government in Sweden about the middle of the sixteenth century; but to gratify her propensity for the fine arts, she resolved to abdicate the crown (1654). Charles Gustavus, Count Palatine of Deux-Ponts, her cousin-german, succeeded her, under the title of Charles X. Being nurtured in the midst of arms, and ambitious only of wars and battles, he was anxious to distinguish himself on the throne. John Casimir, King of Poland, having provoked him, by protesting against his accession to the crown of Sweden, Charles made this an occasion of breaking the treaty of Stumsdorf, which was still in force, and invaded Poland. Assisted by Frederic William, the Elector of Brandenburg, whom he had attached to his interests, he gained a splendid victory over the Poles near Warsaw (July, 1658). At that crisis, the fate of Poland would have been decided, if the Czar, Alexis Michaelovitz, who was also at war with the Poles, had chosen to make common cause with her new enemies; but Alexis thought it more for his advantage to conclude a truce with the Poles, and attack the Swedes in Livonia, Ingria, and Carolia. The Emperor Leopold and the King of Denmark followed the example of the Czar; and the Elector of Brandenburg, after obtaining the sovereignty of the Duchy of Prussia, by the treaty which he concluded with Poland at Welaun, acted in like manner to this league—the object of which was to secure the preservation of Poland, and maintain the equilibrium of the North.

Attacked by so many and such powerful enemies, the King of Sweden determined to withdraw his troops from Poland, and direct his principal force against Denmark. Having made himself master of Holstein, Sleswick, and Jutland, he crossed the Belts on the ice (January 1658) with his army and artillery, and advanced towards the

capital of the kingdom. This bold step intimidated the Danes so much, that they submitted to those exceedingly severe conditions which Charles made them sign at Roschild (February 1658). Scarcely was this treaty concluded, when the King of Sweden broke it anew; and, under different pretexts, laid siege to Copenhagen. His intention was, if he had carried that place, to raze it to the ground, to annihilate the kingdom of Denmark, and fix his residence in the province of Schonen, where he could maintain his dominion over the North and the Baltic. The besieged Danes, however, made a vigorous defence, and they were encouraged by the example of Frederic III., who superintended in person the whole operations of the siege; nevertheless, they must certainly have yielded, had not the Dutch, who were alarmed for their commerce in the Baltic, sent a fleet to the assistance of Denmark. These republicans fought an obstinate naval battle with the Swedes in the Sound (29th October, 1658). The Swedish fleet was repulsed, and the Dutch succeeded in relieving Copenhagen, by throwing in a supply of provisions and ammunition.

The King of Sweden persisted, nevertheless, in his determination to reduce that capital. He was not even intimidated by the treaties which France, England, and Holland, had concluded at the Hague, for maintaining the equilibrium of the North; but a premature death, at the age of thirty-eight, put an end to his ambitious projects (23rd February, 1660). The regents who governed the kingdom during the minority of his son Charles XI., immediately set on foot negotiations with all the powers that were in league against Sweden. By the peace which they concluded at Copenhagen with Denmark (July 3, 1660), they surrendered to that crown several of their late conquests; reserving to themselves only the provinces of Schonen, Bleekingen, Halland, and Bohus. The Duke of Holstein-Gottorp, the protégé of Charles X., was secured by that treaty in the sovereignty of that part of Sleswick, which had been guaranteed to him by a former treaty concluded at Copenhagen. The war with Poland, and her allies the Elector of Brandenburg and the Emperor, was terminated by the peace of Oliva (May 3rd, 1660). The King of Poland gave up his pretensions to the crown of Sweden; while the former ceded to the latter the provinces of Livonia and Esthonia, and the islands belonging to them; to be possessed on the same terms that had been agreed on at the treaty of Stumsdorf in 1635. The duke of Courland was re-established in his duchy, and the sovereignty of ducal Prussia confirmed to the House of Brandenburg. Peace between Sweden and Russia was concluded at Kardis in Esthonia; while the latter power surrendered to Sweden all the places which she had conquered in Livonia.

Sweden was afterwards drawn into the war against the Dutch by Louis XIV., when she experienced nothing but disasters. She was deprived of all her provinces in the Empire, and only regained possession of them in virtue of the treaties of Zell, Nimueguen, St. Germain-en-Laye, Fontainebleau, and Lunden (1679), which she concluded successively with the powers in league against France. Immediately after that peace, a revolution happened in the government of Sweden. The abuse which the nobles made of their privi-

leges, the extravagant authority claimed by the senate, and the different methods which the grandees employed for gradually usurping the domains of the crown, had excited the jealousy of the other orders of the state. It is alleged that Baron Gillenstiern had suggested to Charles XI. the idea of taking advantage of this discontent to augment the royal authority, and humble the arrogance of the senate and the nobility. In compliance with his advice, the king assembled the estates of the kingdom at Stockholm (1680); and having quartered some regiments of his own guards in the city, he took care to remove such of the nobles as might give the greatest cause of apprehension. An accusation was lodged at the Diet against those ministers who had conducted the administration during the king's minority. To them were attributed the calamities and losses of the state, and for these they were made responsible. The senate was also implicated. They were charged with abusing their authority; and it was proposed that the States should make investigation, whether the powers which the senate had assumed were conformable to the laws of the kingdom. The States declared that the king was not bound by any other form of government than that which the constitution prescribed; that the senate formed neither a fifth order, nor an intermediate power between the king and the States; and that it ought to be held simply as a council, with whom the king might consult and advise.

A *College of Re-union* was also established at this Diet, for the purpose of making inquiry as to the lands granted, sold, mortgaged, or exchanged by preceding kings, either in Sweden or Livonia; with an offer on the part of the crown to reimburse the proprietors for such sums as they had originally paid for them. This proceeding made a considerable augmentation to the revenues of the crown; but a vast number of proprietors were completely ruined by it. A subsequent diet went even further than that of 1680. They declared, by statute, that though the king was enjoined to govern his dominions according to the laws, this did not take from him the power of altering these laws. At length the act of 1693 decreed that the king was absolute master, and sole depository of the sovereign power; without being responsible for his actions to any power on earth; and that he was entitled to govern the kingdom according to his will and pleasure.

It was in virtue of these different enactments and concessions, that the absolute power which had been conferred on Charles XI., was transmitted to the hands of his son Charles XII., who was only fifteen years of age when he succeeded his father (April 1st, 1697). By the abuse which this prince made of these dangerous prerogatives, he plunged Sweden into an abyss of troubles; and brought her down from that high rank which she had occupied in the political system of Europe, since the reign of Gustavus Adolphus. The youth of Charles appeared to his neighbours to afford them a favourable opportunity for recovering what they had lost by the conquests of his predecessors. Augustus II., King of Poland, being desirous to regain Livonia, and listening to the suggestions of a Livonian gentleman, named John Patkul, who had been proscribed in Sweden, he set on foot a negotiation with the courts of Russia and Copenhagen; the

result of which was, a secret and offensive alliance concluded between these three powers against Sweden (1699). Peter the Great, who had just conquered Azoff on the Black Sea, and equipped his first fleet, was desirous also to open up the coasts of the Baltic, of which his predecessors had been dispossessed by Sweden. War accordingly broke out in the course of the year 1700. The King of Poland invaded Livonia; the Danes fell upon Sleswick, where they attacked the Duke of Holstein-Gottorp, the ally of Sweden; while the Czar, at the head of an army of 80,000 men, laid siege to the city of Narva.

The King of Sweden, attacked by so many enemies at once, directed his first efforts against Denmark, where the danger appeared most pressing. Assisted by the fleets of England and Holland, who had guaranteed the last peace, he made a descent on the Isle of Zealand, and advanced rapidly towards Copenhagen. This obliged Frederic IV. to conclude a special peace with him at Travendahl (August 18, 1700), by which that prince consented to abandon his allies, and restore the Duke of Holstein-Gottorp to the same state in which he had been before the war. Next directing his march against the Czar in Esthonia, the young king forced the Russians from their entrenchments before Narva (November 30), and made prisoners of all the general and principal officers of the Russian army; among others, Field-Marshal General the Duke de Croi.

Having thus got clear of the Russians, the Swedish Monarch then attacked King Augustus, who had introduced a Saxon army into Poland, without being authorized by that republic. Charles vanquished that prince in the three famous battles of Riga (1701), Clissan (1702), and Pultusk (1703); and obliged the Poles to depose him, and elect in his place Stanislaus Lecksinaki, Palatine of Posen, and a protégé of his own. Two victories which were gained over the Saxons, and their allies the Russians, one at Pummie (1704), and the other at Fraustadt (1706), made Stanislaus be acknowledged by the whole republic of Poland, and enabled the King of Sweden to transfer the seat of war to Saxony. Having marched through Silesia, without the previous authority of the court of Vienna, he took Leipzig, and compelled Augustus to sign a treaty of peace at Alt-Ranstadt, by which that prince renounced his alliance with the Czar, and acknowledged Stanislaus legitimate King of Poland. John Patkul, being delivered up to the King of Sweden, according to an article in that treaty, was broken on the wheel, as being the principal instigator of the war.

The prosperity of Charles XII. had now come to an end. From this time he experienced only a series of reverses, which were occasioned as much by his passion for war, as by his indiscretions, and the unconquerable obstinacy of his character. The Russians had taken advantage of his long sojourn in Poland and Saxony, and conquered the greater part of Ingria and Livonia. The Czar had now advanced into Poland, where he had demanded of the Poles to declare an interregnum, and elect a new king. In this state of matters, the King of Sweden left Saxony to march against the Czar, and compelled him to evacuate Poland, and retire on Smolensko. Far from listening, however, to the equitable terms of peace which Peter offered

him, he persisted in Moscow, in the hope and dethroned Augustus. The innovations of the appeared to Charles affecting his object of the neighbourhood of Mollin purpose, and, instead towards the capital of and penetrated into order to meet Mazyer, who had offered to do nothing could have his determination. kraline, he separated the Haupt, who had orders, a powerful and trusted himself to that people, disposed opportunity.

This inconsiderate the penetration of the profit by it. Putt chosen body, he intended and joined him at D in the Palatinate of he fought with that was most obstinate the ear, the first had gained over regu Lewen's army. The banks of the banks remained at that provin that the famous battle which blasted all Sweden. The czar very. Nine thousand field of battle; and General Lewenhaupt between the Vorsklaw owners of war, three d accompanied by his with difficulty at Ber

This disastrous rout enemies of Sweden. between the czar, Au King of Denmark. All Poland again neck Danes made a descent achieved the conquest of Carelia. The states France in the war wishing to prevent theatre of hostilities Blague (31st March, took, under certain neutrality of the Sw as well as that of Sle King of Sweden had pending to this neut Sweden in German quered in succession the nephew of his disgrace, and stri of Denmark (1714).

In the midst of King of Sweden pers at Bender, making Turks against the R

Charles XII. invades
Russia.
Defeated at Pultowa.

PERIOD VII. A.D. 1648—1713.

Death of Charles XII.
Peace of Stockholm.
War with Russia.

125

him, he persisted in his resolution to march on to Moscow, in the hope of dethroning the czar, as he had dethroned Augustus. The discontent which the innovations of the czar had excited in Russia, appeared to Charles a favourable opportunity for effecting his object; but on reaching the neighbourhood of Mohilew, he suddenly changed his purpose, and, instead of directing his route towards the capital of Russia, he turned to the right, and penetrated into the interior of the Ukraine, in order to meet Mazeppa, Hetman of the Cossacs, who had offered to join him with all his troops. Nothing could have been more imprudent than his determination. By thus marching into the Ukraine, he separated himself from General Levenhaupt, who had brought him, according to orders, a powerful reinforcement from Livonia; and trusted himself among a fickle and inconstant people, disposed to break faith on every opportunity.

This inconsiderate step of Charles did not escape the penetration of the czar, who knew well how to profit by it. Putting himself at the head of a chosen body, he intercepted General Levenhaupt, and joined him at Desna, two miles from Propoisk, in the Palatinate of Mscislaw. The battle which he fought with that general (9th October, 1708) was most obstinate, and, by the confession of the czar, the first victory which the Russians had gained over regular troops. The remains of Levenhaupt's army having joined the king in the Ukraine, Charles undertook the siege of Pultowa, situated on the banks of the Vorsklaw, at the extreme end of that province. It was near this place, that the famous battle was fought (8th July, 1709), which blasted all the laurels of the King of Sweden. The czar gained there a complete victory. Nine thousand Swedes were left on the field of battle; and 14,000, who had retired with General Levenhaupt, towards Perevolatschna, between the Vorsklaw and the Nieper, were made prisoners of war, three days after the action. Charles, accompanied by his ally Mazeppa, saved himself with difficulty at Bender in Turkey.

This disastrous rout revived the courage of the enemies of Sweden. The alliance was renewed between the czar, Augustus II., and Frederic II., King of Denmark. Stanislaus was abandoned. All Poland again acknowledged Augustus II. The Danes made a descent on Schonen; and the czar achieved the conquest of Ingria, Livonia, and Carelia. The states that were leagued against France in the war of the Spanish Succession, wishing to prevent Germany from becoming the theatre of hostilities, concluded a treaty at the Hague (31st March, 1710), by which they undertook, under certain conditions, to guarantee the neutrality of the Swedish provinces in Germany, as well as that of Sleswick and Jutland; but the King of Sweden having constantly declined acceding to this neutrality, the possessions of the Swedes in Germany were also seized and conquered in succession. The Duke of Holstein-Gottorp, the nephew of Charles XII., was involved in this disgrace, and stript of his estates by the King of Denmark (1714).

In the midst of these disasters, the inflexible King of Sweden persisted in prolonging his sojourn at Bender, making repeated efforts to rouse the Turks against the Russians. He did not return

from Turkey till 1714, when his affairs were already totally ruined. The attempts which he then made, either to renew the war in Poland, or invade the provinces of the Empire, excited the jealousy of the neighbouring powers. A formidable league was raised against him; besides the czar, the Kings of Poland, Denmark, Prussia, and England, joined it. Stralsund and Wismar, the only places which Sweden still retained in Germany, fell into the hands of the allies; while the czar added to these losses the conquest of Finland and Savolax. In a situation so desperate, Charles, by the advice of his minister, Baron Gortz, set on foot a special and secret negotiation with the czar, which took place in the isle of Alund, in course of the year 1718. There it was proposed to reinstate Stanislaus on the throne of Poland; to restore to Sweden her possessions in the Empire; and even to assist her in conquering Norway; by way of compensation for the loss of Ingria, Carelia, Livonia, and Esthonia, which she was to cede to the czar.

That negotiation was on the point of being finally closed, when it was broken off by the unexpected death of Charles XII. That unfortunate prince was slain (December 11th, 1718), at the siege of Frederichshall in Norway, while visiting the trenches; being only thirty-seven years of age, and leaving the affairs of his kingdom in a most deplorable state.

The new regency of Sweden, instead of remaining in friendship with the czar, changed their policy entirely. Baron de Gortz, the friend of the late king, fell a sacrifice to the public displeasure, and a negotiation was opened with the court of Sweden. A treaty of peace and alliance was concluded at Stockholm (November 20, 1719), between Great Britain and Sweden. George I., on obtaining the cession of the duchies of Bremen and Verden, as Elector of Hanover, engaged to send a strong squadron to the Baltic, to prevent any further invasion from the czar, and procure for Sweden more equitable terms of peace on the part of that prince. The example of Great Britain was soon followed by the other allied powers, who were anxious to accommodate matters with Sweden. By the treaty concluded at Stockholm (21st January, 1720), the King of Prussia got the town of Stettin, and that part of Pomerania, which lies between the Oder and the Peene. The King of Denmark consented to restore to Sweden the towns of Stralsund and Wismar, with the isle of Rugen, and the part of Pomerania, which extends from the sea to the river Peene. Sweden, on her side, renounced, in favour of Denmark, her exemption from the duties of the Sound and the two Belts, which had been guaranteed to her by former treaties. The czar was the only person who, far from being intimidated by the menaces of England, persisted in his resolution of not making peace with Sweden, except on the conditions which he had dictated to her. The war was, therefore, continued between Russia and Sweden, during the two campaigns of 1720 and 1721. Different parts of the Swedish coast were laid desolate by the czar, who put all to fire and sword. To stop the progress of these devastations, the Swedes at length consented to accept the peace which the czar offered them, which was finally signed at Nystadt (13th September, 1721). Finland was surren-

dered to Sweden in lieu of her formally ceding to the czar the provinces of Livonia, Esthonia, Ingria, and Carelia; their limits to be determined according to the regulations of the treaty.

The ascendancy which Sweden had gained in the North since the reign of Gustavus Adolphus, had become so fatal to Denmark, that she was on the point of being utterly subverted, and effaced from the number of European powers. Nor did she extricate herself from the disastrous wars which she had to support against Charles X., until she had sacrificed some of her best provinces; such as Scania, Bleekingen, Halland, and the government of Bohus, which Frederic III. ceded to Sweden by the treaties of Roschild and Copenhagen. It was at the close of this war that a revolution happened in the government of Denmark. Until that time, it had been completely under the aristocracy of the nobles; the throne was elective; and all power was concentrated in the hands of the senate, and the principal members of the nobility. The royal prerogative was limited to the command of the army, and the presidency in the senate. The king was even obliged, by a special capitulation, in all affairs which did not require the concurrence of the senate, to take the advice of four great officers of the crown, viz. the Grand Master, the Chancellor, the Marshal, and the Admiral; who were considered as so many channels or vehicles of the royal authority.

The state of exhaustion to which Denmark was reduced at the time she made peace with Sweden, obliged Frederic III. to convoke an assembly of the States-General of the kingdom. These, which were composed of three orders, viz. the nobility, the clergy, and the burghesses, had never been summoned together in that form since the year 1536. At their meeting at Copenhagen, the two inferior orders reproached the nobles with having been the cause of all the miseries and disorders of the state, by the exorbitant and tyrannical power which they had usurped; and what tended still more to increase their animosity against them, was the obstinacy with which they maintained their privileges and exemptions from the public burdens, to the prejudice of the lower orders. One subject of discussion was, to find a tax, the proceeds of which should be applied to the most pressing wants of the state. The nobles proposed a duty on articles of consumption; but under restrictions with regard to themselves, that could not but exasperate the lower orders. The latter proposed, in testimony of their discontent, to let out to the highest bidder the fiefs of the crown, which the nobles held at rents extremely moderate. This proposal was highly resented by the nobility, who regarded it as a blow aimed at their rights and properties; and they persisted in arguing a tax on articles of consumption, such as they had proposed. Certain unguarded expressions which escaped some of the members of the nobility, gave rise to a tumult of indignation, and suggested to the two leaders of the clergy and the burghesses, viz. the bishop of Zealand and the burgo-master of Copenhagen, the idea of framing a declaration for the purpose of rendering the crown hereditary, both in the male and female descendants of Frederic III. It was not difficult for them to recommend this project to their respective orders, who flattered themselves that, under a hereditary monarchy,

they would enjoy that equality which was denied them under an aristocracy of the nobles. The effect of this declaration, having been approved and signed by the two orders, was presented in their name to the senate, who rejected it, on the ground that the States-General then assembled, had no right to deliberate on that proposition; but the clergy and the burghesses, without being disconcerted, went in a body to the king, carrying with them the Act which offered to make the crown hereditary in his family. The nobles having made a pretence of wishing to quit the city in order to break up the Diet, care was taken to shut the doors. The members of the senate and the nobility had then no other alternative left than to agree to the resolution of the two inferior orders; and the offer of the crown was made to the king by the three orders conjunctly (13th October, 1660). They then tendered him the capitulation, which was annulled; and at the same time they liberated him from the oath which he had taken on the day of his coronation. A sort of dictatorship was then conferred on him, to regulate the new constitutional charter, according to his good pleasure. All the orders of the state then took a new oath of fealty and homage to him, while the king himself was subjected to no oath whatever. Finally, the three orders separately remitted an Act to the king, declaring the crown hereditary in all the descendants of Frederic III., both male and female; conferring on him and his successors an unlimited power; and granting him the privilege of regulating the order both of the regency and the succession to the throne.

Thus terminated that important revolution, without any disorder, and without shedding a single drop of blood. It was in virtue of those powers which the states had conferred on him, that the king published what is called the *Royal Law*, regarded as the only fundamental law of Denmark. The king was there declared absolute sovereign, above all human laws, acknowledging no superior but God, and uniting in his own person all the rights and prerogatives of royalty, without any exception whatever. He could exercise these prerogatives in virtue of his own authority; but he was obliged to respect the Royal Law; and he could neither touch the Confession of Augsburg, which had been adopted as the national religion, nor authorize any partition of the kingdom, which was declared indivisible; nor change the order of succession as established by the Royal Law. That succession was lineal, according to the right of primogeniture and descent. Females were only admitted, failing all the male issue of Frederic III.; and the order in which they were to succeed was defined with the most scrupulous exactness. The term of majority was fixed at the age of thirteen; and it was in the power of the reigning monarch to regulate, by his will, the tutorage and the regency during such minority.

This constitutional law gave the Danish government a vigour which it never had before; the effects of which were manifested in the war which Christian V. undertook against Sweden (1675), in consequence of his alliance with Frederic William, Elector of Brandenburg. The Danes had the advantage of the Swedes both by sea and land. Their fleet, under the command of Niels Juel, gained two naval victories over them, the one near the

isle of Oeland, and the other on the coast of Zealand (1679), which restored the liberum veto, to the same effect as before the war. Sweden received by the peace of Pultowa, tendered the painful situation in which respect to that point, which Sweden had lost her prosperity, was taken from Stockholm, and by Frederic August, elector of Saxony and king of Poland (14th June, 1700), was retained, in terms of the whole duchy of the part belonging to the emperor, whom Sweden was under her protection.

Poland, at the commencement of the reign of John Casimir, was a weak and despotic monarch, who presented an allieting example to the monarchs of the empire. The reign of John Casimir was a weak and despotic monarch, who presented an allieting example to the monarchs of the empire. The reign of John Casimir was a weak and despotic monarch, who presented an allieting example to the monarchs of the empire.

Towards the end of the reign of John Casimir, the Polish monarch was a weak and despotic monarch, who presented an allieting example to the monarchs of the empire. The reign of John Casimir was a weak and despotic monarch, who presented an allieting example to the monarchs of the empire.

of Oeland, and the other in the Bay of Kiøge, on the coast of Zealand (1677). That war was terminated by the peace of Lunden (October 6, 1679), which restored matters between the two nations, to the same footing in which they had been before the war. The severe check which Sweden received by the defeat of Charles XII., before Pultowa, tended to extricate Denmark from the painful situation in which she had been placed with respect to that power. The freedom of the sound, which Sweden had maintained during her prosperity, was taken from her by the treaty of Stockholm, and by the explanatory articles of Fredericksburg, concluded between Sweden and Denmark (14th June, 1720). That kingdom likewise retained, in terms of the treaty, the possession of the whole duchy of Sleswick, with a claim to the part belonging to the duke of Holstein-Gottorp, whom Sweden was obliged to remove from under her protection.

Poland, at the commencement of this period, presented an allieting spectacle, under the unfortunate reign of John Casimir, the brother and successor of Uladislauus VII. (1648). Distracted at once by foreign wars and intestine factions, she seemed every moment on the brink of destruction; and while the neighbouring states were augmenting their forces, and strengthening the hands of their governments, Poland grew gradually weaker and weaker, and at length degenerated into absolute anarchy. The origin of the *Liberum Veto* of the Poles, which allowed the opposition of a single member to frustrate the deliberations of the whole diet, belongs to the reign of John Casimir. The first that suspended the diet, by the interposition of his veto, was Schinski, member for Uputa in Lithuania; his example, though at first disapproved, found imitators; and this foolish practice, which allowed one to usurp the prerogative of a majority, soon passed into a law, and a maxim of state.

Towards the end of the reign of Uladislauus VII. murders of war had arisen in Poland, that of the Cossacs. This warlike people, of Russian origin, their language and their religion prove, inhabited both banks of the Borysthenes, beyond Kiow; where they were subdivided into regiments, under the command of a general, called *Hetman*; and served as a military frontier for Poland against the Tartars and Turks. Some infringements that had been made on their privileges, added to the efforts which the Poles had made to induce their clergy to separate from the Greek Church, and acknowledge the supremacy of the pope, exasperated the Cossacs, and engendered among them a spirit of revolt (1647). Assisted by the Turks of the Crimea, they invaded Poland, and committed terrible devastations. The Poles succeeded from time to time in pacifying them, and even concluded a treaty with them; but the minds of both parties being exasperated, hostilities always recommenced with every new offence. At length, their *Hetman*, Samielinski, being hardly pressed by the Poles, took the resolution of soliciting the protection of Russia, and concluded a treaty with the Czar Alexis Michaelovitz (January 16, 1654), in virtue of which, Kiow and the other towns of the Ukraine, under the power of the Cossacs, were occupied by Russian garrisons. It was on this occasion that the czar retook the city of Smoleusko from

the Poles, as well as most of the districts that had been ceded to Poland, by the treaties of Dwilina and Viasma. That prince made also several other conquests from the Poles; he took possession of Wilna, and several places in Lithuania, at the very time when Charles X. was invading Poland, and threatening that country with entire destruction. The czar, however, instead of following up his conquests, judged it more for his interest to conclude a truce with the Poles (1656), that he might turn his arms against Sweden.

The peace of Oliva put an end to the war between Poland and Sweden; but hostilities were renewed between the Russians and the Poles, which did not terminate till the treaty of Andrussov (January, 1667). The czar restored to the Poles a part of his conquests; but he retained Smolensko, Novogorod-Sieverskoe, Tchernigov, Kiow, and all the country of the Cossacs, beyond the Borysthenes or Dnieper. The Cossacs on this side the river were annexed to Poland, and as for those who dwelt near the mouth of the Duleper, called *Zaporogs*, it was agreed that they should remain under the common jurisdiction of the two states; ready to serve against the Turks whenever circumstances might require it. The wars of which we have just spoken were attended with troubles and dissensions, which reduced Poland to the most deplorable condition during the reign of John Casimir. That prince at length, disgusted with a crown which he had found to be composed of thorns, resolved to abdicate the throne (16th September, 1668); and retiring to France, he there ended his days.

Michael Wiesnouiski, who succeeded John Casimir, after a stormy interregnum of seven months, had no other merit than that of being descended in a direct line from Coribut, the brother of Jagello, King of Poland. His reign was a scene of great agitation, and of unbridled anarchy. Four diets were interrupted in less than four years; the war with the Cossacs was renewed; the Turks and the Tartars, the allies of the Cossacs, seized the city of Kaminiac (1672), the only bulwark of Poland against the Ottomans. Michael, being thrown into a state of alarm, concluded a disgraceful peace with the Turks; he gave up to them Kaminiac and Podolia, with their ancient limits; and even agreed to pay them an annual tribute of twenty-two thousand ducats. The Ukraine, on this side the Borysthenes, was abandoned to the Cossacs, who were to be placed under the protection of the Turks. This treaty was not ratified by the republic of Poland, who preferred to continue the war. John Sobieski, Grand General of the Crown, gained a brilliant victory over the Turks near Choczim (November 11th, 1673). It took place the next day after the death of Michael, and determined the Poles to confer their crown on the victorious general.

Sobieski did ample justice to the choice of his fellow-citizens. By the peace which he concluded at Zarowno with the Turks (26th October, 1676), he relieved Poland from the tribute lately promised, and recovered some parts of the Ukraine; but the city of Kaminiac was left in the power of the Ottomans, with a considerable portion of the Ukraine and Podolia. Poland then entered into an alliance with the House of Austria, against the Porte. Sobieski became the deliverer of Vienna;

he signalized himself in the campaigns of 1683 and 1684; and if he did not gain any important advantages over the Turks, if he had not even the satisfaction of recovering Kaminié and Podolia, it must be ascribed to the incompetence of his means, and to the disunion and indifference of the Poles, who refused to make a single sacrifice in the cause. Sobieski was even forced to have recourse to the protection of the Russians against the Turks; and saw himself reduced to the painful necessity of setting his hand to the definitive peace which was concluded with Russia at Moscow (the 6th, 1686), by which Poland, in order to obt. the alliance of that power against the Ottomans, consented to give up Smolensko, Belaia, Dorogobuz, Tchernigov, Starodub, and Novogorod-Siewerskoé, with their dependencies; as also the whole territory known by the name of Little Russia, situated on the left bank of the Borysthènes, between that river and the frontier of Putivli, as far as Perevoloczna. The city of Kiow, with its territory as determined by the treaty, was also included in that cession. Finally, the Cossacs, called *Zaporogs* and *Kudak*, who, according to the treaty of Andrussow, ought to have been dependencies of these two states, were reserved exclusively to Russia. Sobieski shed tears when he was obliged to sign that treaty at Leopold (or Lemberg), in presence of the Russian ambassadors.

The war with the Turks did not terminate until the reign of Augustus II., the successor of John Sobieski. The peace of Carlowitz, which that prince concluded with the Porte (1699), procured for Poland the restitution of Kaminié, as well as that part of the Ukraine, which the peace of Zarrowno had ceded to the Turks.

Russia became every day more prosperous under the princes of the House of Romanow. She gained a decided superiority over Poland, who had formerly dictated the law to her. Alexis Michaelovitz not only recovered from the Poles what they had conquered from Russia during the disturbances occasioned by the two pretenders of the name of Demetrius; we have already observed that he dispossessed them of Kiow, and all that part of the Ukraine, or Little Russia, which lies on the left bank of the Borysthènes.

Theodore Alexievitz, the son and successor of Alexis Michaelovitz, rendered his reign illustrious by the wisdom of his administration. Guided by the advice of his enlightened minister, Prince Galitzin, he conceived the bold project of abolishing the hereditary orders of the nobility, and the prerogatives that were attached to them. These orders were destructive of all subordination in civil as well as in military affairs, and gave rise to a multitude of disputes and litigations, of which a court, named *Rozrad*, took cognizance. The czar, in a grand assembly which he convoked at Moscow (1682), abolished the hereditary rank of the nobles. He burnt the deeds and registers by which they were attested, and obliged every noble family to produce the extracts of these registers which they had in their possession, that they might be committed to the flames. That prince having no children of his own, had destined his younger brother, Peter Alexievitz, to be his successor, to the exclusion of John, his elder brother, on account of his incapacity. But, on the death of

Theodore, both princes were proclaimed at once by the military, and the government was intrusted to the Princess Sophia, his elder sister, who assumed the title of Autocratix and Sovereign of the Russias. Peter, who was the son of the second marriage of the czar, was at that time only ten years of age. It was during the administration of the Princess Sophia that the peace of Moscow was concluded (May 6th, 1686); one clause of which contained an alliance, offensive and defensive, between Russia and Poland against the Porte.

Peter had no sooner attained the age of seventeen than he seized the reins of government, and deposed his sister Sophia, whom he sent to a convent. Endowed with an extraordinary genius, this prince became the reformer of his Empire, which, under his reign, assumed an aspect totally new. By the advice of Le Fort, a native of Geneva, who had entered the Russian service, and whom he had received into his friendship and confidence, he turned his attention to every branch of the public administration. The military system was changed, and modelled after that of the civilized nations of Europe. He founded the marine power of Russia, improved her finances, encouraged commerce and manufactures, introduced letters and arts into his dominions, and applied himself to reform the laws, to polish and refine the manners of the people.

Peter, being in alliance with Poland, engaged in the war against the Porte, and laid open the Black Sea by his conquest of the city and port of Azoff, and it was on this occasion that he equipped his first fleet at Woronitz. Azoff remained in his possession, by an article of the peace which was concluded with the Porte at Constantinople (the 7th of July, 1700). About the same time, Peter abolished the patriarchal dignity, which ranked the head of the Russian Church next to the czar, and gave him a dangerous influence in the affairs of government. He transferred the authority of the patriarch to a college of fifteen persons, called the *Most Holy Synod*, whose duty it was to take cognizance of ecclesiastical affairs, and, in general, of all matters which had fallen within the jurisdiction of the patriarch. The members of this college were obliged to take the oath at the hands of the sovereign, and to be appointed by him on the presentation of the synod.

Being desirous of seeing and examining in person the manners and customs of other nations, he undertook two different voyages into foreign countries, divested of that pomp which is the usual accompaniment of princes. During these travels, he cultivated the arts and sciences, especially those connected with commerce and navigation; he engaged men of talents in his services, such as mathematicians, engineers, surgeons, artists, and mechanics of all kinds, whom he dispersed over his vast dominions, to instruct and improve the Russians. During his first voyage to Holland and England, the *Strelitzes*, the only permanent troops known in Russia before his time, revolted; they were first instituted by the czar, John Basilovitz IV. They fought after the manner of the Janissaries, and enjoyed nearly the same privileges. Peter, with the intention of disbanding these seditious and undisciplined troops, had stationed them at the frontiers of Lithuania; he had also removed them from being his own body-guard, a service

which he intrusted to himself. This sort of *Strelitzes*, who took the absence to revolt. The city of Moscow, under the czar, and replacing them were defeated by Gordon, who had married, on his return, executed, and incorporated. He afterwards either German or Swedish in the military art. It was chiefly during the Russian army was European system. The check he had sustained (the 30th, 1700) to account in levying, equipping, and after the German manner the art of combats, and while the on the ruin of Augustus efforts against the czar, conquering Ingria from the navigation of the Baltic (the 27th, 1703). He next went to Schlessenburgh; he next to Genschenantz, Kopori, and Ingria. The port of and the czar laid Schlessenburgh in one of the new (May 27th, 1703). He constructed the port defence for the new to make the capital of his Empire for the commerce the fortune of this new famous battle of Pultowa likewise secured the preponderance.

Charles XII., who had made every effort to instigate the Russians; and he succeeded. The Porte declared war at the end of the year 1710. In the campaign of 1711 by an embarkment into Moldavia; he was surrounded by the Grand Duke of Pruth. Besieged in a city superior to his own necessity, he found no other resource than to conclude a treaty, which he signed on the 1st of July, 1711; in virtue of which he restored to the Turks the territory and its dependencies, amply compensated by which the peace with Sweden was concluded (the 21st of Sept. 10th, 1721), procured on this occasion that the son of Peter the Great, the Emperor of all the Russias, assumed the imperial dignity on the 22nd, the very day of the coronation, appointed for the celebration of which himself put the imperial crown on his head.

That great prince had

which he intrusted to the regiments raised by himself. This sort of degradation incensed the *Strelitzes*, who took the opportunity of the czar's march to revolt. They directed their march to the city of Moscow, with the design of deposing the czar, and replacing Sophia on the throne; but they were defeated by the Generals Schein and Gordon, who had marched to oppose them. Peter, on his return, caused 2,000 of them to be executed, and incorporated the rest among his troops. He afterwards employed foreign officers, either Germans or Swedes, to instruct the Russians in the military art.

It was chiefly during the war with Sweden that the Russian army was organized according to the European system. The czar took advantage of the cheek he had sustained before Narva (November 30th, 1700) to accomplish this important change in levying, equipping, and training all his troops after the German manner. He taught the Russians the art of combating and conquering the Swedes; and while the King of Sweden was bent on the ruin of Augustus II., and made but feeble efforts against the czar, the latter succeeded in conquering Ingria from the Swedes, and laid open the navigation of the Baltic. He took the fortress of Nöteborg (1702), which he afterwards called Schlüsselburg; he next made himself master of Nyenschantz, Kopori, and Jamu (now Jamburg) in Ingria. The port of Nyenschantz was entirely razed; and the czar laid the foundation of St. Petersburg in one of the neighbouring islands of the Neva (May 27th, 1703). In the middle of winter he constructed the port of Kronschlot to serve as a defence for the new city, which he intended to make the capital of his Empire, and the principal depot for the commerce and marine of Russia. The fortune of this new capital was decided by the famous battle of Pultowa (July 8th, 1709), which likewise secured the preponderance of Russia in the North.

Charles XII., who had taken refuge in Turkey, used every effort to instigate the Turks against the Russians; and he succeeded by dint of intrigue. The Porte declared war against the czar towards the end of the year 1710; and Charles opened the campaign of 1711 by an expedition which he undertook into Moldavia; but, having rashly penetrated into the interior of that province, he was surrounded by the Grand Vizier near Falezzi on the Pruth. Besieged in his camp by an army vastly superior to his own, and reduced to the last necessity, he found no other means of extricating himself from this critical situation, than by agreeing to a treaty, which he signed in the camp of Falezzi (1st July, 1711); in virtue of which, he consented to restore to the Turks the fortress of Azoff, with its territory and its dependencies. This loss was amply compensated by the important advantages which the peace with Sweden, signed at Nystadt (Sept. 10th, 1721), procured the czar. It was on this occasion that the senate conferred on him the epithet of *Great*, the *Father of his Country*, and *Emperor of all the Russias*. His inauguration as the imperial dignity took place, October 22d, 1721, the very day of the rejoicing that had been appointed for the celebration of the peace. Peter himself put the imperial crown on his own head.

That great prince had the vexation to see

Alexis Czarowitz his son, and presumptive heir to the Empire, thwarting all his improvements, and caballing in secret with his enemies. Being at length compelled to declare that he had forfeited his right to the throne, he had him condemned to death as a traitor (1718). In consequence of this tragical event, he published an ukase, which vested in the reigning prince the privilege of nominating his successor, and even of changing the appointment whenever he might judge it necessary. This arrangement became fatal to Russia; the want of a fixed and permanent order of succession occasioned troubles and revolutions which frequently distracted the whole Empire. This law, moreover, made no provision in cases where the reigning prince might neglect to settle the succession during his life; as happened with Peter himself, who died without appointing any successor (Feb. 1725). Catherine I., his consort, ascended the throne, which, after a reign of two years, she transmitted to Peter, son of the unfortunate Alexis.

In Hungary, the precautions that had been taken by the States of Presburg to establish civil and religious liberty on a solid basis, did not prevent disturbances from springing up in that kingdom. The Court of Vienna, perceiving the necessity of consolidating its vast monarchy, whose incoherent parts were suffering from the want of unity, eagerly seized these occasions for extending its power.

Hungary, where it was greatly circumscribed by the laws and constitution of the country. Hence those perpetual infringements of which the Hungarians had to complain, and those ever-recurring disturbances in which the Ottoman Turks, who shared with Austria the dominion of Hungary, were also frequently implicated.

Transylvania, as well as a great part of Hungary, was then dependent on the Turks. The Emperor Leopold I. having granted his protection to John Kemeény, Prince of Transylvania, against Michael Abaffi, a protégé of the Turks, a war between the two Empires seemed to be inevitable. The Diet of Hungary, which the emperor had assembled at Presburg on this subject (1662), was most outrageous. The states, before they would give any opinion as to the war against the Turks, demanded that their own grievances should be redressed; and the assembly separated without coming to any conclusion. The Turks took advantage of this dissension, and seized the fortress of Neuheusel, and several other places. The emperor, incapable of opposing them, and distrustful of the Hungarian malcontents, had recourse to foreign aid. This he obtained at the Diet of the Empire; and Louis XIV. sent him a body of 6,000 men, under command of the Count de Coligny. An action took place (1664) near St. Gotthard, in which the French signalized their bravery. The Turks sustained a total defeat; but Montecuculi, the commander-in-chief of the imperial army, failed to take advantage of his victory. A truce of twenty years was soon after concluded at Temeswar, in virtue of which the Turks retained Neuheusel, Waradin, and Novigrad. Michael Abaffi, their tributary and protégé, was continued in Transylvania; and both parties engaged to withdraw their troops from that province.

This treaty highly displeased the Hungarians, as it had been concluded without their concur-

was set on foot at Constantinople, and thence transferred to Carlowitz, a town of Slavonia lying between the two camps, one of which was at Peterwardin, and the other at Belgrade. A peace was there concluded (January 26th, 1699); the emperor, by this treaty, retained Hungary, Transylvania, and Slavonia, with the exception of the Banat of Temeswar, which was reserved to the Porte. The rivers Marosch, Teiss, Save, and Tuna, were fixed as the limits between the two Empires. The Count Tekell, who during the whole of this war had constantly espoused the cause of the Porte, was allowed to remain in the Ottoman territory, with such of the Hungarians and Transylvanians as adhered to him.

The peace of Carlowitz had secured to the emperor nearly the whole of Hungary; but, glorious though it was, it did not restore the internal tranquillity of the kingdom, which very soon experienced fresh troubles. The same complaints that had arisen after the peace of Temeswar, were renewed after that of Carlowitz; to these were even added several others, occasioned by the introduction of the hereditary succession, at the diet of 1687, by the suppression of the clause in the thirty-first article of the decree of Andrew II., by the restoration of the Jesuits, and the banishment of Tekell and his adherents. Nothing was wanted but a ringleader for the malcontents to rekindle the flames of civil war, and this leader was soon found in the person of the famous Prince Ragoezi (or Ragotski), who appeared on the scene about the beginning of the eighteenth century, and when the greater part of Europe were involved in the war of the Spanish succession.

François Ragoezi was the grandson of George Ragoezi II., who had been Prince of Transylvania, and held a distinguished rank in the States of Hungary, not more by his illustrious birth than by the great possessions which belonged to his family. The Court of Vienna, who entertained suspicions of him on account of his near relationship with Tekell, had kept him in a sort of captivity from his earliest infancy; and he was not set at large, nor restored to the possession of his estates, until 1694, when he married a princess of Hesse-Rheinfels. From that time he resided quietly on his estates, holding his court at Sarosch, in the district of the same name. Being suspected of having concerted a conspiracy with the malcontents, he was arrested by order of the Court of Vienna (1701), and carried to Neustadt in Austria, whence he escaped and retired to Poland. Being condemned guilty of high treason, and his estates declared forfeited, he took the resolution of placing himself at the head of the rebels, and instigating Hungary against the emperor. France, who had just been mediating in the war with Austria, encouraged him that enterprise, which she regarded as being a favourable event for creating a diversion. Having arrived in Hungary, Ragoezi published a manifesto (1703), in which he detailed the motives of his conduct, and exhorted the Hungarians to join him, to vindicate their ancient liberties, which had been oppressed by the House of Austria. He soon collected a crowd of partisans, and made himself master of a great part of the kingdom. The Transylvanians chose him for their prince (1704); and the States of Hungary, who had united for the re-establishment of their laws and immunities, de-

clared him their chief, with the title of duke, and a senate of twenty-five. Louis XIV. sent his envoy, the Marquis Dessalleurs, to congratulate him on his elevation; and the czar, Peter the Great, offered him the throne of Poland (1707), in opposition to Stanislaus, who was protected by Charles XII.

The House of Austria being engaged in the Spanish war, were unable for a long time to reduce the Hungarian malcontents. The repeated attempts which she made to come to an accommodation with them having failed, the war was continued till 1711, when the Austrians, who had been victorious, compelled Ragoezi to evacuate Hungary, and retire to the frontiers of Poland. A treaty of pacification was then drawn up. The emperor promised to grant an amnesty and a general restitution of goods in favour of all those who had been implicated in the insurrection. He came under an engagement to preserve inviolable the rights, liberties, and immunities of Hungary, and the principality of Transylvania; to reserve all civil and military offices to the Hungarians; to maintain the laws of the kingdom respecting religion; and as for their other grievances, whether political or ecclesiastical, he consented to have them discussed in the approaching diet. These articles were approved and signed by the greater part of the malcontents, who then took a new oath of allegiance to the emperor. Ragoezi and his principal adherents were the only persons that remained proscribed and attainted, having refused to accede to these articles.

The Turkish Empire, once so formidable, had gradually fallen from the summit of its grandeur; its resources were exhausted, and its history marked by nothing but misfortunes. The effeminacy and incapacity of the sultans, their contempt for the arts cultivated by the Europeans, and the evils of a government purely military and despotic, by degrees undermined its strength, and eclipsed its glory as a conquering and presiding power. We find the Janissaries, a lawless and undisciplined militia, usurping over the sovereign and the throne the same rights which the Praetorian guards had arrogated over the ancient Roman emperors.

The last conquest of any importance which the Turks made was that of Candia, which they took from the republic of Venice. The war which obtained them the possession of that island, lasted for twenty years. It began under Sultan Ibrahim (1645), and was continued under his successor, Mahomet IV. The Venetians defended the island with exemplary courage and intrepidity. They destroyed several of the Turkish fleets; and, on different occasions, they kept the passage of the Dardanelles shut against the Ottomans. At length the famous Vizier Achmet Kupruli undertook the siege of the city of Candia (1667), at the head of a formidable army. This siege was one of the most sanguinary recorded in history. The Turks lost above 100,000 men; and it was not till after a siege of two years and four months that the place surrendered to them by a capitulation (September 5th, 1669), which at the same time regulated the conditions of peace between the Turks and the Venetians. These latter, on surrendering Candia, reserved, in the islands and islets adjoining, three places, viz., Suda, Spinalonga, and Garabusa. They also retained Clissa, and some other

places in Dalmatia and Albania, which they had seized during the war. The reign of Mahomet from that time presented nothing but a succession of wars, of which that against Hungary was the most fatal to the Ottoman Empire. The Turks were overwhelmed by the powerful league formed between Austria, Poland, Russia, and the republic of Venice. They experienced, as we have already noticed, a series of fatal disasters during that war; and, imputing these misfortunes to the effeminacy of their Sultan, they resolved to depose him. Mustapha II., the third in succession from Mahomet IV., terminated this destructive war by the peace of Carlowitz, when the Turks lost all their

possessions in Hungary, except Temeswar and Belgrade. They gave up to Poland the fortress of Kaminiec, with Podolia, and the part of the Ukraine on this side the Nieper, which had been ceded to them by former treaties. The Venetians, by their treaty with the Porte, obtained possession of the Morea, which they had conquered during the war, including the islands of St. Maura and Lencudia, as also the fortresses of Dulmutia, Kania, Sing, Ciclut, Gabella, Castelnuovo, and Riseno. Finally, the Porte renounced the tribute which Venice had formerly paid for the isle of Zante; and the republic of Ragusa was guaranteed in its independence, with respect to the Venetians.

PERIOD VIII.

FROM THE PEACE OF UTRECHT TO THE FRENCH REVOLUTION.

A.D. 1713—1789.

[DURING the wars of the preceding period, arts and letters had made extraordinary progress; especially in France, where they seemed to have reached the highest degree of perfection to which the limited genius of man can carry them. The age of Louis XIV. revived, and in some respects excelled, those masterpieces which Greece had produced under Pericles, Rome under Augustus, and Italy under the patronage of the Medici. This was the classical era of French literature. The grandeur which reigned at the court of that monarch, and the glory which his vast exploits had reflected on the nation, inspired authors with a noble enthusiasm; the public taste was refined by imitating the models of antiquity; and this preserved the French writers from those extravagances which some other nations have mistaken for the standard of genius. Their language, polished by the Academy according to fixed rules, the first and most fundamental of which condemns everything that does not tend to unite elegance with perspicuity, became the general medium of communication among the different nations in the civilized world; and this literary conquest which France made over the minds of other nations, is more glorious, and has proved more advantageous to her, than that universal dominion to which Louis XIV. is said to have aspired.

In the period on which we are now entering, men of genius and talents, though they did not neglect the belles-lettres, devoted themselves chiefly to those sciences, and that kind of learning, the study of which has been diffused over all classes of society. Several branches of mathematics and natural philosophy assumed a form entirely new; the knowledge of the ancient classics, which till then had been studied chiefly for the formation of taste, became a branch of common education, and gave birth to a variety of profound and useful researches. Geometry, astronomy, mechanics and navigation, were brought to great perfection, by the rivalry among the different academies in Europe. Natural philosophy discovered many of the laws and phenomena of

nature, of which the ancients had entertained no doubt. Chemistry rose from the rank of an obscure art, and put on the garb of an attractive science. Natural history, enriched by the discoveries of learned travellers, was divested of those fables and chimeras which ignorance had attributed to her. History, supported by the auxiliary sciences of geography and chronology, became a branch of general philosophy.

This progress in the various departments of human learning, gave the name of the intellectual age to the epoch of which we now speak. The title it might have justly claimed, had not those pretended philosophers, who sprouted up in the eighteenth century, under pretext of infusing general knowledge among all classes of people, perverted the public mind, by preaching doctrines which became the root of those calamities that for thirty years, distracted all Europe. The object of these superficial reasoners was to annihilate religion, the basis of all morality; and to propagate, among the disciples of atheism, tenets subversive, not only of political government and legitimate power of kings, but of the rights and happiness of the people.

This spirit of irreligion took its rise in England in the seventeenth century.* Hobbes, who calculated materialism, was one of the champions of that atheism which Bolingbroke, Shaftesbury, Collins, Tindal, and others, taught in their works in the early part of the eighteenth century; by the contemplative character of the English nation, and the talents of those that undertook to defend religion, completely neutralised this poison; and Christianity, triumphing over all these attempts, struck deeper root.

In France, however, infidelity found preachers more able, and pupils more docile. Voltaire, D'Alembert, Diderot, Helvetius (a man eminent enough in other respects, but whose good qualities were obscured by a craving vanity for distinction) and a foreigner, Baron Holbach, who was settled

* This is not true. Italy was the birth-place of the doctrines in question. See Bayle's Dict., Art. Viret.—T.

at Paris, had the Christianity, and re whatever in matte infidelity, sometime sometimes under throughout their va means which appea plish their infamou about universal th they persecuted tho to these new doctrin of the Catholic chu of the press, which dogmas, enabled th classes of society w while by dint of ri they shut the month but their theories. by D'Alembert and of other writers, and house of all human k pedia, became the of Christianity for where youth imbibe instruction.

It ought to be told that with the excep and even of the sove consequences of this many, Holland, Swi of the north, where t allowed themselves t and impieties. Port took any notice of corrupted several ge prepared them for re which, by attacking order, at length over try, and afterwards o globe.

The root of this p that of Deism and In in England. The dis tionists and the Stua tury, which stained t then unheard of, had public right, if we mu to subvert all subor that the first who st original social contrac mate power to be de independent on the sove partisan of monarchy. blowing out the applica built on this founda despotism, James Harr and especially Algern novel idea, and drew site to the views of its error is a two-edged way. John Locke pu spite of history, he ad of a social contract f and maintained that m than republics degener From England these where they were gro the enemies of religio writers, who, without allowed themselves to l

at Paris, had the audacity to conspire against Christianity, and resolved to throw off all authority whatever in matters of faith. They preached infidelity, sometimes under the name of Deists, sometimes under the form of Athelism; and throughout their various writings they took every means which appeared to them likely to accomplish their infamous design. While clamouring about universal toleration for religious opinions, they persecuted those who offered any opposition to these new doctrines, and especially the ministers of the Catholic church. The unlimited freedom of the press, which was one of their favourite dogmas, enabled them to infect all ages and classes of society with their pernicious maxims; while by dint of ridicule, calumnies, and cabals, they shut the mouths of those who offered to combat their theories. A grand work, undertaken by D'Alembert and Diderot, with the assistance of other writers, and announced as being the storehouse of all human knowledge, called the *Encyclopaedia*, became the arsenal where the enemies of Christianity forged their arms—the school where youth imbibed the elements of pernicious instruction.

It ought to be told to the honour of other nations, that, with the exception of some of the nobles, and even of the sovereigns, who were blind to the consequences of this system, few persons in Germany, Holland, Switzerland, and the countries of the north, where their education was more solid, allowed themselves to be duped by these errors, and impieties. Portugal, Spain, and Italy scarcely took any notice of them; but in France they corrupted several generations in succession, and prepared them for receiving a new political creed, which, by attacking the very basis of social order, at length overturned it, first in that country, and afterwards over the greater part of the globe.

The root of this political mischief, as well as that of Deism and Infidelity, must be sought for in England. The disputes between the Revolutionists and the Stuarts, in the seventeenth century, which stained that nation with a crime till then unheard of, had given birth to a new sort of public right, if we may so call a system which went to subvert all subordination. It is remarkable, that the first who started the hypothesis of an original social contract which supposed all legitimate power to be delegated, and consequently dependent on the sovereignty of the people, was a partisan of monarchy. Thomas Hobbes, who, following out the application of his own principles, built on this foundation a system of absolute despotism, James Harrington, author of the *Oceana*, and especially Algernon Sydney, all seized this novel idea, and drew from it results quite opposite to the views of its author; though, in fact, the error is a two-edged weapon, and will cut either way. John Locke pushed it even farther; in despite of history, he admitted as a fact the existence of a social contract from which states originated, and maintained that monarchies were nothing else than republics degenerated.

From England these doctrines passed to France, where they were greedily received, not only by the enemies of religion, but also by a multitude of writers, who, without belonging to that party, allowed themselves to be drawn away by the vanity

of fame, and the *écât* of a false philosophy. The public mind had been already prepared for them by another invention of the eighteenth century, which was erroneous in principle, though laudable in its design, and contributed to the overthrow of better theories, because it had fallen into the hands of a sect who were misled by enthusiasm. This sect was that of the *Economists*, and the invention that of the *Physiocratic System*, as it was called, which, by estimating the wealth of a nation solely according to the mass of its natural productions, tended to reduce all public burdens to a single tax on land, and consequently to introduce a perfect equality in property. The inventor of this doctrine was a physician of Paris, named Francis Quesnay; though Victor de Riquetti, Marquis de Mirabeau, was its most zealous propagator.

The first French work on this new right of the people appeared in 1748, under the title of *L'Esprit des Lois*, or Spirit of Laws. Its author, Baron Montesquieu, there extolled the representative system, and the doctrine of the division of power, which from that moment became two of the articles of faith in the new philosophy, which none were allowed to controvert. The Spirit of Laws, a work written with elegance, and replete with wit, often profound, though sometimes superficial, combined with some splendid and sublime ideas a number of sophisms, subtleties, and errors. The enigmatical manner in which the author sometimes delivers himself has led some to impute doctrines to him which probably never entered into his system. Four years afterwards, Rousseau, a native of Geneva, published his *Social Contract*, eloquently composed, but feeble in point of reasoning. The author meant to prove that, by an original contract, the people had reserved the right of declaring their mind on everything relating to government—a monstrous system, which, instead of the liberty which it professes to introduce, tends to establish the most revolting despotism, by giving the whole power to the majority; that is, to the least enlightened and most unreflecting part of the nation.

In consequence of these publications, a vast number of writers set themselves to propagate and inculcate on the young, the doctrine of the sovereignty of the people, as the source whence all legitimate power emanated. This doctrine admitted a case, which its partisans, however, agree never existed, namely, an act by which the people had delegated the exercise either of a part or the whole of their power. It made despotism lawful, wherever it was found actually established; and it led to anarchy, since all delegated power may be withdrawn, and because the sovereign people could never deprive the next generation of their natural and imprescriptible rights.

These new doctrines were received in some countries which had resisted the poison of irreligion. They found numerous partisans in Germany, where they seemed to many to be the final accomplishment of the reformation of the seventeenth century, which was regarded as the era of religious liberty. The literary journals of that country promulgated them in all forms; they prevailed in universities and seminaries of learning; different sovereigns did homage to them, flattered by the panegyrics which the philosophers bestowed on them.

The time at length came, when the abettors of these opinions thought men's minds sufficiently prepared for beginning to put their new system in practice. A professor at Ingolstadt, in Bavaria, named Adam Weishaupt, founded a secret order, called the *Illuminati* (1776), who, under the disguise of free masonry, and the discipline practised in the institutions of the Jesuits, professed in appearance a love for truth and virtue, and a hatred for prejudice and despotism; but who initiated their disciples in the projected revolution, and taught them to shake off all restraint, both civil and religious, to overturn every established authority, and restore to mankind that liberty and equality which, it was said, they had enjoyed in a state of nature, and of which the institution of civil government had deprived them. This order was detected and dissolved (1785); but only in Bavaria, for it continued in several countries of Germany, and probably still exists under other forms.

It was in this manner that the public mind was corrupted in the eighteenth century. Obedience and love to their kings ceased to be the boast and glory of the people; a vague desire to change took possession of men's minds, and filled their heads with errors; and hence was engendered that savage revolution, which will form the subject of our ninth period. In the eighth, on which we are now entering, the polity of Europe experienced several remarkable changes.

The equilibrium among the different states, discomposed by the ambition of Louis XIV., had been confirmed by the peace of Utrecht, which lasted during twenty-four years without any great alteration. Nevertheless, in the political transactions which took place at this time, England enjoyed a preponderance which had been growing gradually since she had ceased to be the theatre of civil discord. The glory which she had acquired by the success of her arms in the Spanish wars, and the important advantages which the treaty of Utrecht had procured her, both in Europe and America, augmented her political power, and gave her an influence in general affairs which she never had enjoyed before. That nation carried their commerce and their marine to an extent which could not fail to alarm the other commercial and maritime states, and make them perceive that, if the care of their own trade and independence made it necessary to maintain a system of equilibrium on the continent, it was equally important for their prosperity that bounds should be set to the monopolizing power of England. This gave rise at first to a new kind of rivalry between France and England—a rivalry whose effects were more particularly manifested after the middle of the eighteenth century, and which occasioned an intimate alliance among the branches of the House of Bourbon. At a later date, and in consequence of the principles which the English professed as to the commerce of neutral states, the powers of the North leagued themselves against that universal dominion which they were accused of wishing to usurp over the sea. In the ninth period, we shall even see the whole continent for a short time turned against that nation—the only one that has been able to preserve her commerce and her independence.

This preponderance of England is the first

change which the political system of Europe experienced in the eighteenth century. The second took place in the North. Till that time, the northern countries of Europe had never, except transiently, had any political connections with the South. Russia, separated by the possessions of Sweden on the coasts of the Baltic, had belonged rather to Asia than to our quarter of the world. Poland, fallen from her ancient greatness, had sunk into a state of anarchy and exhaustion. Denmark and Sweden were disputing the command of the Baltic, and had no other influence on the politics of the South than that which Sweden had acquired by the personal qualities of some of her kings. The great war of the North, which broke out at the commencement of the eighteenth century, and the conquests of Peter the Great, which extended the limits of his Empire as far as the Gulf of Finland, and reduced Sweden to a state of debility from which she has not yet recovered, enabled Russia not only to take a distinguished lead in the North, but to become an important member in the system of Europe.

Meantime, the foundation of the Prussian monarchy gave rise to a new and intermediate power between the North and the South; but that state remained within the bounds of mediocrity until the middle of the eighteenth century. At that time the genius of Frederic II. alone raised it to a pitch of greatness which enabled it to struggle against the superior force of its neighbours, but without menacing the independence of other states. This growing power of Prussia, however, occasioned a rivalry between it and Austria, which for seventy years had an influence on the politics of Europe. It produced the extraordinary spectacle of an intimate alliance between two ancient rivals, the Houses of Austria and Bourbon; and, by dividing Germany between two opposite systems, it paved the way for the dissolution of that Empire. Such was the third change which the polity of Europe experienced in course of the eighteenth century.

The fourth change was less felt than the three others; its fatal consequences did not develop themselves until the Ninth Period. For the first time within the last three centuries, the sovereigns of Europe ventured to break treaties and to violate engagements, to declare war and undertake conquests, without alleging any other motives than reasons of convenience, and the ambition of aggrandisement. Thus the basis of the equilibrium system, the inviolability of possessions honourably acquired, was sapped, and the downfall of the whole system prepared. The events of the wars for the succession of Austria, furnished the first examples of this contempt for treaties; they were renewed in an alarming manner on the partition of Poland, and by the attempts which the emperor Joseph made to seize Bavaria. The act of iniquity committed against Poland was often cited, during the period of the French Revolution, to justify all sorts of violence and usurpation; and it was followed by a long train of calamities.

Commerce continued, in the eighteenth century, to be one of the principal objects that occupied the cabinets of Europe. The mercantile system was brought to great perfection, and became, with most nations, the basis of their administration. The maritime powers turned all their attention

and bestowed the g
the number and we
by new establishme
limitation of Louis 2
up numerous stand
they even carried
England in continen
she had no occasio
proportion to that o
to furnish them wi
necessary to carry
the time of Freder
tactics, and the mill
a degree of perfecti
admit of further imp
cial system of severa
tion, by the inventio
ment of national deb
by Mr. Pitt, called t

The extraordinary
Europe had made
maintaining the eq
against the ambitious
den, brought on a
which gave these nat
racing arts, industry,
repairing the evils w
wars had occasioned.
maintain the stipulat
and Stockholm; and
guard against every
new general war. T
subsisted between F
ring the reign of Ge
that of George II.—
administration of Wa
temporary interests t
the two courts—the c
Pretender, and the o
projects of Spain.

The Duke of Orleas
the minority of Louis
tion that peace and
treaties had introduc
medly those disorders
XIV. had left in s
King of Spain, on t
sions of reviving his
went into the rash se
his prime minister; p
to reconquer those ter
Utrecht had dismemb
monarchy; to deprive t
gency, and vest it in
place the Pretender,
throne of Great Brita

The treaty of Utr
quillized a great part
defective, in as far as
peror and the King
claimants to the Spani
Charles VI. did not
quality of King of Sp
fused to acquiesce in
ish monarchy, which
stipulated in favour of
projects and secret int
er, the Duke of Orleas
alliance with England
particularly interested

and bestowed the greatest care, on their colonies, the number and wealth of which were augmented by new establishments and better regulations. In imitation of Louis XIV., most of the states kept up numerous standing armies; a practice which they even carried to excess. The influence of England in continental affairs was increased; as she had no occasion to augment her own army in proportion to that of other kingdoms, she was able to furnish them with those supplies which were necessary to carry on their wars. Besides, since the time of Frederic II., or about the year 1740, tactics, and the military art in general, had reached a degree of perfection which seemed scarcely to admit of further improvement. Finally, the financial system of several states experienced a revolution, by the invention of public funds for the payment of national debts; especially that instituted by Mr. Pitt, called the Sinking Fund.]

The extraordinary efforts which the powers of Europe had made during the last century, for maintaining the equilibrium of the continent against the ambitious designs of France and Sweden, brought on a long period of tranquillity, which gave these nations an opportunity of encouraging arts, industry, and commerce, and thereby repairing the evils which the long and disastrous wars had occasioned. Cabinets were attentive to maintain the stipulations of the treaties of Utrecht and Stockholm; and, by means of negotiations, to guard against everything that might rekindle a new general war. The good understanding that subsisted between France and Great Britain during the reign of George I. and the beginning of that of George II.—or, in other words, under the administration of Walpole,—was the effect of those temporary interests that engrossed the attention of the two courts—the one being under terror of the Pretender, and the other alarmed at the ambitious projects of Spain.

The Duke of Orleans, regent of France during the minority of Louis XV., was anxious to maintain that peace and political order which the late treaties had introduced; having it in view to remedy those disorders in the finance, which Louis XIV. had left in so deplorable a state.¹ The King of Spain, on the other hand, who was desirous of reviving his rights to the crown of France, went into the rash schemes of Cardinal Alberoni,* his prime minister; and purporting to renew the war; to reconquer those territories which the peace of Utrecht had dismembered from the Spanish monarchy; to deprive the Duke of Orleans of the regency, and vest it in the King of Spain; and to place the Pretender, son of James II., on the throne of Great Britain.

The treaty of Utrecht, although it had tranquillized a great part of Europe, was nevertheless defective, in as far as it had not reconciled the emperor and the King of Spain, the two principal claimants to the Spanish succession. The Emperor Charles VI. did not recognise Philip V. in his quality of King of Spain; and Philip, in his turn, refused to acquiesce in those partitions of the Spanish monarchy, which the treaty of Utrecht had stipulated in favour of the emperor. To defeat the projects and secret intrigues of the Spanish minister, the Duke of Orleans thought of courting an alliance with England, as being the power most particularly interested in maintaining the treaty of

Utrecht, the fundamental articles of which had been dictated by herself. That alliance, into which the United Provinces also entered, was concluded at the Hague (January 4th, 1717). The articles of the treaty of Utrecht, those especially which related to the succession of the two crowns, were there renewed; and the regent, in complaisance to the King of England, agreed to banish the Pretender from France, and to admit British commissaries into Dunkirk to superintend that port.

Cardinal Alberoni, without being in the least disconcerted by the Triple Alliance, persisted in his design of recommencing the war. He sooner had he recruited the Spanish forces, and equipped an expedition, than he attacked Sardinia, which he took from the emperor. This conquest was followed by that of Sicily, which the Spaniards took from the Duke of Savoy (1718).

France and England, indignant at the infraction of a treaty which they regarded as their own work, immediately concluded with the emperor, at London (August 2nd, 1718), the famous Quadruple Alliance, which contained the plan of a treaty of peace, to be made between the Emperor, the King of Spain, and the Duke of Savoy. The allied powers engaged to obtain the consent of the parties interested in this proposal, and, in case of refusal, to compel them by force of arms. The emperor was to renounce his right to the Spanish crown, and to acknowledge Philip V. as the legitimate King of Spain, in consideration of that prince renouncing the provinces of Italy and the Netherlands, which the treaty of Utrecht and the quadruple alliance adjudged to the emperor. The Duke of Savoy was to cede Sicily to Austria, receiving Sardinia in exchange, which the King of Spain was to disclaim. The right of reversion to the crown of Spain was transferred from Sicily to Sardinia. That treaty likewise granted to Don Carlos, eldest son of Philip V., by his second marriage, the eventual reversion and investiture of the duchies of Parma and Placentia, as well as the grand duchy of Tuscany, on condition of holding them as fiefs-male of the emperor and the Empire, after the decease of the last male issue of the families of Farnese and Medici, who were then in possession; and, the better to secure this double succession to the Infant, they agreed to introduce a body of 8,000 Swiss into the two duchies, to be quartered in Leghorn, Porto-Ferrajo, Parma, and Placentia. The contracting powers undertook to guarantee the payment of these troops.

The Duke of Savoy did not hesitate to subscribe the conditions of the quadruple alliance; but it was otherwise with the King of Spain, who persisted in his refusal; when France and England declared war against him. The French invaded the provinces of Guipuscoa and Catalonia, while the English seized Gallicia and the port of Vigo. These vigorous proceedings shook the resolutions of the King of Spain. He signed the quadruple alliance, and banished the Cardinal Alberoni from his court, the adviser of those measures of which the allies complained. The Spanish troops then evacuated Sicily and Sardinia, when the emperor took possession of the former, and Victor Amadeus, Duke of Savoy, of the latter.

The war to all appearance was at an end; peace, however, was far from being concluded, and there still remained many difficulties to settle between

the Emperor, the King of Spain, and the Duke of Savoy. To accomplish this, and conclude a definitive treaty between these three powers, a congress was summoned at Cambray, which was to open in 1721, under the mediation of France and England; but some disputes which arose regarding certain preliminary articles, retarded their meeting for several years. Their first and principal object was to effect an exchange of the acts of mutual renunciation between the Emperor and the King of Spain, as stipulated by the treaty of the quadruple alliance. The emperor, who was reluctant to abandon his claims to the Spanish monarchy, started difficulties as to the form of these renunciations. He demanded that Philip's renunciation of the provinces of Italy and the Netherlands should be confirmed by the Spanish cortes. Philip demanded, in his turn, that the renunciation of the emperor with regard to Spain should be ratified by the states of the Empire. To get clear of this difficulty, France and England agreed, by a special compact, signed at Paris (September 27th, 1721), that the renunciations of both princes, however defective they might be, should be held valid under the guarantee of the two mediating powers.

Scarcely was this difficulty settled, when another presented itself, much more embarrassing. This related to the company of Ostend, which the emperor had instituted, and to which, by charter signed at Vienna (December 19th, 1722), he had granted, for thirty years, the exclusive privilege of trading to the East and West Indies, and the coasts of Africa. That establishment set the maritime powers at variance with the emperor; especially the Dutch, who regarded it as prejudicial to their Indian commerce. They maintained that, according to the treaty of Munster, confirmed by the twenty-sixth article of the Barrier Treaty (1715), the trade of the Spaniards with the East Indies was to remain as it was at that time.

Nothing in these preliminary discussions met with so much opposition as the grant of the eventual reversion and investiture of Tuscany, Parma, and Placentia, which the emperor had engaged, by the Quadruple Alliance, to give to Don Carlos, the Infant of Spain. The Duke of Parma, the Pope, and the Grand Duke of Tuscany, joined in opposition to it. Anthony, the last Duke of Parma and Placentia, of the House of Farnese, demanded that the emperor should never, during his life, exercise over the duchy of Parma the territorial rights established by the treaty of the Quadruple Alliance. The pope also protested loudly against that clause of the treaty which deprived him of the rights of superiority over Parma and Placentia, which his predecessors had enjoyed for several centuries. As for the Grand Duke of Tuscany, John Gaston, the last of the Medici, he maintained, that as his duchy held of God only, he could never permit that it should be declared a fief of the Empire; nor recognise the Infant of Spain as heir of his estates, to the prejudice of his sister's rights, the widow of the Elector Palatine.

Charles VI., without stopping at these objections, laid the business of these investitures before the Diet of Ratisbon; and, after having obtained their consent, he caused copies to be made of the letters of reversion and investiture in favour of Don Carlos and his heirs male. These having been

presented to the congress, the King of Spain refused to receive them; alleging the protests of the Pope and the Grand Duke of Tuscany; nor would he agree to them, except on condition of an act of guarantee on the part of the mediating powers. All these difficulties being settled, and the preliminaries closed, they at length proceeded with the conferences at Cambray (April, 1724), for the conclusion of a definitive peace between the Emperor, the King of Spain, and the Duke of Savoy. Every thing seemed arrived at an amicable termination, when some differences arose between the commissioners of the emperor and those of the mediating powers, which occasioned new interruptions.

Meantime, the Duke of Bourbon, who had succeeded the Duke of Orleans in the ministry, sent back to Spain the Infanta Maria, daughter of Philip V., who had been educated at the court of France, as the intended spouse of Louis XV. This event broke up the congress. Philip V., mightily offended, recalled his ministers from Cambray. Baron Ripperda, whom he had sent as envoy to the Imperial Court, put an end to the differences between these two powers, in despite of the mediation of France. In consequence, a special treaty was concluded at Vienna between the Emperor and the King of Spain (April 30th, 1725). This treaty renewed the renunciation of Philip V. of the provinces of Italy and the Netherlands, as well as that of the emperor to Spain and the Indies. The eventual investiture of the duchies of Parma and Placentia, and that of the grand duchy of Tuscany, were also confirmed. The only new clause contained in the treaty, was that by which the King of Spain undertook to guarantee the famous Pragmatic Sanction of Charles VI., which seemed to the daughter of that prince the succession of all his estates. It was chiefly on this account that Philip V. became reconciled to the court of Vienna.

The peace of Vienna was accompanied by a defensive alliance between the emperor and the King of Spain. Among other clauses, one was that the emperor should interpose to obtain for the King of Spain the restitution of Gibraltar and the island of Minorea; while Philip, on his side, granted to the shipping of the emperor and his subjects free entrance into his ports, and all immunities and prerogatives which were enjoyed by the nations in the strictest commercial connexions with Spain. These clauses alarmed England and Holland; and the intimacy which had been established between the Courts of Vienna and Madrid attracted more particularly the attention of the Duke of Bourbon, who dreaded the resentment of the King of Spain, as he had advised the return of the Infanta. To prevent any such consequences, he set on foot a league with England and Prussia, capable of counteracting that of Vienna, which was concluded at Herrenhausen, near Hanover (September 3, 1725), and is known by the name of the *Alliance of Hanover*.

All Europe was divided between these two alliances. Holland, Sweden, and Denmark acceded to the alliance of Hanover. Catherine I. of Russia, and the principal Catholic states of the Empire, joined that of Vienna. The emperor even succeeded in detaching the King of Prussia from the alliance of Hanover to join his own. Europe seemed then on the eve of a general war. The

ambassadors to the English sent to America, the while the Spaniards laying siege to Gibraltar, the press of Russia (M a change in the dis The emperor, seeing the assistance of R cond the efforts of R contributed to the neither France nor In this situation, his mediation, and signed at Paris, wh be an armistice for of Ostend should be and that a new Ge at Aix-la-Chapelle.

This congress was and thence to Soiss 1728. Ambassadors Europe appeared th some reason, a hap as most of the diffi the Congress of Cam of Vienna, and as th was to settle the suc But the emperor had rian Pragmatic San the basis of the arr peace of Soissons, th of new disputes. Th minister of France, claim of the court of turn, threw obstacles at Soissons. This i overtures to the cou concerted a secret n found means to assoc

This gave rise to offensive alliance, between France, Spain, 1729). These powe succession of Parma Infant Don Carlos; solved to substitute Swiss garrisons, nam The Dutch acceded tion of the engaged powers came under t with respect to the C

The emperor, find cled without his ce of having failed in his tion of the Austrian indignant that the al to lay down the law of the Ostend Comp Spanish troops into determined not to ce off all relationship; recalled his ambass prevent the Spanish of Italy. The last Farnese, being dead his duchy by force of

At length, to termi King of England, i General, opened a n

ambassadors to the different courts were recalled. The English sent a numerous and powerful fleet to America, the Mediterranean, and the Baltic; while the Spaniards commenced hostilities, by laying siege to Gibraltar. The death of the Empress of Russia (May 17, 1727), however, caused a change in the disposition of the northern powers. The emperor, seeing he could no longer reckon on the assistance of Russia, showed no anxiety to second the efforts of the Spaniards; but what chiefly contributed to the maintenance of peace was, that neither France nor England were desirous of war.

In this situation of affairs, the pope interposed his mediation, and a new preliminary treaty was signed at Paris, which ordained that there should be an armistice for seven years; that the Company of Ostend should be suspended for the same time; and that a new General Congress should be held at Aix-la-Chapelle.

This congress was first transferred to Cambrai, and thence to Soissons, where it was opened in 1728. Ambassadors from almost all the courts of Europe appeared there; and they expected, with some reason, a happy conclusion of the business; as most of the difficulties which had embarrassed the Congress of Cambrai were settled by the peace of Vienna, and as the only subject for deliberation was to settle the succession of Parma and Tuscany. But the emperor having demanded that the Austrian Pragmatic Sanction should be adopted as the basis of the arrangements for establishing the peace of Soissons, that incident became the subject of new disputes. Cardinal Fleury, then prime minister of France, having strongly opposed this claim of the court of Vienna, the emperor, in his turn, threw obstacles in the way of the negotiation at Soissons. This inclined the cardinal to make overtures to the court of Madrid, with whom he concerted a secret negotiation, in which he also found means to associate England.

This gave rise to a treaty of peace, union, and offensive alliance, which was signed at Seville, between France, Spain, and England (November 9, 1729). These powers engaged to guarantee the succession of Parma and Tuscany in favour of the infant Don Carlos; and to effect this, they resolved to substitute 6,000 Spanish troops in the Swiss garrisons, named by the Quadruple Alliance. The Dutch acceded to that treaty, in consideration of the engagement which the contracting powers came under to give them entire satisfaction with respect to the Company of Ostend.

The emperor, finding the treaty of Seville concluded without his co-operation, was apprehensive of having failed in his principal aim, viz. the adoption of the Austrian Pragmatic Sanction. He was indignant that the allies at Seville should pretend to lay down the law to him touching the abolition of the Ostend Company, and the introduction of Spanish troops into Italy. Accordingly, being determined not to comply, he immediately broke off all relationship with the court of Spain; he recalled his ambassador, and took measures to prevent the Spanish troops from taking possession of Italy. The last Duke of Parma, Anthony Farnese, being dead (1731), he took possession of his duchy by force of arms.

At length, to terminate all these differences, the King of England, in concert with the States-General, opened a negotiation with the emperor;

the result of which was a treaty of alliance, signed at Vienna, between him, England, and Holland (March 16, 1731). In virtue of that treaty, the three contracting powers mutually guaranteed their estates, rights, and possessions; England and Holland, more especially, engaged to guarantee the Austrian Pragmatic Sanction; and the emperor, on his side, consented to the introduction of Spanish troops into Italy, and to the suppression of the Company of Ostend; he even agreed that the Netherlands should never carry on trade with the Indies, either by the Ostend Company or any other.

In consequence of this treaty, which was approved by the States-General, Don Carlos took possession of Parma and Placentia, and the Grand Duke of Tuscany also recognised him as his successor. Thus terminated these long disputes about the Spanish Succession, after having agitated the greater part of Europe for upwards of thirty years.

In the midst of these contentions, a war had arisen between the Porte and the Republic of Venice, in which the Emperor Charles VI. was also implicated. The Turks were desirous of recovering the Morea, which they had been obliged to abandon to the Venetians at the peace of Carlowitz; but instead of attacking that republic, while the emperor was engaged with the French war, and unable to render it assistance, they waited till the conclusion of the treaties of Utrecht, Rastadt, and Baden, before they declared hostilities. The pretexs which the Turks made to justify this rupture were extremely frivolous; but they knew well that the Venetians, who had lived in the most complete security since the peace of Carlowitz, had neglected to repair the fortifications which had been destroyed in the war, and that it would be easy for them to reconquer them.

In fact, during the campaign of 1715, the Grand Vizier not only recovered the Morea, but even dispossessed the Venetians of the places which they still retained in the Isle of Candia; and, at the commencement of the following campaign, they laid siege to the town of Corfu. Charles VI. thought he was bound, as a guarantee of the peace of Carlowitz, to espouse the cause of the Venetians; he declared war against the Porte, and his example was followed by the pope and the King of Spain, who united their fleets to those of the republic. The Turks were defeated in several engagements, and obliged to raise the siege of Corfu, after sacrificing a great many lives.

The campaigns of 1716 and 1717 in Hungary, were triumphant for the armies of the emperor; Prince Eugene gained a brilliant victory over the Grand Vizier, near Peterwaradin (August 5th), which enabled him to invest Temeswar, which he carried after a siege of six months, and thus completed the conquest of Hungary. To crown his glory, that great captain next undertook the siege of Belgrade, regarded by the Turks as the principal bulwark of their Empire. The grand vizier marched to the relief of the place, at the head of a formidable army. He encamped before Belgrade, and enclosed the Imperial army within a semicircle, reaching from the Danube to the Save. Prince Eugene had then no other alternative than to leave his camp, and attack the Turks in their intrenchments. He took his measures with such

address, that, in spite of the great superiority of the Turks, he forced them back to their camp, and put them completely to rout (August 16, 1717).

This victory was followed by the reduction of Belgrade, and several other places on the Save and the Danube. The Porte began to wish for peace; and as the emperor, who had just been attacked in Italy by the Spaniards, was equally desirous to put an end to the war, both parties agreed to accept the mediation of England and Holland. A congress was opened at Passarowitz, a small town in Servia, near the mouth of the Morava. A peace was there concluded between the three belligerent powers (July 21, 1718), on the basis of the *Uti possidetis*. The emperor retained Temeswar, Orsova, Belgrade, and the part of Wallachia lying on this side of the river Aluta; as also Servia, according to the limits determined by the treaty, and both banks of the Save, from the Drino to the Umma. The Venetians lost possession of the Morea, but they retained several places in Herzegovina, Dalmatia, and Albania, which they had conquered during the war. The Porte restored to them the Island of Cerigo in the Archipelago.

The success of Charles VI. in this war procured some new advantages to his house on the part of the States of Hungary. The Diet of 1687, in vesting the hereditary right of that kingdom in the Emperor Leopold I., had restricted that right solely to the male descendants of the House of Austria; and Charles VI., on his accession to the throne, had acknowledged the elective right of the States, in case he should happen to die without leaving any male offspring. This prince, finding afterwards that he had no other children left than the two daughters by his marriage with Elizabeth, Princess of Brunswick, and being desirous of securing to them the succession of Hungary, as well as his other estates, assembled a Diet at Presburg (1722), and there engaged the states of the kingdom to extend the right of succession to females, according to the order which he had established in the Austrian Pragmatic Sanction and published some years before.

A revolution happened in the government of Sweden immediately after the death of Charles XII., and before the great war of the North was quite ended. Reduced to a state of unfeigned distress by the folly, ambition, and inflexible obstinacy of that prince, Sweden saw her finest provinces occupied by the enemy, her commerce annihilated, her armies and her fleets destroyed. They attributed these disasters chiefly to the absolute power of Charles XII., and the abuse he had made of it. The only remedy for so many evils, they conceived, was to abolish a power which had become so pernicious to the state. As Charles had never been married, the throne, according to the hereditary law established in Sweden, passed to the son of the Duchess of Holstein-Gottorp, eldest sister of Charles; but the Senate of Sweden preferred to him the Princess Ulrica Eleonora, younger sister of the late king, because of the declaration she had made, renouncing all absolute power, and consenting to hold the crown only by the free election of the states of the kingdom. The states, in an assembly held at Stockholm, in the beginning of 1719, declared the throne vacant, and then proceeded to the election of the princess. With their act of election, they presented her with a new form

of government, and an Act known by the name of the *Royal Assurance*, which imposed new limitations on the royal authority. The princess signed these acts (February 21), and the states declared, that whoever should attempt to restore absolute power should be considered as a traitor to his country.

The government was intrusted to the queen conjunctly with the senate; while the legislative power was reserved to the states, to meet regularly every three years. The queen had the right of proposing bills or ordinances; but before these could have the force of law, they were to be submitted to the examination of the states, without whose consent war was never to be proclaimed. As for the deliberations of the senate, it was resolved, that they should be decided by a plurality of suffrages, that the queen should have two votes and a casting vote besides. Thus, the chief power was vested in the hands of the senate, the members of which resumed their ancient title of Senators of the Kingdom, instead of that of Counsellors to the King, which had been bestowed on them at the revolution of 1680. Ulrica Eleonora afterwards resigned the crown to her husband, Prince Frederic of Hesse-Cassel. The states, in their election of that prince (May 22, 1720), ordained that the queen, in case she should survive her husband, should be reinstated in her rights, and resume the crown, without the necessity of a new deliberation of the states. Frederic, by the Royal Assurance, and the form of government which he signed, agreed to certain new modifications of the royal power, especially concerning appointments to places of trust. By these different stipulations, and the changes which took place in consequence, the power of the Swedish kings was gradually reduced to very narrow limits. It was so much the more easy to make encroachments on the royal power, as the king, by a radical defect in the new form of government, had no constitutional means of preserving the little authority that was left him.

The death of Augustus II. of Poland occasioned new disturbances, which passed from the North to the South of Europe, and brought about great changes in Italy. Louis XV. took the opportunity of that event to replace Stanislaus on the throne of Poland, who was his father-in-law, and the former protégé of Charles XII. The Primates, and the greater part of the Polish nobility being in the interest of that prince, he was consequently elected (September 12, 1733).

Anne Ivanowna, Duchess-dowager of Courland, and niece of Peter the Great, had just ascended the throne of Russia, having succeeded Peter II. (June 20, 1730), who was cut off in the flower of his age without leaving any progeny. The grandees, in conferring the crown on Anne, limited her power by a capitulation which she made her sign at Mittau, but which she cancelled immediately on her arrival at Moscow. The princess, dreading the influence of France in Poland, in case of a war between Russia and the Porte, espoused the interests of Augustus III., Elector of Saxony, and son of the late king, whom she wished to place on the Polish throne. Part of the Polish nobility, withdrawing from the field of election, and supported by a Russian army, proclaimed that prince in opposition to Stanislaus, the protégé of France.

The Russians, re- seized Warsaw, and to Dantzic, where I army, under comm and obliged to seek wishing to avenge th in-law, and not be Russia, he resolved eror, on the ground to the frontiers of I tion of the Saxon pr

Spain and Sardin Stanislaus, which seem kings in general; w abandoned by Engla once he thought he guarantee which th dated in his favour.

more for their interes in this war, on the given the States-Gen erian Netherlands th French commenced

mine, the sovereign son of Duke Leopold Theresa, eldest daug VI. It was the C possession of that du

the same time, Marsh at the head of the E tress of Kehl. By the Empire, France g engaging the German act, he declared war which induced the F

in the Moselle, and Ppsburg, at the sieg as slain (June 12, 1 The principal scen where the campaigns

horious for the allic which they had guine rma (June 29), an they made themselves urdy, with the single they laid under blocka

anded by the Duke y the Infant Don Ca Naples, which threw ards. The victory y imperialists at Bitont of the kingdom of Na

the infant passed to that island, and was edities at Palermo (J The emperor, over essess, and unable to against him, eagerly so

a. The Empress Ar ated in Poland, and of the throne, despatc ries, under the com ey, into Germany, 735. These troops, appeared in that count on the Rhine, which ugene. That generat his design of tran rmarne. Matters were in this

The Russians, reinforced by the Saxon troops, seized Warsaw, and compelled Stanislaus to retire to Dantzic, where he was besieged by a Russian army, under command of Field-Marshal Munich, and obliged to seek safety in flight. Louis XV. wishing to avenge this injury offered to his father-in-law, and not being in a condition to attack Russia, he resolved to declare war against the emperor, on the ground that he had marched an army to the frontiers of Poland for supporting the election of the Saxon prince.

Spain and Sardinia espoused the cause of Stanislaus, which seemed to them to be the cause of kings in general; while the emperor saw himself abandoned by England and Holland, whose assistance he thought he might claim, in virtue of the guarantee which the treaty of Vienna had stipulated in his favour. But these powers judged it more for their interests to preserve strict neutrality in this war, on the assurance which France had given the States-General not to make the Austrian Netherlands the theatre of hostilities. The French commenced operations by seizing Lorraine, the sovereignty of which, Francis Stephen, son of Duke Leopold, was to have married Maria Theresa, eldest daughter of the Emperor Charles VI. It was the Count de Belleisle who took possession of that duchy (October 1733). About the same time, Marshal Berwick passed the Rhine at the head of the French army, and reduced the fortress of Kehl. By thus attacking a fortress of the Empire, France gave the emperor a pretext for entering the Germanic body in his quarrel. In fact, he declared war against France and her allies; which induced the French to seize several places on the Moselle, and to reduce the fortress of Philippsburg, at the siege of which Marshal Berwick was slain (June 12, 1734).

The principal scene of the war then lay in Italy, where the campaigns of 1734 and 1735 were most glorious for the allies. After the two victories which they had gained over the Imperialists near Parma (June 29), and Guastalla (September 17), they made themselves master of all Austrian Lombardy, with the single exception of Mantua, which they laid under blockade. A Spanish army, commanded by the Duke of Montemar, accompanied by the Infant Don Carlos, directed their march on Naples, which threw open its gates to the Spaniards. The victory which they gained over the Imperialists at Bitonto (May 25), decided the fate of the kingdom of Naples. After this conquest, the Infant passed to Sicily. He soon reduced that island, and was crowned King of the Two Sicilies at Palermo (July 3, 1735).

The emperor, overwhelmed by so many reverses, and unable to withstand the powers leagued against him, eagerly solicited assistance from Russia. The Empress Anne, who saw the war terminated in Poland, and Augustus in quiet possession of the throne, despatched a body of 10,000 auxiliaries, under the command of General Count de Soltov, into Germany, in the spring of the year 1735. These troops, the first Russians who had appeared in that country, joined the Imperial army on the Rhine, which was commanded by Prince Eugene. That general, however, did not succeed in his design of transferring the seat of war to Lorraine.

Matters were in this situation, when the mari-

time powers interposed their good offices for restoring peace between the Emperor and the States leagued against him. Cardinal Fleury, perceiving that their mediation was not agreeable to the Imperial court, took the resolution of concerting a secret negotiation with the emperor; the result of which was a treaty of preliminaries; although much deliberation was necessary before coming to the conclusion of a definitive peace. This was at length signed at Vienna, between France, the Emperor, and the Empire, on the 8th of November, 1738. The former treaties of Westphalia, Nimwegen, Ryswick, Utrecht, and the Quadruple Alliance, were admitted as the basis of this treaty. Stanislaus renounced the throne of Poland, and retained the title only during his life. They gave him, by way of compensation, the duchies of Lorraine and Bar, on condition that, at his death, they should revert with full right to France. The single county of Falkenstein, with its appurtenances and dependencies, was reserved for Francis, Duke of Lorraine. In exchange for the duchy which he abdicated, that prince received the grand duchy of Tuscany, whose last possessor, John Gaston, of the House of Medici, had just died without leaving any posterity (1737). The kingdom of the Two Sicilies, with the ports of Tuscany, were secured to Don Carlos and his descendants, male and female; and, failing them, to the younger brothers of that prince, and their descendants. On his part, Don Carlos ceded to the emperor the duchies of Parma and Placentia, and even renounced the rights which former treaties had given him over the grand duchy of Tuscany. They restored to the emperor all that had been taken from him in the provinces of Milan and Mantua; with the reservation of the districts of Novara and Tortona, which he was obliged to cede to Charles Emanuel III., King of Sardinia, together with San-Fidele, Torre di Forti, Gravedo, and Campo-Maggiore; as also the territorial superiority of the fiefs commonly called Langhes, to be held entirely as Imperial fiefs. Finally, France undertook, in the most authentic form, to guarantee the Pragmatic Sanction of the emperor.

The Kings of Spain and Sardinia were not satisfied with the conditions of this treaty. The former wished to preserve the grand duchy of Tuscany, with the duchies of Parma and Placentia; and the other had expected to obtain a larger portion of Lombardy. Thus, these princes long hesitated to admit the articles agreed to between the courts of France and Vienna; nor did they give their consent until the year 1739.

While these disputes about the succession of Poland occupied a great part of Europe, a war broke out between the Turks and the Russians, in which Austria was also implicated. The Empress Anne of Russia, wishing to recover Azoff, and repair the loss which Peter the Great had sustained in his unfortunate campaign on the Pruth, took advantage of the war between the Turks and the Prussians, to form an alliance with Khouli Khan, the famous conqueror of the East, who had just subverted the ancient dynasty of the Sophis of Persia. The incursions which the Tartars had made at different times into the Russian provinces, without the Porte thinking proper to check them, served as a motive for the empress to order an expedition against the Turks (1735), and

to declare war against the Porte soon after. It was during the campaign of 1736 that Count Lacy made himself master of Azoff, and that Marshal Munich, after having forced the lines at Perekop, penetrated into the interior of the Crimea; but having in that expedition lost many of his men by famine and disease, he found it impossible to maintain himself in that peninsula.

The emperor offered himself at first as a mediator between the belligerent powers. A conference was opened at Niemerow in Poland, which proved fruitless. The Russians, who had just taken Oczakoff, emboldened by their success, were desirous to continue the war; while the emperor, without reflecting on the bad condition of his military strength, and the loss which he had sustained by the death of the celebrated Prince Eugene (April 21, 1736), thought only of sharing the conquest with the Russians. He then laid aside the character of mediator, to act on the defensive against the Turks; but he had soon reason to repent of this measure. The Turks, encouraged by the famous Count de Bonneval, gained considerable advantages over the Austrians; and in course of the campaigns of 1737 and 1738, they dislodged them from Wallachia and Servia, retook Orsova, and laid siege to the city of Belgrade in 1739.

The court of Vienna, in a state of great consternation, had recourse to the mediation of M. de Villeveuve, the French ambassador at Constantinople, to sue for peace with the Porte; Count Neipperg, who was sent by the emperor to the Turkish camp before Belgrade, signed there, with too much precipitation, a treaty, under very disadvantageous terms for Austria; and the Empress Anne, who had intrusted the French ambassador with her full powers, consented also to a peace very unfavourable for Russia, notwithstanding the brilliant victory which Marshal Munich had gained over the Turks in the neighbourhood of Choczim (October 28, 1739), which was followed by the capture of that place, and the conquest of Moldavia by the Russians.

The emperor, by that peace, ceded to the Porte Belgrade, Sabatz, and Orsova, with Austrian Servia and Wallachia. The Danube, the Save, and the Una, were again settled as the boundary between the two Empires; and Austria preserved nothing but the Banat of Temeswar of all that had been ceded to her by the peace of Passarowitz. The Austrian merchants, however, were granted free ingress and egress, in the kingdoms and provinces of the Ottoman Empire, both by sea and land, in their own vessels, with the flag and letters-patent of the emperor, on condition of their paying the accustomed dues.

Russia surrendered all her conquests, and among others Choczim and Moldavia. The boundaries between the two Empires were regulated by different special agreements. The fortress of Azoff was demolished; and it was stipulated that Russia should not construct any new fortress within thirty versts of that place, on the one side; nor the Porte within thirty versts, on the side of the Cuban. Russia was even interdicted from having and constructing fleets or other naval stores, either on the sea of Azoff or the Black Sea. The Zaporog Cossacs continued under the dominion of Russia, which obtained also from the Porte the acknow-

ledgment of the Imperial title. The peace between Russia and the Porte was declared perpetual; but they limited that between Austria and the Porte to twenty-seven years. The latter was renewed under the Empress Maria Theresa; and rendered also perpetual, by an agreement which that princess concluded with the Porte, May 23, 1747.

The succession to Charles VI., the last male descendant of the House of Hapsburg, who died October 20th, 1740, kindled a new general war in Europe. That prince, in the year 1713, had published an order or succession, known by the name of the Pragmatic Sanction, which decreed, that, failing his lineal heirs-male, his own daughters should succeed in preference to those of his brothers the Emperor Joseph I.; and that the succession of his daughters should be regulated according to the order of primogeniture, so that the elder should be preferred to the younger, and that she alone should inherit his whole estates. He took great pains to get this order approved by the different hereditary States of Austria, as well as by the daughters of his brother Joseph I., and by the husbands of these princesses, the Electors of Saxony and Bavaria. He even obtained, by degrees, the sanction of all the principal powers of Europe. But, though his external policy had been very active in securing the rights of his eldest daughter Maria Theresa, he neglected those measures to which he ought rather to have directed his attention. The wretched state in which he left his finances and his army, encouraged a number of pretenders, who disputed the succession with that princess.

Of these claimants, the principal was the Elector of Bavaria, who, as being descended from Anne of Austria, daughter of Ferdinand I., advanced the claims of the former of these daughters against the latter; grounded on the contract of marriage between that princess and Albert V., Duke of Bavaria, as well as on the will of Ferdinand I. The Elector of Saxony, then King of Poland, although he had approved of the Pragmatic Sanction, claimed the succession, as being husband of the elder of these princesses; and in virtue of a compact between the two brothers, Joseph I. and Charles VI., which provided, that the daughters of Joseph should, under all circumstances, be preferred to those of Charles.

Philip V., King of Spain, laid claim to the kingdoms of Bohemia and Hungary. He grounded his rights on an agreement (1617) between Philip III. of Spain and Ferdinand of Austria, afterwards the Emperor Ferdinand II., according to which these kingdoms were to pass to the descendants of Philip III., failing the male line of Ferdinand. A war had arisen between Spain and England on account of the clandestine traffic which the English carried on in Spanish America, under favour of the contract called the *Assiento*. Philip V. thought of turning these differences relative to the Austrian succession to his own advantage, either for drawing France into an alliance with him against England, or to procure for his son Don Philip a settlement in Italy, at the expense of the daughter of Charles VI.

Frederic II., King of Prussia, who had just succeeded his father Frederic I., judged this a favourable time for turning his attention to the affairs of his own kingdom, and profiting by the troops and

treasures which his father, he revived several duchies and which his ancestors, had justly deprived by Austria. Sardinia laid claim to grounded on the contract of the Emperor, Charles VI., the daughter of Philip France, wishing to avenges for humbling on foot a negotiation and engaged to procure with a part of the territory Austria.

An alliance was Spain, and the Elector joined also by the King of Sardinia, and the Two Sicilies from affording assistance prevailed on Sweden power. The court of these resolutions to were directly opposed treaty of Vienna, Car drawn into that war Belleisle, alleged, in the guarantee of the Pragmatic had undertaken by the clause *Sine prejudicio* France never intended to judge the just claims

The most active of res was the King of in the month of December occupied in making the Bavaria, reinforced by took possession of Upper marching directly upon Bohemia, with the Meantime, the Elector of Saxony, then King of Poland, com on that prince (January 1741) the name of Charles VII.

to prevent the dismemberment, according to the The Elector of Bavaria Tyrol, and the province of the Elector of Saxony was Silesia; and the King of Silesia. As for Austria, for Don Philip, the King left to the queen, except with Lower Austria, Stiria, and Carniola, in the midst of these impressions displayed a courage Aided by the supplies and Holland furnished efforts which the Hungarian favour, she succeeded pulsing the enemy with grand league which had

The King of Prussia victories which he gained (1741), and Caslau succeeded in conquering Bohemia. It was of importance of so formidable Great Britain having

Charles VI.
cession.
to Contract.

Maria Theresa, Empress.
Coalition against her.
Frederic the Great.

PERIOD VIII. A.D. 1713—1789.

Treaty of Berlin.
The Pragmatic Sanction. 141
George II.

The peace be-
declared per-
Austria and
The latter was
Theresa; and
and
Crement which
Lorte, May 23,

the last male
burg, who died
general war in
1713, had pub-
own by the same
decreed, that
own daughters
se of his brother
the succession of
according to the
elder - said
that she alone
He took great
by the differ-
well as by the
and by the in-
ctors of Saxony
by degrees, the
ers of Europe
had been very
eldest daughter
ose measures to
e) his attention,
reft his finance-
er of pretenders
that princess.
was the Elector
d from Anne of
, advanced the
nters against the
of marriage be-
l, Duke of Bar-
rdinand I. The
Poland, although
anction, claimed
of the elder
a compact be-
and Charles VI.
ters of Joseph
be preferred to

d claim to the
y. He grounded
between Philip
ustria, afterwards
ording to which
descendants of
of Ferdinand.
nd England and
hich the English
der favour of the
ip". thought
to the Austria
ther for drawing
against England
lip a settlement
the daughter of

ho had just suc-
ed this a favour
to the affairs of
y the troops and

treasures which his father had left. With this view, he revived certain claims of his family to several duchies and principalities in Silesia, of which his ancestors, he maintained, had been unjustly deprived by Austria. Finally, the King of Sardinia laid claim to the whole duchy of Milan; grounded on the contract of marriage between his ancestor, Charles Emanuel, Duke of Savoy, and the daughter of Philip II, of Spain. The court of France, wishing to avail herself of these circumstances for humbling Austria, her ancient rival, set on foot a negotiation with the elector of Bavaria, and engaged to procure him the Imperial crown, with a part of the territories of which he had deprived Austria.

An alliance was concluded between France, Spain, and the Elector of Bavaria, which was joined also by the Kings of Prussia, Poland, Sardinia, and the Two Sicilies; and to prevent Russia from affording assistance to Maria Theresa, they prevailed on Sweden to declare war against that power. The court of Vienna having complained of these resolutions to the French cabinet, which were directly opposed to the conditions of the last treaty of Vienna, Cardinal Fleury, who had been drawn into that war by the intrigues of M. De Belleisle, alleged, in his own justification, that the guarantee of the Pragmatic Sanction, which France had undertaken by that treaty, presupposed the clause *Sine prejudicio tertii*; that is to say, that France never intended, by that guarantee, to prejudice the just claims of the Elector of Bavaria.

The most active of the enemies of Maria Theresa was the King of Prussia, who entered Silesia in the month of December 1740. While he was occupied in making that conquest, the Elector of Bavaria, reinforced by an army of French auxiliaries, took possession of Upper Austria; but, instead of marching directly upon Vienna, he turned towards Bohemia, with the intention of conquering it. Meantime, the Electoral Diet, which was assembled at Frankfort, conferred the Imperial dignity on that prince (January 24, 1742), who took the name of Charles VII. Nothing appeared then to prevent the dismemberment of the Austrian monarchy, according to the plan of the allied powers. The Elector of Bavaria was to have Bohemia, the Tyrol, and the provinces of Upper Austria; the Elector of Saxony was to have Moravia and Upper Silesia; and the King of Prussia the remainder of Silesia. As for Austrian Lombardy, it was destined for Don Philip, the Infant of Spain. Nothing was left to the queen, except the kingdom of Hungary, with Lower Austria, the duchies of Carinthia, Stiria, and Carniola, and the Belgie Provinces. In the midst of these imminent dangers, Maria Theresa displayed a courage beyond her age and sex. Aided by the supplies of money which England and Holland furnished her, and by the generous efforts which the Hungarian nation made in her favour, she succeeded in calming the storm, repulsing the enemy with vigour, and dissolving the grand league which had been formed against her.

The King of Prussia, in consequence of the two victories which he gained at Molwitz (April 10, 1741), and Czaslau (May 17, 1742), had succeeded in conquering Silesia, Moravia, and part of Bohemia. It was of importance for the queen to get rid of so formidable an enemy. The King of Great Britain having interposed, certain prelimi-

naries were signed at Breslau, which were followed by a definitive peace, concluded at Berlin (July 28, 1742). The queen, by this treaty, gave up to the King of Prussia Silesia and the Comté of Glatz, excepting the principality of Teschen, and part of the principalities of Troppau, Jagendorf, and Neisse. The example of Prussia was soon followed by the King of Poland. This prince, alarmed at the sudden increase of the Prussian power, not only acceded to the treaty of Berlin, but even formed an alliance with the queen against Prussia.

The King of Sardinia, who dreaded the preponderance of the Bourbons in Italy, likewise abandoned the grand alliance, and attached himself to the queen's interests, by a compact which was signed at Turin. The French and Spaniards then turned their arms against that prince; and, while the King of the Two Sicilies joined his forces with the Spaniards, an English squadron appeared before Naples, threatened to bombard the city, and compelled the king to recal his troops from Lombardy, and remain neutral. This was not the only piece of service which George II. rendered the young queen. Being one of the powers that guaranteed the Pragmatic Sanction, he sent to her aid an army composed of English, Hanoverians, and Hessians. This, known by the name of the Pragmatic Army, fought and defeated the French at Dettingen (June 27, 1743). They were afterwards reinforced by a body of troops which the States-General sent, in fulfillment of the engagement which they had contracted with the court of Vienna. Lastly, that prince, in order to attach the King of Sardinia more closely to the interests of Austria, set on foot a treaty at Worms, by which the queen ceded to the King of Sardinia the territory of Pavia, between the Po and the Tesino, part of the duchy of Placentia, and the district of Angliera, with the rights which they claimed to the marquisate of Finale. The king, on his part, abandoned all claims to the Milanais; and engaged to support an army of 40,000 men for the service of the queen, in consideration of the supplies which England promised to pay him.

This soon changed the aspect of affairs. The queen re-conquered Austria and Bohemia. She expelled the French from Bavaria, and drove them even beyond the Rhine. The Emperor Charles VII. was obliged to transfer his residence from Munich to Frankfort on the Maine. France, who had never acted till then but as the ally of the Elector of Bavaria, resolved, in consequence of these events, formally to declare war against the Queen, and the King of Great Britain (March 15, 1744). The King of the Two Sicilies broke his neutrality, and again joined his troops with the Spanish army, who were acting against the queen and her ally the King of Sardinia. The war was now carried on with fresh vigour. Louis XV. attacked the Austrian Netherlands in person, and negotiated a treaty of union, at Frankfort, between the emperor and several principal states of the Empire. By this treaty it was stipulated, that the allied princes should unite their forces, and constrain the queen to acknowledge the Emperor Charles VII., and reinstate him in his hereditary dominions.

It was in consequence of this treaty that the King of Prussia again commenced the war, and

made an attack on Bohemia. Prince Charles of Lorraine, who had invaded Alsace, at the head of an Austrian army, was obliged to repossess the Rhine, and march to the relief of that kingdom. The French penetrated into Germany, and while Louis XV. laid siege to Friburg in Brisgaw, General Seekendorf, who commanded the Imperial army, reconquered Bavaria. Charles VII., who was then restored to his estates, returned to Munich.

During these transactions, an unforeseen event happened, which changed the state of affairs. The emperor died at the early age of forty-seven (January 20, 1745), and his son Maximilian, Joseph II., used all expedition to make up matters with the queen. By the special treaty, which he concluded with her at Fussen (April 22, 1745), he renounced the claims which his father had made to the succession of Charles VI. He again signed the Pragmatic Sanction, satisfied with being maintained in the possession of his patrimonial estates. The French had in vain endeavoured to prevent the election of the Grand Duke of Tuscany to the Imperial throne, who had been associated with his wife, Maria Theresa, in the government of her hereditary dominions. That prince, however, was elected at Frankfurt, under the protection of the Austrian and Prussian armies.

An alliance had been concluded at Warsaw between Maria Theresa, Poland, England, and Holland (January 8, 1745). Augustus III. had engaged, as Elector of Saxony, to despatch an army of 30,000 men to the queen's assistance, in consideration of the subsidies which England and Holland had promised to pay him. That army being joined by the Austrians, had advanced into Silesia, where they sustained a total defeat near Hohenfriedberg (June 4). The victorious King of Prussia returned to Bohemia, and there defeated the allies a second time, near Sorr, in the Circle of Konigratz (September 30). He then attacked Saxony, in order to compel the queen to make peace, by harassing the elector her ally. The victory, which he gained over the Saxons at Kesselsdorf (December 15), made him master of Dresden and the whole electorate, which he laid under contribution. These victories accelerated the peace between the King of Prussia, the Queen, and the Elector of Saxony, which was signed at Dresden, under the mediation of Great Britain. The King of Prussia restored to the elector all his estates, the latter promising to pay him a million of Imperial crowns. The queen gave up Silesia and the comté of Glatz; while the King, as the Elector of Brandenburg, acquiesced in the election of Francis I. to the Imperial throne. The King of England, the Dutch, and the States of the Empire, undertook to guarantee these stipulations.

The treaties of Fussen and Dresden restored tranquillity to the Empire; but the war was continued in the Netherlands, Italy, and in the East and West Indies. The French, under the conduct of Marshal Saxe, distinguished themselves in the Netherlands. The victories which they gained over the allies at Fontenoy (May 11, 1745), and at Rocoux (October 11, 1746), procured them the conquest of all the Austrian Netherlands, except the towns and fortresses of Luxemburg, Limburg, and Gueldres.

Charles Edward, son of the Pretender, encour-

aged and assisted by the court of France, landed in Scotland in August 1745. Being joined by a number of partisans, whom he found in that kingdom, he caused his father to be proclaimed at Perth and Edinburgh, assuming to himself the title of Prince of Wales, and Regent of the three kingdoms. The victory which he gained near Prestonpans over the English troops, rendered him master of all Scotland. He next invaded England, took Carlisle, and advanced as far as Derby, spreading terror and consternation in London. George II. was obliged to recall the Duke of Cumberland, with his troops, from the Netherlands. That prince gave back the Pretender, re-took Carlisle, and restored tranquillity in Scotland, by defeating the rebels near Culloden in the Highlands. Charles Edward was then reduced to the necessity of concealing himself among the mountains, until the month of October following, when he found means to transport himself to France.

The campaign of 1747 in Italy was glorious for the French, and their allies the Spaniards. The republic of Genoa, being offended at the clause in the treaty of Worms, which took from them the marquisate of Finale, espoused the cause of the two crowns, and facilitated the junction of the French army of the Alps with that of Lombardy. One effect of this junction was the conquest of Piedmont, as also of Austrian Lombardy, excepting the cities of Turin and Mantua, which the allies had laid under blockade.

The fate of the war, however, experienced a new change in Italy, at the opening of the following campaign. Maria Theresa, disengaged from the war with Prussia, sent considerable reinforcements into Lombardy, which gave her arms a superiority over those of the allies. The French and Spaniards were stripped of all their conquests, and sustained a grand defeat at Placentia (June 16, 1746), which obliged them to beat a retreat. To add to their misfortunes, the new King of Spain, Ferdinand VI., who had just succeeded his father, Philip V., being displeased with the court of France, and unfavourably inclined towards his brother Don Philip, recalled all his troops from Italy. The French had then no other alternative left than to follow the Spaniards in their retreat. Italy was abandoned to the Austrians, and the French troops again returned to Provence. The whole republic of Genoa, with its capital, fell into the hands of the Austrians. The King of Sardinia took possession of Finale, Savona, and the western part of the republican territory. The Austrians, joined by the Piedmontese, made a descent on Provence, and undertook the siege of Antibes.

An extraordinary event produced a diversion favourable for France, and obliged the Austrians and Piedmontese to repossess the Alps. The Genoese being maltreated by the Austrians, who had burdened them with contributions and discretionary exactions, suddenly rose against their new masters. The insurgents, with Prince Doria at their head, succeeded in expelling them from Genoa (December 1746). General Botta, who commanded at Genoa, was obliged to abandon his stores and equipage, that he might the more quickly escape from the territory of the republic. The siege of Antibes was raised; the allies repossessed the Alps, and blockaded Genoa. But the French having sent powerful supplies by sea to that city, and at

the same time made a descent on Piedmont, relieved the enemy to retreat.

In 1747, the French, at the Austrian Netherlands, captured Dutch Flanders, for having sent constant succours, for having invaded the province, after the battle of Fontenoy, spread terror in the province, and themselves deprived of the province, as well as the death of the republic, the death of William IV. William IV., Prince of Orange, was testamentary he obtained the stadtholder's office, as afterwards added the office of stadtholder; but the effort of the other offices and dignities of Orange, proved ineffectual. Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, and the other provinces, were in their free government, the prince the office of stadtholder, he had requested. The Dutch, contributed to the war, there was a general feeling of discontent, which had no effect in the different towns and provinces, and obliged the magistrates, as stadtholder and council, to resign their office, without any obstacle on the part of the prince. Interest in opposing the prince, yielded to the wishes of the people, so far as to declare the offices of stadtholder and council, hereditary in all the provinces, and female—a circumstance, which was the foundation of the republic. This change which had taken place, did not, however, prevent the making new conquests. The Dutch, in possession of Dutch Flanders, and the town of Maestricht, and having advanced with the army to the town, a bloody battle was fought (July 2, 1747), which was under the command of M. de Camille, who, by Bergen-op-Zoom, who, by its situation and its situation, was carried off, was carried off, two months later, and the Dutch, however brilliant their success was on the continent, was on their maritime expeditions, and their town of Louisburg, and completely destroyed, which had been much to the credit of Cardinal Fleury, who, at length felt the necessity of the war, were two events which were the result of the Empress of Russia's engagements into which she was drawn, and the parts of Vienna and Lo-

the same time made a vigorous attack on the side of Piedmont, relieved the Genoese, and obliged the enemy to retreat.

In 1747, the French, who were already masters of the Austrian Netherlands, attacked and conquered Dutch Flanders. They blamed the Dutch for having sent constant supplies to Maria Theresa, for having invaded the French territory, and granted a retreat through their own to the enemy's troops, after the battle of Fontenoy. This invasion spread terror in the province of Zealand, who thus saw themselves deprived of their barrier, and exposed to the inroads of the French. The partisans of the Prince of Orange took advantage of that circumstance to restore the stadtholdership. This dignity, as well as that of captain and admiral-general of the republic, had remained vacant since the death of William III.

William IV., Prince of Nassau-Dietz, though he was testamentary heir to that prince, had only obtained the stadtholdership of Friesland, to which was afterwards added that of Groningen and Guelders; but the efforts which he made to obtain the other offices and dignities of the ancient Princes of Orange, proved ineffectual. The four provinces of Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, and Overijssel, persisted in their free government, and even refused the prince the office of general of infantry, which he had requested. France, by attacking Dutch Flanders, contributed to the elevation of William.

There was a general feeling in his favour in those provinces which had no stadtholder; the people of the different towns and districts rose in succession, and obliged the magistrates to proclaim William IV. as stadtholder and captain-general. This resolution was achieved without disturbance, and without any obstacle on the part of those who had an interest in opposing it, but who were obliged to yield to the wishes of the people. They even went so far as to declare the stadtholdership, as well as the offices of captain and admiral-general, hereditary in all the prince's descendants, male and female—a circumstance unprecedented since the foundation of the republic.

This change which happened in the stadtholdership did not, however, prevent the French from making new conquests. They had no sooner got possession of Dutch Flanders, than they attacked the town of Maestricht. The Duke of Cumberland having advanced with the allied army to cover the town, a bloody battle took place near Laveid (July 2, 1747), which was gained by the French, under the command of Marshal Saxe. The fortress of Bergen-op-Zoom, which was deemed impregnable by its situation and the marshes which surrounded it, was carried by assault by Count Saxe, two months after he had opened his trenches.

However brilliant the success of the French was on the continent, they failed in almost all their maritime expeditions. The English took them from Louisburg and Cape Breton in America; and completely destroyed the French marine, which had been much neglected, under the ministry of Cardinal Fleury. All the belligerent powers at length felt the necessity of peace; and there were two events which tended to accelerate it.

The Empress of Russia, conformable to the engagements into which she had entered with the courts of Vienna and London, by the treaties of

1746 and 1747, had despatched Prince Repnin to the Rhine, at the head of 30,000 men. Marshal Saxe, at the same time, had laid siege to Maestricht, in presence of the enemy, who were 80,000 strong. The taking of that city would have laid open all Holland to the French, and threatened the republic with the most disastrous consequences.

A preliminary treaty was then signed at Aix-la-Chapelle, which was followed by a definitive peace (October 18, 1748). There all former treaties since that of Westphalia were renewed; a mutual restitution was made on both sides of all conquests made during the war, both in Europe and in the East and West Indies; and in consideration of the important restitutions which France had made on the continent, they ceded to Don Philip, the son-in-law of Louis XV., and brother of Don Carlos, the duchies of Parma, Placentia, and Guastalla, to be possessed by him and his lawful heirs male. The treaty of preliminaries contained two conditions upon which the duchies of Parma and Guastalla should revert to the queen, and that of Placentia to the King of Sardinia; viz.

1. Failing the male descendants of Don Philip.
2. If Don Carlos, King of the Two Sicilies, should be called to the throne of Spain. In this latter case, it was presumed that the kingdom of the Two Sicilies should pass to Don Philip, the younger brother of that prince; but they did not seem to recollect that the peace of Vienna (1738) had secured this latter kingdom to Don Carlos, and all his descendants male and female; and consequently, nothing prevented that prince, should the case so happen, from transferring the Two Sicilies to one of his own younger sons; supposing even that he were not permitted to unite that kingdom with the Spanish monarchy. The plenipotentiaries having perceived this oversight after the conclusion of the preliminaries, took care to rectify it in the definitive treaty, by thus wording the second clause of the reversion, "Should Don Philip, or any of his descendants, be either called to the throne of Spain, or to that of the Two Sicilies."

The empress agreed to this change, but the King of Sardinia was not so complaisant. In respect to him, it was necessary to make the definitive treaty entirely conformable to the preliminaries. It was this circumstance which prevented the King of the Two Sicilies from acceding to the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. By that treaty the King of Sardinia was confirmed in those different possessions in the Milanais which the treaty of Worms had adjudged him. These, however, did not include that part of Placentia which had just been ceded to Don Philip; nor the marquisate of Finale, which the Genoese retained. That republic, and the Duke of Modena, who had always been the ally of France, were restored to the same state in which they were before the war. Silesia was guaranteed to the King of Prussia by the whole of the contracting powers. As for England, besides the guarantee of the British succession in favour of the House of Hanover, she obtained a renewal of the expulsion of the Pretender from the soil of France; while this latter power, victorious on the continent, consented to revive the humiliating clause in the treaty of Utrecht, which ordered the demolition of the port of Dunkirk. The only modification which was made to this clause was, that the fortifications

over, she ceded to that crown the province of Kymenegard in Finland, with the towns and fortresses of Friedriesham and Wilmanstrand; as also the parish of Pyttis, lying to the east of the Kymen, and the ports, places, and districts, situated at the mouth of that river. The islands lying on the south and west of the Kymen were likewise included in this cession; as were also the town and fortress of Nysslot, with its territory. All the rest of Finland was restored to Sweden, together with the other conquests which Russia had made during the war. The Swedes were permitted to purchase annually in the Russian ports of the Baltic, and the Gulf of Finland, grain to the value of 50,000 roubles, without paying any export duty.

Portugal, about the middle of the eighteenth century, became the scene of various memorable events, which attracted general attention. John V., who had governed that kingdom from 1706 till 1750, had fallen into a state of weakness and decline, and abandoned the reins of government to Don Caspard, his confessor, under whose administration numerous abuses had crept into the state. Joseph I., the son and successor of John V., on ascending the throne (July 31, 1750), undertook to reform these abuses. By the advice of his minister, Sebastian De Carvalho, afterwards created Count D'Oeyras, and Marquis De Pombal, he turned his attention to every branch of the administration. He patronised the arts and sciences, encouraged agriculture, manufactures, and commerce; regulated the finances; and used every effort to raise the army and navy of Portugal from that state of languor into which they had fallen. These innovations could not be accomplished without exciting discontent in the different orders of the state. Sebastian increased this by his inflexible severity and the despotism which he displayed in the exercise of his ministerial functions, as well as by the antipathy which he showed against the nobility and the ministers of religion. The companies which he instituted for exclusive commerce to the Indies, Africa, and China, raised against him the whole body of merchants in the kingdom. He irritated the nobility by the contempt which he testified towards them, and by annexing to the crown those immense domains in Africa and America which the nobles enjoyed by the munificence of former kings. The most powerful and the most dangerous enemies of this minister were the Jesuits, whom he had ventured to attack openly, and had even ordered to be expelled from Portugal. Of this event, which was attended with remarkable consequences, it will be necessary that we give some account.

During the life of John V., a treaty had been signed between the courts of Madrid and Lisbon (1750), in virtue of which the Portuguese colony of St. Sacramento and the northern bank of the river La Plata, in America, were ceded to Spain, in exchange for a part of Paraguay, lying on the eastern bank of the Uruguay. This treaty was on the point of being carried into execution; the commissioners appointed for this purpose had commenced their labours; but the inhabitants of the ceded territories opposed the exchange, as did several individuals in both courts. The Jesuits were suspected of being the authors and instigators of that opposition. In the territories which were to be ceded to Portugal, they had instituted a re-

public of the natives, which they governed as absolute masters, and which they were afraid would be subverted, if the exchange in question should take place. They used every means, therefore, to thwart the arrangements of the two courts; and it is alleged they even went so far as to excite a rebellion among the inhabitants of the countries to be exchanged. The consequence was, a long and expensive war between the two crowns, which occasioned much bloodshed, and cost Portugal alone nearly 20,000,000 of cruzados.

In the midst of these events, there occurred a terrible earthquake, which, in the twinkling of an eye, demolished the greater part of Lisbon, and destroyed between 20,000 and 30,000 of its inhabitants (November 1, 1755). Fire consumed whatever had escaped from the earthquake; while the overflowing of the sea, cold, and famine, added to the horrors of these calamities, which extended even over a great part of the kingdom. The Jesuits were reproached for having, at the time of this distressing event, announced new disasters, which were to overwhelm Portugal, as a punishment for the sins of which the inhabitants had been guilty. These predictions, added to the commotions which still continued in Brazil, served as a pretext for depriving the Jesuits of their office of court-confessors, shutting them out from the palace, and even interdicting them from hearing confessions over the whole kingdom.

The outrage which was committed against the king's person immediately after, furnished the minister with another pretext against that religious order. The king, when going by night to Belem (September 3, 1758), was attacked by assassins, who mistook him for another, and fired several shots at him, by which he was severely wounded. Several of the first nobles in the kingdom were accused, among others the Duke d'Aveiro, the Marquis and Marchioness de Tavora, the Count d'Atougia, &c., as being the ringleaders in this plot against the king's life, who were sentenced to execution accordingly, [though their innocence was afterwards fully established.]

The Jesuits were also implicated in this affair, and publicly declared accomplices in the king's assassination. They were proscribed as traitors and disturbers of the public peace; their goods were confiscated; and every individual belonging to the order was embarked at once at the several ports of the kingdom, without any regard to age or infirmities, and transported to Civita Vecchia, within the pope's dominions. The Portuguese minister, apprehensive that this religious order, if preserved in the other states of Europe, would find means, sooner or later, to return to Portugal, used every endeavour to have their society entirely suppressed. He succeeded in this attempt by means of the negotiations which he set on foot with several of the Catholic courts. In France the society was dissolved, in virtue of the decrees issued by the parliament (1762). Paris set the first example of this. Louis XV. declared, that the society should no longer exist within the kingdom. The court of Madrid, where they had two powerful enemies in the ministry, Counts d'Aranda and De Campomanes, commanded all the Jesuits to banish themselves from the territory and jurisdiction of Spain; and, at the same time, declared their goods to be confiscated. They were likewise expelled

from the kingdom of Naples; and the order was at length entirely suppressed, by a brief of Pope Clement XIV. (July 21, 1773).⁵

The peace of Aix-la-Chapelle had by no means restored a good understanding between France and England. A jealous rivalry divided the two nations, which served to nourish and multiply subjects of discord between them. Besides, the activity of the French in repairing their marine, which had been destroyed in the last war, was viewed with jealousy by Great Britain, which was then aspiring to the absolute command of the sea, and was conscious that France alone was able to counteract her ambitious projects. Several matters of dispute, which the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle had left undecided, still subsisted between the two nations, relative to their possessions in America. The principal of these regarded the boundaries of Nova Scotia, Canada, and the neutral islands. Nova Scotia had been ceded to England, by the twelfth article of the treaty of Utrecht, according to its ancient limits. These limits the French had circumscribed within the bounds of the peninsula which forms that province; while the English insisted on extending them to the southern bank of the river St. Lawrence, of which the exclusive navigation belonged to the French.

The limits of Canada were not better defined than those of Nova Scotia. The French, with the view of opening up a communication between Canada and Louisiana, had constructed several forts along the river Ohio, on the confines of the English colonies in America. This was opposed by England, who was afraid that these establishments would endanger the safety of her colonies, especially that of Virginia. The neutral islands, namely the Caribbees, which comprehended St. Lucia, Dominica, St. Vincent, and Tobago, still remained in a contested state, according to the ninth article of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. The French, however, alleged certain acts of possession, by which they claimed the property of these islands, as well as of the Caicos and Turkish islands. Commissioners were appointed on both sides to bring these disputes to an amicable termination. A conference was opened at Paris, which began about the end of September 1750, and continued for several years; but as neither party was disposed to act with sincerity, these conferences ended in nothing. The English, who saw that the French only sought to gain time for augmenting their marine, hastened the rupture by committing acts of hostility in America.

The first breach of the peace was committed on the banks of the Ohio, where the French, to avenge the murder of one of their officers, seized on Fort Necessity, belonging to the English (July, 1754). The English, on their side, captured two French vessels off the Bank of Newfoundland, which had refused to salute the English flag. They even attacked all the French merchantmen which they met, and captured about 300 of them. Thus a long and bloody war was waged for the deserts and uncultivated wilds of America, which extended its ravages over all parts of the globe, involving more especially the countries of Europe.

England, according to a well known political stratagem, sought to occupy the French arms on the Continent, in order to prevent the increase of her maritime strength. France, instead of avoiding

that snare, and confining herself solely to naval operations, committed the mistake of falling in with the views of the British minister. While repelling the hostilities of England by sea, she adopted at the same time measures for invading the Electorate of Hanover. The court of London, wishing to guard against this danger, began by forming a closer alliance with Russia (September 30, 1753); they demanded of the empress those supplies which they thought they might claim in virtue of former treaties; and on the refusal of that princess, who was afraid to disoblige France, and to find herself attacked by Prussia, they applied to this latter power, with whom they concluded a treaty at Westminster (January 10, 1756); the chief object of which was to prevent foreign troops from entering into the Empire during the war between France and England. To this treaty France opposed the alliance which she had concluded with Austria at Versailles, by which the two powers guaranteed their respective possessions in Europe, and promised each other a mutual supply of 24,000 men in case of attack. The differences then subsisting between France and Great Britain were not reckoned among the *Causæ Federis*.

[The alliance of 1756 has given rise to different opinions among statesmen; the greater part have condemned it. Its object was, on the part of France, to guard herself against all attacks on the Continent, that she might direct her whole force against her maritime rival; but experience proved, that without attaining this object, she was nevertheless obliged to take part in all the disputes of the Continent, however foreign they might be to her own policy. It was even contrary to her interests to have Austria extricated from the embarrassments which the opposition of Prussia had occasioned her. If that project had succeeded, Austria would have become the preponderating power in Germany, to a degree which would have compelled the French to turn their arms against her.]

While the French were still hesitating as to the part which they ought to take relative to the Electorate of Hanover, the King of Prussia invaded Saxony (August, 1756). On taking this step, he published a manifesto, the object of which was to prove by the dispatches of the three courts of Vienna, Dresden, and Petersburg, that they had concerted a plan among them for attacking him, and that common prudence required him to prevent it. He declared at the same time, that his entrance into Saxony had no other aim than that of opening up a communication with Bohemia; and that he would only retain that country as a dépôt until the conclusion of the peace. This invasion, however, stirred up a powerful league against Prussia (1757). Besides France and the empress, it was joined by the Germanic body, Prussia, and Sweden. France, which had at first restricted herself to furnishing the empress with the supplies stipulated by the alliance, agreed, by a subsequent treaty, to dispatch an army of more than 100,000 men into Germany against the King of Prussia, and his ally the King of England; and, moreover, to pay to that princess an annual subsidy of 12,000,000 of florins.

In this war the French arms were attended at first with the most brilliant success. They conquered the island of Minorca, and seized the Electorate of Hesse, and the whole states of Brunswick and Hanover; but fortune soon turned her

back on them, when they defeated and disastred, which they were making they tended to relax and thus afforded England their possessions in the years 1757 and 1758; they demanded of the empress those supplies which they thought they might claim in virtue of former treaties; and on the refusal of that princess, who was afraid to disoblige France, and to find herself attacked by Prussia, they applied to this latter power, with whom they concluded a treaty at Westminster (January 10, 1756); the chief object of which was to prevent foreign troops from entering into the Empire during the war between France and England. To this treaty France opposed the alliance which she had concluded with Austria at Versailles, by which the two powers guaranteed their respective possessions in Europe, and promised each other a mutual supply of 24,000 men in case of attack. The differences then subsisting between France and Great Britain were not reckoned among the *Causæ Federis*.

The King of Prussia the number of his em assistance from his al though did not lose c himself by the number over the powers league campaigns of the Sev was already far advan Choiseul, who was the ministry, observing th English by sea, concei Family Compact, whic court of Madrid, and Paris (August 15th, 1 treaty was to cement a union among the differ of Bourbon, for the pu the maritime power of

The King of Spain h to join in the wa France and England; which the court of Lon that treaty, gave rise been these two court handed of the King o ceede to their alliance France in vain alleged the with the English not permit him to take declaration, published b th, that the Spanish t to secure the ports o should be left at the men as friends or as which laid him under self in favour of E an English fleet, with en sent to the relief of French troops joined as destined to act aga y of Almeida was th niards made in Po e contrary, took from ana, and the island o Manila and the I rea. The war thus med about to assume unforeseen event chang s, and disposed the Elizabeth, Empress of e; and Peter III.,

back on them, when they experienced nothing but defeats and disasters.⁶ The extraordinary efforts which they were making on the continent naturally tended to relax their maritime operations, and thus afforded England the means of invading their possessions in other parts of the world. In the years 1757 and 1761, Chandernagore, Pondicherry, and Mahé, in the East Indies, fell into the hands of the English; and in 1758 they seized on all the French settlements on the river Senegal and the coasts of Africa. The islands of Cape Breton and St. John in America; the forts and settlements on the Ohio; Quebec (where General Wolfe fell), and the whole of Canada, were all conquered in like manner, between the years 1756 and 1760. Finally, the islands of Guadaloupe, Mariegalante, Dominica, Martinique, Grenada, St. Vincent, St. Lucia, and Tobago, were also taken from France.

The King of Prussia, though overwhelmed by the number of his enemies, and finding no great assistance from his alliance with England, nevertheless did not lose courage. He distinguished himself by the number of victories which he gained over the powers leagued against him, during the campaigns of the Seven Years' War.⁷ This war was already far advanced, when the Duke de Choiseul, who was then at the head of the French ministry, observing the great superiority of the English by sea, conceived the plan of the famous *Family Compact*, which he negotiated with the court of Madrid, and which was concluded at Paris (August 15th, 1761). The object of this treaty was to cement an alliance and a perpetual union among the different branches of the House of Bourbon, for the purpose of counterbalancing the maritime power of England.

The King of Spain had come under no engagement to join in the war which subsisted between France and England; but the haughty manner in which the court of London exacted the fulfillment of that treaty, gave rise to a declaration of war between these two courts. Spain and France demanded of the King of Portugal that he would adhere to their alliance against England. That prince in vain alleged the treaties which connected him with the English nation, and which would not permit him to take part against them. One celebration, published by the two allied courts, set forth, that the Spanish troops should enter Portugal to secure the ports of that kingdom; and that it should be left at the king's option to receive them as friends or as enemies; and it was this which laid him under the necessity of declaring himself in favour of England (May 18th, 1762). An English fleet, with a supply of troops, was then sent to the relief of Portugal; while a body of French troops joined the Spanish army which was destined to act against that kingdom. The city of Almeida was the only conquest which the Spaniards made in Portugal. The English, on the contrary, took from the Spaniards the Havana, and the island of Cuba, in America; as also Manilla and the Philippines in the Indian sea. The war thus became more general, and seemed about to assume a new vigour, when an unforeseen event changed entirely the face of affairs, and disposed the belligerents for peace. Elizabeth, Empress of Russia, died about this time; and Peter III., nephew to that princess,

ascended the throne. Peter, who was a great admirer of the King of Prussia, took an early opportunity of making peace with that prince. A suspension of arms was signed between the two crowns, which was followed by a treaty of peace, concluded at St. Petersburg (May 5th, 1762). By that treaty, Russia surrendered all the conquests which she had made in Prussia and Pomerania during the war. Peter renounced the alliances which he had formerly contracted against the King of Prussia; while he, in his turn, refused to form alliances or engagements contrary to the interests of Russia, or to the hereditary possessions of Peter in Germany. But the new emperor was not content with testifying this mark of affection for the King of Prussia. He agreed to send a body of troops into Silesia to his assistance. A revolution, however, happened in Russia, which occasioned new changes. Peter III. was dethroned (July 9th) after a reign of six months. The Empress Catherine II., his widow, on ascending the throne, preserved the treaty of peace with the King of Prussia; but she recalled her troops from Silesia, and declared that she would maintain neutrality between the king and the empress.

Sweden, who had experienced nothing but defeats in the course of that war, followed the example of Russia. She agreed to a suspension of arms with the King of Prussia, and soon after concluded a treaty of peace with him at Hamburg (May 22nd, 1762). These two treaties paved the way for a general peace, the preliminaries of which were signed at Fontainebleau, between France, England, Spain, and Portugal. The definitive peace was concluded at Paris (February 10th, 1763). This treaty was followed by that of Hubertsburg, which reconciled Prussia with the Empress and the Elector of Saxony.

By this latter treaty the empress surrendered to the King of Prussia the province of Glatz, as also the fortresses of Wesel and Gueldres. The Elector of Saxony again took possession of those states of which the King of Prussia had been deprived; and the treaties of Breslau, Berlin, and Dresden, were renewed. Thus, after seven campaigns, as sanguinary as they were expensive, the peace of Hubertsburg restored the affairs of Germany to the same state in which they had been before the war.

France, by the treaty of Paris, ceded to England Canada and the island of Cape Breton, with the islands and coasts of the Gulf and River of St. Lawrence. The boundaries between the two nations in North America were fixed by a line drawn along the middle of the Mississippi, from its source to its mouth. All on the left or eastern bank of that river, was given up to England, except the city of New Orleans, which was reserved to France; as was also the liberty of the fisheries on a part of the coasts of Newfoundland and the Gulf of St. Lawrence. The islands of St. Peter and Miquelon were given them as a shelter for their fishermen, but without permission to raise fortifications. The islands of Martinico, Guadaloupe, Mariegalante, Desirada, and St. Lucia, were surrendered to France; while Grenada, the Grenadines, St. Vincent, Dominica, and Tobago, were ceded to England. This latter power retained her conquests on the Senegal, and restored to France the island of Gorea, on the coast of Africa. France

was put in possession of the forts and factories which belonged to her in the East Indies, on the coasts of Coromandel, Orissa, Malabar, and Bengal, under the restriction of keeping up no military force in Bengal.

In Europe, France restored all the conquests she had made in Germany; as also the island of Minorca. England gave up to her Belleisle, on the coast of Brittany; while Dunkirk was kept in the same condition as had been determined by the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle. The island of Cuba, with the Havana, were restored to the King of Spain, who, on his part, ceded to England Florida, with Port-Augustine and the Bay of Penzance. The King of Portugal was restored to the same state in which he had been before the war. The colony of St. Sacramento in America, which the Spaniards had conquered, was given back to him.

The peace of Paris, of which we have just now spoken, was the era of England's greatest prosperity. Her commerce and navigation extended over all parts of the globe, and were supported by a naval force, so much the more imposing, as it was no longer counterbalanced by the maritime power of France, which had been almost annihilated in the preceding war. The immense territories which that peace had secured her, both in Africa and America, opened up new channels for her industry; and, what deserves especially to be remarked, is, that she acquired at the same time vast and important possessions in the East Indies.

[Her influence, however, on the politics of the continent, diminished rather than increased, after the peace of Paris. Her ally, Frederic II., having been abandoned by the cabinet of London, attached himself to Russia; while, on the other side, Austria had been estranged from Great Britain by the treaties of 1756 and 1758. Holland and Portugal were thus the only states which remained in strict alliance with the court of England.]

The Empire of the Great Mogul in India had fallen into decay about the beginning of the eighteenth century. The viceroys and petty governors of the Empire, called *Soubahs* and *Nabobs*, had become independent, and usurped the prerogatives of royalty in the districts under their authority; while the Mogul Emperor, reduced almost to the single city of Delhi, his capital, preserved nothing but the shadow of sovereign power, by means of the investitures which he granted to these ambitious princes, and the coinage that was struck in his name. Whenever any differences arose among these princes, they usually had recourse to the European nations, who had settlements in India, and had erected forts with the consent of the Great Mogul, where they kept an armed force for the protection of their commerce. If the French took the part of one nabob, it was sufficient for the English to espouse the quarrel of his adversary; and while the two nations were mutually cultivating peace in Europe, they were often at the same time making war in India, by furnishing supplies to their respective allies. Success was for a long time equal on both sides; and it was not until the war of 1753, and by the victories and conquests of the famous Lord Clive, that England obtained a decided ascendancy over the French in that quarter of the world.

Sourajah Dowlah, the Soubah of Bengal, insti-

gated, as is supposed, by the French, had taken possession of Calcutta (1756), the principal settlement of the English on the Ganges. His cruel treatment of the English garrison, which he had made prisoners of war, excited the resentment of that nation. To avenge this outrage, Colonel Clive, supported by Admiral Watson, retook Calcutta (January, 1757); and after having dispossessed the French of Chandernagore, their principal establishment on the Ganges, he vanquished the Soubah in several actions, deposed him, and put in his place Jaffer Ali Khan, his general and prime minister, who was entirely devoted to England.

With this era commences the foundation of the British Empire in India. It happened a short time after, that the Mogul Emperor, Shah Allum, being driven from his capital by the Patans, an Indian tribe, solicited the protection of the English, who availed themselves of this occasion, as well as of the death of Jaffer Ali, which happened at this time (August 12th, 1765), to get themselves vested by treaty, and by means of an Imperial charter, in the sovereignty of all Bengal. In virtue of this title, which legitimized their power in the eyes of the people, they seized on the public revenues of the kingdoms of Bengal, Baha, and Orissa, with the reservation of an annual tribute, which they promised to pay to the Mogul Emperor, and certain pensions which they assigned to the Soubahs, whose phantom power they disposed of at their pleasure. The dominion of the English in India was increased still more by subsequent conquests; the most important of which was the powerful state of Mysore, which they utterly overthrew, after a series of wars which they carried on with Hyder Ali, and his successor Tippoo Saib.

[The death of Ferdinand IV., King of Spain was an event of some importance. He was succeeded by his brother Don Carlos, King of the Two Sicilies, and eldest son of Philip V. by his second marriage, who assumed the title of Charles III. Under this prince the philosophy of the eighteenth century penetrated into Spain, where it displayed an energy, and gave rise to consequences which had not yet attended it in France. It occasioned the downfall of the Jesuits, which was accompanied by deeds repugnant to justice and humanity. The ministers and councillors of the monarch, the Counts Aranda, Florida Blanca, and Campomanes, introduced into the internal administration of Spain, especially its finances and taxes, an order and regularity which had been long unknown in that country. Agriculture, commerce, and industry were beginning to recover from the languor, when the American war again threw them into a state of fatal depression.]

Before quitting Naples to take possession of the throne of Spain, Don Carlos, who, as King of the Two Sicilies, had the title of Charles VII., published a fundamental law, bearing, that agreeable to former treaties which did not admit the union of the Italian states with the Spanish monarchy, he transferred the kingdom of the Two Sicilies to his third son, Don Ferdinand; as his eldest son, Don Philip, was incapable of reigning, and his second, Don Carlos, was destined for the throne of Spain. He intrusted the administration to a regency, during the nonage of the young prince, whose majority was fixed at the age of seventeen

By this law he regulated which was to take place. Two Sicilies, and which Philip V. had a cortes of 1713. After female of his own brothers, Don Philip, Louis; adding, that they should never in a Spanish monarchy. King of Spain recorded the seventh article of which secured the king that prince and his descendants, of both sexes.

The King of Sardinia enforce his right of reversion, which the fourteenth article of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle had removed. Carlos should remove the Two Sicilies to the crown of France, wishing to restore Philip, and to prevent being disturbed by the Sardinia, engaged to present with which he satisfied. This equivalent (1763) by a convention of France, Spain, and the latter consented to rest the two cases specified in the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle male descendants of Don Carlos, or one of his sons to the throne of Spain, and should one of them happen in the meantime Spain engaged that should enjoy the same which might accrue to the expenses of administration on the Nura, a perpetual possession. Ferdinand took, by a special agreement at Paris the same day the King of Sardinia, a sum of 8,000,200 livres to France, should one of them happen.

The sudden aggrandisement of Peter the Great, the system of the North, himself to the first rank Poland and Sweden, had the throne of Poland and at the same time Ferdinand. That duchy, which by the family of Ket of the crown of Poland, the death of the Duke descendant of that House, Russia, being then only his favourite, named Elizabeth by fortune, who soon to James III., that princess mounted the throne of Great Britain, and was raised to the rank of Great Chamberlain, a favourite as usual

By this law he regulated the order of succession which was to take place in the kingdom of the Two Sicilies, and which was the same as that which Philip V. had established in Spain at the cortes of 1713. After the descendants male and female of his own body, Charles substituted his brothers, Don Philip, Duke of Parma, and Don Louis; adding, that the kingdom of the Two Sicilies should never in any case be united with the Spanish monarchy. This regulation of the new King of Spain accorded perfectly with the terms of the seventh article of the treaty of Vienna (1738), which secured the kingdom of the Two Sicilies to that prince and his descendants, male and female; and, failing them, to his younger brothers and their descendants, of both sexes.

The King of Sardinia continued, however, to enforce his right of reversion to that part of Placentia, which the fourth article of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle had secured to him, in case Don Carlos should remove from the kingdom of the Two Sicilies to the crown of Spain. The court of France, wishing to retain that possession for Don Philip, and to prevent the tranquillity of Italy from being disturbed by the pretensions of the King of Sardinia, engaged to procure that prince an equivalent with which he should have reason to be satisfied. This equivalent was settled (June 10th, 1763) by a convention concluded at Paris, between France, Spain, and the King of Sardinia. The latter consented to restrict his right of reversion in the two cases specified in the seventh article of the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle; viz. 1. Failing the male descendants of Don Philip; 2. Should that prince, or one of his descendants, be called either to the throne of Spain or to that of the Two Sicilies, and should one or other of these two cases happen in the meantime, the crowns of France and Spain engaged that the King of Sardinia should enjoy the same amount of annual revenue which might accrue to him (after deducting the expenses of administration), from that part of Placentia on the Nura, should he ever come into actual possession. For this purpose, France undertook, by a special agreement, which was signed at Paris the same day with the preceding, to pay the King of Sardinia, by twelve instalments, the sum of 8,000,200 livres; on condition of reverting to France, should one or other of these alternatives happen.

The sudden aggrandisement of Russia, since the time of Peter the Great, had changed the political system of the North. That power had raised herself to the first rank. She dictated the law to Poland and Sweden, her ancient rivals; disposed of the throne of Poland on every change of reign; and at the same time decided the fate of Courland. That duchy, which had long been possessed by the family of Ketter, who held it as a fief of the crown of Poland, had become vacant on the death of the Duke Ferdinand, the last male descendant of that House. Anne, Empress of Russia, being then only Duchess of Courland, had a favourite, named Ernest John Biron, a man raised by fortune, whose grandfather had been groom to James III., Duke of Courland. When that princess mounted the throne of Russia, she raised Biron to the rank of Count, and to the office of Great Chamberlain and Prime Minister. The naughty favourite assumed the name and arms of

the family of Biron, in France; and prevailed with the empress to grant him the duchy of Courland. At the death of the last duke, he even succeeded in getting himself elected by the states of that country (1737), with the aid of a body of Russian troops, which the empress had sent to Mittau, to support his election. He was invested in the duchy by the Republic of Poland, to be possessed by himself and his heirs-male; but he did not long enjoy this new dignity. He was deprived of it on the death of the empress (1740), and banished to Siberia by the Grand Duchess Anne, mother of the young emperor. This princess caused a new election to be made by the nobility of Courland. The duchy was then conferred on Louis Ernest, Prince of Brunswick, who was to marry Elizabeth, daughter of Peter the Great. But the young emperor, Iwan, having been dethroned immediately after, the Prince of Brunswick never obtained possession of the duchy. The Empress Elizabeth having declared to the Republic of Poland that the Duke de Biron should never be liberated from his exile, Augustus III., King of Poland, declared the duchy of Courland vacant. He then prevailed on the states of that country to elect his own son, Prince Charles, whom he solemnly invested in the duchy (1759).

A new change happened at the death of the Empress Elizabeth, in 1762. Peter III., on his accession to the throne of Russia, recalled the Duke de Biron from his exile. The Empress, Catherine II., who succeeded her husband that same year, went even farther than this; she demanded the restoration of de Biron to the duchy of Courland, and obliged Prince Charles of Saxony to give it up to him (1769). The Duke de Biron then resigned the duchy to his son Peter, who, after a reign of twenty-five years, gave in his demission to the Empress; when the states of Courland and Semigallia made a formal submission to Russia (March 28th, 1795).

The dethronement of Peter III., which we have just mentioned, was an event very favourable to Denmark, as it relieved that kingdom from a ruinous war with which it was threatened on the part of the emperor. Peter III. was the head of the House of Holstein-Gottorp, whom Denmark had deprived of their possessions in Sleswick, by taking advantage of the disasters that befel Sweden, which had protected that family against the Danish kings. The Dukes of Holstein-Gottorp exclaimed against that usurpation; to which the Court of Denmark had nothing to oppose, except the right of conquest, and the guarantee which the Kings of France and England, as mediators in the treaty of Stockholm, had given to Denmark with respect to Sleswick.

Peter III., was scarcely seated on the throne of Russia, when he began to concert means for recovering his ancient patrimonial domains, and avenging the wrongs which the Dukes of Holstein-Gottorp, his ancestors, had received at the hands of Denmark. Being determined to make war against that power, he attached the King of Prussia to his cause, and marched a Russian army of 60,000 men towards the frontiers of Denmark. Six thousand Prussians were to join this army, which was supported by a Russian fleet to be stationed on the coasts of Pomerania. The King of Denmark made every effort to repel the invasion with which

he was threatened. He set on foot an army of 70,000 men, the command of which he intrusted to M. de St. Germain, a distinguished French officer.

The Danish army advanced towards Mecklenburg, and established their head-quarters in the town of that name, one league from Wismar. The Danish fleet, consisting of twenty sail of the line and eleven frigates, appeared at the same time off Rostock. The flames of war were about to kindle in the North, and Peter III. was on the point of joining his army in person at Mecklenburg, when he was dethroned, after a short reign of six months (July 9th, 1762). The Empress Catharine II., who succeeded him, did not think fit to espouse the quarrel of her husband. She immediately recalled the Russian army from Mecklenburg; and being desirous of establishing the tranquillity of the North on a solid basis, and confirming a good understanding between the two principal branches of the House of Holstein, she agreed, by a treaty of alliance with the King of Denmark (1765), to terminate all these differences by a provisional arrangement, which was not to take effect until the majority of the Grand Duke Paul, the son of Peter III.

This accommodation between the two Courts was signed at Copenhagen (April 22nd, 1762). The Empress, in the name of her son, gave up her claim to the ducal part of Sleswick, occupied by the King of Denmark. She ceded, moreover, to that sovereign a portion of Holstein, possessed by the family of Gottorp, in exchange for the counties of Oldenburg and Delmenhorst. It was agreed that these counties should be created into duchies, and that the ancient suffrage of Holstein-Gottorp, at the Imperial Diet, should be transferred to them. This provisional treaty was ratified when the Grand Duke came of age, and the transference of the ceded territories took place in 1773. At the same time that prince declared, that he designed the counties of Oldenburg and Delmenhorst to form an establishment for a younger branch of his family, that of Estin; to which the contracting powers also secured the bishopric of Lubec, to be held in perpetual possession. The Bishop of Lubec, the head of the younger branch of the Gottorp family, was that same year put in possession of the counties of Oldenburg and Delmenhorst; and the Emperor Joseph II. erected these counties into a duchy and fief-male of the Empire, under the title of the Duchy of Holstein-Oldenburg.

Here it will be necessary to advert to the revolutions that took place in the island of Corsica, which, after a long series of troubles and distractions, passed from the dominion of Genoa to that of France. The oppressions which the Corsicans had suffered under the government of the Genoese, who treated them with extreme rigour, had rendered their yoke odious and insupportable. They rose several times in rebellion against the Republicans; but from the want of union among themselves, they failed in the different attempts which they made for effecting their liberty and independence.

One of the last insurrections of the Corsicans was that of 1729. They chose for their leader Andrew Ceccaldi, of a noble family in the Island, and Luigi Gialferri, a man of courage and an enthusiast for liberty. The Genoese, after trying in vain to subdue the insurgents, were obliged to

have recourse to the protection of foreigners. They applied to the Emperor Charles VI., who sent them several detachments of troops under the command of General Wachtendonk, and Prince Frederic Louis of Wurtemberg. The Corsicans, too feeble to oppose an enemy so superior in strength, were glad to lay down their arms. But the war about the Polish succession having obliged the emperor to withdraw his troops, the Islanders raised a new insurrection. A general assembly was then convened, which declared Corsica to be a free and independent republic (1734). Gialferri was re-elected General, and had for his colleague Hyacinthus Paoli, father to the famous general of that name. Thus the Genoese, after lavishing much expense on auxiliary troops, had the mortification to find themselves still in the same condition in which they were, before receiving the imperial succours. They then took into their pay bodies of Swiss and Grison troops; and even enlisted outlaws and vagabonds, and placed them in their ranks to oppose the Corsicans.

It happened, during these transactions, that an adventurer appeared in Corsica, the celebrated Theodore Baron Neuhof. He was descended of a noble family in the county of Mark, in Westphalia; and having procured arms and ammunition at Tunis, he repaired to Corsica (1736), where he was determined to try his fortune. His engaging manners, added to the prospects which he held out of a powerful foreign assistance, induced the Corsicans to confer on him the royal dignity. He was proclaimed King of Corsica, and immediately assumed the external badges of royalty. He appointed guards and officers of state, coined money in his own name, and created an order of knighthood, called the *Redemption*. Taking advantage of the enthusiasm with which he had inspired the Corsicans, and laid several of their places under blockade. But his money being exhausted, and the people beginning to cool in their attachment towards him, he took the determination of applying for assistance to foreigners. He embarked for Holland, where he found means to engage a society of merchants, by the allurements of a lucrative commerce with Corsica, to furnish him with artillery, ammunition and other supplies, with which he returned to the island.

Under these circumstances the Genoese, threatened with losing for ever their sovereignty over Corsica, entered into an association with the Court of Versailles. This court, fearing that England would take advantage of these disturbances to get possession of the island, concerted measures with the Court of Vienna for obliging the Corsicans to return to their allegiance to the Genoese. For this purpose a plan of pacification was drawn up at Versailles, and Count de Boissieux was charged to carry it into execution. This general landed in the island (1738), at the head of a body of French auxiliaries; and his arrival determined King Theodore to abandon Corsica, and seek his safety in flight. He retired to London, where he was imprisoned for debt. After a long captivity he was set at liberty, and died in a state of misery (1761). Boissieux harassed the Corsicans exceedingly, but he failed in his efforts to reduce them to submission. His successor, the Marquis de Maillebois, was more fortunate; he took his measures with

such precision and
Islanders to lay down
law from the conque
and Paoli, retired to

The war of the
obliged the French
from Corsica, that isl
disturbances. Gialfer
them the functions o
of affairs. They ha
in the person of G
Corsica, who, with th
vessels, succeeded in
Bastia and San Fior
have pushed their s
they could have su
private animosities,
specially in promoti
internal divisions bet
their enemies to reco
quered. Rivarola an
command, the sole c
who was a man of va
He was beginning to
to give some stabilit
Island, when he was
by the emissaries of
death plunged Corsic
disorder and anarchy,
to deliver it.

At length appeared
whom his aged father
Corsica. Being elect
countrymen (1755),
courage; and, while h
success against the G
reform abuses in the
culture, letters, and ar
the accomplishment of
the liberty and indepe
the expulsion of the C
sons of Bastia, San
and Ajaccio; the only
their power. In th
succeeded, had he not
from France, who had
treaties which she had
in the years 1752, 175
their poets and fortifi

The original intentio
possession of these pl
possibilities with Paoli
to retain them for a li
debt which the Fre
contracted with the Repub
had flattered them: I
the duty of guarding
would be able, with th
all the rest of the islan
they found themselves
sons. The Corsicans
Island of Capraja (1767
son of Ajaccio, who
French had thought fit
the shipping of th
discussions on the Ge
commerce.

The Senate of Ge
was impossible for the
being the time approa

such precision and vigour, that he obliged the islanders to lay down their arms, and receive the law from the conqueror. Their Generals, Gialleri and Paoli, retired to Naples.

The war of the Austrian Succession having obliged the French Court to recall their troops from Corsica, that island became the scene of new disturbances. Gallorio and Matra then took upon them the functions of generals, and the direction of affairs. They had a colleague and condutor in the person of Count Rivarola, a native of Corsica, who, with the assistance of some English vessels, succeeded in expelling the Genoese from Bastia and San Fiorenzo. The Corsicans might have pushed their advantages much further, if they could have subdued their own feuds and private animosities, and employed themselves solely in promoting the public interest; but their internal divisions retarded their success, and allowed their enemies to recover the places they had conquered. Rivarola and Matra having resigned the command, the sole charge devolved on Gallorio, who was a man of rare merit and of tried valour. He was beginning to civilize his countrymen, and to give some stability to the government of the island, when he was assassinated, as is supposed, by the emissaries of the Genoese (1753). His death plunged Corsica once more into the state of disorder and anarchy, from which he had laboured to deliver it.

At length appeared the celebrated Pascal Paoli, whom his aged father had brought from Naples to Corsica. Being elected general-in-chief by his countrymen (1755), he inspired them with fresh courage; and, while he carried on the war with success against the Genoese, he made efforts to reform abuses in the state, and to encourage agriculture, letters, and arts. Nothing was wanting for the accomplishment of this object, and to confirm the liberty and independence of his country, but the expulsion of the Genoese from the maritime towns of Bastia, San Fiorenzo, Calvi, Alghajola and Ajaccio; the only places which still remained in their power. In this he would probably have succeeded, had he not met with new interruptions from France, who had undertaken, by the several treaties which she had concluded with the Genoese in the years 1752, 1755, 1756, and 1764, to defend their ports and fortifications in that island.

The original intention of the French, in taking possession of these places, was not to carry on hostilities with Paoli and the natives, but simply to retain them for a limited time, in discharge of a debt which the French government had contracted with the Republic of Genoa. The Genoese had flattered themselves, that if exonerated from the duty of guarding the fortified places, they would be able, with their own forces, to reconquer all the rest of the island; but it was not long till they found themselves deceived in their expectations. The Corsicans drove the Genoese from the island of Capraja (1767). They even took possession of Ajaccio, and some other parts which the French had thought fit to abandon. At the same time the shipping of the Corsicans made incessant incursions on the Genoese, and annoyed their commerce.

The Senate of Genoa, convinced at last that it was impossible for them to subdue the island, and seeing the time approach when the French troops

were to take their departure, took the resolution of surrendering their rights over Corsica to the crown of France, by a treaty which was signed at Versailles (May 15th, 1768). The king promised to restore the island of Capraja to the Republic. He guaranteed to them all their possessions on *terra firma*; and engaged to pay them annually for ten years the sum of 200,000 livres. The Genoese reserved to themselves the right of reclaiming the sovereignty of Corsica, on reimbursing the king for the expenses of the expedition he was about to undertake, as well as for the maintenance of his troops. This treaty occasioned strong remonstrances on the part of the Corsicans, who prepared themselves for a vigorous defence. The first campaign turned to their advantage. It cost France several thousand men, and about thirty millions of expenses. The Duke de Choiseul, far from being discouraged by these disasters, transported a strong force into the island. He put the Count de Vaux in the place of the Marquis de Chauvelin, who, by the skilful dispositions which he made, found himself master of all Corsica in less than two months. The islanders not having received from England the supplies which they had requested, the prospect of which had kept up their courage, considered it rash and hopeless to make longer resistance. The different provinces, in their turn, gave in their submission; and the principal leaders of the Corsicans dispersed themselves among the neighbouring states. Pascal Paoli took refuge in England.

The throne of Poland having become vacant by the death of Augustus III. (October 5th, 1763), the Empress Catherine II. destined that crown for Stanislaus Poniatowski, a Polish nobleman, who had gained her favour when he arrived at St. Petersburg as plenipotentiary of Poland. That princess having gained over the court of Berlin to her interests, sent several detachments of troops into Poland; and in this manner succeeded in carrying the election of her favourite, who was proclaimed king at the Diet of Warsaw (September 7th, 1764). It was at this diet of election that the empress formally interceded with the republic in favour of the *Dissidents* (or dissenters) of Poland and Lithuania, with the view of having them reinstated in those civil and ecclesiastical rights, of which they had been deprived by the intolerance of the Catholics. The name of *Dissidents* was then given to the Protestants and Greek non-conformists in Poland, both Lutherans and Calvinists. That kingdom, as well as Lithuania, had contained, from the earliest ages, a vast number of Greeks, who persisted in their schism, in spite of the efforts which were incessantly made by the Polish clergy for bringing them back to the pale of the Romish church. The Protestant doctrines had been introduced into Poland, and had made considerable progress in the course of the seventeenth century; more especially in the reign of Sigismund Augustus. The nobles who were attached to that form of worship had obtained, at the Diet of Wilna (1563), the right of enjoying, along with the Greeks, all the prerogatives of their rank, and of being admitted without distinction both to the assemblies of the diet and the offices and dignities of the republic. Moreover, their religious and political liberties had been guaranteed in the most solemn manner, not only by treaties of alliance,

and the *Pacta Conventa* of the kings, but also by the laws and constitution of their kingdom. The Catholics having afterwards become the stronger party, their zeal, animated by their clergy and the Jesuits, led them to persecute those whom they regarded as heretics. They had in various ways circumscribed their religious liberties, especially at the diet of 1717; and in those of 1733 and 1736, they went so far as to exclude them from the diets and tribunals, and in general from all places of trust; only preserving the peace with them according to the ancient laws of the republic.

The Dissidents availed themselves of the influence which the Empress of Russia had secured in the affairs of Poland, to obtain by her means the redress of their grievances. That princess interposed more especially in favour of the Greeks, according to the ninth article of the peace of Moscow between Russia and Poland (1686); while the courts of Berlin, Stockholm, London, and Copenhagen, as guaranties of the peace of Oliva, urged the second article of that treaty in support of the Protestant dissenters. Far from yielding to an intercession so powerful, the Diet of Warsaw, instigated by the clergy and the court of Rome, in the year 1766 confirmed all the former laws against the Protestants which the foreign courts had desired to be altered and amended. They merely introduced some few modifications in the law of 1717, relative to the exercise of their worship.

This palliative did not satisfy the court of St. Petersburg, which persisted in demanding an entire equality of rights in favour of those under its protection. The Dissidents had the courage to resist, and entered into a confederacy at the assemblies which were held at Sluckz (1767) and Thorn. Such of the Catholic nobility as were discontented with the government, allied themselves with the Dissidents, and formed several distinct confederacies, which afterwards combined into a general confederation under Marshal Prince Radzivil. An extraordinary diet was then assembled at Warsaw. Their deliberations, which began October 5th, 1767, were very tumultuous. Without being intimidated by the presence of a Russian army, the Bishop of Cracow and his adherents gave way to the full torrent of their zeal, in the discourses which they pronounced before the diet. The empress caused them to be arrested and conducted into the interior of Russia, whence they were not permitted to return till after an exile of several years. They agreed at length, at that diet, to appoint a committee, composed of the different orders of the republic, to regulate all matters regarding the Dissidents, in concert with the ministers of the protecting courts. A separate act was drawn up (February 24th, 1768) in the form of a convention between Russia and Poland.

By that act, the Dissidents were reinstated in all their former rights. The regulations which had been passed to their prejudice in the years 1717, 1733, 1736, and 1766, were annulled; and a superior court, composed equally of both parties, was granted to them, for terminating all disputes which might arise between persons of different religions. This act was confirmed by the treaty of peace and alliance concluded at Warsaw between Russia and Poland (February 24th, 1768), by which these two powers guaranteed to each other the whole of their possessions in Europe. The

Empress of Russia guaranteed, more especially, the liberty, constitution, and integrity of the Polish republic.

The act we have just now mentioned, as well as another which modified what were called the encyclical or fundamental laws of the republic, having displeased a great majority of the Poles, they used every effort to have these acts recalled. The diet of 1768 was no sooner terminated than they formed themselves into a confederacy at Bar in Podolia, for the defence of their religion and liberties. By degrees these extended to several palatinates, and were at length combined into a general confederation, under the Marshal Count De Pac. The standards of these confederates bore representations of the Virgin Mary and the Infant Jesus. Like the Crusaders of the middle ages, they wore embroidered crosses on their garments, with the motto *To Conquer or Die*. The Russians despatched troops to disperse the confederates as fast as they combined: but at length, with the assistance of France, and M. De Vergennes, the French ambassador at the Porte, they succeeded in stirring up the Turks against the Russians. The war between these two Empires broke out towards the end of 1768, which proved disastrous for the Turks, and suppressed also the confederates in Poland. The manifesto of the Grand Signior against Russia was published October 30th, and his declaration of war on December 4th, 1768.

The empress despatched several armies against the Turks, and attacked them at once from the banks of the Dnieister to Mount Caucasus. Prince Alexander Galitzin, who commanded the principal army, was to cover Poland, and penetrate into Moldavia. He passed the Dnieister different times, but was always repulsed by the Turks, who were not more fortunate in their attempts to force the passage of that river. On their last attempt (September, 1769), 12,000 men had succeeded in crossing it, when there happened a sudden flood which broke down the bridge, and cut off the retreat of the Turks. This body was sent to pieces by the Russians, when a panic seized the Ottoman army who abandoned their camp and the fortress of Choczim. The Russians took possession of both without costing them a single drop of blood, and soon after penetrated into the interior of Moldavia and Wallachia.

The campaign of 1770 was most splendid for the Russians. General Romanzow, who succeeded Prince Galitzin in the command of the army of Moldavia, gained two brilliant victories over the Turks near the Pruth (July 18th) and the Kukuk (August 1st), which made him master of the Danube, and the towns of Ismael, Kilia, and Akerman, situated in Bessarabia, near the mouth of that river. Another Russian army, under the command of General Count Paanin, attacked the fortress of Bender, defended by a strong Turkish garrison. It was carried by assault (September 26th) and the greater part of the garrison put to the sword.

The empress did not confine herself to repulse the Turks on the banks of the Dnieister and the Danube, and harassing their commerce in the Black Sea. She formed the bold project of attacking them at the same time in the islands of the Archipelago, and on the coasts of Greece and the Morea. A Russian fleet, under the command

of Alexis Orloff and the Baltic, and passing the Straits of Gibraltar, being joined by Admiral Elphinstone (September 15th, 1770), between the ships of the two countries, the Turkish Captain Pacha, having some of them caught in the air. Dark night put the Turks to flight in the narrow bay of Chism, and burnt their vessels. This disaster threw the Turks into great consternation; in which the Dardanelles, to fear that if the Russians took advantage of this panic, they would have carried them to Constantinople. Admiral Elphinstone, with his Russian squadrons, but the Russian admiral followed it.

The war on the 1st year, though feebly; but under the command of the Grand Signior, succeeded in forcing the Turks to send an army of 60,000 men, commanded by the Khan Dolgoruki, after having made a formidable barrier, made his way to the Island of the empress, as the remnant of *Krimski*. A pretended deputies from that nation renounced their arms, and put themselves under the protection of Russia (1772).

These conquests, however, could not fail to eventually recruit her numbers, and she was not long in being again thinned by her losses. She soon saw the necessity of a plague, that terrible scourge from the army into the interior, as far as Moldavia, and penetrated as far as Moscow. 100,000 men in the country. But what added still to the calamity of Catherine II. was which, in conjunction with the undertakings to mediate between the Porte, rejected with peace proposed by the strongly opposed the and Wallachia, as well would not even permit transfer the seat of war to Danube.

The court of Vienna threatened to make an effort to compel the empress to place matters between the Turks on the foot. An agreement to this effect was signed at the Porte, and signed in 1771. This convention, on account of the failure of the band, concerted between

of Alexis Orloff and Admiral Spiritoff, sailed from the Baltic, and passed the Northern Seas and the Straits of Gibraltar, on their way to the Archipelago. Being joined by the squadron of Rear-Admiral Elphinstone, they fought an obstinate battle with the fleet of the Capitan Pacha (July 24th, 1770), between Scio and Anatolia. The ships of the two commanders, Spiritoff and the Capitan Pacha, having met in the engagement, one of them caught fire, when both were blown into the air. Darkness separated the combatants; but the Turks having imprudently retired to the narrow bay of Chismé, the Russians pursued them, and burnt their whole fleet during the night. This disaster threw the city of Constantinople into great consternation; and the bad state of defence in which the Dardanelles were, gave them reason to fear that if the Russians had known to take advantage of this panic, it would have been easy for them to have carried the Turkish capital. Rear-Admiral Elphinstone, who commanded one of the Russian squadrons, had suggested that advice; but the Russian admirals did not think proper to follow it.

The war on the Danube was continued next year, though feebly; but the second Russian army, under the command of Prince Dolgoruki, succeeded in forcing the lines at Perekop, defended by an army of 60,000 Turks and Tartars, commanded by the Khan of the Crimea in person. Dolgoruki, after having surmounted that formidable barrier, made himself master of the Crimea, as also of the Island of Taman; and received from the empress, as the reward of his exploits, the surname of *Krimski*. An act was signed by certain pretended deputies from the Tartars, by which that nation renounced the dominion of the Ottomans, and put themselves under the protection of Russia (1772).

These conquests, however splendid they might be, could not fail to exhaust Russia. Obligated frequently to recruit her armies, which were constantly thinned by battles, fatigues, and diseases, she soon saw the necessity of making peace. The plague, that terrible ally of the Ottomans, passed from the army into the interior of the Empire, and penetrated as far as Moscow, where it cut off nearly 100,000 men in the course of a single year (1771). But what added still more to the embarrassments of Catherine II. was, that the court of Vienna, which, in conjunction with that of Berlin, had undertaken to mediate between Russia and the Porte, rejected with disdain the conditions of peace proposed by the empress. Moreover, they strongly opposed the independence of Moldavia and Wallachia, as well as of the Tartars; and would not even permit that the Russians should transfer the seat of war to the right bank of the Danube.

The court of Vienna went even farther: it threatened to make common cause with the Turks, and to compel the empress to restore all her conquests, and to place matters between the Russians and the Turks on the footing of the treaty of Belgrade. An agreement to this effect was negotiated with the Porte, and signed at Constantinople (July 6th, 1771). This convention, however, was not ratified, the court of Vienna having changed its mind on account of the famous dismemberment of Poland, concerted between it and the courts of Berlin

and St. Petersburg. The empress then consented to restore to the Turks the provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia, on the conclusion of the peace; and the court of Vienna again engaged to exert its friendly interference in negotiating peace between Russia and the Porte.

In consequence of these events, the year 1772 was passed entirely in negotiations. A suspension of arms was agreed to between the two belligerent powers. A congress was opened at Foezani in Moldavia, under the mediation of the courts of Berlin and St. Petersburg. This congress was followed by another, which was held at Bucharest in Wallachia. Both of these meetings proved ineffectual, the Turks having considered the conditions proposed by Russia as inadmissible; and what displeased them still more was, the article relative to the independence of the Tartars in the Crimea. This they rejected as contrary to the principles of their religion, and as tending to establish a rivalry between the two caliphs. They succeeded, however, in settling the nature of the religious dependence under which the khans of the Crimea were to remain with regard to the Porte; but they could not possibly agree as to the surrender of the ports of Jenikaleh and Kereli, nor as to the unrestrained liberty of navigation in the Turkish seas, which the Russians demanded. After these conferences had been repeatedly broken off, hostilities commenced anew (1773). The Russians twice attempted to establish themselves on the right bank of the Danube, but without being able to accomplish it. They lost, besides, a great number of men in the different actions which they fought with the Turks.

The last campaign, that of 1774, was at length decisive. Abdul Hammed, who had just succeeded his brother Mustapha III. on the throne of Constantinople, being eager to raise the glory of the Ottoman arms, made extraordinary preparations for this campaign. His troops, reckoned about 300,000 men, greatly surpassed the Russians in point of number; but they were not equal in point of discipline and military skill. About the end of June, Marshal Romanzow passed the Danube, without meeting any obstacle from the Ottoman army. That general took advantage of a mistake which the grand vizier had committed, in pitching his camp near Schumla at too great a distance from his detachments, and cut off his communication with these troops, and even with his military stores. A body of 28,000 Turks, who were bringing a convoy of 4,000 or 5,000 waggons to the army, having been defeated by General Kamenski, and the waggons burnt, this event struck terror into the camp of the grand vizier, who, seeing his army on the point of disbanding, agreed to treat with Marshal Romanzow on such terms as that general thought fit to prescribe.

Peace was signed in the Russian camp at Kainargi, four leagues from Silistria. By that treaty the Tartars of the Crimea, Bondzic, and Cuban, were declared entirely independent of the Porte, to be governed henceforth by their own sovereign. Russia obtained for her merchant vessels free and unrestrained navigation in all the Turkish seas. She restored to the Turks Bessarabia, Moldavia, and Wallachia; as well as the islands in the Archipelago which were still in her possession. But she reserved the city and territory of Azoff, the

the Palatinate of Minsk.¹² These the empress formed into two grand governments, those of Polesk and Mochilew. The King of Prussia had the states of Great Poland, situated beyond the Netze, as well as the whole of Polish Prussia, except the cities of Danzig and Thorn, which were reserved to Poland.¹³ That republic, in virtue of a treaty with the King of Prussia, renounced also her domainal rights, and the reversion which the treaties of Welau and Bidgost had secured to her with regard to Electorel Prussia, as well as the districts of Lauenburg, Butow, and Draheim. The portion of the King of Prussia was so much the more important in a political point of view, as it united the Kingdom of Prussia with his possessions in Germany; and, by giving him the command of the Vistula, it made him master of the commerce of Poland, especially of the corn-trade, so valuable to the rest of Europe.

The three courts, in thus dismembering Poland, renounced, in the most formal manner, all farther pretensions on the republic; and, lastly, to consummate their work, they passed an act at Warsaw, by which they sanctioned the *liberum veto*, and by the unanimity in their decisions formerly used at the diet in state matters: the crown was declared elective, and foreign princes were declared to be excluded. The prerogative of the king, already very limited, was circumscribed still more by the establishment of a permanent council; and it was statuted, that no one could ever change this constitution of which the three powers had become the guarantees.

[This partition of Poland must be regarded as the harbinger of the total overthrow of the political system which for 300 years had prevailed in Europe. After so many alliances had been formed, and so many wars undertaken, to preserve the weaker states against the ambition of the greater, we here find three powers of the first rank concurring to dismember a state which had never given them the slightest umbrage. The barriers between legitimate right and arbitrary power were thus overthrown, and henceforth the destiny of inferior states was no longer secure. The system of political equilibrium became the jest of innovators, and many well disposed men began to regard it as a chimera. Though the chief blame of this transaction must fall on the courts of St. Petersburg, Berlin, and Vienna, those of London and Paris were accomplices to the crime, by allowing this violation to be consummated without any mark of their reprobation.]

In Sweden, the aristocratic system had prevailed since the changes which had been introduced into the form of government by the revolution of 1720. The chief power resided in the body of the senate, and the royal authority was reduced to a mere shadow. The same factions, the Hats and the Bonnets, of which we have spoken above, continued to agitate and distract the state. The Hats were of opinion, that to raise the glory of Sweden, and to recover the provinces of Livonia and Finland, it was necessary to cultivate friendship with France and the Porte, in order to secure their support in case of a rupture with Russia. The Bonnets, on the other hand, maintained that Sweden, exhausted by the preceding wars, ought to engage in no undertaking against Prussia. In referring a system of pacification, they had no

other object in view than to maintain peace and good understanding with all states, without distinction. These two factions, instigated by foreign gold, acquired a new importance when the war broke out between Russia and the Porte. It was in the diet of 1769 that the Hats found means to get possession of the government, by depriving the members of the opposite party of their principal employments. There was some reason to believe that France, in consequence of her connexions with the Porte, had used every effort to stir up Sweden against Russia, and that the mission of Vergennes, who passed from Constantinople to Stockholm, had no other object than this. Russia had then to make every exertion to raise the credit and influence of the Bonnets, in order to maintain peace with Sweden. In these endeavours she was assisted by the court of London, who were not only willing to support the interests of Russia, but glad of the opportunity to thwart France in her political career.

The death of Adolphus Frederic, which happened in the meantime, opened a new field for intrigue in the diet, which was summoned on account of the accession of his son and successor Gustavus III. (February 12, 1771). This young prince at first interposed between the two parties, with a view to conciliate them, but with so little success, that it rather increased their animosity, until the Bonnets, who were supported by Russia and England, went so far as to resolve on the total expulsion of the Hats, not only from the senate, but from all other places and dignities in the kingdom. Licentiousness then became extreme; and, circumscribed as the royal power already was in the time of Adolphus Frederic, they demanded new restrictions to be imposed on his successor. The treaties that were projected with Russia and England, were evidently the result of the system adopted by that faction who had now seized the reins of government.

In this state of affairs, the young king saw the necessity of attempting some change in the system of administration. His gentleness and eloquence, and his affable and popular manners, had gained him a number of partisans. He possessed in an eminent degree the art of dissimulation; and, while he was making every arrangement for a revolution, and concerting measures in secret with the French ambassador, he seemed to have nothing so much at heart as to convince the world of his sincere attachment to the established constitution. It is alleged, that he had sent emissaries over the whole kingdom to stir up the people against their governors; and that he might have some pretext for calling out his troops, he induced Captain Hellichius, the commandant of Christianstadt in Blekingen, to raise the standard of revolt against the states, who still continued their sittings at Stockholm.

That officer, known afterwards by the name of *Gustafskeld*, or the *Shield of Gustavus*, published at first a kind of manifesto, in which he reproached the states for their misconduct, which he showed to have been diametrically opposite to the public interest and the laws of the kingdom. Prince Charles, the king's brother, who was at that time at Landscrona, in Schonen, being informed of the proceedings of the commandant of Christianstadt, immediately assembled the troops in the provinces,

and marched to that place with the intention, as is said, of stilling the revolt in its birth. The news of this insurrection spread consternation in the capital. The states were suspicious of the king, and took measures to prevent the ambitious designs which they supposed him to entertain. Heli-chius was proclaimed a rebel by the senate, and guilty of high treason. They advised the king not to quit Stockholm, the command of which was intrusted to a senator, the Count of Kalling, with the most ample powers. At length the regiment of Upland, whose officers were devoted to the senate, were ordered to the capital, with the intention, as is supposed, of arresting the king. That prince then saw that he had no longer time to delay, and that he must finish the execution of the plan which he had proposed.

On the morning of the 19th of August, the king presented himself to the troops who mounted guard at the palace; and having assembled the officers, he detailed to them the unfortunate state of the kingdom, as being the consequence of those dissensions which had distracted the diet for more than fourteen months. He pointed out to them the necessity of abolishing that haughty aristocracy who had ruined the state, and to restore the constitution to what it was before the revolution of 1680; expressing, at the same time, his decided aversion for absolute and despotic power. Being assured of the fidelity of the guards, who were eager to take the oath of allegiance to him, he ordered a detachment to surround the council chamber, where the senators were assembled, and put the leaders of the ruling party under arrest. The artillery and other regiments of guards having also acknowledged his authority, their example was soon followed by all the *colleges* (or public offices), both civil and military. The arrest against Heli-chius was revoked, and the regiment of Upland received orders to march back. These measures and some others were executed with so much skill and punctuality, that the public tranquillity was never disturbed; and by five o'clock in the evening of the same day, the revolution seemed to be accomplished without shedding a single drop of blood. Next day, the magistrates of the city took the oath to the king, and the assembly of the states was summoned to meet on the 21st. On that day the king caused the palace to be surrounded by troops, and cannons to be pointed into the court opposite the chamber of the states. Seated on his throne, and surrounded by his guards, the king opened the assembly by an energetic discourse which he addressed to the members, in which he painted, in lively colours, the deplorable state of the kingdom, and the indispensable necessity of applying some prompt remedy. The new form of government which he had prepared was read by his order, and adopted without opposition by the whole four orders of the kingdom. The king then drew a Psalm-book from his pocket, and taking off his crown, began to sing *Te Deum*, in which he was joined by the whole assembly. Matters passed in the interior of the provinces with as little tumult and opposition as in the capital and principal cities. The king's brothers received, in his name, the oath of fidelity on the part of the inhabitants and the military.

In virtue of this new form of government, all the fundamental laws introduced since 1680 were

cancelled and abolished. The succession to the throne was restricted to males only. The lineal order, and the right of primogeniture, as settled by the convention of 1743, and by the decree of the diet of 1750, were confirmed. The king was to govern alone, according to the laws; and the senate were to be considered as his counsellors. All the senators were to be nominated by the king, and matters were no longer to be decided by a plurality of votes. The senators were simply to give their advice, and the decision belonged to the king. Courts of justice, however, were excepted. The chief command of all the forces in the kingdom, both by sea and land, and the supreme direction of the exchequer, were conferred on the king. On the report of the senate, he filled up all the high offices in the state, both military, civil, and ecclesiastical. He alone had the right of pardoning, and of summoning the states, who could never assemble on their own authority, except in case where the throne became vacant, by the total extinction of the royal family in the male line. The duration of the diets was fixed for three months, and the king had the privilege of dissolving them at the end of that time. He could make no new laws, nor interpret the old ones, nor impose subsidies or assessments, nor declare war without the advice and consent of the states. He was allowed, however, to levy an extraordinary tax, in cases where the kingdom might be attacked by sudden invasion; but on the termination of the war, the states were to be assembled and the new tax discontinued. All negotiations for peace, truces, and alliances, whether offensive or defensive, were reserved to the king, by whom they were to be referred to the senate. If, in these cases, the unanimous voice of the senate was opposed to that of the king, it became his duty to acquiesce in their opinion. Every Swedish citizen was to be judged by his natural judge. The king could attain neither the life, honour, nor fortune of any citizen, otherwise than by the legal form. All extraordinary commissions or tribunals were to be suppressed, as tending to establish tyranny and despotism.

The revolution of Stockholm, of which we have just now spoken, had nothing in common with that which happened at Copenhagen the same year, and which, without in any way affecting the constitution of the kingdom, merely transferred the reins of government from the hands of the reigning queen to those of the queen-dowager.¹⁴

In a remote corner of Europe there existed an association of warriors, of a kind quite peculiar, namely, that of the Zaporog Cossacs; so called because they dwelt near the cataracts of the Dniester where they served as a military frontier, first to the Poles, and afterwards to the Russians. The chief residence of these Cossacs was called Setscha. It contained a considerable mass of houses, scattered and badly constructed, and had a small fort occupied by a Russian garrison. The position of Setscha had not always been the same; but was ultimately fixed on the western bank of the Borysthene, opposite Kamenoi-Saton, an ancient fortress of the Russians, and was called New Setscha. These Cossacs, known in Poland by the name of *Haydamaacs*, and formidable by their incursions and their devastations, had adopted a republican form of government. Their capital was

divided into thirty K...
Cossack belonged to on...
lodged when he sta...
ged to conform to t...
belonged to the same Ku...
and the same family...
they were nourished y...
at the same table. Th...
sarene was called *Atan*...
sarenes *Koschewoi-At*...
but distinction, were c...
the Atanian by his own...
by the whole kurenies...
whenever they became...
of Setscha were either...
in that which was re...
1st of January, the...
the fields, rivers, and...
They made use of lots...
they renewed the...
able chance might be...
cession. At that...
chiefs, if they happen...
the old ones. As for th...
they were held when i...
take a campaign, or t...
generally on all occasi...
rest seemed to requir...
one other officers in...
pronounced sentence...
importance. Those whi...
required the interventio...
would suffer no wom...
those who were incli...
to remove elsewhere...
the Zaporogs received...
all nations. They w...
recruit their ranks wi...
hidnaping in their ex...
according to their...
ring.

The treaty of Andr...
Poland had left these C...
protection of those tw...
that of Russia, and wer...
union of that power...
being afterwards impli...
appa, they put themse...
the Factors of the Crim...
wa, and transferred t...
the eastern bank of the...
being discontented m...
pressed their incursions...
ians on Setscha, they t...
themselves once more u...
in 1733). The Emp...
their privileges, and...
them in rebuilding the...
bank of the Dniester.

As they continued, h...
and plunder on the fro...
and having neither frie...
resolved to annihilate...
besides their depredat...
caused of having usu...
countries between the...
as well as of several distri...
belonged to the Cossacs...
particularly exasperate...
was, that being so ob...

divided into thirty *Kurenes*, or quarters. Every Cossack belonged to one of these *kurenes*. There he lodged when he stayed at Setscha, and was obliged to conform to its laws. All those who belonged to the same *Kurene*, formed as it were one and the same family. Like the ancient Spartans, they were nourished with the same food, and ate at the same table. The overseer of each separate *kurene* was called *Ataman*, and the chief of all the *kurenes* *Koschewoi-Ataman*. All the chiefs, without distinction, were elected by common consent; the *Ataman* by his own *kurene*, and the *Koschewoi* by the whole *kurenes* united. They were deposed whenever they became unpopular. The assemblies of Setscha were either ordinary or extraordinary. That which was regularly held every year on the 1st of January, they made a formal division of the fields, rivers, and lakes, among the *kurenes*. They made use of lots in order to avoid disputes; and they renewed them every year that a favourable chance might be given to all the *kurenes* in succession. At that assembly they elected new chiefs, if they happened to be discontented with the old ones. As for the extraordinary assemblies, they were held when it was in agitation to undertake a campaign, or to make an excursion; and generally on all occasions when the common interest seemed to require it. They had a judge and some other officers in Setscha. The judge never pronounced sentence except in affairs of little importance. Those which appeared more weighty required the intervention of all the chiefs. They would suffer no woman to remain in Setscha. Those who were inclined to marry were obliged to remove elsewhere. To keep up their numbers, the Zaporogs received deserters and fugitives from all nations. They were particularly careful to recruit their ranks with young boys, whom they kidnapped in their excursions, and brought them up according to their customs and manner of living.

The treaty of *Andrussow* between Russia and Poland had left these Cossacs under the common protection of those two states. They preferred that of Russia, and were continued under the dominion of that power by the peace of *Moscov*. Being afterwards implicated in the revolt of *Mahmud*, they put themselves under the protection of the Tartars of the Crimea after the battle of *Pultowa*, and transferred their capital of Setscha to the eastern bank of the *Dnieper*, nearer its mouth. Being discontented under the Tartars, who reproached their incursions, and often imposed exactions on Setscha, they took the resolution of putting themselves once more under the dominion of Russia (1733). The Empress Anne confirmed them in their privileges, and furnished money to assist them in rebuilding their capital on the western bank of the *Dnieper*.

As they continued, however, to commit robbery and plunder on the frontiers without intermission, and having neither friends nor allies, Catherine II. resolved to annihilate this fantastic association. Besides their depredations, the Zaporogs were accused of having usurped possession of several countries between the *Dnieper* and the *Bog*; as well as of several districts which had at all times belonged to the Cossacs of the *Don*. What more particularly exasperated the empress against them, was, that being so obstinately attached to their

absurd form of government, they opposed every scheme of reform, the object of which was to make them live in regular society, and in the bonds of matrimony; or to induce them to form themselves into regiments, after the manner of the other Cossacs. They had also refused to send their deputies to *Moscov*, at the time when Catherine had sent them from all parts of the Empire, for the formation of a new code of laws; and there was some reason to fear they might attempt to revolt, on account of the changes which the empress proposed to make in the administration of the government. These and other considerations induced that princess to despatch a body of troops against Setscha (1775). The Zaporogs, attacked unawares, and inclosed on all hands, saw themselves without the means of making the least resistance. Their capital was destroyed, and their whole tribe dispersed. Those who were not inclined to embrace another kind of life, were sent back to their native towns and their respective countries.

The succession of Bavaria reverted of right to the Elector Palatine, Charles Theodore, as head of the elder branch of *Wittelsbach*. That prince had on his side the feudal law of Germany, the golden bull, the peace of *Westphalia*, and family compacts frequently renewed between the two branches of that house; all Europe was persuaded that, should the case so turn out, the rights of the Elector Palatine would be beyond all controversy. Meantime, the Elector Maximilian had secretly closed his eyes, when several pretenders appeared on the field, to dispute the succession as his presumptive heirs. The Emperor Joseph claimed all the fiefs of the Empire, which his predecessors had conferred on the house of Bavaria, without expressly including the princes of the palatine branch in these investitures. The Empress Maria Theresa, besides the fiefs of the Upper Palatinate holding of the crown of *Bohemia*, demanded all the countries and districts of Lower and Upper Bavaria, as well as of the Upper Palatinate, which had been possessed by the princes of *Bavaria-Straubingen*, who had become extinct in 1425. She also alleged a pretended investiture, which the Emperor *Sigismund* had granted, in 1426, to his son-in-law Duke *Albert* of Austria. The Electress-Dowager of *Saxony*, sister to the last Elector of Bavaria, thought herself entitled to claim the allodial succession, which she made out to be very extensive. Lastly, the Dukes of *Mecklenburg* brought forward an ancient deed of reversion, which their ancestors had obtained from the emperors, over the landgraviate of *Leuchtenberg*.

Before these different claims could be made known, the Austrian troops had entered Bavaria, immediately after the death of the late elector, and taken possession of all the countries and districts claimed by the Emperor and the Empress-Queen. The Elector Palatine, intimidated by the cabinet of Vienna, acknowledged the lawfulness of all the claims of that court, by a convention which was signed at Vienna (January 3, 1778), but which the Duke of *Deux-Ponts*, his successor and heir presumptive, refused to ratify. That prince was supported in his opposition by the King of Prussia, who treated the pretensions of Austria as chimerical, and as being incompatible with the security of the constitution of the Germanic body. The king interposed in this affair, as being a guarantee

for the peace of Westphalia, and a friend and ally of the parties concerned, who all claimed his protection. He demanded the court of Vienna, that they should withdraw their troops from Bavaria, and restore to the elector the territories of which they had deprived him. A negotiation on this subject was opened between the two courts, and numerous controversial writings were published; but the proposals of the King of Prussia not proving agreeable to the court of Vienna, the conferences were broken off about the end of June 1778, and both parties began to make preparations for war.

It was about the beginning of July when the King of Prussia entered Bohemia, through the county of Glatz, and pitched his camp between Jaromitz and Konigratz, opposite that of the Emperor and Marshal Daun, from which he was only separated by the Elbe. Another army, composed of Prussians and Saxons, and commanded by Prince Henry of Prussia, penetrated into Bohemia through Lusatia; but they were stopped in their march by Marshal Laudohn, who had taken up a very advantageous position, and defeated all the measures of the Prince of Prussia. At length a third Prussian army marched into Austria and Silesia, and occupied the greater part of that province. Europe had never seen armies more numerous and better disciplined, and commanded by such experienced generals, approach each other so nearly without some memorable action taking place. The emperor and his generals had the good sense to act on the defensive; while the efforts of the King of Prussia, to bring him to a general engagement, proved altogether unavailing. This prince, who had lost a great many men by sickness and desertion, was compelled to evacuate Bohemia about the end of October, and his example was soon followed by his brother Prince Henry. At the beginning of this first campaign, the empress-queen being desirous of peace, had sent Baron Thugut to the King of Prussia, to offer him new proposals. A conference was agreed to take place at the convent of Braunau (August, 1778), which had no better success than the preceding, on account of the belligerous disposition of the emperor, who was for continuing the war. At length the return of peace was brought about by the powerful intervention of the courts of Versailles and St. Petersburg.

France, who was obliged, by the terms of her alliance with Austria, to furnish supplies for the empress-queen, could not in the present case reconcile this engagement with the interests of her crown, nor with the obligations which the treaty of Westphalia had imposed upon her, with respect to the Germanic body. Besides, the war which had broken out between her and England, on account of her alliance with the United States of America, made her anxious for the restoration of peace on the continent, for avoiding everything which might occasion a diversion of her maritime forces. The Empress of Russia, who thought her glory interested, could not remain a quiet spectator of a struggle which, if prolonged, might set all Europe in a flame. She declared to the court of Vienna, that in consequence of the ties of friendship and alliance which subsisted between her and the court of Berlin, she would find herself called on to conjoin her troops to those of Prussia,

if the war was to be continued. But, before coming to that extremity, she would interpose her good offices, conjointly with France, to bring existing differences to an amicable conclusion.

The mediation of these two courts having been accepted by the belligerent powers, a congress was summoned at Teschen, in Silesia, which was opened in the month of March, 1779. The Empress of Russia, to give the greater weight to her interference, despatched a body of troops to her interests, destined to act as auxiliaries under the King of Prussia, in case the war should happen to be renewed. Prince Repnin, who commanded this body, appeared, at the same time, in the capacity of ambassador extraordinary at the congress. France sent, on her part, Baron de Breteuil, her ambassador at the court of Vienna. All things being already prepared, and the principal difficulties removed, the peace was concluded in less than two months. By this treaty, the convention of the 3rd of January, made between the court of Vienna and the Elector Palatine, was annulled. Austria was required to give up all her possessions in Bavaria, except the places and districts situated between the Danube, the Inn, and the Salza, which were ceded to her as all she could claim of the succession of Bavaria, which she had renounced in the most formal manner. The fiefs of the Empire, which had been conferred on the House of Bavaria, were secured by that treaty to the Elector Palatine and his whole family; as well as those situated in the Upper Palatinate, and holding of the crown of Bohemia.

The Elector Palatine agreed to pay the Elector of Saxony, for his allodial rights, the sum of 6,000,000 of florins, money of the Empire; while the empress-queen gave up to the said prince the rights which the crown of Bohemia had over certain seigniories lying within Saxony, and possessed by the Counts of Schonburg. The Palatine branch of Birkenfeldt, whose right of succession to the palatine estates had been disputed, on the ground of their being the issue of an unequal marriage, were now declared capable of succeeding to all the estates and possessions of the House of Wittelsbach, as comprehended in the family compact of that house.

The existing treaties between the court of Vienna and the King of Prussia, with those of Westphalia, Breslau, Berlin, and Dresden, were renewed and confirmed; and a formal acknowledgment made to the royal line of Prussia, of their right to unite the margraviates of Baireuth and Anspach, failing the present possessors, to the hereditary succession of the electorate of Brandenburg; which right the House of Austria had called in question during the dispute which we have already mentioned. As for the House of Mecklenburg, they granted to it the privilege of the *non appellando*, in virtue of which, no one could carry an appeal from the tribunals of that country to the sovereign courts of the Empire. The two mediating powers undertook to guarantee that treaty. Thus the war for the succession of Bavaria was checked at its commencement. The following peculiarities are worthy of remark, viz., that the Palatine family, who were the party chiefly interested, took no share in it; while Bavaria, the sole cause of the war, was no way engaged in it, and the Elector Palatine, who had even refused

the assistance of the K
theless, the party chie
means of the prote
The House of Austr
est seen, in her proj
ried, in the next plac
country by way of exc
The Elector Palatine u
views of the court of
with the Duke of Deur
posed the exchange; v
who supported it, was
such an exchange was
both to former tr
crets of the German
Vienna then abandone
appearance; but the a
throughout the Empiro,
known by the name of
It was concluded
between the three Elec
and Brunswick-L
provinces of the Imperi
this association, purely
object than the presen
stem, with the rights
members.

The revolution in No
now about to give s
placed among the nu
which belong to the gr
besides the sanguinary
even France and Engl
al Holland were also
del as the harbinger
A place soon after in
ates of Europe. The
America were no other
other country, than by
a similarity of manne
usage had rendered
ed into provinces, each
constitut' n, more
England, but imperfect
country, because the inh
are not represented in
they had been so, C
only never have enjoye
had reserved to her
dual system of all m
are privilege of sending
Americans, by fetterin
the affections from Eng
ally desirous of shakin
pensity could not fail
these colonies increase
wealth.

Due consideration, h
tr allegiance, was the p
ated them against the
French in Canada, th
the Barbarians in the
pecially, proved dang
us to New England,
ance and protection of
reasonable. The aspect
of the peace of Par
ing possession of Can
main tie which attac
ment. Delivered t

the assistance of the King of Prussia, was, nevertheless, the party chiefly benefited by the peace, by means of the protection of that prince.

The House of Austria having failed, as we have just seen, in her project of conquering Bavaria, tried, in the next place, to get possession of that country by way of exchange for the Netherlands. The Elector Palatine appeared willing to meet the views of the court of Vienna; but it was not so with the Duke of Deux-Ponts, who haughtily opposed the exchange; while the King of Prussia, who supported it, was obliged to acknowledge that such an exchange was inadmissible, and in opposition both to former treaties, and to the best interests of the Germanic body. The court of Vienna then abandoned this project, at least in appearance; but the alarm which it had caused throughout the Empire, gave rise to an association, known by the name of the Germanic Confederation. It was concluded at Berlin (July 23, 1785) between the three Electors of Saxony, Brandenburg, and Brunswick-Luneburg; besides several princes of the Imperial State who adhered to it. This association, purely defensive, had no other object than the preservation of the Germanic system, with the rights and possessions of all its members.

The revolution in North America, of which we now know about to give some account, deserves to be placed among the number of those great events which belong to the general history of Europe. Besides the sanguinary war which it kindled between France and England, and in which Spain and Holland were also implicated, it may be regarded as the harbinger of those revolutions which took place soon after in several of the Continental States of Europe. The English colonies in North America were no otherwise connected with the mother country, than by a government purely civil, and a similarity of manners and customs, which usage had rendered sacred. They were divided into provinces, each of which had its particular constitution, more or less analogous to that of England, but imperfectly united with the mother country, because the inhabitants of these provinces were not represented in the national parliament. If they had been so, Great Britain would certainly never have enjoyed that monopoly which she had reserved to herself, agreeably to the political system of all modern nations. The exclusive privilege of sending her commodities to the Americans, by fettering their industry, alienated their affections from England, and made them naturally desirous of shaking off her yoke; and this propensity could not fail to increase, in proportion as these colonies increased in strength, population, and wealth.

On this consideration, however, likely to secure their allegiance, was the protection which England afforded them against their powerful neighbours, the French in Canada, the Spaniards in Florida, and the Barbarians in the West. The Canadians, especially, proved daring and troublesome neighbours to New England, which rendered the assistance and protection of the mother country indispensable. The aspect of affairs changed at the close of the peace of Paris (1763). England, by losing possession of Canada and Florida, broke the main tie which attached the colonies to her government. Delivered then from the terror of the

French, and having no more need of foreign succour to protect them from their attacks, the Americans began to concert measures for extricating themselves from the dominion of Britain.

The first disturbances that broke out were occasioned by the attempts which the British parliament had made to impose taxes on the Americans. The national debt of England having increased considerably during the preceding war, the parliament thought they had a right to oblige the colonies to furnish their quota for the liquidation of that debt, which had been contracted, in a great measure, for the interests of America. The parliament passed an act, according to which all contracts in the American colonies were to be drawn upon stamped paper; and the tax on the stamp was regulated according to the different objects of the contract (1765). When this act had passed into a law, and was about to be carried into effect in America, it caused a general insurrection. The people committed all sorts of excesses and abuses against the king's officers. The courts of justice were shut up, and the colonies began to form associations among themselves. They disputed the right of the British parliament to impose taxes on them; alleging that they were not represented there; and that it was the constitutional privilege of every Englishman, that he could not be taxed except by means of his own representatives. The colonies having thus attacked the sovereignty and legislative power of the parliament, laid an interdict on all commerce with the mother country, and forbade the purchase of commodities imported from Great Britain.

The Parliament had the weakness to rescind the Stamp Act. They published, however, a declaratory act which set forth, that the colonies were subordinate to, and dependent on, the Crown and Parliament of Great Britain, in whom resided full power and authority to make laws and statutes binding on the colonies, in all possible cases. The provincial assemblies of the colonists were enjoined, by that act, to receive into their towns whatever number of British troops the mother country might think proper to send, and to furnish them with wood and beer. Far from allaying these disturbances, this new act tended, on the contrary, to exasperate them still more. The Americans considered it as tyrannical, and as having no other design than to destroy the foundations of their liberty, and to establish an absolute and despotic power.

The British ministry made still further concessions. They abandoned altogether the idea of a tax to be levied in the interior of the country, and limited themselves entirely to taxes or duties on imported goods. The Stamp Act was replaced by another (1767), which imposed certain duties on tea, paper, lead, glass, and paint-colours, &c. &c. exported from England into the colonies. This act was no better received than its predecessor. The Assembly of Massachusetts which was formed at Boston, addressed circular letters to all the colonies, exhorting them to act in concert for the support of their rights against the mother country. The resolutions which some of the colonies had already adopted, of prohibiting the use of commodities manufactured in Great Britain, became common to all the colonies; and the American merchants in general countermanded the goods which

they had ordered from England, Scotland, and Ireland. The spirit of revolt thus extending wider and wider, the British government determined to employ troops for the restoration of order and tranquillity in the colonies, and making them respect the sovereignty of Great Britain (1769).

Affairs were in this situation when Lord North, who had been placed at the head of the administration, succeeded in calming the minds of the colonists, by passing an act which abolished the obnoxious taxes, with the single exception of that on tea. The intention of the minister in retaining this tax, was not with any view of reaping advantage from it; but he hoped by this trifling duty to accustom the colonies to support greater taxes. The Americans were very sensible of this; however, as they imported very little tea from England, and as the Dutch furnished them with this article by way of contraband, they showed no symptoms of resentment until the year 1773. At that time, the Parliament having given permission to the East India Company to export tea to America, of which they had large supplies in their warehouses, the Americans, indignant to see this company made the organ of a law which was odious to them, resolved to oppose the landing of these tea cargoes. Three of the company's vessels, freighted with this article, having arrived at Boston, and preparing to unload, the inhabitants boarded them during the night of the 21st of December, and threw all the chests into the sea, to the number of 342. In the other provinces, they were content merely to send back the ships loaded with this obnoxious commodity.

On the news of this outrage, the British Parliament thought it necessary to adopt rigorous measures. Three acts were passed in succession (1774), the first to try the port of Boston under interdict; the second to abolish the constitution and democratic government of Massachusetts, and substitute in its place a government more monarchial; and the third to authorize the colonial governors to transport to England the Americans who were accused of rebellion, to be tried in the Court of King's Bench. General Gage was sent to Boston with a body of troops and several vessels, to carry these coercive measures into effect. By thus adopting decisive measures, the British Parliament in vain flattered themselves, that they could reduce, by force, a continent so vast, and so remote from the mother country as that of America. Supposing even that they could have succeeded, the spirit and nature of the English government would never have permitted them to maintain their conquests by force. The colonies, however, far from being intimidated by these acts, warmly espoused the cause of the province which had been singled out for punishment.

A general congress, composed of the representatives of all the colonies, was opened at Philadelphia (September 5th, 1774). They declared the acts of the British Parliament against Massachusetts, to be unjust, oppressive, and unconstitutional. They agreed never more to import articles of commerce from Great Britain; and to present an address to the king, and a petition to the House of Commons, for the redress of those grievances of which the colonies had to complain. This latter step having produced no effect, and the Parliament having still persisted in their rigorous measures,

hostilities commenced in the month of April, 1775. The American Congress then conferred the command of their army on George Washington, a rich planter in Virginia, who had acquired considerable military reputation by his success in opposing the French in Canada; and at the same time, to raise the immediate supplies of which the colonies stood in need, the congress agreed to issue paper money, sufficient to meet the unavoidable expenses of the war. A declaration, published in the month of July, 1775, explained the reasons which had compelled the Americans to take up arms; and announced their intention not to separate from Great Britain, nor adopt a system of absolute independence. But as the British ministry had made extraordinary efforts for the campaign of 1776, and taken a body of German troops on their pay, the Americans thought proper to break off all alliance with England, that they might have recourse in their turn to the protection of foreigners.

The independence of the colonies was formally declared by an act of Congress (July 4th, 1776). They then drew up articles of confederation and perpetual union among the States of America, to the number of thirteen provinces, under the title of the *United States of America*.¹⁵ In virtue of this union, each of the states retained most of its own legislature and internal administration, while the congress, which was composed of deputies from all the colonies, had the power of regulating all political affairs; that is to say, everything concerning war or peace, alliances, money matters, weights and measures, posts, &c.; as well as the settlement of any differences which might arise between two or more of the confederated states. The first favourable action for the Americans, in their war against England, was that fought at Trenton on the Delaware (December 25th, 1776) where General Washington surprised a body of Hessians and English, and made them prisoners. But the event which in some degree set the seal to the independence of America, was the important check which General Burgoyne met with at Saratoga. Having advanced from Canada to support the operations of General Howe, who was marching on Philadelphia, he was compelled the American troops under General Gates to throw down his arms, by a capitulation which was signed in the camp at Saratoga (October 17th, 1777). The news of this disaster was soon received in Europe, than France, who, during the time that England was occupied with the disturbances in America, had put her marine on a respectable footing, took the resolution of acknowledging the new republic, and entered into a formal alliance with it. Treaties of friendship, alliance and commerce, were concluded at Paris between them and the United States of America (February 6th, 1778). France demanded as a primary condition, that the United States should not lay down their arms, until England had acknowledged the independence. The notification which the Congress of France made to that of London of this treaty with the United States, became the signal of war between these two nations.

This war which France had undertaken against England for the free navigation of the seas, was the first which did not involve the continent of Europe, as it was confined entirely to maritime operations.

The European power in this enterprise, while Great Britain did not have a single country to interest her.

Spain, after having of a mediating power, of those engaged, by the family of England had determined British ministry were which, instead of granting she was entitled to treaties, had lent itself of her enemies. The plained of the multiplied were incessantly harassed. They had sought to pro under the shield of the Empress of Russia in tering the commerce was in order to prevent neutrality that England war against the republic. Without entering h year, the principal scene though it extended to shall merely confine o observations.

When hostilities con and England, the latter in maritime strength. extremities of the globe vessels was prodigious. with stores. Her dock activity; but after Fra their naval force, it w Great Britain, obliged strength, to defend her the numerous attacks allies. Not fewer than took place between the of which England, fro admirals, and the ability not lose a single ship of tion was fought near between D'Orvilliers and tion, the glory of which nations, was as in which followed it. The uly speaking, was th ought with Comd de between the islands of English admiral having succeeded in taking five e admirals, whom he ioneer to London.

At the beginning of t the French of their posh as Pondicherry, Ch they took from them the Aquilon, as well as th of the coast of Africa. gain themselves for the Islands of Dominica, St. Christophers the forts and establish the Senegal in Africa East Indies, fell into

The European powers, far from thwarting France in this enterprise, applauded her success; and while Great Britain depended on her own strength, and had not a single ally on the continent, France contrived to interest Spain and Holland in her cause.

Spain, after having for some time held the rank of a mediating power, entered into the war in fulfillment of those engagements which she had contracted, by the family compact; and as for Holland, England had determined to break with her. The British ministry were offended at that republic, which, instead of granting England the supplies which she was entitled to claim in virtue of former treaties, had lent itself an accomplice to the interests of her enemies. The Dutch, on their side, complained of the multiplied vexations with which they were incessantly harassed by the British privateers. They had sought to protect themselves against these, under the shield of that armed neutrality which the Empress of Russia had just negotiated for protecting the commerce of neutral states; and it was in order to prevent their accession to that neutrality that England made such haste to declare war against the republic (December 20, 1780).

Without entering here into the details of that war, the principal scene of which was in America, though it extended to Africa and the Indies, we shall merely confine ourselves to a few general observations.

When hostilities commenced between France and England, the latter had a very great superiority in maritime strength. She had armies at the two extremities of the globe. The number of her vessels was prodigious. Her arsenals were gorged with stores. Her dockyards were in the greatest activity; but after France and Spain had united their naval force, it was no longer possible for Great Britain, obliged as she was to divide her strength, to defend her distant possessions against the numerous attacks of the French and their allies. Not fewer than twenty-one engagements took place between the belligerent powers; in all of which England, from the experience of her admirals, and the ability of her naval officers, did not lose a single ship of the line. The first naval action was fought near Ushant (July 27, 1778), between D'Orvilliers and Admiral Keppel. This action, the glory of which was claimed equally by both nations, was as indecisive as most of those which followed it. The only decisive action, properly speaking, was that which Admiral Rodney fought with Count de Grasse (April 12, 1782), between the islands of Dominica and Saintes. The English admiral having broken the French line, succeeded in taking five ships of the line, including the admiral's, whom he had the honour to carry prisoner to London.

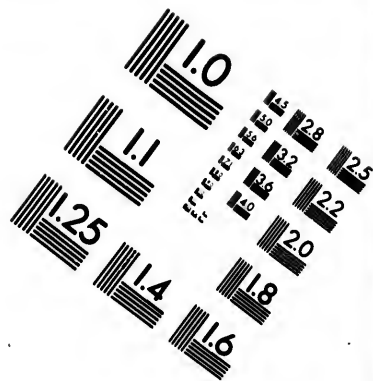
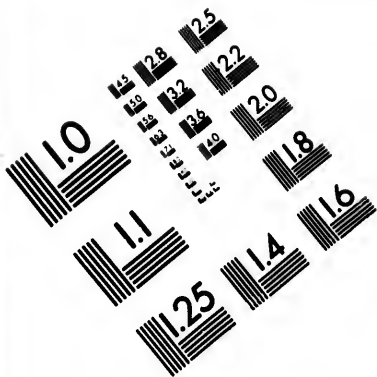
At the beginning of the war, the English stripped the French of their possessions in the East Indies, such as Pondicherry, Chandernagore, and Mahé. They took from them the islands of St. Peter and Miquelon, as well as that of St. Lucia, and Gorree on the coast of Africa. The French afterwards repaid themselves for these losses, by conquering the islands of Dominica, St. Vincent, Grenada, Tobago, St. Christophers, Nevis and Montserrat. The forts and establishments of the English in the Senegal in Africa, as well as Gondclore in the East Indies, fell into their possession.

The Spaniards made themselves masters of the forts which the English occupied on the Mississippi. They took fort Mobile or Condé, in ancient French Louisiana, and subdued the whole of Western Florida, with the town of Pensacola. In Europe they recovered, with the assistance of the French, the island of Minorca, with port Mahon and fort St. Philip; but the combined forces of the two nations failed in their enterprise against Gibraltar. This place, which was bravely defended by General Elliot, was twice relieved with supplies by the English fleet—first by Admiral Rodney (1780), and afterwards by Lord Howe (1782). The floating batteries invented by M. D'Arçon, which were directed against the garrison, were destroyed by the red-hot bullets which the English showered upon them in great profusion. It was chiefly this obstinate determination of the Spaniards to recover the rock of Gibraltar, for a long time deprived France and Spain of the advantages which ought to have accrued to them from the combination of their naval strength against Great Britain. As for the Dutch, they experienced heavy losses in this war; their islands of St. Eustatia, Saba, and St. Martin in the Antilles, were seized by the English, who carried off immense booty. Besides their establishments of Demarara and Essequibo in Guiana, those which they had on the Malabar and Coromandel coasts, especially Negapatam and Trincomalee, on the coasts of Ceylon, were reduced in succession. The French succeeded, however, in reconquering the Dutch Antilles, and the fortress of Trincomalee.

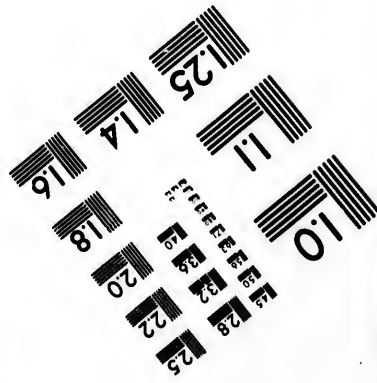
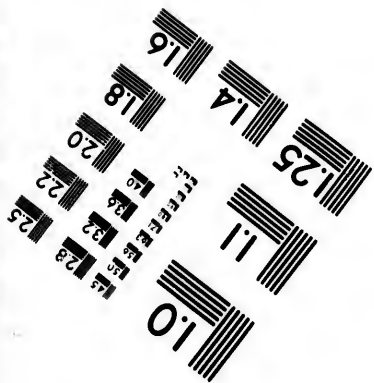
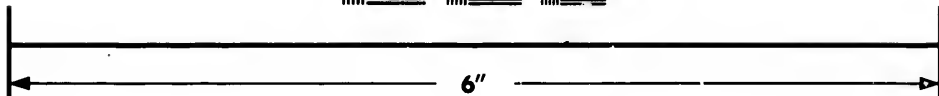
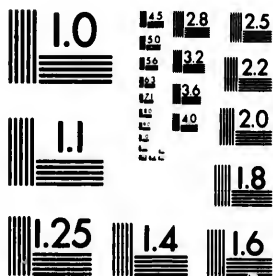
In North America, the success of the war was for a long time equally balanced between the English and the Americans. At length Lord Cornwallis, after having conquered the two Carolinas, advanced into Virginia. He took York Town and Gloucester; but having penetrated into the interior of that province, Generals Washington, Rochambeau, and La Fayette, turned their forces against him, and were supported in this attack by a French fleet, which the Count de Grasse had brought to their aid. Lord Cornwallis, surrounded on all sides, and shut up in York Town, was obliged to capitulate (October 19, 1781), and surrendered himself and his whole army prisoners of war. This event decided the fate of America. The news of it no sooner arrived in England, than a change took place in the British ministry. Lord North and his colleagues gave in their demission, and were replaced by the members of the opposite party. The new ministry attempted to negotiate a special peace, either with the Americans or with the Dutch; but their efforts having proved unsuccessful, they adopted the alternative of recognising the independence of America, and then entered into a negotiation with France. A conference was opened at Paris, under the mediation of Joseph II., and the Empress of Russia. It continued from the month of October 1782, till September 1783, when definitive treaties of peace were signed at Paris and Versailles between Great Britain, France, Spain, and the United States of America. The conclusion of the treaty between England and Holland did not take place till the 20th May, 1784.

In virtue of these treaties, the independence of the thirteen United States of America was acknow-





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.5 2.8
1.8 3.2
2.2 3.6
2.5 4.0
2.8 4.5
3.2 5.0
3.6 5.6
4.0 6.3
4.5 7.1
5.0 8.0
5.6 9.0
6.3 10.0
7.1 11.2
8.0 12.5
9.0 14.0
10.0 16.0
11.2 18.0
12.5 20.0
14.0 22.5
16.0 25.0
18.0 28.0
20.0 31.5
22.5 35.0
25.0 39.0
28.0 45.0
31.5 50.0
35.0 56.0
39.0 63.0
45.0 71.0
50.0 80.0
56.0 90.0
63.0 100.0

1.5 2.8
1.8 3.2
2.2 3.6
2.5 4.0
2.8 4.5
3.2 5.0
3.6 5.6
4.0 6.3
4.5 7.1
5.0 8.0
5.6 9.0
6.3 10.0
7.1 11.2
8.0 12.5
9.0 14.0
10.0 16.0
11.2 18.0
12.5 20.0
14.0 22.5
16.0 25.0
18.0 28.0
20.0 31.5
22.5 35.0
25.0 39.0
28.0 45.0
31.5 50.0
35.0 56.0
39.0 63.0
45.0 71.0
50.0 80.0
56.0 90.0
63.0 100.0

ledged by England; and the boundaries of the respective possessions of the two powers were regulated over the whole extent of North America. A continent of more than 70,000 square German miles was assigned to the United States, who also obtained the right of fishing on the banks of Newfoundland, and in all other places where fishing had till then been practised.

The French fisheries at Newfoundland, were settled in a manner more advantageous than had been by the former treaties. The islands of St. Peter and Miquelon were ceded with full privileges to France. In the Antilles, France retained St. Lucia and Tobago, restoring to England Grenada and the Grenadines, St. Vincent, Dominica, St. Christopher, Nevis, and Montserrat. In Africa, the forts and settlements on the Senegal remained in the possession of France, with the island of Goree, which was restored to her. In the East Indies, all the French settlements, such as Chandernagore, Pondicherry and Mahé, were restored, and England engaged to make some additions to Pondicherry. The clauses in the former treaties relative to Dunkirk were abolished. The island of Minorca in the Mediterranean, and the whole of Florida in America, were ceded to Spain, who restored to England the islands of Providence and Bahama; and moreover granted the English the liberty of cutting logwood or dyewood in certain places on the Bay of Honduras. Finally, Holland ceded Negapatam to England, and granted to British subjects a free trade in the Indian Seas, where the Dutch had till that time maintained an exclusive commerce and navigation.

Such is an outline of the treaties of Paris and Versailles, which terminated the American war. France thereby maintained the balance of maritime power against England, whose vast naval superiority, had alarmed all the commercial States of Europe. [It is true that this advantage was of short duration, and that the English recovered their superiority, and during the French Revolution, carried it to a pitch which it had never before reached; besides, their commerce suffered no check by the loss of their extensive colonies. The growing industry of the new republic had more need than ever to be supported by all the capital and credit which the merchants could find in the mother country]. France acquired the glory of having contributed, by her efforts, to establish the new republic of the United States, which, by the vast extent of its territory, the progressive increase of its population, its industry, and its commerce, promises, to exercise, in course of time, a prodigious influence on the destinies of Europe.

One memorable event, which has some reference to the American war, was the confederacy of the Northern powers, under the title of the *Armed Neutrality*. That war, which was purely maritime, having given an astonishing alacrity to the commerce of the North, by the demand which the belligerent powers made for wood for shipbuilding and naval stores of all kinds, England, in order to prevent the French and Spaniards from procuring these commodities in the North, took advantage of her maritime superiority, by seizing, without distinction, all merchant vessels under a neutral flag, and confiscating all articles found on board belonging to the subjects of hostile countries. The

Empress of Russia, wishing to put a stop to these depredations, resolved to protect by force of arms the commercial interests of her subjects. By a manifesto, which she addressed to France and England (February 1780), she informed those powers, that it was her intention to maintain an intercourse for all effects which might belong to the subjects of those nations at war; excepting only genuine warlike stores, such as powder, balls, and cannon, and in general whatever might be reputed contraband goods; in virtue of the 10th and 11th articles of her commercial treaty with Great Britain (1766). She did not rest satisfied with making this declaration herself. She engaged Sweden and Denmark to publish similar ones, and entered into a contract with those powers for the purpose of protecting the navigation of their subjects by means of convoys, and for rendering each other mutual assistance in case of any insult offered to their merchantmen. The court of Copenhagen declared more especially (August 10, 1780), that the Baltic, by its local situation, being a shut sea, no ships of war belonging to the belligerents could be admitted there, or allowed to commit hostilities against any one whomsoever. Several of the continental powers, such as the King of Prussia, the Emperor Joseph II., the Queen of Portugal, and the King of the Two Sicilies, joined the armed neutrality on the principles established in the declaration of the Empress of Russia. France and Spain applauded these measures, and the principles which the empress had thus sanctioned. England dissembled, pretending to refer to treaties, and to wait a more favourable opportunity for explanation. But, in order to prevent the Dutch from taking shelter under the armed neutrality, she declared war against that republic, even before the act of her accession to these treaties had been ratified by the powers of the North.

New disputes had arisen between the Russian and the Turks after the peace of Kainargi. The haughtiness of the Porte was unwilling to admit the independence of the Tartars, which was sanctioned by that peace. She was indignant to see the Russians parading their flag even under the walls of Constantinople; and moreover, she tried every stratagem to elude the execution of the articles in the treaty which did not meet with her approbation. Russia, on her part, who regarded the independence of the Crimea as a step towards the execution of her ambitious projects, expelled the Khan Dowlat Gueray, who was favourably inclined towards the Porte, and put Sachem Gueray in his place, who was devoted to the interests of Russia. This latter having been dispossessed by Sellim Gueray, with the assistance of the Porte, the empress marched a body of troops into the Crimea, under the command of Suwarrow (1783) and restored her protégé to the throne by force of arms.

The Turks made great preparations for war, and a new rupture between the two empires was expected, when, by the interposition of M. de S. Priest, the French ambassador at the Porte, the divan consented to an accommodation, which was concluded at Constantinople (March 21, 1783) under the name of the *Explicative Convention*. The independence of the Crimea, and the sovereignty of Sachem Gueray, were thereby acknowledged and confirmed anew. Russia and

orte engaged to v
peninsula, as well
the Porte promised
texts of spiritual
civil or political
intercourse between
was secured in
Russian vessels to
capacity of the ships
trade in the port
This convention
and understanding
new troubles were in
the Crimea. The
were more expelled
rks (1782). A F
red that peninsula
like a Russian fleet
off the malleon
with Constantinople.
Empress Catharine
arrived for pla
number of her own
ships to occupy th
hole of Cuban; an
man, of which th
s, with the view of
with the Tartars. I
manifesto, the motive
the Crimea to her En
Taman and the C
y resigned the sove
so short a time (J
That event was a te
orte. The inhabita
manded war; but t
their weakness, us
The preparations
land, were imme
operation and a p
ants of Vienna and
ed in vain to engage
they were withl
stead of fighting, t
ete; and a new tre
ple (January 8, 178
imes, the Island o
tan which lay on t
name, and forme
een the two empires
fortress of Ocza
the Crimea had so
with its whole
minion of the Tart
rrible to Russia. Th
that vast country
ely, those of Taur
There had existed
es between the D
Austrian Netherla
Barrier Treaty (17
18). They had n
limits of Dutch F
pointed out rathe
ing time the Impe
Dutch the subsid
stipulated in their
consent to agree t
limits, or the pay
England and Holland

Porte engaged to withdraw their troops from that peninsula, as well as from the Island of Taman. The Porte promised especially never to allege any pretext of spiritual alliance for interfering with the civil or political power of the khans. The free intercourse between the Black Sea and the White Sea, was secured in the most express manner to Russian vessels that were of the form, size, and capacity of the ships of other nations who carried trade in the ports of Turkey.

This convention did not restore any permanent good understanding between the two empires; new troubles were not long in springing up again in the Crimea. The Khan Sachem Gueray was more expelled by the party adhering to the Turks (1782). A Russian army immediately entered that peninsula and restored the fugitive khan; while a Russian fleet, sailing from the port of Azoff, put off the malecontents from all communication with Constantinople. Under these circumstances, the Empress Catherine II. thought the moment had arrived for placing the Crimea among the number of her own provinces. She caused her troops to occupy that peninsula, as well as the whole of Cuban; and expelled the Turks from Taman, of which they had made themselves masters, with the view of opening up a communication with the Tartars. Finally, she explained, in a manifesto, the motives which induced her to unite the Crimea to her Empire, together with the Isle of Taman and the Cuban. Sachem Gueray formally resigned the sovereignty which he had enjoyed so short a time (June 28, 1783).

That event was a terrible blow to the Ottoman Porte. The inhabitants of Constantinople loudly demanded war; but the divan, who were sensible of their weakness, used every endeavour to avoid it.

The preparations of the Russians, both by sea and land, were immense; and there subsisted a cooperation and a perfect intimacy between the courts of Vienna and St. Petersburg. England tried in vain to engage the Turks to take up arms, but they were withheld by France and Austria. Instead of fighting, they were resolved to negotiate; and a new treaty was signed at Constantinople (January 8, 1784). The sovereignty of the Crimea, the Island of Taman, and all the part of the Taurida which lay on the right bank of the river of the same name, and formed, as it were, a frontier between the two empires, were abandoned to Russia. The fortress of Oczakoff, to which the Tartars in the Crimea had some claims, was ceded to the Porte with its whole territory. Thus ended the dominion of the Tartars in the Crimea, once so formidable to Russia. The empress formed the whole of that vast country into two new governments, namely, those of Taurida and the Caucasus.

There had existed for a long time certain disputes between the Dutch and the government of the Austrian Netherlands, as to the execution of the Barrier Treaty (1715), and that of the Hague (1718). They had neglected to define precisely the limits of Dutch Flanders, which these treaties had pointed out rather than determined; and for a long time the Imperial Court had ceased to pay the Dutch the subsidies which the Barrier Treaty stipulated in their favour. That court would consent to agree to a definitive settlement of the limits, or the payment of the subsidies, until England and Holland should co-operate with her

in repairing the Barrier towus, whose fortifications had been ruined during the war of the Austrian succession. She demanded, also, that these powers should unite for concluding a treaty of commerce, and a tariff favourable for the Low Countries, as they had engaged to do by former treaties. At length the Emperor Joseph II. thought he might avail himself of the war which had arisen between England and Holland, to free the Austrian Netherlands entirely from the claims which the Barrier Treaty had imposed on them. The order for demolishing all the fortified places in the Netherlands comprehended the Barrier towus; and the Dutch were summoned to withdraw their troops from them. These republicans, not being able to solicit the protection of England, with which they were at war, found themselves obliged to comply with the summons of the emperor. Their troops then evacuated all the Barrier towus in succession.

This compliance on the part of the Dutch, encouraged the emperor to extend his pretensions still farther. Not content with annulling the treaties of 1715-18, he required that the boundaries of Flanders should be re-established on the footing of the contract of 1664, between Spain and the States-General; and instead of making his new demand a subject of negotiation, he took possession of the forts, as well as of the towns and districts included within the limits which had been fixed by this latter agreement. The Dutch having addressed their complaints to the court of Vienna against these violent proceedings, the emperor consented to open a conference at Brussels (1784), for bringing all these disputes to an amicable termination. He declared, at the opening of the meeting, that he would desist from all the claims which he had against the republic, provided they would grant to the Belgic provinces free passage and navigation of the Scheldt; with the privilege of direct commerce with India, from the ports of the Netherlands. But while proposing this state of things as the subject of negotiation, he announced, that from that moment he was firmly resolved to consider the Scheldt as free; and that the least opposition on the part of the States-General would be, in his eyes, as the signal of hostilities and a declaration of war. The Dutch, without being intimidated by these threats, declared the demand of the emperor to be contrary to their treaties, and subversive of the safety and prosperity of their republic. Vice-Admiral Reynst was ordered to station himself, with a squadron, at the mouth of the Scheldt, and to prevent all Imperial or Flemish ships from passing. Two merchantmen having attempted to force the passage, the Dutch gave them a broadside and obliged them to strike.

The emperor then regarded the war as declared, and broke off the conference at Brussels; he had, however, made no preparations; and the Low Countries were entirely divested of their troops, magazines, and warlike stores. That prince had flattered himself that the court of France would espouse his quarrel, and that he would obtain from them the supplies stipulated by the treaty of Versailles. But France was then negotiating a treaty of alliance with the republic, and easily foresaw, that if she abandoned the Dutch at that particular time, they would be obliged to throw themselves into the arms of England. M. de Maillebois then

received orders to pass into Holland, while France set on foot two armies of observation, one in Flanders and the other on the Rhine. The king wrote to the emperor very pressing letters, wishing him to adopt pacific measures.

These proceedings, and the numerous difficulties which the war of the Netherlands presented to the emperor, induced him to accept the mediation of the court of France; a negotiation on this subject was entered into at Versailles. The emperor therein persisted at first in maintaining the liberty of the Scheldt, but afterwards became less rigid on this point. He was content to enforce his other claims. This negotiation was as tedious as it was intricate. It occupied the French ministry during the greater part of the year 1785. The emperor insisted much on the cession of Maestricht and the territory of Outre-Meuse. From this demand he would not recede, except on the payment of a large sum of money by way of indemnity, and another in reparation of the damage which the inundation of Flanders, ordered by the States-General, had occasioned to his Austrian subjects. By the peace which was signed at Fontainebleau, the treaty of Munster (1648) was renewed, but nothing was said of the Barrier Treaty nor of that of Vienna (1731). They agreed on shutting the Scheldt, from Saftingen as far as the sea, as well as the canals of Saas, Swin, and other communications with the sea in the neighbourhood. The States-General engaged to pay the emperor, in lieu of his claims on Maestricht and the Outre-Meuse, the sum of 9,500,000 Dutch florins; and another of 500,000 florins for repairing the damages done by the inundations. That prince got ample satisfaction on the subject of most of his other claims, and France undertook to guarantee the treaty. Immediately after it was signed, they renewed the negotiation respecting the treaty of alliance projected between France and the republic. This treaty was also signed at Fontainebleau (November 10, 1785) two days after the treaty of peace.

Various intestine disturbances at that time agitated the republic of the United Provinces. The animosity of the republican party against the stadtholder and his partisans, had been revived more keenly than ever, on account of the war in America between France and England. The republicans reproached the stadtholder for his devotedness to the interests of England, which had made him neglect their marine, and fall in the protection which he owed the Dutch commerce, in his capacity of admiral-general of the forces of the republic. The different magistrates of the municipal towns, in order to discredit the stadtholder in the opinion of the public, encouraged periodical writers to inveigh against the person of William V. and his administration. They blamed his councillors, and especially Louis, Duke of Brunswick, who, as governor to the stadtholder during his minority, had had the principal direction of affairs, and who still continued to aid him with his counsils.

The city of Amsterdam, which had always been distinguished for its opposition to the stadtholder, was the first that demanded the removal of the duke, whom they blamed as the cause of the languid state of their maritime power. That prince was compelled to give in his demission (1784), and even to withdraw from the territories of the

republic. The retirement of the duke emboldened the opponents of the stadtholder, who soon went beyond all bounds. That party, purely aristocratic in its origin, had been afterwards reinforced by a multitude of democrats, who, not contented with humbling the stadtholder, attacked even the power of the magistrates, and tried to change the constitution by rendering the government more popular and democratic. In the principal towns, associations were formed under the name of *Free Bode*, for exercising the citizens in the management of arms. The party opposed to the stadtholder took the name of *Patriots*. They were secretly supported by France, who wished to employ them as an instrument for destroying the influence of England and attaching the republic to her own interests. A popular insurrection, which happened at the Hague (1785), furnished the states of Holland with a pretext for removing the stadtholder from the command of that place, which was intrusted to a council. This blow, struck at a prerogative which was regarded as inherent in the stadtholdership, induced the Prince of Orange to quit the Hague, and fix his residence in the province of Guelders, the states of which were not particularly devoted to him. An attack which the prince made against the towns of Elburg and Hattem, for refusing to execute the orders which he had intimated to them in the name of the States of Guelders, exasperated the minds of the Dutch. It added to the strength of the patriotic party, and encouraged the states of Holland to make a renewed attack on the stadtholdership, and even to go so far as to suspend the prince from the functions of captain-general of that province.

The court of Berlin had taken measures, both with the states-general and the province of Holland, to facilitate an accommodation between the two parties. Frederic William II. who succeeded his uncle, Frederic the Great (1786), sent to the Hague, with this view, the Count de Gortschakoff, minister of state; while M. Gerard de Baynes, ordered to repair thither on the part of France. Negotiation was opened between these two ministers and the principal leaders of the patriotic party, but without effect. Their animosities rather increased, and the patriots broke out into every kind of violence. They dismissed the magistrates of the chief towns by force, and replaced them by their own adherents; a step which obliged the aristocrats to coalesce with the stadtholder's party in order to withstand the fury of the republicans. A civil war seemed to all appearance inevitable. In this state of matters, the Princess of Orange took the resolution of repairing in person to the Hague, with the design, as she alleged, of endeavouring to restore peace. She was arrested en route by a detachment of the republican corps Gauda (June 28, 1787), and conducted to Schiedam, whence she was obliged to return to the Hague, without being able to accomplish the object of her journey.

The King of Prussia demanded satisfaction for this outrage offered to his sister. The states of Holland, not feeling disposed to give it in terms which the king demanded, he sent a body of 20,000 men to Holland, under the command of the Duke of Brunswick, who, in the space of a month, made himself master of the whole country, and even obliged the city of Amsterdam to sub-

All the former res-
limiting the pow-
annulled, and the
plentitude of his

Although the sub-
France and the rep-
with the cause of
former took no ste-
oppose the invasion
even the weakness
London for disarmi-
paring, that she ex-
relative to what he
policies of the Stat-
dervert a comple-
their alliance with
Prussia and Great B-
were signed at Bel-
1788), these two p-
the resolutions of l-
stadtholdership here-
France thus shame-
measures which she l-
he had lavished for
nitive system, in op-
The troubles whi-
tioned were soon f-
innovations of the
led in the Austrian
slicts which that pr-
st of January 1787,
of administration in-
and ecclesiastical, o-
regarded by the state-
to the established co-
with the engagement
by the *Joyeuse ent-*
which these innovati-
error to recal his edi-
their ancient footing
mind had been exam-
urbances were spee-
paring demanded a s-
the states of Brabant
France induced him t-
he had granted; to s-
council of Brabant
no longer considered
ral Contract. A
and several members
by his orders. The
the Bishop of Ant-
having fomented the
themselves by flight.
Two factions at the
provinces, where the
discord. The one, h-
and supported by the
burg, inclined to the
limited their demands
and a better system o-
of the Netherlands.
son of Vandernoot,
reepen, while standi-
fect forms, pretended
sovereignty and indep-
to deprive the House
of Vrank thought of ef-
the reforms which th-
herents of Vandern

All the former resolutions which had been taken for limiting the power of the stadtholder, were then annulled, and the prince was re-established in the full plenitude of his rights.

Although the subsistence of the alliance between France and the republic was obviously connected with the cause of the patriots, nevertheless the former took no steps to support that party, or to oppose the invasion of the Prussians. France had seen the weakness to negotiate with the court of London for disarming their respective troops, declaring, that she entertained no hostile intentions relative to what had passed in Holland. The politics of the States-General from that time underwent a complete revolution. Renouncing their alliance with France, they embraced that of Prussia and Great Britain. By the treaties which were signed at Berlin and the Hague (April 15, 1768), these two powers undertook to guarantee the resolutions of 1747 and 1748, which made the stadtholdership hereditary in the House of Orange. France thus shamefully lost the fruits of all the measures which she had taken, and the sums which she had lavished for attaching Holland to her federative system, in opposition to England.

The troubles which we have just now mentioned were soon followed by others, which the innovations of the Emperor Joseph II. had excited in the Austrian Netherlands. The different edicts which that prince had published since the 1st of January 1787, for introducing a new order of administration in the government, both civil and ecclesiastical, of the Belgic provinces, were regarded by the states of that country as contrary to the established constitution, and incompatible with the engagements contracted by the sovereign by the *Joyeuse entrée*. The great excitement which these innovations caused, induced the emperor to recall his edicts, and to restore things to their ancient footing. Nevertheless, as the public mind had been exasperated on both sides, disturbances were speedily renewed. The emperor having demanded a subsidy, which was refused by the states of Brabant and Hainault, this circumstance induced him to revoke the amnesty which he had granted; to suppress the states and sovereign council of Erabant; and to declare, that he no longer considered himself bound by his *Inaugural Contract*. A great number of individuals, and several members of the states, were arrested by his orders. The Archbishop of Malines, and the Bishop of Antwerp, were suspected of having fomented these disturbances, and saved themselves by flight.

Two factions at that time agitated the Belgic provinces, where they fanned the flame of civil discord. The one, headed by Vonk, an advocate, and supported by the Dukes of Ursel and Arembourg, inclined to the side of Austria. These limited their demands to the reformation of abuses, and a better system of representation in the states of the Netherlands. The other, under the direction of Vandernoot, and the Penitentiary Vandenpepen, while standing up in support of the ancient forms, pretended to vest in the states that sovereignty and independence of which they wished to deprive the House of Austria. The partisans of Vonk thought of effecting, by their own means, the reforms which they had in view; while the adherents of Vandernoot founded their hopes on

the assistance of foreigners—especially of Prussia, who would not fail, they supposed, to seize this occasion of weakening the power of Austria. This latter party had undertaken to open an asylum for the discontented emigrants of Brabant, on the territory of the United Provinces in the neighbourhood of Breda. The two parties acted at first in concert. Vandermersch, a native of Meunin in Flanders, and formerly a colonel in the Austrian service, was proposed by Vonk, and received as general by both parties. A body of the insurgents, under the command of Vandermersch, marched to Turnhout in Brabant, and repulsed the Austrians, who had come to attack them under the orders of General Shræder. This first success gave a stimulus to the insurrection, which spread from Brabant over the other Belgic provinces. The Austrians abandoned by degrees all the principal towns and places, and retired to the fortress of Luxemburg. Vandernoot made his triumphant entry into Brussels. The states of Brabant assembled in that city, and proclaimed their independence (December 29, 1789). The Emperor Joseph II. was declared to have forfeited the sovereignty, by having violated the engagements which he had come under by his Inaugural Compact.

The example of Brabant was soon followed by the other provinces. An assembly of deputies, from all the Belgic provinces, was formed at Brussels (January 11, 1790). They signed an Act, by which these provinces joined in a confederacy, under the title of the Belgic United States. The rights of sovereignty, in as far as regarded their common defence, were vested in a congress, composed of deputies from the different provinces, under the name of the *Sovereign Congress of the Belgic States*. Each province preserved its independence, and the exercise of the legislative power. Their union was declared permanent and irrevocable. They meddled neither with religion nor the constitution, and they admitted no other representatives than those who had been already nominated. This latter determination highly displeased General Vandermersch, and all those of Vonk's party, who had as much horror for an oligarchy in the states as for the despotism of the court of Vienna. The party of the states prevailed nevertheless by the influence of Vandernoot, and the instigations of the priests and monks. Vandermersch, and all the zealous partisans of reform, were removed from the management of affairs. The former was even arrested, and General Schonfield put in his place. Ruinous impeachments and imprisonments were the consequences of this triumph of the aristocratic faction.

These divisions, added to the death of Joseph II., which happened in the meantime, produced a change favourable for the interests of the court of Vienna. Leopold II., who succeeded his brother on the throne of Austria, seemed disposed to terminate all these differences; and the Belgic Congress, seeing they could not reckon on the assistance of foreign powers, were also desirous of coming to an accommodation. The court of Berlin had refused its protection to the Belgians, and that of London was decidedly opposed to their independence. These two courts, conjunctly with the United Provinces of the Netherlands, interposed their mediation for allaying those disturbances. The Emperor Leopold solemnly con-

gaged, under the guarantee of the three mediating powers, to govern the Netherlands agreeably to the constitution, laws, and privileges which had been in force under the Empress Maria Theresa; never to do anything to their prejudice; and to annul whatever had been done to the contrary under the reign of Joseph II. A declaration published by Leopold (November 1790), enjoined all his Belgic subjects to take anew the oath of allegiance. That prince granted a general and unconditional pardon to all those who should lay down their arms within a given time. All the provinces in succession then gave in their submission. Brussels opened her gates to the Austrian troops (December 2, 1790), and the patriots Vaneupen and Vaudernoot took refuge in Holland.

The animosity which had for a long time subsisted between Russia and the Porte, occasioned a new war between these two powers in 1787. The Turks could not endure the humiliating conditions which the late treaties with Russia had imposed on them. The high tone which the court of St. Petersburg used in their communications with the Porte, wounded the pride of the Ottomans; and the extraordinary journey of the empress to Cherson and the Crimea (May 1787), in which she was accompanied by the Emperor Joseph II., carried alarm even to the city of Constantinople. The inhabitants of that capital thought they could perceive, in that journey, a premeditated design in the courts of St. Petersburg and Vienna to annihilate the Ottoman Empire, and divide the spoil between them. The court of London, supported by that of Berlin, dexterously fanned the spark which lay concealed under these ashes. They wished to be avenged on the court of St. Petersburg for the difficulties which she had thrown in the way of renewing their treaty of commerce; as well as the advantageous conditions which she had granted to France by the commercial treaty concluded with that power. The great activity with which Russia had carried on her commerce in the Black Sea, since she had obtained entire liberty by her treaties with the Porte, excited likewise the jealousy of England, who was afraid that the commercial connexions which she maintained with that power, through the Black Sea, might thereby be destroyed. The Turks, moreover, had to complain of the Russian consul in Moldavia, who, as they alleged, sought every means to interrupt the peace and good understanding between the two Empires. They demanded that he should be recalled, and moreover, that the empress should renounce the protection of Prince Heraclius, and withdraw her troops from Georgia. Finally, they wished that all Russian vessels that passed the Straits should be subjected to an examination, in order to prevent contraband trade.

These demands were no sooner made, than the divan, without waiting for an answer from the court of St. Petersburg, determined to proclaim war (August 18, 1787), by sending the Russian minister, M. de Boulgakoff, to the Castle of the Seven Towers. On the news of this rupture, the empress despatched a considerable force against the Turks; her troops extended from Kaminioc in Podolia, to Balta, a Tartar village on the frontiers of Poland, between the Dneister and the Bog. Prince Potemkin, the commander-in-chief of the army, had under him Suwarow, Repnin, Kamen-

skoi, and others. The Emperor Joseph II., after having for some time supported the character of mediator between the Turks and Russians, engaged in the war as the ally of Russia (February 9, 1788). He attacked the Turks in Moldavia, and on several points of Hungary. Marshal Laudon undertook the siege of Belgrade, of which he made himself master (October 8, 1789). It was obvious, however, that the progress of the Austrians did not correspond either to the ability of their generals, or the superiority of their arms.

Another enemy of Russia appeared on the stage. Gustavus III., King of Sweden, listened to the insinuations of the cabinets of London and Berlin, and made a diversion in favour of the Porte. That prince, after renewing his alliance with the Porte, commenced the war against Russia, at the very instant when the whole of her forces were turned against the Turks. A land army was formed by his orders in Finland, while a Swedish fleet, consisting of twenty ships of the line and ten frigates, advanced on Cronstadt, and threw the city of St. Petersburg into a state of great terror. An engagement between the two fleets took place near the isle of Hoogland (May 30, 1789). Both sides fought with equal advantage; but an unforeseen event disconcerted the measures of the Swedish monarch. After he had made his dispositions for attacking the city of Fredricksheim in Finland, several officers of his army refused to march, alleging as a reason, that the constitution of the kingdom would not permit them to be accessory to an offensive war, which the Swedish nation had not sanctioned. The example of these officers occasioned the defection of a great part of the troops. The expedition to Finland misgave, and the Russians thus gained time to put themselves in a state of defence.

The empress, thus attacked by the King of Sweden, claimed the supplies which Denmark owed her, in virtue of the alliance which subsisted between the two states. The Danes fitted out a squadron, and marched a body of auxiliary troops into the government of Bohus, which they soon conquered (1788). From Bohus they marched to West Gothland, and laid siege to Gottenburg. The King of Sweden hastened in person to the defence of that place, one of the most important in his kingdom. It would certainly have fallen, however, but for the powerful intervention of the cabinets of London and Berlin, who obliged the court of Copenhagen to conclude different treaties with Sweden (1789), and to adopt a perfect neutrality, even with the consent of the court of St. Petersburg.

The war between the Swedes and the Russians was then confined to naval operations, the success of which, in the campaigns of 1789 and 1790, was nearly equal on both sides. The defeat which the Swedish fleet sustained in the Gulf of Viborg (July 3, 1790), was compensated by the victory which the King of Sweden gained in person (July 9, 10), at Swenkasund over the Russian fleet, commanded by the Prince of Nassau-Seigen. The action, which cost the Russians many men, and a great number of their ships, tended to accelerate the peace between the two powers. The King of Sweden being deserted by the courts of London and Berlin, who had drawn him into the war, was terrified lest the Russians should take advan-

tage of the discontented Swedish nobles, to invade his kingdom. He was obliged to accept of conditions which were very favourable to him. Peace was concluded at Werela, near the river Niemen, between the advancing and retreating armies, and the limits of both kingdoms were fixed. The footing of former treaties was restored.

As to the events of the year 1790, the Porte, they were very important. A body of Austrian troops, with the Austrian army, under the command of Choczim (Sept. 1790), undertook the siege of Orzacooff (December 1790), in spite of the resistance of that prince, who had just overthrown the Turks near the Rymna (Sept. 1790). The event was a great victory. Besides the whole of Moldavia, Wallachia, and Isackale, in Turkish hands, the Russians, by Suwarow, occasioned the loss of 30,000 prisoners, worth 10,000,000.

These victories of the British ministry, who made a new diversion, engaged their ally, the Emperor of Austria, to send a body of troops to Poland. Not confined to Poland, that prince concluded a separate peace with the Porte, in which he was assisted by the Austrians, as well as the Emperor of Austria, in the next spring. The Emperor of Austria, in consequence of these menaces, offering peace to his army, which was at Reichenbach, the court of Berlin, by the mediation of the Emperor of Austria, consented to make peace with the Porte—matters continued to be the same. This peace was concluded at Siatowa (August 4, 1791), between Holland and Prussia, and the Emperor of Austria, and in general, the peace between the Turks during the reign of Choczim no longer than

Joseph II., after
ed the character
ks and Russians
Russia (February
rks in Moldavia,
y. Marshal Lau-
ade, of which he
s, 1789). It was
gress of the Aus-
to the ability of
of their arms.
eared on the stage
n, listened to the
ondon and Berlin,
of the Porte. That
ce with the Porte,
ussia, at the very
ores were turned
y was formed by
wedish fleet, con-
e and ten frigates,
w the city of St.
terror. An en-
s took place near
789). Both sides
out an unforeseen
s of the Swedish
is dispositions for
heim in Finland,
refused to march
stitution of the
n to be necessary
wedish nation had
if these officers oc-
part of the troops
ave, and the Rus-
emselves in a state

by the King of
which Denmark
ce which subsists
Danes fitted out
of auxiliary troops
which they soon
us they marched
ge to Gottenburg
in person to the
e most important
ainly have fallen
intervention of the
who obliged the
e different truce
pt a perfect new
f the court of St.

and the Russian
ations, the success
89 and 1790, was
e defeat which de-
e Gulf of Viborg
ed by the victory
ed in person (Jul-
Russian fleet, com-
sau-Seigen. This
many men, and
ded to accelerate
rs. The King of
courts of London
m into the war
ould take advan-

stage of the discontents that prevailed among the Swedish nobles, to penetrate into the interior of his kingdom. He willingly accepted the equitable conditions which the Empress of Russia proposed to him. Peace was concluded in the plain of Wetzela, near the river Kymen (August 14, 1700), between the advanced posts of the two camps; and the limits of both states were re-established on the footing of former treaties.

As to the events of the war between Russia and the Porte, they were entirely in favour of the former power. A body of Russian troops, in conjunction with the Austrian army, made themselves masters of Choczim (September 1788). Prince Potemkin undertook the siege of the important fortress of Oczakoff (December 17), and carried the place by assault, in spite of the courageous defence made by the Turks. The whole garrison were put to the sword, and a great part of the inhabitants met with the same fate. Suwarow and the Prince of Coburg beat the Turks near Focksani in Moldavia (July 21, 1789). The same general, with the assistance of that prince, gained a brilliant victory over the Turks near Martinesti, on the banks of the Rymna (September 22), which gained him the epithet of *Rymniski*. The taking of the fortress of Bender, was an immediate consequence of that victory. Besides the province of Oczakoff, the whole of Moldavia and Bessarabia, with Tulcea, Iskazi, Kilia, and Ismel, and the fortress of Sudjoukale, in Turkish Cuban, fell successively into the hands of the Russians. The taking of Ismail by Suwarow, occasioned prodigious slaughter. It cost the lives of 30,000 Ottomans; without reckoning the prisoners, who amounted to the number of 10,000.

These victories stirred up the jealousy of the British ministry, who fitted out an expedition to make a new diversion in favour of the Porte, and engaged their ally, the King of Prussia, to despatch a body of troops to the frontiers of Silesia and Poland. Not confining himself to these operations, that prince concluded a formal alliance with the Porte, in which he agreed to declare war against the Austrians, as well as the Russians in the course of next spring. The Emperor Leopold II., yielding to these menaces, and being desirous of restoring peace to his subjects, concluded an agreement at Reichenbach (July 27, 1790), with the court of Berlin, by which he granted an armistice, and consented to make a special peace with the Porte—matters continuing as they were before the war. This peace was signed at Szistowa, in Bulgaria (August 4, 1791), under the mediation of Holland and Prussia. The emperor restored Belgrade, and in general, all that he had taken from the Turks during the war. He agreed to retain Choczim no longer than the conclusion of the peace

between the Russians and the Turks; only they promised him a more advantageous frontier on the left bank of the Unna; and on the side of Wallachia, the river Tzerna was adopted as the boundary between the two Empires.

The Empress of Russia having resolved not to receive the proposals which the two allied courts offered her, then continued the war alone against the Porte, and her generals signalized themselves by new exploits. At length, the British ministry being convinced that this princess would never yield, thought fit to abandon the terms which, in concert with the court of Berlin, they had demanded, as the basis of the peace to be concluded between Russia and the Porte. Besides, they were desirous of making up matters with Russia, at the time when she detached herself from France, by renouncing the engagements which she had contracted with that power by the treatv of commerce of 1787, with the court of Berlin. The British ministry agreed never to assist the Turks, should they persist in refusing the equitable conditions of peace which the empress had offered them.

A negotiation was opened at Galatz on the Danube. The preliminaries between Russia and the Porte were signed there; and the definitive peace concluded at Jassy in Moldavia (January 9, 1792). This treaty renewed the stipulations of all former treaties since that of Kainargi. The Dneister was established as a perpetual frontier between the two Empires. The Turks ceded to Russia the fortress of Oczakoff, with all the country lying between the Bog and the Dneister. The cession of the Crimea, the isle of Taman, and part of the Cuban, lying on the right bank of the river of that name, was confirmed to Russia. The Porte likewise engaged to put a stop to the piracies of the Barbary Corsairs, and even to indemnify the subjects of Russia for their losses, should they not obtain reparation within a limited time. Russia likewise restored all her other conquests; only stipulating, for certain advantages, in favour of Moldavia and Wallachia.

It had been agreed between the plenipotentiaries of the two Empires, that the Porte should pay a sum of 12,000,000 of piastres, to indemnify Russia for the expenses of the war. But immediately after the conclusion of the treaty, the empress gave intimation that she would renounce this payment in favour of the Porte,—a piece of generosity which excited the admiration of the Ottoman plenipotentiaries. The peace of Jassy gave new energy to the commerce of the Russians on the Black Sea; and the empress founded the town and port of Odessa, which is situated on a bay of the Black Sea, between the Bog and the Dneister, about nine leagues distant from Oczakoff.

PERIOD IX.

FROM THE COMMENCEMENT OF THE FRENCH REVOLUTION, TO THE DOWNFAL OF BUONAPARTE. A.D. 1789—1815.

THE French Revolution forms one of the most extraordinary events recorded in the annals of Europe. A variety of causes, both moral and political, combined to produce this anomaly in the history of nations,—the principal of which must be attributed to a set of opinions, whose speculative delusions, recommended by a powerful and seductive eloquence, unsettled the minds of the restless multitude, and prepared the way for the general subversion of public order. The career of this pretended philosophy ended in nothing but convulsions, wars, and assassinations. Such was the natural result of those doctrines, whose main object was to sup the foundations of all duty, by making a jest of religion; and next, to overturn the fabric of society, by letting loose the passions of the ignorant, and casting down the barriers of established forms,—those safeguards which wisdom and experience have reared against the licentiousness of innovation.

The period on which we are entering does not comprehend more than twenty-five years; but that short space contains more lessons of important instruction than the two centuries which preceded it. In course of that time, the condition of Europe was entirely changed. The political system, which it had cost the combined labour of 300 years to rear, was overturned from its basis, burying kingdoms and whole nations in the ruins. A people, the most refined and ingenious in the world, who had formerly set others an example of loyalty and unbounded attachment to their sovereigns, were now seen giving way to the delusions of a blind fanaticism; pulling down those venerable institutions which the wisdom of their ancestors had built; trampling religion and morality under foot; laying prostrate both the throne and the altar; and staining their hands in the innocent blood of their ancient kings. Vice was now seen honoured and exalted in the place of virtue. Anarchy and despotism were substituted for regular government and rational liberty.

This same nation, torn by the fury of contending democrats, was seen labouring to impose on her neighbours the galling chains of her own thralldom; and spreading war and desolation over the earth, as if to wipe out the reproach of her past crimes. Finding no remedy in the midst of universal confusion from the evils which she had inflicted on herself, she abandoned the phantom of liberty, which was become but another name for oppression, and transferred her homage to the shrine of despotism. The grasping ambition and insatiable power of the usurper whom she chose for her master, and the weakness of the states which opposed him, contributed to the formation of an imperial dominion, such as had not existed in Europe since the time of Charlemagne.

This memorable era was fertile in examples both of virtues and vices. It displayed the extremes of

suffering and violence, of meanness and magnanimity. Kingdoms rose and disappeared by turns. New principles in morals and in politics flourished for a day, and were quickly superseded by others. Europe was subdued and enslaved, first in the name of liberty and equality, and afterwards to gratify the ambition of a tyrant. At length an end was put to this reign of despotism; and the nations of the continent were delivered from a usurpation which they had too long supported with patience. The countries of the North, which had participated in this general convulsion, laying aside their jealousies and projects of ambition, united their forces to overthrow the dominion of injustice and oppression. A new order of things seemed to revive; sounder maxims began to prevail; and the nations of Europe, made wise by experience, appeared ready to abandon the chimerical doctrines of that false liberty which had led them astray; and which, after five and twenty years of war and desolation, seemed to have wrought its own antidote, and brought in a new era of peace and prosperity.

The system of political equilibrium invented in the fifteenth century, and established by the treaties of Westphalia and Utrecht, was totally overturned by France, during the period of which we speak. Two causes accelerated its downfall. The first was the violation of its fundamental principles, by the three powers who dismembered Poland,—an act which made justice and equity yield to convenience, and set an example that might prove dangerous to their own security. The other was the general belief which prevailed in the cabinets of Europe, that the project of founding an universal monarchy was for ever hopeless and visionary—a persuasion which had lulled them into a state of fatal repose. This project, however, which they thought impracticable, was actually carried into execution; though it appeared under a new form. The daring individual who conceived the design gave it the name of the *Federative System*. By his plan, the different states on the continent were to preserve an apparent independence, whenever this did not thwart his own views; but their policy was to be entirely subservient to his interest, and to be regulated according to his direction. In this manner he undertook to conquer the whole world, with the aid of the federal states, who were obliged to espouse his quarrels, and to make common cause with him against every power that refused to submit voluntarily to his sway, or to that of his family, whom he placed as his vassals on some of the most ancient thrones of Europe.

To this was added another, which he called the *Continental System*. Its main object was to exclude Great Britain from all commerce with the other European states. By this means he hoped to deprive her of the command of the sea, of which she was now undisputed mistress; to annihilate

er commerce; cut o
her marine; and
tion, which had
appiness of the Eu
ossible to carry this
ment must neces
ruined.

The twenty-five y
a brief outline, s
that, for the sake of
ary to divide them in
istory of France, t
ve following, viz.
ates-General, May
of Monarchy and the
August 10, 1792.
from August 10, 17
when the convention
The Republican
1793, till May 4
was declared emperor
Buonaparte; from
1814, when the
The Restoration of t
pile of more than tw
These divisions poi
changes that occurred
od. Nevertheless, a
which took place in
venient division w
the commencement
the Peace of Am
from the Peace of
then the power of
eight. 3. From the
the Treaty of Paris, it
cludes the decline and
under Buonaparte, an
political system in Eu
of the various events
we shall shortly adv
the different states of
the same time. The
world can only be tr
appen to be connecte
Europe.

We now return to th
encing with the orig
May 1789), and en
nians.

The primary and el
olution in France mu
dered state of her
ouis XIV.; to the
ruined under the R
administration of the
ouis XV.; and, fin
with religious and p
ashionable after the
century. Among th
which gave rise to thi
re reckoned the mist
itted in supporting
ainst their lawful so
their aid, accompan
blesse, who, by mi
shed their principles
y this rash step Fr
rival, but she ruin
nce will ever remain

er commerce ; cut off the sources of her wealth ;
her marine ; and even to overthrow the con-
stitution, which had so long been the boast and
happiness of the English nation. Had it been
possible to carry this project into execution, the
continent must necessarily have been impoverished
and ruined.

The twenty-five years of which we are now to
give a brief outline, are so crowded with events,
that, for the sake of perspicuity, it will be neces-
sary to divide them into separate periods. In the
history of France, the natural divisions are the
following, viz. 1. From the opening of the
States-General, May 15, 1789, till the abolition
of Monarchy and the Constitutional Government,
August 10, 1792. 2. The Reign of Terror ;
from August 10, 1792, till October 26, 1795,
when the convention ceased to govern France.
3. The Republican Government ; from October
6, 1795, till May 18, 1804, when Buonaparte
was declared emperor. 4. The Reign of Napo-
leon Buonaparte ; from May 18, 1804, till March
30, 1814, when the allies entered Paris. 5.
The Restoration of the Bourbon dynasty, after an
interval of more than twenty years.

These divisions point out the most remarkable
changes that occurred in France during this pe-
riod. Nevertheless, as we must notice the events
which took place in the rest of Europe, a more
convenient division will be as follows. 1. From
the commencement of the French Revolution
till the Peace of Amiens, March 27, 1802. 2.
From the Peace of Amiens till the year 1810,
when the power of France was at its greatest
height. 3. From the end of the year 1810, till
the Treaty of Paris, in November, 1815, which in-
cludes the decline and fall of the French Empire
under Buonaparte, and the restoration of a new
political system in Europe. After giving a sketch
of the various events which happened in France,
we shall shortly advert to the revolutions which
in the different states of Europe underwent during
the same time. The affairs of other parts of the
world can only be taken notice of, as they may
appear to be connected or interwoven with those
of Europe.

We now return to the first of these periods, com-
mencing with the origin of the French Revolution
(May 1789), and ending with the Peace of
Amiens.

The primary and elementary causes of the Re-
volution in France must be traced back to the dis-
ordered state of her finances, which began under
Louis XIV. ; to the general immorality which
prevailed under the Regent Orleans ; to the mal-
administration of the government in the reign of
Louis XV. ; and, finally, to the new doctrines,
both religious and political, which had become
fashionable after the middle of the eighteenth
century. Among the more immediate causes
which gave rise to this national convulsion, must
be reckoned the mistake which Louis XVI. com-
mitted in supporting the American insurgents
against their lawful sovereign ; and sending troops
to their aid, accompanied by many of the young
noblesse, who, by mixing with that people, im-
bued their principles of liberty and independence.
By this rash step France gained a triumph over
her rival, but she ruined herself ; and her impru-
dence will ever remain a warning to nations against

incautiously rushing into unnecessary wars ; and
against that destructive system of policy which in-
volves the fate of kingdoms in concerns uncon-
nected with their own internal safety and pros-
perity.

At the same time it is not to be denied that
there were many abuses in the existing government
of France that required to be corrected. The royal
prerogative at that time may be called arbitrary
rather than despotic, for the monarch had, in
reality, greater power than he exercised. The
persons and properties of the subject were at the
disposal of the crown, by means of imposts, con-
fiscations, letters of exile, &c. ; and this dangerous
authority was resisted only by the feeblest barriers.
Certain bodies, it is true, possessed means of de-
fence, but these privileges were seldom respected.
The noblesse were exempted from contributions
to the state, and totally separated from the com-
mons, by the prohibition of intermarriages. The
clergy were also exempted from taxation, for which
they substituted voluntary grants. Besides these
oppressive imposts, the internal administration was
badly organized. The nation, divided into three
orders, which were again subdivided into several
classes, was abandoned to all the evils of despotism,
and all the miseries of partial representation. The
noblesse were divided into courtiers, who lived on
the favour of the prince, and who had no common
sympathies with the people. They held stations
in the army for which they were not qualified, and
made a trade of all appointments and offices of
trust. The clergy were divided into two classes,
one of which was destined for the bishoprics and
abbacies with their rich revenues, while the other
was destined to poverty and labour. The com-
mons scarcely possessed a third part of the soil, for
which they were compelled to pay feudal services
to the territorial barons, tithes to the priests, and
taxes to the king. In compensation for so many
sacrifices they enjoyed no rights, had no share in
the administration, and were admitted to no public
employments.

Such was the condition of France when Louis
XVI. ascended the throne. This order of things
could not continue long ; but with proper cau-
tion and skilful management, many salutary im-
provements might have been introduced, without
plunging the nation into rebellion and anarchy.
Louis XVI. had just views and amiable disposi-
tions ; but he was without decision of character,
and had no perseverance in his measures. His
projects for regenerating the state encountered
obstacles which he had not foreseen, and which he
found it impossible to overcome. He was conti-
nually vacillating in the choice of his ministers ;
and his reign, up to the assembling of the States-
General, was a complication of attempted reforms,
which produced no beneficial result. Maupeau,
Turgot, and Malesherbes, had been successively
intrusted with the management of affairs ; but
they found it impossible to give satisfaction to any
party. Their efforts for retrenchment displeased
the courtiers, while the people were discontented
at the continuation of existing abuses.* The ex-
hausted state in which the American war had left
the finances of the kingdom, and the unskilfulness
of the ministers ; one of whom, the celebrated

* Mignet.—Necker on the French Revolution. Bertrand's
Annals.

Necker, could contrive no other method of repairing these losses, than by means of forced loans, which augmented the national debt, and added to the other embarrassments of the government. The plan of M. de Calonne, another of the ministers, was to assemble the *Notables*, or respectable and distinguished persons of the kingdom (February 22, 1787), with the view of obtaining through their means those new imposts which he could not expect to be sanctioned by the parliament of Paris. But this assembly seemed little disposed to second his designs. They discovered, with astonishment, that within a few years loans had been raised to the amount of 1,646,000,000 of francs; and that there was an annual deficit in the revenue of 140,000,000.* This discovery was the signal for the retirement of Calonne.

His successor, Cardinal de Brienne, archbishop of Toulouse, tried in vain to overcome the resistance of the parliament, who declared, by a solemn protestation (May 3, 1788), that the right of granting supplies belonged to the States-General alone. Louis XVI., yielding to this expression of the public opinion, promised to assemble the deputies of the nation. A second meeting of the *Notables*, held at Versailles (November 6), deliberated as to the form and constitution of the States-General. M. Necker, who was recalled to the ministry, counselled the king to prefer the advice of the minority, who had espoused the popular side; and proposed to grant to the *Tiers-Etat*, or *Third Order*, a double number of representatives in the States-General; an advice which was imprudently followed.

The States-General were summoned to meet at Versailles on the 27th of April, 1789. The number of deputies was 1200; 600 of whom were of the tiers-état, 300 of the noblesse, and 300 of the clergy. The king opened the assembly in person (May 5, 1789). It was accompanied with great solemnity and magnificence. The clergy, in cassocks, large cloaks, and square bonnets, or in a purple robe and laced sleeves, occupied the first place; next came the noblesse, habited in black, having the vest and facing of silver cloth, the cravat of lace, and the hat turned up with a white plume. The tiers-état followed last, clothed in black, a short cloak, muslin cravat, and the hat without plumes or loops. These individuals comprehended the choice of the nation; but the greater part of them were entirely inexperienced in state affairs, and not a few of them were imbued with the principles of the new philosophy. The majority proposed to regenerate the government according to their own speculative notions; while others secretly entertained the hope of overturning it, to gratify their own antipathies; or to satiate their avarice and ambition.

A difference immediately arose on the question, whether they should sit according to their orders. Conciliatory measures having been tried in vain, the deputies of the tiers-état resolved to declare themselves a *National Assembly*. The king having ordered them to suspend their sittings, they assembled in the Tennis Court (June 20), where, in opposition to the royal authority, they took an oath never to separate until they had achieved the regeneration of France. The ma-

ajority of the clergy and some of the nobles, joined this tumultuous assembly. Louis XVI., by a *Royal Session* (June 23), condemned the conduct of this meeting; arrogated its decisions; and published a declaration containing the basis of a free constitution. But the authority of the king had now ceased to be respected. The National Assembly refused to accept from him as a boon, what they were preparing to seize by force. Alarmed at this opposition, Louis commanded the nobles and the clergy to join the popular party, or tiers-état, as a measure for conciliating the public mind.

The prime agent in this revolution was Mirabeau, a man of an ambitious and turbulent spirit, who inflamed the assembly by his violent harangues. A demagogue from interest, and of good abilities, though immoral in his character, he was resolved to build his fortune on the public troubles, and to prevent, by all means in his power, the first symptoms of a return to subordination and tranquillity. The Duke of Orleans supplied money to corrupt the troops, and excite insurrections over all parts of France.

In the mean time, the king assembled an armistice at Versailles, under the command of Marshal Broglio; and banished Necker (July 11), with whom he had just reason to be displeased. This was the signal for a popular commotion in Paris was in a state of the greatest fermentation. The press inflamed the public mind. The people discussed in the open air those questions which were agitated in the Assembly. A table served the purpose of a rostrum; and every citizen became an orator, who harangued on the dangers of his country, and the necessity of resistance. The mob forced the Bastille (July 14), seized on the depôts of arms, mounted the tri-coloured cockade, and became the apostles of the revolution. Bailly, the academician, was appointed mayor; the citizens formed themselves into a *National Guard*, under the command of the Marquis de Lafayette. The king, placed in so critical a situation, and surrounded with danger, consented to withdraw the troops collected in the capital and the neighbourhood. He recalled M. Necker (July 17), and repaired to Paris to intimate his good intentions to the Assembly; declaring, that he identified himself with the nation, and relied on the affection and allegiance of his subjects.

The National Assembly had usurped the whole legislative power, and undertaken to draw up a new constitution. Their charter, which commenced with a *Declaration of the Rights of Man*, contained principles erroneous in themselves, and subversive of all order. Such was the ardour of their revolutionary enthusiasm, that they abolished without discussion, and at one nocturnal sitting the feudal regime, the rights and privileges of provinces and corporations, the tithes and the greater part of the seigniorial prerogatives. It was decreed (August 4), that the legislative power should be exercised by a single chamber; and that the king could not refuse his sanction to the decrees longer than four years.

As the revolution did not proceed with a rapidity equal to the wishes of the Orleans faction, the mob took care to stir up new insurrections. The mob of Paris attacked Versailles (October 6), invested the chateau, committed the most horrible excesses, and conducted the king and his family prisoners

* Necker on the French Revolution, vol. i.

Paris, where they were taken to the National Assembly. These were the first steps towards the abolition of the clergy, and the disposal of the property of France. The king's authority was now at an end, and the crown was sold to the highest bidder; the issuing of assignats; the admission of citizens; the prohibition of the National Assembly; the consequence of a provincial constitution; the independence of the head of the state; the people a right to nominate the noblesse; the trial at Orleans, the press against the king; occupied with the National Assembly; suppress the crimes a applying every day w they adopt themselves to them. The king's authority of their constitution and supreme head of the state; a new breed of effective exercise of power; and neither places to be left without a part of the administration. These posts were not even allowed to be a crown; think it a part of their duty; of his most valuable property; of gratitude and confidence, or create an enemy, and proceed to the characteristic traits of his administration. When his authority was on the throne could starve; exposed to a when every sentiment destroyed. Such was the fate of the French; the gradations of social foundations of that which they had modeled to their own ideas, and their lives in the country. The king to escape from the castle; he did escape in disguise; arrested at Varennes (June 21), reconducted to his functions. Monsieur was fortunate. He was Count D'Artois, the king's brother; France the year before. The Orleans party National Assembly to be a large assembly; Champs-de-Mars (July 17) by an armed force, he was commanded by La Fayette; the National Assembly; the constitutional assembly, and digested in

Paris, where they were followed by the National Assembly. These levelling legislators decreed the spoliation of the clergy, by placing their benefices at the disposal of the nation. They ordered the division of France into eighty-three departments; the sale of the crown-lands, and ecclesiastical property; the issuing of paper money, under the name of *assignats*; the admission of Jews to the rights of citizens; the prohibition of monastic vows; the right of the National Assembly to declare war, in consequence of a proposition from the king; in secular constitution, which rendered the clergy independent of the head of the church, and gave the people a right to nominate their bishops; the abolition of the noblesse; and the establishment of a tribunal at Orleans, for judging crimes of high treason against the nation.

Occupied with these decrees (1790-91), the National Assembly left the king no authority to suppress the crimes and excesses which were multiplying every day within the kingdom; nor did they adopt themselves any measures for putting a stop to them. The king, indeed, according to the plan of their constitution, was to be the depository and supreme head of the executive power; but he had been stript of the means necessary to the effective exercise of any authority whatever. He had neither places to grant, nor favours to bestow. He was left without any control over the inferior parts of the administration, since the men who filled these posts were elected by the people. He was not even allowed the pomp of a throne, or the splendour of a crown. The Assembly seemed to think it a part of their glory to divest their monarch of his most valuable prerogatives; to destroy every tie of gratitude and attachment, that could inspire confidence, or create respect. Though they chose a king, they treated him in the first instance as an enemy, and proceeded to erase, one by one, the characteristic traces of his dignity. They foolishly imagined that a monarchy could subsist when its authority was reduced to a phantom; that the throne could stand secure amidst the ruin of ranks; exposed to all the waves of faction, and when every sentiment of respect and affection was destroyed. Such was the idea of royalty entertained by the French legislators. By abolishing the gradations of society, they sapped the very foundations of that frail and imaginary majesty which they had modelled and fashioned according to their own ideas. Thousands of noble families, finding their lives insecure, resolved to abandon the country. The king himself made an attempt to escape from the captivity in which he was held. He did escape in disguise, but was recognised, and arrested at Varennes by the National Guard (June 21), reconducted to Paris, and suspended from his functions. Monsieur, the king's brother, was more fortunate. He arrived at Brussels. The Count D'Artois, the younger brother, had quitted France the year before.

The Orleans party undertook to compel the National Assembly to pronounce the deposition of the king. A large assemblage, which had met in the Champs-de-Mars (July 17, 1791), was dispersed by an armed force, by order of Bailly, and commanded by La Fayette. The moderate party in the National Assembly had gained the ascendancy. The constitutional articles were revised in some points, and digested into a systematic form. The

king accepted this new code (September 13); and there was every reason to believe that he was resolved to carry it into execution, if the defects inherent in this production of these legislative enthusiasts had permitted him. The Constituent Assembly, after having declared Avignon and Venissin annexed to France, separated (September 30), to make way for a Legislative Assembly.

The royal brothers and most of the emigrants, having fixed their residence at Coblenz, published addresses to all the courts of Europe, to solicit their assistance in restoring the king, and checking the revolutionary torrent which threatened to inundate Germany. The princes of the Empire, who had possessions in Alsace, found themselves aggrieved by the decrees of the Constituent Assembly, in respect to those rights which had been guaranteed to them on the faith of existing treaties. They accordingly claimed the intervention of the emperor and the Empire. The electors of Mayence and Treves had permitted the French noblesse to organize bodies of armed troops within their estates. After the arrest of the king at Varennes, the Emperor Leopold had addressed a circular to all his brother sovereigns, dated from Padua (July 6), in which he invited them to form an alliance for restoring the king's legitimate authority in France. Accordingly, an alliance was concluded at Vienna a few days after between Austria and Prussia, the object of which was to compel France to maintain her treaties with the neighbouring states. The two monarchs, who met at Pillnitz (August 27), declared that they would employ the most efficacious means for leaving the King of France at perfect liberty to lay the foundation of monarchical government. But after Louis had accepted the constitution of the Assembly, the emperor formerly announced (November 12), that the co-operation of the contracting powers was in consequence suspended.

In a moment of unreflecting liberality, the Constituent Assembly had formally declared, that none of its members could be elected for the first Legislative Assembly. This new Assembly, which met October 1, 1791, was composed of men altogether deficient in experience, and hurried on by the headlong fanaticism of revolution. It was divided into two parties. On the right hand were those who hoped to preserve monarchy, by maintaining the constitution with certain improvements and modifications; and on the left, those who proposed that they should proceed in their revolutionary career. This latter party, in which the deputies of the Girondists had the ascendancy, had conceived two methods for overturning the constitution, viz. 1, to bring the king into dispute, by obliging him to make use of his suspensive *veto* against those decrees which appeared most popular; and 2, to involve the nation in war, that they might find employment for the army, who seemed pleased with the new order of things. The party on the right, who formed the majority, had not the courage to oppose the execution of this plan. The Assembly issued decrees against the king's brothers, highly unjust, inhuman, and revolting; as well as against the emigrants and the priests, who had taken no share in these levelling projects. They deprived the king of his body-guard, and heaped upon him every species of annoyance and humiliation.

This Assembly, however, was by no means in the enjoyment of entire liberty. It was under the influence of those popular societies, known by the name of *Jacobins*, so called from their meeting in a convent in Paris, formerly belonging to that religious order. These societies, who had overspread all France, were affiliated with each other, and all under the control and direction of the parent society in the metropolis. It was there that they prepared those laws which they compelled the National Assembly to pass, and concocted their plots against the royal authority. They had an immense number of emissaries among the profligates of every country, who propagated their doctrines, and prepared the way for the triumph of their abominable conspiracies.

In order to provoke a declaration of war, and thereby get rid of the army, the deputies on the left never ceased to inveigh from the public tribunals against the conduct of foreign powers; and to represent the king as secretly leagued with them in their designs. His most faithful servants had been the object of their calumnies. The ministry resigned their office, and the king reconstructed a cabinet composed of Jacobins (March 17, 1792), the most conspicuous of whom were Dumouriez, who became minister for the foreign department, Clavières and Duranthon, who were intrusted with the finance, and Roland, who was promoted to the administration of the interior.* The perfidy of these ambitious statesmen ruined the king.

The Emperor Leopold, with whom they were on terms of negotiation, demanded redress for the grievances of those princes who had possessions in Alsace. Instead of giving him satisfaction, the new French Cabinet induced the king to propose to the Assembly (April 20), that they could answer his demands in no other way than by a declaration of war. This proposition passed with little deliberation, and was hailed with enthusiasm. Seven members only had the courage to oppose it.† The Assembly continued to issue their revolutionary decrees, which were both repugnant to the conscience of the king, and dangerous to the security of the throne. Louis, who had been recently offended by the dismissal of his guards, declared he could no longer submit to the insolence of these new ministers, three of whom he discarded with indignation. Their accomplices, the Jacobins, and Pétion the mayor of Paris, then organized an insurrection of the armed populace of the *Faubourgs* or suburbs. The mob then repaired to the Tuilleries (June 20), to force the king to sanction the decrees of the Assembly, and recall the *patriot* ministers. The king saved his own life and that of his queen, by repelling those factious demagogues with firmness and courage. He constantly refused to grant what they demanded of him by violence; while the National Assembly displayed the most shameful pusillanimity. They even carried their cowardice so far, as to replace Pétion and Manuel in their functions, whom the king had suspended for having failed to perform their duty.

Pétion, and that troop of miserable wretches who ruled at their pleasure the *Sections* of Paris, where no good citizen dared to appear, then de-

* Mignet. Necker.

† Among these was M. Koch, author of the former part of this work.

manded the dethronement of the king; and in order to compel the Assembly to pronounce sentence against him the conspirators publicly organized a new insurrection. The populace rose in arms and attacked the castle of the Tuilleries (August 10). The king refused the assistance of those faithful citizens who had flocked round his person. Misled by unwise or perfidious counsellors he repaired with his family to Paris; and entering the National Assembly, addressed them in the words: "Citizens, I am come here to avoid the commission of a great crime. I shall always consider myself and my family in safety when I am among the representatives of the nation." The populace having assailed the castle, the faithful Swiss Guards defended it with courage, and perished in the performance of their duty. Every individual found in the Tuilleries was massacred by the rabble. The representatives of the nation who were, during this time, in a state of the greatest alarm, decreed, in presence of the sovereignty, and on the proposal of Vergniaud, that the king should be suspended, and the National Convention assembled.

Some days after, Louis, with his queen, the Dauphin, Madame Royale, and Madame Elizabeth, the king's sister, were imprisoned in the Temple, under a guard of the municipality of Paris, composed of partisans of the revolution. This municipality and the ministers appointed by the Assembly exercised a most tyrannical authority. The prisons were crowded with priests and nobles. Danton, the minister of justice, and a most violent revolutionist, entered into arrangements with the commune for the massacre of these innocent men. The cruel work of butchery continued for three days without remorse (September 2 and 3), and without the Legislative Assembly daring to interpose. A few days after, the prisoners, who had been sent to the tribunal at Orleans, were conducted to Versailles, and put to death by the hands of relentless murderers. At length the Legislative Assembly, whose whole conduct had been a tissue of crimes and cowardice, were dispersed (September 21), to make way for the horrible National Convention.

The war had commenced in the month of April 1791. Luckner, Rochambaud, and La Fayette commanded the French armies, but their operations were without success. The Austrians but merely acted on the defensive. In virtue of an alliance concluded at Berlin (February 7), between the emperor and the King of Prussia, an army of 50,000 Prussians, to which were added 6,000 Hessians and a body of emigrants, all under the command of the Duke of Brunswick, and an Austrian army, commanded by Clairfait, entered France by way of Ardennes. Longwy and Verdun opened their gates to the Prussians (August 13); but the progress was arrested by the manoeuvres of Dumouriez, who had succeeded La Fayette in the command of the army; as well as by sickness and the want of provisions. After cannonading Valenciennes (September 20), which was commanded by General Kellerman, the combined army retired towards the Rhine, and into the duchy of Luxembourg.

The Girondists, reinforced by all the most contemptible enthusiasts in France, formed the National Assembly (September 21, 1792). The

every day of their meetings... Collet D'Herbois, and... Like the assemblies... was divided into two... the Girondists and th... the restoration of th... fruits of their crime... tain, had an interest... Political dominion w... from the beginning e... they assumed the prece... their main purpos... The deputies of the... not charge their adve... royalism, exhibited t... *realists*, a reproach w... the party; and in or... Tallien decreed (Sept... was one and indivisib... to detail all the la... tion published dur... oppressed France, w... catalogue of crimes a... be content with mer... operations as were eli... produced any dur... decrees was, to banish... to order those to be p... turn to their native... male a tender of the... who might be inclin... to absolute sovereigns;... were occupied by th... the sovereignty... abolition of the estab... liberate party, or, mor... furious party of the... spare the king's life... reason for the Mount... The convention acco... 1792), that a trial o... Louis Capet, as they... binning, in the most... of accusers, judges, a... the right of pronou... Twice they compelled... (December 11, 20), w... and Tronchet und... meanour of the king... city. Of seven hun... hundred and eighty... (January 13, 1793)... on different grounds... ble; but the assem... man of character w... announce the innocen... of those who refused... not think themselves... the king. The minority in v... what they might resc... vided they referred t... itself. But in this... seven hundred and e... and twenty-four obj... people. Two hund... t; and eleven had... tives, which could... now remained but

every day of their meeting, they voted the abolition of royalty on the proposition of the comedian Collet D'Herbois, and proclaimed the *Republic*. Like the assemblies which had preceded it, this was divided into two parties; the one composed of the Girondists and their friends, who wished for the restoration of order, that they might enjoy the fruits of their crimes; the other called the *Mountains*, had an interest in continuing the revolution. Political dominion was the object of contest which from the beginning engaged these two parties; but they assumed the pretext of honest design, to conceal their main purpose from the eyes of the vulgar. The deputies of the Mountains, as they could not charge their adversaries with the reproach of royalism, exhibited them to the people as *Federalists*, a reproach which was afterwards fatal to the party; and in order to have a rallying word, Tallien decreed (September 5), that the republic was *one and indivisible*.

To detail all the laws and acts which the Convention published during the three years which it oppressed France, would be to unfold a disgusting catalogue of crimes and extravagancies; we must be content with merely adverting to such of its operations as were distinguished by their enormity, or produced any durable effect. One of its first decrees was, to banish all emigrants for ever; and to order those to be put to death who should return to their native country. Soon after, they made a tender of their assistance to all subjects who might be inclined to revolt against their legitimate sovereigns; and in the countries which were occupied by their own armies, they proclaimed the sovereignty of the people, and the abolition of the established authorities. The moderate party, or, more properly speaking, the less furious party of the convention, were willing to spare the king's life. This, however, was one reason for the Mountains to put him to death. The convention accordingly decreed (December 3, 1792), that a trial should be instituted against Louis Capet, as they affected to call him; and continuing, in the most absurd manner, the functions of accusers, judges, and legislators, they assumed the right of pronouncing as to his culpability. Twice they compelled him to appear at their bar (December 11, 26), where De Seze, Malesherbes, and Tronchet undertook his defence. The demeanour of the king was full of candour and dignity. Of seven hundred and twenty voters, six hundred and eighty-three declared him guilty (January 15, 1793). Thirty-seven refused to vote on different grounds, some of which were honourable; but the assembly did not contain a single man of character who dared positively to pronounce the innocence of their victim. Two only of those who refused to vote, declared they did not think themselves entitled to sit as judges of the king.

The minority in vain had flattered themselves that they might rescue the king from death, provided they referred the punishment to the nation itself. But in this they were disappointed. Of seven hundred and eighteen voters, four hundred and twenty-four objected to the appeal of the people. Two hundred and eighty-three admitted it; and eleven had voted from interested motives, which could not be sustained. Nothing now remained but to pronounce the punish-

ment to be inflicted on the king. Of seven hundred and twenty-one voters, three hundred and sixty-six, and among these the Duke of Orleans, pronounced death (January 17); which was carried by a majority of *five*. The partisans of Louis interposed, and appealed from this sentence to the nation. In vain did the Girondists support this petition. Of six hundred and ninety voters, three hundred and eighty decided that his execution should take place within twenty-four hours.

Louis heard his sentence of death with composure and Christian resignation. He had already made his will, a monument at once of his piety and the purity of his heart. He died the death of a martyr (January 21, 1793). At the moment when the executioner's axe was ready to strike, the Abbé Edgeworth, his confessor, addressed him in these sublime words:—"Son of St. Louis, ascend to heaven!" The whole inhabitants of Paris, who viewed this foul deed with horror, were under arms. A mournful silence reigned in the city.*

All governments agreed in condemning the conduct of the regicides; but the voice of general detestation did not check the career of the sanguinary faction. The crime with which the convention had stained themselves precluded the ruin of the Girondists, though they retarded their downfall by a struggle of four months. An insurrection of the sections of Paris (June 2), organized by Hebert, procureur of the commune, and by the deputies Marat, Danton, and Robespierre, decided the victory. The Girondists were proscribed for the crime of federalism. The victorious party honoured themselves with the title of *Sans-culottes*, and commenced what has been called the Reign of Terror. The Convention was now nothing more than an assembly of executioners, and a den of brigands. To hoodwink and deceive the people, they submitted for their approbation the plan of a constitution, drawn up by Héroult de Séchelles (June 24); according to which the primary assemblies were to exercise the sovereignty, and deliberate on all legislative measures. After the 2nd of June, the whole power was in the hands of the Committee of Public Safety, which was formed in the Convention. Danton, the chief of the Cordeliers, a popular assembly more extravagant than the Jacobins themselves, was the most influential person there; but he was soon supplanted by Robespierre. The constitution of the 24th of June had been adopted in the primary assemblies; but Robespierre decreed that it should be suspended (August 28); and that the republic was in a state of revolution, until its independence was acknowledged.

Under that title they organized a government, the most tyrannical and the most sanguinary which history ever recorded. Robespierre was at the head of it. All France swarmed with revolutionary committees. Revolutionary armies were dispersed everywhere, dragging the wealthy and well-affected to punishment. A law with regard to suspected persons changed all the public edifices into prisons, and filled all the prisons with victims devoted to destruction. To remedy the fall of the assignats, the Convention fixed an assessment, called the *maximum*, on all articles of consump-

* Clery's Journal.

tion; a measure which reduced the country to a state of famine. The queen, Maria Antoinette, was accused before this revolutionary tribunal, and brought to the scaffold (October 16). The Girondist deputies were arrested on the 2nd of June, and met with the same fate. The Duke of Orleans, who was become an object of execration to all parties, perished there in his turn (November 6). Nobody pitied his fate. Over all the provinces of the kingdom the blood of the innocent flowed in torrents.

The revolutionists did not stop here. To their political crimes they added acts of impiety. They began by abolishing the Gregorian calendar and the Christian era, and substituted in its place the era of the Republic; to commence on the 22nd September 1793. In a short time, Hebert and Chaumette, two chiefs of the commune, got the Convention to decree the abolition of the Christian religion (November 10). The worship of Reason was substituted in its place; and the church of Notre Dame at Paris was profaned, by being converted into a temple of atheism. Gobel, the Constitutional Bishop of Paris, and several other ecclesiastics, publicly apostatized from their faith. Plunder and sacrilege of all kinds were committed in the Catholic churches.

The departments in the west of France had remained faithful to the king. In Poitou, Maine, Brittany, and Normandy, a civil war arose, known by the name of the Vendean War, which was on the point of overturning the republican phantom, with its sanguinary government. The Vendean insurgents took the title of the Catholic army, which was commanded in the name of Louis XVII., (who still remained a prisoner in the temple after his father's death), by a council which sat at Chatillon. M. d'Elbée was commander-in-chief. He had under him Artus de Bonchamp, the Marquis de Lesueur, de Larochejacquelin, Cathelineau, Charette, and Stofflet; whose names will long be preserved in the annals of honour and patriotism. This insurrection had broken out on account of a levy of troops which the republic had ordered. The youths of La Vendee rose in arms; but it was to turn them against the oppressors of their country.

The war was carried on with violence and cruelty. Among the most remarkable of its events that happened in the year 1793, were the battle of Saumur (June 9), after which all the towns on the Loire, except Nantes, declared for the king; the battle of Chatillon, where the royalists were repeatedly defeated by the army of Mayence, which the Convention had sent against them; the passage of the Loire (October 17, 19), by 100,000 of the Vendean, including old men, women and children, who were eager to approach the coast, where they expected the supplies promised by England to arrive; the defeat of the army of Mayence at Chateau Gontier; the taking of Mans by the republicans, and their victory at Savenay; the taking of Noirmoutier, where the brave d'Elbée fell into the hands of the enemy (January 2, 1794); and, in the last place, the defeat of Charette at Machedoult. The troops of the Convention were commanded in succession by Biron, Canclaux, Westermann, Kleber, Beysser, P'Echelle, Marecau, and the cruel Rossignol. The deputy Carrier de Nantes covered the whole country with slaughter, and ex-

erted his ingenuity to invent new methods of massacre.

Other insurrections arose in the south of France, after the revolution of the 2nd of June. Bourdeaux, Lyons, Marseilles, and Toulon, declared themselves against the Convention. Bourdeaux was speedily subdued (August 25, 1793). General Carreaux took possession of Marseilles, with the assistance of the populace. Toulon proclaimed Louis XVII. (August 20), and threw themselves under the protection of Admirals Hood and Langara, who were cruising off their coast with the English and Spanish fleets. Kellerman had orders to besiege Lyons; a task which was afterwards intrusted to Doppet. This city surrendered after a vigorous resistance (October 9). It became the scene of the most atrocious actions. Its finest buildings were entirely ruined and demolished by order of the Convention. Carreaux took Toulon by assault (December 24). It was during the siege of this place, that a young officer distinguished himself by his courage, and afterwards by his enthusiasm for the revolution. This youth was Napoleon Buonaparte, a native of Ajaccio in Corsica.

The very same day on which the Convention met, the Duke of Saxe-Teschen at the head of the Austrian army, had commenced the siege of Lille, but he was obliged to raise it in about twenty days. The Legislative Assembly had declared war against the King of Sardinia (September 10, 1792). General Montesquieu took possession of Savoy, and Anselm made himself master of Nice. Some months after, the Convention declared these provinces to be annexed to France. While the allies were retiring from Champagne, Custine took Mayence by a *coup de main* (October 21) assisted, as it afterwards appeared, by treachery. Dumouriez, with a superior force, beat the Duke of Saxe-Teschen at Genappe (November 6), and soon achieved the conquest of the Belgic provinces. The Convention having declared war against England and the Stadtholder of the Netherlands (February 1, 1793), as well as against Spain, a powerful coalition was formed against them, of which England and Russia were the prime supporters; the one by her admonitions, and the other by the subsidies which she furnished. They were joined by all the Christian sovereigns in Europe, with the exception of Denmark.

Dumouriez undertook the conquest of Holland, and penetrated as far as Moerdyk; but he was obliged to abandon his object in consequence of the defeat of Miranda, who had laid siege to Maestricht, by the Austrian army under the command of the Duke of Saxe-Coburg. Dumouriez was himself defeated at Nerwinden (March 15), after which he retired towards the frontier of France. Being determined to put an end to the tyranny of the Convention, and to re-establish the constitution of 1791, he concluded an armistice with the Austrians, and delivered up to them the commissioners which the Convention had sent to deprive him of his office; but his army having refused to obey him, he was obliged to seek for safety, by escaping to Tournay, where General Clairfait then was. The young Duke of Chartres accompanied him in his flight.

During the rest of the campaign, success was divided between the two parties. The Austrians

who were conquerors
Candé, Valenciennes
Duke of York, who
was beat by Houcha
Jourdan compell
of the battle of Wat
Maupeuge. On the
spanish generals, I
ained several advan
Bellegarde, Collioure
the allies had
after an obstinate sie
the Prussians (July 2
mens (September 1
Siege of Landau. A
among, commanded by
Brunswick, forced th
er (13), and penetrat
General Piehéguy
and of the French
as the Rhine (De
maintained themselv
over, between Oppel
In France, the re
into three parti
yety, at the head of
by the club of
absolute power. He
toots, a native of Pr
of the commune of P
more violent than the
character of the i
he third, comprehen
erault de Sechelles
re of Robespierre,
extravagant fury of the
the commune was the
temporary union
March 24, 1794). A
the difficulty in send
the scaffold (April
of the members of the
and the remains of th
against him. In ord
abolished the worshi
used the Convention
Supreme Being (Ju
religion, that of Deis
all high-priest.

The power of Rob
ers, and his downfal
ary tribunal was
despatching those
struction, he pass
which an unlimited
bunal. This open
Convention; and
omed to death, the
rust. Tallien and
st that attacked him
repeatedly attempte
vented by the voi
down with the tyr
and dispirited, he ul
having found means
ard, he saved him
ume, which was co
bered to him after
les took to arms; R
slawed, but they sh

new methods of
south of France,
of June. Bour-
Toulon, declared
ion. Bourdeaux
25, 1793). Ge-
of Marseilles, with
Toulon proclaimed
threw themselves
Hood and Lan-
coast with the
German had orders
was afterwards in-
surrendered after a
It became the
tions. Its finest
and demolished by
aux took Toulon
was during the
ing officer dis-
and afterwards by
on. This youth
ive of Ajaccio in
h the Convention
at the head of the
the siege of Lille
about twenty days,
clared war against
r 10, 1792). Ge-
on of Savoy, and
of Nice. Some
clared these pro-
While the allies
e, Custine took
tober 21) assisted
hery, Dumouriez,
e Duk- of Saxe-
er 6), and soon
Belgie provinces,
war against Eng-
Netherlands (Fe-
t Spain, a power-
t them, of which
rime supporters;
the other by the
They were joined
Europe, with the
quest of Holland,
yk; but he was
consequence of
ad laid siege to
under the com-
urg. Dumouriez
den (March 18),
the frontier of
at an end to the
re-establish the
led an armistice
up to them the
tion had sent to
army having re-
ged to seek for
e, where General
Duke of Chartres
ign, success was
The Austrians

who were conquerors at Famars (May 24), took Condé, Valenciennes, and Quesnoy (July). The Duke of York, who commanded the English army, was beat by Houchard at Hondscoete (September 1). Jourdan compelled General Clairfait, by means of the battle of Wattignies, to raise the siege of Bellegarde. On the side of the Pyrenees, the Spanish generals, Ricardos and Ventura-Caro, gained several advantages; the former having taken Bellegarde, Collioure, and Port Vendre. On the Rhine, the allies had the best of the campaign. After an obstinate siege, Mayence surrendered to the Prussians (July 22), who beat Moreau at Pirminstein (September 14), though they failed in the siege of Landau. An army of the allies, 80,000 strong, commanded by Wurmsier and the Duke of Brunswick, forced the lines at Wissemburg (October 13), and penetrated nearly as far as Strasburg; but General Pichegru, who had taken the command of the French army, obliged Wurmsier to recross the Rhine (December 30). The Prussians maintained themselves on the left bank of that river, between Oppenheim and Bergen. In France, the revolutionary tyrants were divided into three parties. *The Committee of Public Safety*, at the head of which was Robespierre, supported by the club of Jacobins, governed with an absolute power. Hebert, Chaumette, Anacharsis Clooteau, a native of Prussia, and the other members of the commune of Paris, formed a second party; more violent than the first, but contemptible from the character of the individuals who composed it. The third, comprehended Danton, Desmoulins, Herault de Sechelles, and others, who stood in awe of Robespierre, and were terrified by the extravagant fury of these bandits. The faction of the commune was the first that was annihilated by the temporary union of the other two parties (March 24, 1794). After that, Robespierre found it difficult in sending Danton and his friends to the scaffold (April 5); but in a short time some of the members of the Committee of Public Safety, and the remains of the Girondist party, conspired against him. In order to please the people, he abolished the worship of Reason (May 7), and caused the Convention to proclaim the existence of a Supreme Being (June 8); he introduced a new religion, that of Deism, of which he created himself high-priest. The power of Robespierre was now in its apogee, and his downfall approached. As the revolutionary tribunal was not sufficiently expeditious in despatching those whom he had marked out for execution, he passed a decree (June 10), by which an unlimited authority was vested in that tribunal. This opened the eyes of his enemies in the Convention; and, not doubting that they were doomed to death, they conspired the ruin of the tyrant. Tallien and Billaud Varennes were the first that attacked him before the tribunal. Having repeatedly attempted to defend himself, he was prevented by the voice of the assembly, crying, "Down with the tyrant!" At length, repulsed and dispirited, he allowed himself to be arrested. Having found means, however, to escape from the ward, he saved himself in the midst of the commune, which was composed of those who had adhered to him after the fall of Hebert. Both parties took to arms; Robespierre and his faction were slain, but they showed little courage. Finding

themselves undone, they endeavoured to escape the swords of the enemy, by despatching themselves. Robespierre attempted self-destruction, but he only broke his jaw-bone with a pistol-shot. He was executed, with twenty-one of his accomplices (July 28, 1794). Eighty-three others of these miscreants met the same fate in the course of the two following days; from that time the reign of terror was at an end, and thousands of innocent persons were liberated from the prisons. His savage policy, even after his death, was not yet discontinued; and the career of this Convention, from its beginning to its dissolution, was marked by a series of cruelties and oppressions. The campaign of 1794 was triumphant for the French arms. Pichegru commanded the army of the North, and Jourdan that of the Sambre and the Meuse. The Duke of Cobourg had at first the command of the Austrian army; but, towards the end of the campaign, he transferred it to Clairfait. The King of Prussia, become disgusted with the war, had threatened to withdraw his grand army from the Rhine, and to leave only his contingent as a prince of the Empire, and the 20,000 men which he was bound to furnish Austria, in virtue of the alliance of 1792. But England and Holland being engaged, by a convention signed at the Hague, to furnish him with supplies, he promised to retain 62,400 men under arms against France. They were under the command of Field-Marshal Mellendorff. The taking of Charleroi by Jourdan, and the battle of Fleurus, which he gained over the Duke of Cobourg (June 26), decided the fate of the Netherlands. After some movements in conjunction with the army of the Upper Rhine, under the command of the Duke of Saxe-Teschén,—movements which had but little success, from the want of agreement among the generals,—Clairfait, at the head of the Austrian army, retired, about the end of the year, on the right bank of the Rhine, followed by Mellendorff, whom the French had never been able to bring into action. The army of the Pyrenees, under the command of Dugommier, gained a splendid victory at Ceret over General La Union (April 30), and retook Bellegarde. The two generals of the enemy were slain at Monte-Nero, where, after a battle of three days, the Spaniards were repulsed by Perignon (November 27). The French took Figueres (February 4), and Roses about two months after. The western army of the Pyrenees, under the command of Muller, entered Spain, took Fontarabia and St. Sebastian (August 1, 11), beat the Spaniards at Pampeluna (November 8), and spread terror to the very gates of Madrid. After the reduction of Toulon, the English fleet, under Admiral Howe, being invited into Corsica by Paoli, took possession of that island (June 18), which submitted to Britain as an independent kingdom. The French fleet, under Admiral Villaret Joyeuse, was defeated off Ushant by Admiral Howe (June 1). Most of the French colonies had already fallen into the power of the English. General Pichegru, favoured by the rigour of winter, and the intrigues of the party opposed to the House of Orange, had made himself master, almost without striking a blow, of the United Provinces of the Netherlands (January, 1795), where the patriots had re-established the ancient constitution, such as it had been before the year 1788;

the office of stadtholder being again abolished, as the Prince of Orange, after being deprived of all his functions, had fled to England. France concluded a treaty with this republic at the Hague (May 16), where the independence of the latter was formally acknowledged. She entered also into an alliance against England, paid 100,000,000 of florins, and ceded a part of her territory. It was at this time (June 8, 1795) that the royal infant Louis XVII., only son of Louis XVI., died in the Temple, in consequence of the bad treatment which he had endured incessantly for nearly three years. His uncle, who had assumed the title of regent about the beginning of 1793, succeeded him in his right to the throne. That prince, who then resided at Verona, took the title of Louis XVIII.

After the battles of Mans and Savenay, and the taking of Noirmoutier, the Vendéans had found themselves greatly exhausted. But at the time of which we now speak, they formed themselves into bands of insurgents in Brittany and Normandy, under the name of *Chouans*. After the death of Larochejacquelin, Charette and Sapineau concluded a peace with the Convention at Jausnaie (February 17, 1795). Cornartin, the leader of the Chouans, did the same at Mabilais; but, within a few weeks after, the Convention caused him to be arrested and shot, with seven other chiefs. This was the signal for a new insurrection. The English government at length resolved to send assistance to the royalists. A body of emigrants and French prisoners of war were landed in the Bay of Quiberon (June 18). But the whole of the expedition was badly managed, and had a most disastrous result. General Hoche attacked the troops on their debarkation. The greater part might have saved themselves on board the vessels, but the Marquis de Sombreuil, and 560 young men of the best families were taken and shot by order of Tallien (June 21) in spite of the opposition of General Hoche, who declared that he had promised to spare their lives.

In the National Convention, two parties were contending for the superiority; the Thermidorians or Moderates, and the Terrorists. The inhabitants of Paris, reduced to despair by the dearth which the *maximum* had caused, and instigated by the Jacobins, had several times revolted, especially on the days of the 12th Germinal (April 1), and the 1st Prairial (May 20). The moderate party, strengthened by the accession of many of the deputies proscribed since the 2d June, 1793, gained the victory; and purged the Convention, by banishing or putting to death the most execrable of the terrorists. They even conciliated, in some respects, the opinion of the public, by drawing up a new constitution (June 23), which might appear wise and judicious compared with the maxims which had been disseminated for several years. Its fundamental elements were a legislative body, composed of two elective chambers; one of which was to have the originating of the laws, and the other, composed of men of judgment and experience, was to be invested with a *veto*. The executive power was to be lodged in the hands of a council of five persons, clothed with an authority greater than that which the constitution of 1791 had given to the king. The Convention passed several other laws, which indicated a desire to return to the principles of morality. They also

resolved to exchange Madame Royale, the only remains of the family of Louis XVI., for the deputies delivered up by Dumouriez. But they lost again the affections of the people, by their laws of the 5th and 13th Fructidor of the year three (August 22 and 30, 1795). Premonished by the fault which the Constituent Assembly had committed, in prohibiting its members from entering into the legislative body, and wishing, at the same time, to escape punishment for the many crimes they had committed, they ordained that two-thirds of the members then composing the Convention should, of necessity, become a part of the new legislation; and that, if the primary assembly did not re-appoint 500 of the ex-conventional deputies, the newly elected members should themselves complete the quota, by adding a sufficient number of their ancient colleagues.

The new constitution had been submitted for the approbation of the people, which they doubt not it would receive, as it was to deliver France from the revolutionary faction. The Convention took advantage of this disposition of the people to compel the sections likewise to accept the new decrees, by declaring them an integral part of the constitution. But this attempt was the occasion of new troubles. The sections of Paris wished to vote separately on the constitution, and on the decrees which, in that case, would have been rejected over all France; the moderate party, the Convention, if we can honour them with the name, joined with the terrorists. Perceiving the storm to be gathering, they now sought assistance and support from the troops, whose camp was pitched under the walls of Paris. They armed a body of *Legions*, at the head of which was Buonaparte, who gained a sanguinary victory on the Parisians, on the 13th Vendemiaire, in the year three (October 5, 1795). The desire to restore the Bourbons had been the secret motive with the chiefs of the insurrection.

A new legislative body assembled, which might be regarded as a continuation of the Convention so long at least as the 500 deputies of the Convention were not excluded, who sat in consequence of the annual renewal of one-third of its members. The Executive Directory, appointed by the Council of the Ancients from a list presented by the Council of Five Hundred, consisted of Lareveillière-Lépeaux, Rewbel, Barras, Le Tourneur, and Carnot who had replaced Sieyès,—this member having declined to make one of the Directory—the whole five being regicides. The forms of terrorism were mitigated in some respects, but the morals of the administration gained nothing by the change. The reign of the Directory was an era of corruption and dissoluteness, and its effects were long felt. An unbounded avarice seized the nation, and the Directory encouraged and fed that shameful passion, by lending itself to the most infamous transactions. Men coveted the nobility of riches, rather than that of honour and birth.

The Directory had to struggle against two inconveniences; the one was the spirit of rebellion which induced the terrorists to form a conspiracy among themselves,—such as that of Druet and Babeuf (May 10, 1796), and that which is known by the name of the Conspiracy of the Camp Grenoble (September 9). The other inconvenience was still more serious, namely, the embarrass-

state of the finances thrown into circulation. To reduce of 600,000,000 in an ineffectual, the assignment of paper-money, by *mandates*. But before they were put to the ground that they had committed, they ordained that two-thirds of the members then composing the Convention should, of necessity, become a part of the new legislation; and that, if the primary assembly did not re-appoint 500 of the ex-conventional deputies, the newly elected members should themselves complete the quota, by adding a sufficient number of their ancient colleagues.

At first, from the members of the two parties gained the upper hand, the schism between Barras, who had Carnot and Barthélemy in the council, where the head of the moderate party, more the monarchy. They thought themselves to be seduced when they formed the exploit of the Revolution of (April 4). Sixty-five officers, Barthélemy and transportation; and he was banished to Guiana. The last councils were expelled after three months revolutionary measure printers of royalist or transported; the liberal and continued so in 1814. Merlin, a lawyer in the place of one of the most famous, a native and the weakness to her.

Here, it will be perceived the events of the year 1795 was the first that of coalition with France, (February 9, 1795). The finances were exhausted on with Barthélemy, which was concluded

state of the finances. The quantity of assignats thrown into circulation amounted to 18,933,500,000 francs. To reduce this sum, they decreed a loan of 600,000,000 francs. This measure proving ineffectual, the assignats were replaced by another sort of paper-money, viz. *rescriptions*; and finally by *mandats*. But both of these were discredited; the former after being issued, and the latter even before they were put into effective circulation, on the ground that it would be found necessary to withdraw them altogether from circulation. The state thus became bankrupt for 39,000,000,000 of francs. It then became necessary to have recourse to a system of regular imposts, which the people had not been accustomed to pay.

The Executive Directory had succeeded in putting an end to the war in La Vendée. This success was owing to the firmness and moderation of General Hoche. Stofflet was betrayed, and shot at Angers (February 25, 1796). Charette, who had fallen into the hands of the republicans, met with the same fate at Nantes soon after. His death put an end to the war (March 29). The Count d'Autichamp, and the other Vendéean generals, signed a treaty of peace with Hoche. George Cadoudal, the leader of the Chouans, fled to England.

At first, from the accession of a third of the members of the two legislative councils, the moderate party gained the ascendancy. On M. Barthélemi's being appointed to the Directory, there arose a schism between Lareveillère-Lepeaux, Rewbell, and Barras, who were called the Triumvirs, and Carnôt and Barthélemi, who were inclined for peace, and for putting an end to the measures of the revolution. The triumvirate lost the majority in the council, where Pichegru had put himself at the head of the moderate party, who hoped to restore the monarchy. Royalism, assisted by the liberty of the press which France then enjoyed, had made such progress as frightened the triumvirs. They thought themselves sure of the army, so easy to be seduced when they are allowed to deliberate; and especially of Buonaparte. They then performed the exploit which is known by the name of the Revolution of the 18th Fructidor (September 4). Sixty-five deputies, and the two directors, Barthélemi and Carnôt, were condemned to transportation; and such of them as were apprehended were banished to the deserts of Sinnamari in Guiana. The last named deputies of the two councils were expelled; and the moderate laws, passed three months before, were superseded by revolutionary measures. The authors, editors, and printers of royalist or moderate journals, were also transported; the liberty of the press was abolished, and continued so in France from that time till 1814. Merlin, a lawyer of Douay, was appointed to the place of one of the exiled directors. The poet François, a native of Neuchâten in Lorraine, and the weakness to accept the situation of another.

Here, it will be proper to take a retrospect of the events of the war. The Grand Duke of Tuscany was the first that set the example of a reconciliation with France, which was signed at Paris (February 9, 1795). The King of Prussia, whose resources were exhausted, entered into a negotiation with Barthélemi, the republican ambassador, which was concluded at Basle by Baron Harden-

berg (April 5). Prussia not only abandoned the coalition; she even guaranteed the neutrality of the North of Germany, according to a line of demarcation which was fixed by a special convention (May 17). The Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel likewise made peace at Basle (August 28).

The retreat of the Prussians on the one hand, and the scarcity which prevailed in France on the other, had retarded the opening of the campaign of 1795. Field-Marshal Bender having reduced Luxemburg, after a siege of eight months, and a plentiful harvest having once more restored abundance, the army of the Sambre and Meuse, commanded by Jourdan, and that of the Rhine and Moselle, under Pichegru, passed the Rhine. The former, being beat at Höchst by Clairfait (October 11), repassed that river in disorder; and Mayence, then under siege, was relieved. Pichegru, who had taken Mannheim (September 22), retreated in like manner, and General Wurmsers took that city. An armistice was concluded on the last day of the year.

In Italy the French were expelled from Piedmont and the states of Genoa, which they had invaded; but the victory which Scherer gained over De Vins at Lovano (November 23), was a prelude to greater advantages, which they gained in course of next year.

In Spain, Monecy gained the battle of Ormea, and occupied Bilboa. But the peace which the Chevalier Yriarte signed at Basle (July 6), put an end to his conquests. The King of Spain ceded to the republic his part of the island of St. Domingo. Lord Bridport defeated the French fleet off L'Orient (June 23, 1795), which intended to oppose the debarkation of the emigrants at Quiberon. The coalition, which the retirement of Prussia and Spain had threatened to dissolve, gained fresh strength by several new alliances, such as that of Vienna, between Austria and Great Britain (May 20), and the Triple Alliance of St. Petersburg (September 28).

The campaign of 1796 was glorious for the French arms in Italy. Napoleon Buonaparte was there, at the head of an army destitute of everything except courage. By a series of victories which he gained at Montenotte, Dego, Millesimo, Ceva, and Mondovi, over the Austrian General Beaulieu, and the Sardinian General Colli, he obliged the King of Sardinia to sign a truce at Cherasco (April 28), by which he surrendered up three fortresses. Buonaparte passed the Po at Placentia; granted a truce on very disadvantageous terms to the Duke of Parma; and forced the passage of the Bridge of Lodi (May 9). The fate of Lombardy was decided. Cremona and Pizzighitone opened their gates to the conqueror (May 14), who soon made his entry into Milan. The Duke of Modena obtained a suspension of arms. The King of Sardinia agreed to sign a peace at Paris, by which he surrendered Savoy and the district of Nice. The terror of the French arms was so great, that the King of Naples promised to remain neutral, by a convention which he concluded at Brescia (June 5). The pope also obtained neutrality, by the armistice of Bologna (June 28), but on conditions exceedingly severe. Though the war had ceased in Tuscany, a body of French troops occupied Leghorn (June 28), to seize the English merchandise in that port.

The court of Vienna was resolved to make every effort to save Mantua, the only place which remained to them in Italy. At the head of 50,000 fresh troops, Wurmser marched from the Tyrol, broke the French lines on the Adige (July 31), and compelled Buonaparte to raise the siege of Mantua. The latter general encountered the Austrians, and beat them at Castiglione; without, however, being able to prevent Wurmser from throwing fresh supplies into Mantua. This place was invested a second time; and a second time the Austrian army marched to its relief. While Buonaparte was engaged with Davidovitch at Roveredo (September 4), and Massena pushing on as far as Trent, Wurmser marched in all haste towards Mantua. Buonaparte suddenly directed his course against him, vanquished him in several battles, and compelled him to throw himself, with the wreck of his army, into the fortress (September 15). After this event, the King of the Two Sicilies and the Duke of Parma signed a definitive peace at Paris; and the republic of Genoa concluded a treaty (October 9), by which it retained at least the appearance of independence. Austria tried a third time to blockade Mantua. Two armies under the command of Alvinzi and Davidovitch marched, the one from Friuli, and the other from the Tyrol. The former was encountered by Buonaparte, who defeated them in a sanguinary action at Arcole (November 17). Immediately he directed his march against the other, and beat them at Rivoli (November 21).

While matters were thus passing in Italy, the army of the Sambre and Meuse, commanded by Jourdan, had several engagements with the Archduke Charles, brother of the emperor, on the Sieg and the Lahn. Moreau, at the head of the army of the Rhine and Moselle, passed the Rhine at Strasburg, and gained several advantages over the army which Wurmser had commanded at the beginning of the campaign; he concluded truces with the Duke of Wurtemberg, the Margrave of Baden, and the Circle of Swabia, who supplied him with money and provisions (July), and penetrated into Bavaria, the elector of which was also obliged to submit to very rigorous conditions (September 7), to obtain a suspension of arms. Jourdan, on his side, having also passed the Rhine, marched through Franconia, as far as the Upper Palatinate. The Archduke Charles, who, since the departure of Wurmser for Italy, had been at the head of all the Austrian armies in Germany, retired before so great a superiority of numbers, and drew near to the quarter whence he expected the arrival of reinforcements. He immediately fell on the undisciplined army of Jourdan, defeated them at Ambert (August 24) and Wurzburg (September 3); and put them so completely to the rout that they were obliged to repass the Rhine (September 19). This disaster compelled Moreau to make his retreat; in effecting which he displayed the talents of a great general. After a number of engagements, in which he was more frequently the conqueror than conquered, he brought back his army to Huningen (October 26), where they passed the Rhine. That fortress and Kehl were the only points on the right bank of the Rhine which remained in the possession of the French.

The cabinet of London, finding that Spain had declared war against her (August 19) according

to the treaty of St. Ildefonso, which allied her strictly with France; and moreover, seeing Ireland threatened with an invasion, ordered the British troops to evacuate the island of Corsica (October 21), of which the French took possession. Lord Malmesbury was sent to Lille to negotiate a peace (October 24), which he was not able to obtain, because the conditions were not agreeable to the three directors who formed the majority. The attempts which the French made to land in Ireland (December 22), under Admiral Morard de Galles and General Hoche, proved unsuccessful.

In 1797 the Austrians made a fourth attempt to save Mantua. Alvinzi arrived with 80,000 men; but, after several bloody engagements, this army was dispersed, and old Wurmser saw himself compelled to surrender Mantua by capitulation (February 2). Buonaparte, who had broken his truce with the pope under some frivolous pretext, invaded the Ecclesiastical States; but being menaced in the rear by a new Austrian army, he again made peace with his holiness at Tolentino (February 19). The pope, besides renouncing Avignon and the Venaisin, ceded also Ferrara, Bologna, and Romagna. The new Austrian army in Italy was commanded by the Archduke Charles; but not being able to cope with that of Buonaparte in pitched battle, the archduke retired through the Tyrol and Carinthia into Stiria, where he was followed by the French general. This precipitate march threw the French army into a situation highly perilous; since, besides the want of provisions, they were menaced in the rear by an insurrection of the Tyrol, and the arms of the Venetian republic. Buonaparte then offered peace, which was accepted by the cabinet of Vienna, and signed at Leoben (April 18, 1797), the same day that Hoche passed the Rhine at Neuwied; and two days after Moreau had passed that river at Strasburg.

The preliminaries at Leoben were honourable for Austria. She renounced, it is true, Belgium and all her possessions in Italy, as far as the Oglio; but she was indemnified by a considerable part of the Venetian territory, as well as by Istria and Dalmatia; for which the republic were to receive Bologna, Ferrara, and Romagna; Peschiera and Mantua were to be surrendered to the emperor. France recognised the principle, that the integrity of the Empire was to be the basis of a pacification with the Germanic body. Immediately after the peace of Leoben, Buonaparte, without having received orders, overturned the Venetian republic, and caused his troops to occupy that city (May 16). He united the provinces of Lombardy which Austria had ceded into a republic, on the model of that of France (June 29); and the new state was called the *Cisalpine Republic*. He obliged the Genoese to change their government, and to constitute themselves into the *Ligurian Republic* (June 6).

The negotiations for a definitive peace were long in coming to a conclusion. Buonaparte regretted having promised the restitution of Mantua; and the three Jacobin members of the Directory, who were displeased with the terms on which the treaty with Germany was to be founded, began to intrigue for the cession of the left bank of the Rhine; and with this view, to protract the conclusion of the peace, until the Revolution of the 18th Fructid

should gain their part negotiations with Lord...
sely broken off; and...
assume hostilities, un...
conditions dictated b...
was at length conclud...
dina (October 17),...
Louis de Cobenzl. Th...
ween them, it is sa...
republic of Venice; s...
the frontier on the co...
Venetian Islands, on...
Turkey, should belong...
narily, with Peschiera...
and the Venetian terr...
and the three legatin...
Romagna, were to fo...
a congress for a treat...
was to be opened at...
articles, the emperor...
perpetual and comple...
the Rhine; and stipul...
tion of Salzburg, in c...
greater advantages, pr...
of the Rhine were a...
ates of Germany, wh...
partial or total cession...
Rhine, were to receiv...
many, as was express...
tion was to be allow...
but this was not to ta...
need of the Batavian r...
Austrian possessions...
provinces on the left b...
was to claim no new a...
The Directory were...
the articles of this trea...
now the negotiator, w...
ishing the Revolutio...
the French government...
increase of power grant...
with the dismemberm...
et, who piqued himse...
granted with reason a...
France. Moreover...
Russia and the Prince...
opposition to the Com...
which was the basis of...
ween Prussia and Fr...
the bishopric of Mun...
ing, by way of reimbu...
eyond the Rhine; w...
was to have Wurzburg...
stances obliged the...
the court of Berlin the...
Campo Formio; a...
embarrassed them, by t...
the part of Prussia...
General Buonaparte...
er, members of the C...
negotiate at Rastadt...
pire. Buonaparte n...
sign a secret conven...
benzi (December 1)...
equence was to be rest...
French republic, in ful...
olved on at Campo F...
the French negotiator...
the entire cession of th...
ce from all charges; a

which allied her
r, seeing Ireland
ered the British
Corsica (October
possession. Lord
negotiate a peace
able to obtain
agreeable to the
majority. The sta
b land in Ireland
of Lord de Galles
successful.
fourth attempt to
with 80,000 men
ments, this army
saw himself com-
capitulation (Fe-
broken his trea-
sorious pretext, in-
it being menaced
y, he again made
entino (February
uncing Avignon
errara, Bologna
an army in Italy
like Charles; but
of Buonaparte in-
ired through the
where he was fol-
This precipitate
into a situation
e want of provi-
rear by an insur-
s of the Venetian
red peace, which
neuma, and signed
e same day that
uvised; and two
at river at Stras-
were honourable
is true, Belgium
far as the Oglio
siderable part of
as by Istria and
were to receive
; Peschiera and
to the emperor
e, that the inte-
he basis of a paci-
ly. Immediately
naparte, without
hed the Venetian
o occupy that cit-
vinces of Lom-
into a republic, on
ne 29); and that
he Republic. His
their government
into the Ligurian
e peace were long
naparte regretted
of Mantua; and
of Directory, who
h which the peace
began to intrigue
f the Rhine; and
onclusion of the
e 18th Fructidor

should gain their party the ascendancy. The ne-
gociations with Lord Malmesbury were immedi-
ately broken off; and Buonaparte threatened to
resume hostilities, unless Austria would accept the
conditions dictated by the new directory. Peace
was at length concluded at Campo Formio, near
Udine (October 17), by Buonaparte and Count
Louis de Cobenzl. The two parties divided be-
tween them, it is said, the whole territory of the
republic of Venice; so that the Adige should be
the frontier on the continent of Italy, while the
Venetian Islands, on the coasts of Albania and
Turkey, should belong to France. Austrian Lom-
bardy, with Peschiera and Mantua, the Modenois,
and the Venetian territory to the west of the Adige,
and the three legatines of Bologna, Ferrara, and
Romagna, were to form the Cisalpine republic.
A congress for a treaty of peace with the Empire
was to be opened at Rastadt. By certain secret
articles, the emperor consented eventually to the
perpetual and complete cession of the left bank of
the Rhine; and stipulated for himself the posses-
sion of Salzburg, in case of a partial cession; and
greater advantages, provided the whole left bank
of the Rhine were abandoned to France. The
states of Germany, who might suffer loss by the
partial or total cession of the left bank of the
Rhine, were to receive indemnification in Ger-
many, as was expressed in the treaty. A compen-
sation was to be allowed to the Prince of Orange;
but this was not to take place in the neighbour-
hood of the Batavian republic, nor in that of the
Austrian possessions. Prussia was to preserve her
provinces on the left bank of the Rhine; but she
was to claim no new acquisitions in Germany.
The Directory were not equally satisfied with all
the articles of this treaty; but they durst not dis-
avow the negotiator, who had assisted in accom-
plishing the Revolution of the 18th Fructidor.
The French government were displeas'd with the
increase of power granted to Austria, and especially
with the dismemberment of Bavaria, which Rew-
bel, who piqued himself on his political abilities,
regarded with reason as contrary to the interests
of France. Moreover, the articles relative to
Prussia and the Prince of Orange were in direct
opposition to the Convention of Berlin (1794),
which was the basis of the existing unanimity be-
tween Prussia and France. By that convention
the bishopric of Munster was made over to the
king, by way of reimbursement for his possessions
along the Rhine; while the House of Orange
was to have Wurtzburg and Bamberg. These cir-
cumstances obliged the Directory to conceal from
the court of Berlin the secret articles of the treaty
of Campo Formio; and this constraint greatly
embarrassed them, by the mistrust which it excited
in the part of Prussia.
General Buonaparte, with Treillard and Bon-
aparte, members of the Convention, were appointed
to negotiate at Rastadt with the deputation of the
empire. Buonaparte made only a short stay there,
to sign a secret convention with Count Louis de
Cobenzl (December 1); according to which
France was to be restored to the troops of the
French republic, in fulfilment of what had been
promised on at Campo Formio. The object which
the French negotiators proposed, was to obtain
the entire cession of the left bank of the Rhine,
free from all charges; and to obtain it without be-

ing obliged to purchase it at the price which Bu-
onaparte had promised to Austria. The means for
attaining this object were, to secure the consent of
the majority of the deputation, and the agreement
of Prussia, and then to prevail with the latter to
object to the dismemberment of Bavaria—a mea-
sure which would compel France to reveal the
secret negotiations at Campo Formio. The first
proposition on which these ministers demanded
the cession of the whole left bank of the Rhine,
became the subject of a tedious negotiation, alter-
nately promoted and thwarted by a thousand in-
trigues. At length the deputation admitted it
(March, 1798), but under restrictions which the
ministers of France were determined to reject.
The latter then proposed as a second basis, the in-
demnification of the princes in possession of the
left bank of the Rhine; which was adopted with-
out much difficulty (March 15). The third de-
mand referred to the manner of carrying the two
fundamental articles into execution. On this
ground, the French advanced a multitude of pre-
tensions, each more unjust and more ridiculous
than the other.
Until then the negotiations, in all probability,
were serious on the part of Austria and France;
as the former, supported by Russia, hoped to ob-
tain the consent of Prussia to the dismemberment
of Bavaria; while France, on her side, vainly an-
ticipated a strict alliance with the cabinet of Ber-
lin, which would have enabled the Directory to
have dictated its own conditions of peace. But,
towards the middle of the year, war had become
inevitable, in consequence of the numerous ag-
gressions which the Executive Directory had com-
mitted in different countries. To them war had
become necessary to occupy their armies. The
continuation of the congress at Rastadt, there-
fore, served merely to gain time to prepare for hostil-
ities. If the court of Vienna had flattered them-
selves that the Cisalpine republic would form an
independent state, they were undeceived by the
treaty of alliance with France which that republic
was obliged to accept, in spite of the determined
refusal of the Council of Ancients. It was, in
reality, a treaty of subjection, by which, among
other articles, it was stipulated that there should
always be 25,000 French troops in the Cisalpine
States, for the support of which they should pay
18,000,000 francs per annum.
A tumult having happened at Rome, in which
one of the French generals was killed, the Direc-
tory made this a pretext for invading the ecclesi-
astical states. General Berthier proclaimed the
Roman republic (February 15, 1798); and Pope
Pius VI. was carried captive to France, where he
died (August 29, 1799).
The Directory, without any other motive than
the hope of plunder, and a wish to satisfy the am-
bition of certain individuals, excited a revolution
in Switzerland; and, under pretence of being in-
vited by one of the parties, they sent troops into
that country (January 26); overturned the ex-
isting order of things; and, under the title of the
Helvetic Republic, they established a government
entirely subject to their authority (April 11).
A piece of imprudence, committed by the French
ambassador at Vienna, was the cause of a popular
commotion there; in consequence of which he
quitted his situation. This event made a great

noise. It gave rise to the conferences which took place at Selz in Alsace (April 13), between the ex-director François and Count De Cobenzl; in which France and Austria tried, for the last time, if it were possible to come to a proper understanding regarding their mutual interests. These conferences had no other effect than to convince the court of Vienna that they must turn the current of their politics into a new channel.

A French fleet, commanded by Admiral Breueix, sailed from Toulon (May 19), with General Buonaparte and 40,000 men. When they arrived off Malta, Buonaparte got possession of that island by treachery, and by means of a capitulation, signed in name of the order of St. John (June 12), by some of the knights who had disclaimed all submission to the grand master and the assembly of the states. From Malta the French fleet sailed with a fair wind for Egypt, and landed at Alexandria (July 2), to undertake the conquest of that country; although France was then at peace with the Porte. The English fleet, however, under Admiral Nelson, which had gone in quest of the French, joined them off Alexandria, and defeated them in an action which was fought in the bay of Aboukir (August 1), and which lasted thirty-six hours.

Charles Emanuel IV., King of Sardinia, insulted in every kind of way by the French generals, and by his neighbours the Cisalpine and Ligurian republics, resolved to shelter himself from these annoyances under the protection of the Directory. He had concluded an alliance, offensive and defensive, with France (April 5, 1797); but the latter having demanded a new pledge of his friendship, he concluded a convention at Milan, by which the French government granted him their protection, on condition that he would surrender to them the citadel of his capital.

The events which we have now detailed gave rise to the second coalition against France, which was entered into by Great Britain, Russia, Austria, the Porte, and the Two Sicilies. The two first of these powers promised to support the rest; Britain furnishing supplies, and Russia auxiliary troops. Before taking up arms, the cabinet of Vienna attempted to conciliate that of Berlin, with the view of compelling France to moderate some of her claims. Negotiations were accordingly entered into at Berlin, at first between the two powers alone, and afterwards under the mediation of the Emperor Paul of Russia. But in order to obtain a mutual co-operation, it was necessary to begin by establishing mutual confidence. This was impossible, as each of the cabinets had its own secret, which it would not communicate to the other. Prussia had her own treaty of the 1st of August, 1796; and Austria her secret articles of Campo Formio. The circumstances which determined the Emperor Paul to take a part in the war against France, was the indignation which he felt at the spoliation of the knights of Malta, whom he had taken under his protection, and afterwards accepted the office of grand master.

This coalition was formed by the following treaties of alliance: 1. Between Austria and Russia; in virtue of which, a Russian army of 60,000 men under the command of Suwarow, advanced on the Danube towards the end of the year. 2. Between Austria and the Two Sicilies;

concluded at Vienna (May 19, 1798). 3. Between Russia and the Two Sicilies; concluded at St. Petersburg (November 29). 4. Between Great Britain and the King of the Two Sicilies; concluded at Naples (December 1). 5. Between Russia and the Porte; concluded at Constantinople (December 25). 6. The treaty of St. Petersburg, between Russia and Great Britain (December 29); by which the Emperor Paul promised to furnish Prussia with a body of 45,000 auxiliaries, to be paid by Great Britain. 7. The treaty of Constantinople, between Great Britain and the Porte (January 2, 1799). 8. The treaty of Constantinople, between the Porte and the King of the Two Sicilies (January 21, 1799). To these several others may be added, which were concluded at a later period, viz. 9. The treaty of St. Petersburg, between Russia and Portugal (September 28). 10. Between Russia and Great Britain (June 29). 11. Between Russia and Bavaria (October 1). 12. Between Great Britain and Bavaria; signed at Munich (March 16, 1800). 13. Between Great Britain and the Duke of Wurtemberg; signed at Louisburg (April 20). 14. Between Britain and the elector of Mayence (April 30). 15. The treaty of subsidy, between Britain and Austria (June 29, 1796). 16. The same between Britain and Bavaria; signed at Amberg (July 15).

After the revolution of the 18th Fructidor, the Executive Directory of the French republic had to struggle against the general discontent, as well as against the disordered state of the finances, and the intrigues of the Jacobins, whose influence the Directory had imprudently augmented, hoping, by these means, to annihilate the party of the opposition. That faction would infallibly have effected a counter revolution in France, had not the Directory, by a stretch of arbitrary power, annulled the elections of 1798. The want of funds, which was always growing worse, had retarded the progress of the war; but when it broke out, the Directory adopted a measure which we ought not to pass in silence, as it has exercised a lasting influence on all the states of Europe, who were obliged to follow the example. We allude to the law which introduced the military conscription (September 22, 1798), and which was the work of General Jourdan.

The coalition was not yet consolidated, and Austria had not yet finished her preparations for war, when the King of the Two Sicilies, instigated by a party who wished to urge the cabinet of Vienna to greater dispatch, commenced hostilities by expelling the French from Rome (November 24). That enterprise failed of success. The Neapolitan troops, who were commanded by the foreigner, General Baron de Mack, showed neither discipline nor courage. After this first repulse the king took shelter in Sicily. His capital became a prey to the most frightful anarchy. Masséna to save his life, deserted to the enemy. The last emperor defended Naples against the French army, and it was not till after a battle of three days, the Championnet, who was at their head, succeeded in getting possession of the city; after which he proclaimed the *Parthenopean Republic* (January 25). General Jourbet took possession of Turin, and when the new campaign opened, the whole of Italy was in the hands of the French.

The Executive I
preparations of the
pretext for declaring
inia (December 6,
with France. Gen
advanced into Pied
signed an act, draw
which he renounced
commanded his sub
government which
establish. He after
where he protested
had experienced.

The Congress of
sittings. On the
French plenipotenti
on the third proposi
carrying into execu
articles agreed to; w
unless it was accepte
sibility of the deputa
into the secrets of f
disparaged by a cr
deputies under the i
terror, accepted thi
Austria, Saxony, and
plenipotentiary of t
because the court o
point of abrogating
Rastatt, did not thin
any discussion on th
operations of the ec
the French plenipot
plain of the march o
effect had penetrated
approaching the Danu
distinctive character
these complaints in
January 4, 1799), who
positive answer, unt
were organized. A
Jourdan, passed th
and Basle. The con
to sit until the 7th
by Count Metternich
sions.

The 28th of April
annals of modern hi
russars, within a qu
assassinated the Fre
and Roberjot, who v
That deed was not
Directory, although
cause they had artful
by exciting the pub
declared itself again
authorized by any c
army. Its real aut
made known.

The French republ
against the Emperor
sary (March 12, 1
motive. But, befo
the campaign had al
where General Masse
from the country of
occupied in consequ
licans, concluded a
The Archduke Char
Austrian army, acqu

The Executive Directory made these hostile preparations of the King of the Two Sicilies a pretext for declaring war against the King of Sardinia (December 6, 1798), who was in alliance with France. General Joubert having already advanced into Piedmont, Charles Emanuel IV. signed an act, drawn up by General Clauseb, by which he renounced the exercise of all power, and commanded his subjects to obey the provisional government which the French were about to establish. He afterwards retired into Sardinia, where he protested against the violence which he had experienced.

The Congress of Rastadt had continued their sittings. On the 6th of December, 1798, the French plenipotentiaries gave in their *ultimatum* on the third proposition relative to the mode of carrying into execution the two fundamental articles agreed to; with a threat to quit Rastadt unless it was accepted within six days. The majority of the deputation, who were not initiated into the secrets of great cabinets, and who were importuned by a crowd of princes, nobles, and deputies under the influence either of interest or terror, accepted this ultimatum; against which Austria, Saxony, and Hanover alone voted. The plenipotentiary of the Empire ratified it; probably because the court of Vienna, who were on the point of abrogating every thing that had passed at Rastadt, did not think it necessary to enter into any discussion on that subject. This finished the operations of the congress. From that moment, the French plenipotentiaries did nothing but complain of the march of the Russian troops, who in effect had penetrated into Galicia, and were approaching the Danube. The deputation, whose distinctive character was pusillanimity, confirmed these complaints in presence of the emperor (January 4, 1799), who, however, eluded giving any positive answer, until the whole of his measures were organized. A French army, commanded by Jourdan, passed the Rhine, between Strasburg and Basle. The congress, nevertheless, continued to sit until the 7th April, when it was dissolved by Count Metternich, who annulled all its decisions.

The 28th of April was a day memorable in the annals of modern history. Some of the Austrian Hussars, within a quarter of a league of Rastadt, assassinated the French ministers Bonnier, Debry, and Roberjot, who were on their return to Paris. That deed was not authorized by the Executive Directory, although it was attributed to them because they had artfully turned it to their advantage, by exciting the public mind which had already declared itself against the war; neither was it authorized by any cabinet, or commander of the army. Its real author has never been officially made known.

The French republic had already declared war against the Emperor and the Grand Duke of Tuscany (March 12, 1799), without any apparent motive. But, before this declaration was made, the campaign had already opened in Switzerland, where General Massena had dislodged the Austrians from the country of the Grisons, which they had occupied in consequence of a treaty with the republicans, concluded at Coire (October 7, 1798). The Archduke Charles, at the head of the main Austrian army, acquitted himself gloriously. He

defeated Jourdan in several pitched battles at Pullendorf and Stockach (March 20, 25), and compelled the army of the Danube, as it was called, to repass the Rhine. The remains of Jourdan's army were then united to that of Massena.

In Italy, while General Macdonald, who had succeeded Championnet in the command, was covering Rome and Naples, General Gauthier occupied Florence. Sherer, at the head of the army of Italy, was defeated by Kray at Legnago (March 25), Roco (30), and Verona (April 5). It was at this time that Suwarow arrived in Italy with the Russians, and took the chief command of the combined army. Moreau, who with a noble resignation had taken on himself the interim command of the French army in its present discouraging circumstances, was defeated at Cassano (April 27), and retired to Alessandria. It was of great importance for Suwarow to prevent Macdonald, who had arrived at Naples, from joining Moreau. But the two French generals manœuvred so dextrously, that this junction took place; although Macdonald had been attacked by Suwarow near the Trebia (June 17), where he sustained a considerable loss. The whole of Lombardy fell into the hands of the allies. Mantua likewise capitulated. Joubert, who had been appointed general of the army of Italy, had scarcely arrived when he offered battle to Suwarow near Novi (August 15); but he was slain near the commencement of the action. Moreau, who had continued with the army as a volunteer, could not prevent the general rout. Championnet, who succeeded Joubert, was not more fortunate. Comi, the last place in their possession, having been taken (December 3), the French retired within the Apennines.

The Archduke Charles having marched into Switzerland, Massena took up a strong position on the Aar and the Reuss. The hopes which they had entertained of bringing over Prussia to the coalition having entirely failed, it was agreed between Great Britain and Russia (June 29), that the army of 45,000 men, which the latter had eventually promised to place at the disposal of the King of Prussia if he became a party in the war, should henceforth be employed against France in Switzerland. Accordingly these troops, who were commanded by Prince Korsakoff, having arrived on the Limmat, the archduke joined to them 30,000 Austrians; while with the rest of his troops he marched towards the Rhine, where a new French army had occupied Heidelberg and Mannheim. The archduke compelled them to repass the river, and took Mannheim by assault (September 18).

After the battle of Novi, Suwarow quitted Italy with the Russians, whose number was now reduced to 24,000 men, to march on the Limmat, and take the command of the allied army in Switzerland. Massena, who was anxious to prevent this junction, attacked Korsakoff, and defeated him near Zurich (September 24); which obliged him to evacuate Switzerland. Suwarow, whose march across the Alps had now become very dangerous, accomplished it nevertheless with boldness and celerity; and although he had to encounter Lecourbe, who wished to intercept him, and afterwards Massena, who was in pursuit of him, he crossed the small cantons of the Grisons, and effected a union with the remains of Korsakoff's army.

The Roman and Parthenopean republics had fallen to pieces after the departure of Macdonald. Ancone, where he had left a body of troops, did not surrender until the 20th of November. The combined fleets of the Turks and Russians, about the end of the year 1798, had taken possession of the French islands that had formerly belonged to the Venetians. Corfu held out till the 1st of March, 1780. The Archduke Charles having advanced on Switzerland after the defeat of Korsakoff, Lecourbe, who had been called to the command of the army of Alsace, passed the Rhine; but he was soon after compelled to return to the left bank of that river.

In virtue of a convention which was concluded at St. Petersburg (June 22), the Emperor Paul, in addition to the 105,000 men which he had already despatched, engaged to furnish 17,500 more. These being joined by 12,000 of the English, under the command of the Duke of York, they attempted to make a descent on Holland, and landed at Helder. This expedition proved a total failure. The Duke of York, after having been worsted in several engagements with General Brune, evacuated the country, in consequence of a capitulation signed at Alkmaar (October 18, 1799). These disasters were but feebly repaired by the taking of Surinam (August 16), the last of the Dutch colonies which fell into the hands of the English.

While these events were transacting in Europe, Buonaparte had subdued the greater part of Egypt; but he was less successful in the expedition which he undertook against Syria. Being obliged to raise the siege of Acre (May 19), after sustaining considerable losses, he returned to Egypt with the feeble remains of his army. Shortly after (July 15), a Turkish fleet appeared off Aboukir, and landed a body of troops, who took possession of that fort. Buonaparte directed his march against them, beat them, and almost totally annihilated them (July 25); but being displeased at the Directory, who had left him without support, and having heard of their disorganisation, he resolved to return to Europe. He embarked in a clandestine manner (August 23), and landed at Frejus on the coast of Provence (October 9, 1799).

At the time of his arrival, France was in a state of the most violent commotion. The Council of Five Hundred was become more and more Jacobinical, in consequence of new elections. Upstarts and enthusiasts, such as Sieyes, Gohier, Roger Ducos, and Moulins, with Barras, director of the ancients, formed the government. The revolutionary measures which were adopted by the council, seemed a prelude to the return of terror. Such was the law which authorized the Directory to take hostages among the relations of the emigrants (July 12); and the loan of 100,000,000 francs, which was decreed (August 6).

In the West, the Chouans had organized a new insurrection under the conduct of George Cadoudal and the Counts de Frotté, D'Antichamp, and de Bourmont. Disturbances had broken out in other provinces; the government had fallen into contempt; a general restlessness had taken possession of the public mind. Barras and Sieyes were perfectly conscious that this state of things could not continue. Each of them, separately, had contrived the plan of a new revolution; and each of them endeavoured to make a

partisan of General Buonaparte, who had just arrived in Paris, and on whom the hopes of France seemed at that time to depend. The general deceived Barras, and entered into a conspiracy with Sieyes and the more influential members of the Council of Ancients. On the 18th Brumaire (November 9, 1799), the council nominated Buonaparte commandant of the troops, abolished the Directory, and ordered the Legislative Assembly to be transferred to St. Cloud. The meeting which took place next day was a scene of great turbulence. Buonaparte lost all presence of mind; but his brother Lucien and the grenadiers of the guard dispersed the Council of Five Hundred. The constitution of the year three was abolished (November 11). A provisional government was established, consisting of Sieyes, Roger Ducos, and Buonaparte. A legislative commission of twenty-five members was charged to draw up the plan of a new constitution.

The new constitution was announced on the 22nd of Frimaire, of the year eight (13 December, 1799). The republican forms were preserved; and the government, in appearance, was intrusted to a council of three persons, appointed for ten years, and decorated with the title of consuls, viz., Buonaparte, Cambaceres, and Le Bruu; but in reality to the first only, on whom they conferred a power truly monarchical. The other constituted bodies were a conservatory senate, contrived by Sieyes, to be the guardian of the public liberties; a tribunal of one hundred members, whose business it was to discuss such forms of law as the government laid before them; and the legislative body of three hundred members, who gave their vote without any previous debate. Buonaparte seized the reins of government with a firm hand. He abrogated several of the revolutionary laws, amalgamated its different parts into a system, and by degrees organized the most complete despotism. He consolidated his power by quashing the insurrection in the West. By his orders, Generals Brune and Hedouville concluded a peace (January 18, 1800), first with the Vendéens at Montfaucon, and afterwards with the Chouans. He gave a most striking example of perfidy, by causing the brave Frotté to be shot a few days after. But he conciliated the affection of his subjects by the restoration of religion, which he established by means of a concordat with the court of Rome (July 15, 1801).

Buonaparte was no sooner placed at the head of the government, than he proposed to make peace with England, by means of a letter (December 26, 1799), not written, according to etiquette, by one of his ministers to the secretary of state for foreign affairs, but addressed to King George III., whom he complimented for his patriotic virtues. He stated the necessity for peace; and trusted, that two nations so enlightened as France and Great Britain, would no longer be actuated by false ideas of glory and greatness. This step, made in so unusual a form, could not possibly have a successful result, especially as Mr. Pitt was determined to employ all the resources of England to overthrow the revolutionary despotism which the first consul was endeavouring to establish in France. That great statesman endeavoured, by the treaties of subsidy which we have already mentioned, to repair the loss which the coalition had just suffered

by the retirement of
with the bad success
be ascribed to the
his troops at the be
General Melas, v
in Italy, opened the
splendid manner.
which he gained ov
the latter was oblig
where he sustained
courage. Melas r
(May 11), and S
march into Proven
Buonaparte, at the head
voused at Dijon, pa
cession of Milan (C
yet aware that his
temately for the in
surrender Genoa at
placed the corps of
He had found it dif
to preserve order an
15,000 are said to
disease during the
defeated by Berth
Melas himself enga
rongo (June 14).
grasp, when the arr
his division disapp
The defeat had a m
neral Melas, and co
hardly. A truce, wh
ria (June 16), put
that town; as well
Cuni, Genoa, &c.
the Mincio.

Moreau, at the
passed the Rhine (A
several engagements
within the Upper P
made himself master
the news of the tru
concluded an armist
Count St. Julien, w
peror Francis II. to
liminaries of peace
court of Vienna refi
engaged not to mak
England. Hostilit
Germany in the m
Archduke John, w
army in Bavaria, hav
should be prolonged
on condition that
stadt, should be giv
ment was signed at
and France immedi
tions of these three
commenced about t
Moreau defeated th
at the memorable b
ber 3); after which
Vienna. Austria h
ments by the cabi
that she was determ
might be the resolu
new armistice was
25). Braunau and
to the French.

General Brune,

by the retirement of Paul I., who, being mortified with the bad success of the Russian arms, which he ascribed to the allies themselves, had recalled his troops at the beginning of the year 1800.

General Melas, who commanded the Austrians in Italy, opened the campaign of 1800 in the most splendid manner. In consequence of the victory which he gained over Massena at Voltri (April 10), the latter was obliged to throw himself into Genoa, where he sustained a siege of six weeks with great courage. Melas made himself master of Nice (May 11), and Suchet passed the Var on his march into Provence. But, in a short time, Buonaparte, at the head of a new army which rendezvoused at Dijon, passed the Alps, and took possession of Milan (June 2), while Melas was not yet aware that his army was in existence. Fortunately for the latter, Massena was obliged to surrender Genoa at that very time (June 5), which placed the corps of General Ott at his disposal. He had found it difficult, with his small garrison, to preserve order among the inhabitants, of whom 15,000 are said to have perished by famine or disease during the blockade. General Ott was defeated by Berthier at Montebello (June 9). Melas himself engaged General Buonaparte at Marengo (June 14). Victory was already within his grasp, when the arrival of the brave Desaix with his division disappointed him of the triumph. The defeat had a most discouraging effect on General Melas, and cost Austria the whole of Lombardy. A truce, which was concluded at Alessandria (June 16), put Buonaparte in possession of that town; as well as of Tortona, Turin, Placentia, Coni, Genoa, &c. The Austrians retired beyond the Mincio.

Moreau, at the head of a French army, had passed the Rhine (April 25), and defeated Kray in several engagements. The Austrians then retired within the Upper Palatinate. Moreau had already made himself master of Munich, when he received the news of the truce at Alessandria. He then concluded an armistice at Parsdorf (July 15). The Count St. Julien, who had been sent by the Emperor Francis II. to Paris, having signed the preliminaries of peace without sufficient authority, the court of Vienna refused to ratify them, as they had engaged not to make peace without the consent of England. Hostilities were to re-commence in Germany in the month of September; but the Archduke John, who commanded the Austrian army in Bavaria, having requested that the armistice should be prolonged, General Moreau consented, on condition that Philippsburg, Ulm, and Ingolstadt, should be given up to him. This arrangement was signed at Hohenlinden (September 20), and France immediately demolished the fortifications of these three places. Hostilities having re-commenced about the end of November, General Moreau defeated the army of the Archduke John, at the memorable battle of Hohenlinden (December 3); after which he marched in all haste on Vienna. Austria being released from her engagements by the cabinet of London, then declared that she was determined to make peace, whatever might be the resolutions of England; on which a new armistice was concluded at Steyr (December 25). Braunau and Wurtzburg were delivered up to the French.

General Brune, who commanded in Italy, re-

newed the truce of Alessandria by the convention of Castiglione (September 29), and thus gained time to take possession of Tuscany, which they had forgot to include in the truce. Being reinforced by the army of Macdonald, who had arrived in Lombardy, he passed the Brenta; after traversing, by a perilous march, the lofty mountain of Splügen. In virtue of a new truce, signed at Treviso, the French obtained the recovery of Peschiera, the forts of Verona, Legnago, Fermo, and Ancona.

Meantime, negotiations for peace had been entered into at Luneville, between Joseph Buonaparte and Count Louis de Cobenzl. The first consul having refused to ratify the armistice of Treviso, because it had left Mantua in the hands of the Austrians, the Imperial plenipotentiary at Luneville signed an additional convention, by which that place was delivered over to the French. Peace between Austria and France was signed a few days after (February 9); and Francis II., at the same time, made stipulations for the Empire. He ceded the Belgic provinces, the county of Falkenstein, and Fricththal. In Italy, the frontier line between Austria and the Cisalpine republic was traced, so that the Adige should separate the two states, and the cities of Verona and Porto Legnago should be divided between them. The other conditions were, that the Grand Duke of Modena should have Brigau in exchange for his duchy; that the Grand Duke of Tuscany should renounce his grand duchy, and receive a free and competent indemnity in Germany; that the Empire should give up all the left bank of the Rhine; that the hereditary princes, who lost their territories in consequence of these cessions, should receive compensation from the Empire; and, lastly, that the Germanic body should ratify the peace within the space of thirty days. By a secret article, Saltzburg, Berchtolsgraden, Passau, the bishopric and city of Augsburg, Kempten, and twelve other immediate abbeys, besides nineteen Imperial cities in Swabia, including Ulm and Augsburg, were secured to the Grand Duke of Tuscany. The Empire showed great anxiety to ratify this peace, which was the precursor of its annihilation.

The English had compelled General Vaubois to surrender the isle of Malta. After the flight of Buonaparte from Egypt, Kleber had taken the command of the French army, which was then reduced to 12,000 men. A convention was concluded at El Arish with the Grand Vizier, who had arrived from Syria at the head of a formidable army, by which the French general engaged to evacuate the country. The English government having refused to ratify this treaty, unless Kleber would surrender himself prisoner of war, that general immediately attacked the Grand Vizier, and defeated him at El Hanka (March 20); after which he again subdued Cairo, which had raised the standard of revolt. The English government were willing to ratify the convention of the 24th January; but General Menou, who had succeeded Kleber, who had fallen by the dagger of a Turkish fanatic, was determined to maintain himself in Egypt, in the teeth of an evident impossibility. Sir Ralph Abercromby, the English commander, who had arrived with a British force, effected his landing at Aboukir (March 8, 1801). Menou was defeated in the battle of Rahmanieh, near Alexandria (March 21), which

cost General Abercromby his life. But the French soon saw themselves assailed on all hands by the Turks and the English, who had been recalled from the East Indies, and had disembarked on the shores of the Red Sea. General Bellicard, who had the command at Cairo, concluded a capitulation (June 27), in virtue of which he was sent back to France with the troops under his orders. Menou found himself obliged to follow his example, and capitulated at Alexandria to General Hutchinson (August 30), who consented to the safe conveyance of the French troops to their native country. Thus ended an expedition, which, had it proved successful, must have become fatal to the British Empire in India, and given a new direction to the commerce of the world.

Various treaties were concluded between the peace of Lunéville and that of Amiens, which put an entire end to the war. 1. General Murat, who commanded the army in Italy, having shown some disposition to carry the war into the kingdom of Naples, Ferdinand IV. concluded an armistice at Foligno (February 18), which he afterwards converted into a treaty of peace at Florence. He gave up the state of Presidii, and his share of the island of Elba and of the principality of Piombino. By a secret article, he agreed that 16,000 French troops should occupy the peninsula of Otranto and part of Abruzzo, until the conclusion of peace with England and the Porte. 2. Portugal, since the year 1797, had wished to withdraw from the first coalition, and even concluded a peace with the executive directory at Paris (August 10); but the English squadron of Admiral St. Vincent having entered the Tagus, the queen refused to ratify that treaty. Portugal thus continued at war with France until 1801. The French army, which was already in Spain, having shown some disposition to enter Portugal, peace was concluded at Madrid between Lucien Buonaparte and M. Freire (September 29), the ministers of the two states at the court of Spain. Portugal shut her ports against the English, and regulated the frontiers of Guiana, so as to prove advantageous to France. 3. In Russia Buonaparte had succeeded to a certain extent in conciliating the goodwill of the Emperor Paul. Nevertheless, at the death of that prince (October 8, 1801), there existed no treaty of peace between Russia and France. A treaty, however, was signed at Paris in the reign of Alexander, by Count Markoff and Talleyrand (October 11), and followed by a very important special convention, by which, among other things, it was agreed:—That the two governments should form a mutual concurrence, as to the principles to be followed with respect to indemnifications in Germany; as well as to determine respecting those in Italy, and to maintain a just equilibrium between the houses of Austria and Brandenburg: That France should accept the mediation of Prussia, for the pacification with the Porte: That the integrity of the kingdom of the Two Sicilies should be maintained, according to the treaty of the 28th March, 1801; and that the French troops should evacuate the country as soon as the fate of Egypt was decided: That a friendly disposition should be shown to the interests of the King of Sardinia; and that the Elector of Bavaria and the Duke of Wurtemberg should be compensated for their losses, by a full indemnity in Germany. 4. Immediately after

General Menou had signed the capitulation of Alexandria, the preliminaries of peace between France and the Porte were concluded at Paris (October 9); but they were not confirmed into a definitive peace, until after the preliminaries were signed at London (June 23, 1802). The free navigation of the Black Sea was secured to the French flag.

When Mr. Pitt had quitted the English ministry, France and England came to terms of better accommodation. The first advances were made on the side of the latter power. The preliminaries were signed at London, between Lord Hawkesbury and M. Otto; including their respective allies (October 1, 1801). Of all her conquests, Great Britain was to retain only the island of Trinidad, and the Dutch possessions in Ceylon. Malta was to be restored to the Knights of St. John, under the protection of a third power; and Egypt was to belong to the Porte. The French troops were to abandon the kingdom of Naples, and the English to quit Porto Ferrajo. France was to acknowledge the republic of the Seven Islands, which was composed of Corfu and the six other islands formerly belonging to the Venetians.

For carrying these preliminaries into execution, a congress was opened at Amiens, where Joseph Buonaparte appeared for France, Lord Cornwallis for England, the Chevalier Azara for Spain, and M. Schimmelpennick for the Batavian republic. Some unexpected difficulties arose with regard to Malta, as Great Britain had repented of having given it up in the preliminary treaty. They found means, however, to remove these obstacles; and the peace of Amiens was finally signed after a negotiation of six months (March 27, 1802).

We shall only take notice here in what respects these articles differed from the preliminaries. With regard to the stipulation respecting the surrender of Malta to the Knights of St. John, several modifications were added, viz. as to the election of a new grand master; the suppression of the French and English *Langues*, or class of knights; the institution of a Maltese *Langue*; the time for its evacuation; and the future appointment of the garrison. Finally, it was said in the treaty, that the independence of that island and its present arrangements were placed under the guaranty of France, Great Britain, Austria, Spain, Russia, and Prussia. It may be mentioned, that Russia and Prussia declined to undertake that guaranty, unless certain modifications were added. This refusal furnished England with a pretext for refusing to part with that island; and the war, as we shall soon find, was re-commenced rather than give up that important possession.

One article of the treaty of Amiens having promised the Prince of Orange a compensation for the losses he had sustained in the late republic of the United Provinces, both in private property and expenses, another convention was signed at Amiens between France and the Batavian states, importing that that compensation should in no case fall to the charge of the latter.

There is one essential observation which we must make on the peace of Amiens. Contrary to the general practice, the former treaties between France and Great Britain were not renewed by that of Amiens. It is not difficult to perceive the

cause of this silence of Utrecht was considered in having neutral states he recently announced commerce, while the following treaty renewed the subject at Amiens, according to which, free trade,—a do interest to suppress, and of the sea.

We have now bro French revolution, ear 1802, when the moderate in Euro public was enormo and a flourishing po Geneva, Savoy, and the territories Louis XVI. The I including the Milan Venetian territories, and Parma, be provinces, had bowe not consul. The S ry, had not been independence. Tusc must not presume to eror; while Spain ty, was reduced t degraded alliance. nging to the plan o survey of the more ened in the course o the other states of Portugal had been against France, 000 troops to Spain England. We have ns prevented from eaty of 1797. The eumed the regenc ence of the infirm ak a more decid signing an allianc his alliance drew the Duke of Aleudis eze, seized severa ch difficulty, as s on as her finances. ded at Badajos eed to shut her p edded to Spain C the Guadiana. English vessels wa Madrid (September th France. In Spain, Charles andes III. (Dece best son, having gning, on account the king, who had ve himself up ent as the jest of the hom he abandon 1790 a difference

cause of this silence. At the time when the peace of Utrecht was concluded, Great Britain had an interest in having the principle of free commerce for neutral states held sacred; and she had consequently announced it in the treaty of navigation and commerce, which was concluded in 1713. All the following treaties, until that of 1783 inclusive, having renewed the articles of Utrecht, the silence on this subject at Amiens placed Great Britain, in this respect, on the footing of a common right, which, according to the system of the English, would not have been favourable to the principle of free trade,—a doctrine which it was for their interest to suppress, since they had then the command of the sea.

We have now brought down the history of the French revolution, from its commencement to the year 1802, when the French power began to preponderate in Europe. The influence of the republic was enormously great. The Netherlands and a flourishing portion of Germany, as well as Geneva, Savoy, and Piedmont, were incorporated with the territories which had been governed by Louis XVI. The Dutch and the Cisalpine states, including the Milanais, a considerable part of the Venetian territories, the duchies of Mantua, Modena, and Parma, besides some of the ecclesiastical provinces, had bowed their neck to the yoke of the first consul. The Swiss, enslaved by the Directory, had not been able to recover their ancient independence. Tuscany and the Ligurian republic dared not presume to dispute the will of the conqueror; while Spain, forgetful of her ancient dignity, was reduced to a state of subservient and degraded alliance. It will be now necessary, according to the plan of this work, that we take a survey of the more remarkable events which happened in the course of the preceding thirteen years at the other states of Europe.

Portugal had been a co-partner in the first coalition against France, and had furnished a body of 6000 troops to Spain, and some ships of war to England. We have already related how Mary II. was prevented from disengaging herself from the treaty of 1707. The Prince of Brazil, who had assumed the regency (July 15, 1799) in consequence of the infirm state of his mother's health, took a more decided part in the second coalition, by signing an alliance with Russia (September 28). This alliance drew him into a war with Spain. The Duke of Aludia, usually styled the *Prince of Peace*, seized several cities in Portugal without much difficulty, as her army was in as bad condition as her finances. A peace was speedily concluded at Badajos (June 6, 1801). Portugal agreed to shut her ports against English vessels, and ceded to Spain Olivenca and the places situated on the Guadiana. The engagement respecting English vessels was renewed by the peace of Madrid (September 29), which reconciled Portugal with France.

In Spain, Charles IV. had succeeded his father Charles III. (December 13, 1788); Philip, the eldest son, having been declared incapable of reigning, on account of his deficiency of intellect. The king, who had no pleasure but in the chase, gave himself up entirely to that amusement. He was the jest of the queen and her favourites, to whom he abandoned the cares of government. In 1790 a difference, which had arisen with Eng-

land respecting the right of property to Nootka Sound in North America, was on the point of interrupting the repose of this indolent monarch. But matters were adjusted by a convention signed at the Escorial (October 28, 1790) by which Spain renounced her rights over that distant possession. The chief favourite since 1790 had been Don Manuel Godoy, created Duke of Aludia, a weak minister, under whom every thing became venal, and the whole nation corrupt. The revolutionary principles which had taken root there after the expulsion of the Jesuits, as sufficient care had not been taken to supply the place of these fathers with other public instructors of youth, were readily propagated under so vicious an administration; especially after the publication of the famous *Memoir of Jovellanos* (1795), on the improvements of Agriculture and the Agrarian Law; a work which was composed by order of the Council of Castile, and written with clearness and simplicity. The author, no doubt, deserved credit for the purity of his sentiments; but, in his enthusiasm for the objects which he recommended, he overlooked all existing laws; encouraged the spoliation of the church, the crown, and the community; as well as the suppression of corporations, and conditional legacies, or life-rents; in short, a total and radical subversion of the institutions of the country. This work may be said to have produced a revolution in Spain, for the Cortes of Cadiz did no more than carry into execution the schemes of Jovellanos.

If the Prince of Peace failed in conducting the administration of the interior, he was not more successful in making the crown of Spain be respected abroad. By the peace of Basle (July 22, 1795), Charles IV. renounced the Spanish part of St. Domingo. By the alliance, offensive and defensive, of St. Ildefonso (August 19, 1796), Spain identified herself with the French system. The war with Great Britain ruined her marine. Admiral Jervis defeated the Spanish fleet off Cape St. Vincent (February 14, 1797), commanded by Admiral Cordova. It was in this engagement that Captain Nelson, afterwards so famous, established his fame by the courage and conduct which he displayed. Admiral Hervey conquered the important island of Trinidad (February 18). General Stewart, without much difficulty, took possession of Minorca (November 7, 1798). The alliance of Spain with France was also the reason why the Emperor Paul declared war against her, after his accession to the coalition (July 27, 1799). The Porte followed the example of Russia (October 1, 1801). After the peace of Luneville, a reconciliation with the former power was signed at Paris (October 4). The war which Spain was obliged to wage with Portugal, procured her the city of Olivenca, which was ceded by the peace of Badajos (June 9).

By the treaty signed at St. Ildefonso, Spain surrendered Louisiana to Buonaparte, and eventually the state of Parma (October 1, 1800). She also surrendered to him five ships of the line, besides a considerable sum of money which she paid him; and all this on the faith of his promising to procure the Grand Duchy of Tuscany, with the title of royalty, to the king's son-in-law, the Infant of Parma. These stipulations were more clearly established by the treaty which Lucien Buonaparte

and the Prince of Peace afterwards signed at Madrid (March 21, 1801). The peace of Amiens cost Spain no other sacrifice than the island of Trinidad, which she was obliged to abandon to England, entirely on the decision of Buonaparte, who did not even ask the consent of Charles IV. Spain had lost all sort of respect or consideration, both from the universal and contemptible weakness of her government, and because she had voluntarily placed herself under dependence on France.

From the very commencement of this period, Great Britain had been preserved from the influence of the revolutionary principles, which had a great many partisans among the whigs of that kingdom, by the firmness of her prime minister, William Pitt, and the splendid eloquence of Edmund Burke, a member of the House of Commons. Pitt consolidated the system of finance by extending the sinking fund, which he had created in 1786. He gave firmness to the government by obtaining the suspension of the *Habeas Corpus* Act, and by means of the *Alien Bill* (January 4, 1793), which allowed the magistrate an extensive authority in the surveillance of foreigners. It was in Ireland where the greatest number of malcontents appeared, and these consisted chiefly of Catholics, although an act, passed in 1793, had rendered the Catholics eligible to almost all official employments. That island, nevertheless, was the theatre of several conspiracies, the design of which was to render it independent. Their seditious leaders acted in unison with the French, who made attempts at different times to effect a landing in that country. Fifteen thousand troops, accompanied by eighteen sail of the line, embarked for that purpose from Brest harbour in the month of December. But this formidable armament had scarcely put to sea, when they were accidentally overtaken by a storm. Eight of these vessels reached the Irish coast, and appeared off Bantry Bay; but they were forced from that station by another tempest, when they returned to France with the loss of two ships of the line, some frigates having narrowly escaped falling in with two squadrons of the English navy. At length, as a remedy for this political mischief, the union of Ireland with Great Britain was effected, so that both kingdoms should have one and the same parliament; and George III. assumed the title of King of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland (July 2, 1800).

Great Britain was the moving principle of the two first coalitions against France, although she fought rather with money than with troops. She succeeded in ruining the marine and the commerce of both France and Spain, and obtained the complete command of the sea. A short time before the death of Paul I., she was involved in a war with the powers of the North. The resentment of that prince against the cabinet of London, for refusing to put him in possession of Malta, which the English troops had seized, was the true cause of hostilities, although a litigated question of public right was made the pretext. The point at issue was to know, whether the convoy granted to the merchant ships of neutral states by their sovereign, protected them from being searched by those of the belligerent powers, or not. Denmark, with whom the discussion first arose, maintained the affirmative, and England the negative; al-

though it was not till the end of the year 1793 that she maintained this doctrine. At that time there had been some misunderstanding between Admiral Keith, the commander of the British forces in the Mediterranean, and Captain Van Dockum, who was convoying a fleet of Danish merchantmen. In the month of July following, the Danish frigate *La Freya*, which had attempted to defend her convoy against a search by the English cruisers, was taken and carried into the Downs.

These acts of violence gave rise to a very warm discussion between the courts of London and Copenhagen. The former having sent a fleet to the Sound, commanded by Admiral Dickson, Denmark was obliged to yield to the tempest, but in a manner very honourable. By a convention which was signed at Copenhagen (August 29, 1807), the decision of the question was referred for further discussion. The English government released the *Freya*, and the King of Denmark promised to suspend the convoys.

This accommodation did not meet with the approval of the Emperor Paul. That prince, who entertained lofty ideas, but who yielded too often to his passions, had determined to revive the principles of the *Armed Neutrality*, according to the treaty of 1780, and to compel England to acknowledge them. He invited Denmark and Sweden in so very peremptory a manner, to join with him for this purpose, that these states could not refuse their consent without coming to an open rupture with him. This agreement with the courts of Copenhagen, Sweden, and Berlin, was finally settled by the conventions signed at St. Petersburg (December 16, 18). As Great Britain could not find a more convenient occasion than that of her maritime preponderance, for deciding those questions on which she had maintained silence in 1780, war was declared, and hostilities commenced in course of a few months. A body of Danish troops occupied Hamburg and Lubec. The Prussians took possession of Bremen and Hanover (April 3). An English fleet, consisting of seventeen sail of the line, commanded by Admirals Sir Hyde Parker and Lord Nelson, forced the passage of the Sound without sustaining much injury (March 30). A squadron, under Lord Nelson, engaged the Danish fleet before Copenhagen (April 3), which was commanded by Admiral Olfart Fischer. The action was spirited on both sides, and added a new wreath to the fame of Nelson; and, although the Danes were obliged to yield to the superiority of the British fleet, they acquitted themselves bravely and honourably. Within seven days after, an armistice was concluded.

Admiral Parker continued his route by the Baltic and arrived before Carlscrona (April 19), when he was on the eve of commencing hostilities against Sweden, when he was apprised of the death of the Emperor Paul. That event dissolved the league of the North, and put an end to the war. By convention which the Emperor Alexander concluded at St. Petersburg (June 17), the principles of maritime law which the English had pressed were recognised. The other powers of the North acceded to this convention. The Danes evacuated Hamburg and Lubec, but Prussia continued in possession of Hanover until the conclusion of the peace between France and England.

With regard to Hol-
land, the Batavian Republic
was established in 1795.
The Batavian Republic
was a republic, and disas-
tered the middle
of the French army; on
the abolition of the
the ruin of their
the Hague (May
France for an ally,
power, and reduced
—the more neg-
tated. The constitu-
tion (for that is the
manner, vacillated be-
the adherents of will
—namely, that
of a republic. Wh-
chate, the English,
the party, stripped
destroyed its marine,
which Admiral Dunc-
annon captured near
Canterdown (O-
f her commerce
blockading her coast
sheries.

The following is a s-
were concluded between
republic before the p-
which are for the first
the public. 1. The
May 16, 1795). 2. The
July 27, 1796), rela-
5,000 French troops
convention at the Hun-
the payment of
20,000,000 of florins
engaged to pay,
January 5, 1800), by
the Batavian republic-
ans, the property a-
by Belgian emigrants
Belgium, the Elector
and other princes of t-
the bounds of that re-
territories lying with-
at time had not be-
Belgia, and other rights
convention at the Ha-
which the Batavian
600,000 of florins, p-
French troops in Holl-
the original number o-
nevertheless, under a
convention at Amiens
France guaranteed to
not be charged with
the stadtholder by the
The overthrow of th-
is undoubtedly a
which history has to
tory of France. The
M. Octav and La Ha-
France, which execu-
published by th-
1799), in spite of the
delicious patriots he
and supported by the

With regard to Holland, the twenty years which elapsed between 1795 and 1814 formed an era of calamities and disasters. The patriots, who comprehended the middle class of the Dutch community, had gained the ascendancy on the entrance of the French army; one consequence of which was, the abolition of the statholdership. But that party became sensible of their error, when they saw the ruin of their country. The independence of their republic was acknowledged by the treaty of the Hague (May 16, 1795), which, by giving France for an ally, subjected it in effect to that power, and reduced it to the condition of a province,—the more neglected, as it was not entirely united. The constitution which the *Batavian Republic* (for that is the title which it assumed) had adopted, vacillated between two opposite systems, elements of which could come to no agreement;—namely, that of a *United* and that of a *federal* republic. While these matters were under debate, the English, who had joined the stadtholder's party, stripped the republic of its colonies; destroyed its marine, particularly in the action which Admiral Duncan fought with De Winter near Camperdown (October 11, 1797); and annihilated her commerce and her navigation, by blockading her coasts,—not excepting even her fisheries.

The following is a summary of the treaties which were concluded between France and the Batavian republic before the peace of Amiens, some of which are for the first time here made known to the public. 1. The treaty of alliance at the Hague (May 16, 1795). 2. The convention at the Hague (July 27, 1796), relative to the maintenance of 5,000 French troops by the Dutch. 3. The convention at the Hague (May 3, 1796), relative to the payment of the second moiety of the 50,000,000 of florins which the Batavian republic had engaged to pay. 4. The treaty of Paris (January 5, 1800), by which Buonaparte sold to the Batavian republic, for a sum of 6,000,000 of florins, the property and effects which the French and Belgian emigrants, the clergy of France and Belgium, the Elector Palatine, the House of Salm and other princes of the Empire, possessed within the bounds of that republic; as also, the Prussian territories lying within other countries, which at that time had not been ceded by the court of Berlin, and other rights equally inalienable. 5. The convention at the Hague (August 29, 1801), by which the Batavian republic, on paying a sum of 5,000,000 of florins, procured the reduction of the French troops in Holland to 10,000 men; although the original number of 25,000 still remained there nevertheless, under different pretexts. 6. The convention at Amiens (March 27, 1802), by which France guaranteed to the republic, that they should not be charged with the indemnities promised to the stadtholder by the treaty with England.

The overthrow of the ancient Helvetic Confederacy is undoubtedly one of the high crimes with which history has to reproach the Executive Directory of France. The constitution drawn up by M. Ochs and La Harpe, after the model of that of France, which excluded the federative system, was published by the French party (March 30, 1798), in spite of the modifications which the more cautious patriots had attempted to introduce, and supported by the French army under General

Schauenburg. To compel the smaller cantons to submit to this yoke, it was necessary to have recourse to fire and sword. The Girons found means, however, to evade it by receiving an Austrian army among them, in virtue of a convention which was concluded at Coire (October 17); and it was not till after the unfortunate campaign of 1799 that they were compelled to renounce their independence. France appropriated to herself the Swiss part of the bishopric of Basle, and the cities of Mulhouse and Geneva. The terms of subjection on which the Helvetic republic was to stand in future with France, were determined by an alliance, offensive and defensive, concluded at Paris (August 19). Switzerland henceforth renounced that neutrality which for centuries she had regarded as the pledge and safeguard of her liberties.

The animosity which reigned between the unionists and the federalists, caused several revolutions in the government of that republic. But as these intrigues were carried on on a small scale and have left few traces behind, it is unnecessary here to enter into any detail. If the revolution in Switzerland did not produce a single man remarkable for great talents, or of a commanding character, the religious spirit of the country, the instruction of the people, and the diffusion of knowledge, at least preserved them from those crimes and excesses which stained the revolutionists in France.

At the peace of Amiens all Italy, with the exception of a part of the Venetian territory, which was united to Austria, had yielded to the dominion of France. The King of the Two Sicilies alone had still maintained a sort of independence. In no country had the revolutionary principles of the eighteenth century found more abettors among the higher classes than in Piedmont. The King of Sardinia was the first sovereign whose throne was undermined by their influence. Scarcely had Victor Amadeus III., who ascended the throne in 1773, joined the league against France (July 25, 1792), when the republican armies attacked, and made an easy conquest of, Savoy and Nice. Great Britain granted him, by the treaty of London (April 25, 1793), subsidies for carrying on the war with vigour. We have related above the disasters which he met with in the war against France. The peace of Paris cost him the sacrifice of two provinces. In vain did his son Charles Emanuel IV. hope to save the remainder of his estates, by becoming an ally of the French Directory at the treaty of Turin (April 5, 1797). His political influence was lost; they knew they could command anything from that ally. Their first request was the surrender of the city of Turin, by the convention of Milan (June 28, 1798). The Directory afterwards declared war against that prince without any grounds; and he could not obtain permission to retire to Sardinia, except by signing a kind of abdication (December 9), against which he afterwards protested. Piedmont was thus governed entirely according to the pleasure of France; and immediately after the peace of Amiens it was definitively annexed to her territories.

Austrian Lombardy (with the exception of Mantua), the duchy of Modena, the three legations ceded by Pius VI., and a part of the Venetian territory, formed the Cisalpine republic, which Buonaparte declared independent, by the

preliminaries of Leoben (June 29, 1797). He soon after (October 22) added to it the Valteline, Chiavenna, and Bormio, which he had taken from the Grisons; and, at a later period (September 7, 1800), he added a part of Piedmont, viz., the Novarese, and the country beyond the Sesia. Mantua was likewise annexed to this republic at the peace of Luneville. Its connexions with France had been determined by the alliance of 1798, which was more servile than those in which the Batavian republic, and afterwards that of Switzerland, were placed. In this pretended republic, France exercised an absolute power; she changed its constitution at pleasure, appointed and deposed its highest functionaries as suited her convenience. The victories of Suvarow put an end for some time to the existence of that state; but after the battle of Marengo, matters were replaced on their ancient footing.

The republic of Genoa, distracted by innovations at home, and threatened from abroad by England and France, hesitated for some time as to the system which they should adopt. But after the French had become masters of the Bocchetta, the senate consented, by a treaty concluded at Paris (October 9, 1796), to give them a sum of money, and shut their ports against the English. After the preliminaries of Leoben, this republic accepted a democratic constitution from the hand of Buonaparte, according to the treaty of Montebello (June 6, 1797). It paid large sums of money, and was gratified by the Imperial fiefs which Buonaparte added to its territory. It then took the name of the Ligurian Republic (June 14). We have already mentioned how the Grand Duke of Tuscany was unjustly deprived of his estates, which Buonaparte made over by the treaty of St. Ildefonso to the hereditary Prince of Parma, son-in-law to Charles IV. of Spain. This young prince was proclaimed King of Etruria (August 2, 1801), and acknowledged by all the European powers; but, during his brief reign, he was more a vassal of Buonaparte than an independent sovereign.

Pius VI. had protested against the spoliation of the church, which the Constituent Assembly of France had committed, by the re-union of Avignon and the county of Venaissin (November 3, 1791); and from that time he was treated as an enemy to the republic. The truce of Bologna (June 23, 1796), cost him 21,000,000 of francs, and many of the finest specimens of art. He consented that such statues and pictures, as might be selected by commissioners appointed for that purpose, should be conveyed to the French capital. Finding it impossible to obtain an equitable peace, he set on foot an army of 45,000 men, which he placed under the command of General Colli, a native of Austria; but Buonaparte, notwithstanding, compelled his holiness to conclude a peace at Tolentino (Feb. 19, 1797), which cost him 15,000,000 more, and the three legations of Bologna, Ferrara, and Romagna. He renounced at the same time Avignon and the county of Venaissin. In consequence of a tumult which took place at Rome, in which the French General Duphot was killed, a French army, under General Berthier, entered that city (February 11, 1798), and proclaimed the Roman republic; which, as we have noticed, enjoyed but an ephemeral existence. The government was vested in five consuls, thirty-two sena-

tors, and seventy-two tribunes, called the Representatives of the People. Pius VI. was carried captive to France, and died at Valence (August 29, 1799). The conclave assembled at Venice, and elected Cardinal Chiaramonte in his place (March 13, 1800), who assumed the title of Pius VII., and within a short time after made his public entry into Rome. Buonaparte, then elected first consul, allowed him to enjoy the rest of his estates in peace.

Towards the end of 1792, a French fleet, commanded by Admiral La Touche, appeared off the port of Naples, and obliged the king to acknowledge that first of all sovereigns, the French Republic. This did not prevent him from entering into the coalition (July 12, 1793), by a treaty of alliance with England, which was concluded at Naples. After the success of Buonaparte in Lombardy, Ferdinand IV. averted the storm which threatened him, by signing first a suspension of arms at Brescia (June 5, 1798), and the peace of Paris a few months after, which he obtained on honourable conditions. We have already mentioned, that he was one of the first sovereigns who entered into the second coalition against France; and that the precipitancy with which he then commenced hostilities, proved prejudicial to the success of the war, as well as disastrous to himself. He did not regain possession of the kingdom of Naples till after the retreat of Macdonald in 1799, and he purchased peace (March 28, 1800) at the expense of receiving into his kingdom 16,000 French troops, who remained there until the conclusion of the treaty between Alexander and Buonaparte.

The combined fleets of Turkey and Russia had subdued the islands that formerly belonged to the Venetians, viz., Corfu, Zante, Cephalonia, St. Maura, Ithaca, Paxo, and Cerigo. According to convention concluded at Constantinople between Russia and the Porte (March 21, 1800), these islands were to form an independent state, although subject to the Ottoman Empire, under the name of the *Republic of the Seven Islands*. This republic was acknowledged in subsequent treaties by France and Great Britain.

By the peace of Basle, Germany had been divided into two parts; the North, at the head of which was Prussia; and the South, where Austria had the predominancy, in consequence of her armies and by the favour of the ecclesiastical princes, for the secular states abandoned her as often as they could do so with impunity. By a convention which Prussia concluded at Basle with France (May 17, 1795), the neutrality of the North of Germany was recognised, on conditions which the princes situated beyond the line of demarcation were anxious to fulfil. Prussia afterwards concluded arrangements with these states for establishing an army of observation. This defect created no small animosity between the courts of Berlin and Vienna, which the French dexterously turned to their own advantage; especially during the sitting of the congress at Rastadt. In vain did the Emperor Paul, who had determined to make war against the republic, attempt to restore harmony between these two leading states. He was equally unsuccessful in his project of drawing Prussia into the coalition; although Frederic had been deceived by France, who, after having promised him, in a secret convention concluded at

Berlin (August 5, 1795), and in consequence of the loss of the left bank engagements direct articles in the treaty of 13, 1800), who assumed the title of Pius VII., and within a short time after made his public entry into Rome. Buonaparte, then elected first consul, allowed him to enjoy the rest of his estates in peace. The revolutionary army, which had fallen on a soil they speedily struck, all the provinces of the Rhine were in the moment was the French nation were overturning foundations, and ab which appear almost, in the North and oppressed by a noble effort to reach to extricate the foreign yoke.

The Poles had fled the forces of Russia, Sweden, and the Prussians, they would constitution, and government of their republic was assembled at itself into a confederation, in consequence of the inconveniences of unanimity required, the press of Russia had diet to engage the against the Porte, tions by the King of his engagement effort to instigate encouraged them, attempt a reform Prussia had recurred of legislation, appoisioned to draw up reformation of the This resolution please the Emperor against it as a direct between her and t who thus foresaw had in view would cess, ought to have how to put them fence. But instead of their financial republic on a res a considerable tin the constitution w The assurance of had been officiall Poles too confid which the King o with the republic them into a prof gustus, after havi he ought to espou that party in th

Berlin (August 5, 1796), a compensation proportioned to the loss which he had sustained by the left bank of the Rhine, entered into engagements directly opposite, by the secret articles in the treaty of Campo Formio; nevertheless Frederic William III., who succeeded his father (November 16, 1797), remained faithful to a neutrality which the state of the Prussian finances appeared to render necessary.

The revolutionary doctrines which were transplanted into Germany by the French emissaries, had fallen on a soil well prepared, and in which they speedily struck root. By the peace of Lunenburg, all the provinces situated on the left bank of the Rhine were incorporated with France; and the moment was approaching which was to witness the downfall of the German Empire. While the French nation, seized with a strange mania, were overturning law and order from their very foundations, and abandoning themselves to excesses which appear almost incredible in a civilized country, in the North another nation, sunk into anarchy and oppressed by their neighbours, was making a noble effort to restore the authority of the laws, and to extricate themselves from the bondage of a foreign yoke.

The Poles had flattered themselves, that while the forces of Russia were occupied against the Swedes and the Turks, as we have already mentioned, they would be left at liberty to alter their constitution, and give a new vigour to the government of their republic. An extraordinary diet was assembled at Warsaw (1788), which formed itself into a confederation, in order to avoid the inconveniences of the *Liberum Veto*, and of the unanimity required in ordinary diets. The Empress of Russia having made some attempts at that diet to engage the Poles to enter into an alliance against the Porte, she was thwarted in her intentions by the King of Prussia, who, in consequence of his engagements with England, used every effort to instigate the Poles against Russia. He encouraged them, by offering them his alliance, to attempt a reform in their government, which Prussia had recently guaranteed. A committee of legislation, appointed by the diet, was commissioned to draw up the plan of a constitution for the reformation of the republic.

This resolution of the diet could not but displease the Empress of Russia, who remonstrated against it as a direct infraction of the articles agreed between her and the republic in 1775. The Poles, who thus foresaw that the changes which they had in view would embroil them with that princess, ought to have considered, in the first place, how to put themselves into a good state of defence. But instead of providing for the melioration of their finances, and putting the army of the republic on a respectable footing, the diet spent a considerable time in discussing the new plan of the constitution which had been submitted to them. The assurance of protection from Prussia, which had been officially ratified to them, rendered the Poles too confident; and the treaty of alliance which the King of Prussia had in effect concluded with the republic (March 29, 1790), began to lull them into a profound security. Stanislaus Augustus, after having long hesitated as to the party he ought to espouse, at length voluntarily joined that party in the diet who wished to extricate

Poland from that state of degradation into which she had fallen. The new constitution was accordingly decreed by acclamation (May 3, 1791).

However imperfect that constitution might appear, it was in unison with the state of civilisation to which Poland had arrived. It corrected several of the errors and defects of former laws; and, though truly republican, it was free from those extravagant notions which the French revolution had brought into fashion. The throne was rendered hereditary in favour of the Electoral House of Saxony; they abolished the law of unanimity, and the absurdity of the *Liberum Veto*; the diet was declared permanent, and the legislative body divided into two chambers. One of these chambers, composed of deputies whose functions were to continue for two years, was charged with discussing and framing the laws; and the other, consisting of a senate in which the king presided, were to sanction them, and to exercise the *Veto*; the executive power was intrusted to the king, and a council of superintendence consisting of seven members or responsible ministers. The inhabitants of the towns were allowed the privilege of electing their own deputies and judges, and the burghers had the way laid open to them for attaining the honours of nobility. The latter were maintained in all the plenitude of their rights and prerogatives; the peasantry, who had been in a state of servitude, were placed under the immediate protection of the laws and the government; the constitution sanctioned before-hand the compacts which the landed proprietors might enter into with their tenantry for meliorating their condition.

The efforts which the Poles had made to secure their independence, excited the resentment of Russia. The empress had no sooner made peace with the Porte, than she engaged her partisans in Poland to form a confederacy for the purpose of overturning the innovations of the diet at Warsaw, and restoring the ancient constitution of the republic. This confederation, which was signed at Targowica (May 14, 1792), was headed by the Counts Felix Potocki, Rzewuski, and Branicki. In support of this confederacy, the empress sent an army into Poland, to wage war against the partisans of the new order of things. The Poles had never till then thought seriously of adopting vigorous measures. The diet decreed, that an army of the line should immediately take the field, and that a levy should be made of several corps of light troops. A loan of 33,000,000 of florins passed without the least opposition; but the Prussian minister having been called upon to give some explanation as to the subsidies which the king his master had promised to the republic by the treaty of alliance of 1790, he made an evasive answer, which discouraged the whole patriotic party.

The refusal of the Polish diet to accede to a mercantile scheme, by which Dantzic and Thorn were to be abandoned to the King of Prussia, had disaffected that monarch towards Poland. It was not difficult, therefore, for the Empress of Russia to obtain his consent to a dismemberment of that kingdom. The aversion which the sovereigns of Europe justly entertained for every thing that resembled the French Revolution, with which, however, the events of Poland, where the king and the nation were acting in concert, had nothing in common except appearances, had a powerful effect

upon the court of Berlin, and proved the cause of their breaking those engagements which they had contracted with that republic. It was then that the Poles fully comprehended the danger of their situation. Their first ardor cooled, and the whole diet were thrown into a state of the utmost consternation.

Abandoned to her own resources, and convulsed by intestine divisions, Poland then saw her utter inability to oppose an enemy so powerful as the Russians. The campaign of 1792 turned out entirely to the disadvantage of the patriotic party. After a successful career, the Russians advanced on Warsaw; when Stanislaus, who was easily intimidated, acceded to the confederacy of Targowica, by renouncing the constitution of the 3d May, and the acts of the revolutionary diet of Warsaw. That prince even subscribed (August 25, 1792) to all the conditions which the empress thought proper to dictate to him. A suspension of arms was agreed to, which stipulated for the reduction of the Polish army. In consequence of the arrangements entered into between Russia and Prussia, by the convention of St. Petersburg (January 23, 1793), the Prussian troops entered Poland, and spread over the country after the example of the Russians. Proclamations were issued by the courts of Berlin and St. Petersburg, by which they declared the districts of Poland, which their troops had occupied, incorporated with their own dominions. The adoption of the constitution of 1791, and the propagation of the democratic principles of the French, were the causes of this new dismemberment of Poland.

Prussia took possession of the larger part of Great Poland, including the cities of Dantzic and Thorn; the town of Czenstochowa in Little Poland was also adjudged to her, with its frontier extending to the rivers Pillica, Sterniewka, Jezowka, and Buzza. The left bank of these rivers was assigned to Prussia, and the right reserved to Poland. The portion awarded to the former contained 1,061 square German miles, and 1,200,000 inhabitants. Russia got nearly the half of Lithuania, including the palatinates of Podolia, Polotsk, and Minsk, a part of the palatinate of Wilna, with the half of Novogrodek, Brzesc, and Volhynia; in all, 4,553 square German miles, and containing 3,000,000 of inhabitants.

The Poles were obliged to yield up, by treaties, those provinces which the two powers had seized. The treaty between Poland and Russia was signed at the diet of Grodno (July 13th, 1793). But that with the King of Prussia met with the most decided opposition; and it was necessary to use threats of compulsion before it was consummated. On this occasion, these two powers renounced anew the rights and pretensions which they might still have against the republic under any denomination whatsoever. They agreed to acknowledge, and if it should be required, also to guarantee, the constitution which should be established by the diet with the free consent of the Polish nation.

After these treaties came a treaty of alliance and union between Russia and Poland (October 16th, 1793), the third article of which guaranteed their mutual assistance in case of attack; the direction of the war was reserved to Russia, as well as the privilege of sending her troops into Poland, and forming magazines there, when she might judge it

necessary; while Poland agreed to enter into connexion with foreign powers, and to make no change in her constitution, except with the approbation of Russia. The portion that was left to the republic, either in Poland or Lithuania, contained 3,803 square miles, with somewhat more than 3,000,000 inhabitants. This state was divided into eighteen palatinates, ten of which were in Poland, and eight in Lithuania. To each of these palatinates were assigned two senators, a palatine, a castellan, and six deputies to sit in the diet.

These different treaties, and the grievances which the Poles had just cause to complain, threw the public mind into a state of agitation, through the following year broke out into a general insurrection. A secret association was formed at Warsaw; it found numerous partisans in the army, which was to have been disbanded according to the arrangements with Russia. The conspirators chose Thaddeus Kosciuszko for their chief, in that general had distinguished himself in the American war under Washington; he had very recently signalized his bravery in the campaign of 1792; and after the unfortunate issue of that war, he had retired into Saxony with a few other patriots, who were ready to exert their energy in the cause of freedom. The insurgents reckoned with confidence on the assistance of Austria, who had taken no part in the last dismemberment of Poland; they flattered themselves that Turkey and Sweden would not remain mere spectators of the efforts which they were making to regain their liberty and their independence.

Kosciuszko had wished that they should postpone the execution of their plan, in order to gain more time for preparation; especially as a suspicion was excited among the Russians. He eventually retired into Italy, where he remained until one of his accomplices, who had been ordered, as a propagator of sedition, to banish himself from the Polish territories, informed him that his countrymen wished him to appear among them without delay, as a better opportunity might not soon arise. Madalinski, who commanded a brigade of cavalry under the new government, when summoned to disband them, refused; and throwing off the mask, gave the signal for insurrection. He suddenly quitted his station, crossed the Vistula, and after having dispersed some detachments of Prussians, whom he encountered in his route, he marched directly to Cracow, where he erected the standard of revolt. The inhabitants took arms, expelled the Russian troops who were quartered in that city, and proclaimed Kosciuszko their general. A sort of dictatorship was conferred upon him (March 24, 1794), which was to continue so long as their country was in danger. He took an oath of fidelity to the nation, and of adherence to the principles stated in the act of insurrection, by which war was declared against the invaders of their rights and liberties.*

The Russians and Prussians immediately despatched their troops to arrest the progress of the insurrection. The defeat of a body of Russians, near Raslavice, by Kosciuszko, inspired the insurgents with new courage. The inhabitants of War-

* Vie de Catherine, par Castéra, tome ii. Histoire du Règne de Frédéric Guillaume, par Séguin.

rose in like man
a garrison there
of General
of the 17th of A
sounded in the e
the arsenal, and distr
among the people. A
between the Russians
continued for two suc
ousands of the Ru
were made prisoners.
with about 3,000
broke out at Wil
ver all Lithuania. S
entered into the
sides, and enlisted un
ents.

In spite of their f
that Poland was
resources for an enter
which they were eit
the citizens were neit
sufficiently wealthy t
revolution which the
entirely in which the
ill calculated to in
a cause in which t
the gainers. Besides
opinion; and the kin
approve their efforts,
weakness and timi
used of secretly abett
the nobles, who
ourage and energy, w
give any effectual s
very contribution app
ent on their preroga
erse to a levy en m
rits, which deprive
they were, moreove
privileges which
it was with difficul
wearing a crown w
sch.

Under these cons
quined that it was
ize an armed force
the Prussians, wh
defeat the measures of
rior operations, an
nce on the confines
and Cujavia (June 8
defeat; in consequ
ussia made himsel
face, supported by
dertook, in person,
in forces of the ins
the walls of that city.
000 combatants, v
an 50,000. The
arly two months, w
which had spread fro
ussia, obliged the
rest the progress of
ominions.

The joy of the ins
ident, was but of s
enna, which till th
utrality, resolved at
land. This army w

...rose in like manner against the Russians, who had a garrison there of 10,000 men, under the command of General Igelstrom. It was on the night of the 17th of April that the tocsin of revolt was sounded in the capital; the insurgents seized the arsenal, and distributed arms and ammunition among the people. A brisk cannonade took place between the Russians and the Poles. The combat continued for two successive days, in which several thousands of the Russians perished, while 4,500 were made prisoners. Igelstrom escaped from the city with about 3,000 men. The same insurrection broke out at Wilna, from whence it extended over all Lithuania. Several Polish regiments who had entered into the service of Russia, changed sides, and enlisted under the banners of the insurgents.

In spite of their first success, it was soon perceived that Poland was deficient in the necessary resources for an enterprise of such a nature as that in which they were engaged. The great body of the citizens were neither sufficiently numerous nor sufficiently wealthy to serve as a centre for the revolution which they had undertaken; and the servitude in which the peasantry were kept was not calculated to inspire them with enthusiasm for a cause in which their masters only were to be the gainers. Besides, the patriots were divided in opinion; and the king, although he appeared to approve their efforts, inspired so much mistrust by his weakness and timidity, that he was even accused of secretly abetting the interests of Russia. Lastly, the nobles, who alone ought to have shown courage and energy, were found but little disposed to give any effectual support to the cause of liberty. Every contribution appeared to them an encroachment on their prerogatives; and they were as much averse to a levy *en masse* as to the raising of regiments, which deprived them of their tenantry. They were, moreover, afraid of losing those rights and privileges which they exclusively enjoyed; and it was with difficulty they renounced the hope of wearing a crown which was placed within their reach.

Under these considerations, Kosciusko was convinced that it was impossible for him to organize an armed force equal to that of the Russians and the Prussians, who were acting in concert to defeat the measures of the insurgents. After some inferior operations, an important engagement took place on the confines of the palatinates of Siradia and Cujavia (June 8, 1794), where he sustained defeat; in consequence of which the King of Prussia made himself master of Cracow. That place, supported by a body of Russian troops, he undertook, in person, the siege of Warsaw. The main forces of the insurgents were assembled under the walls of that city. They amounted to about 20,000 combatants, while the enemy had more than 50,000. The siege of Warsaw continued nearly two months, when a general insurrection, which had spread from Great Poland into Western Prussia, obliged the king to retire, that he might arrest the progress of the insurrection in his own dominions.

The joy of the insurgents, on account of this incident, was but of short duration. The court of Vienna, which till then had maintained a strict neutrality, resolved also to despatch an army into Poland. This army was divided into two columns,

one of which marched on Brzesci, and the other on Dowbno. On the other hand, the Russians, under the command of Suwarow, advanced into Lithuania, and pursued a body of the insurgents, who were commanded by Sirakowski. Kosciusko, who now saw the great superiority of the enemy, made a last effort to prevent the junction of the army of Suwarow with that of Baron de Fersen, the Russian general. Directing his march towards the latter, he fought a battle with him near Matchevitz (October 10, 1794). The action continued from sunrise till beyond mid-day. Six thousand of the Polish army perished on the field, and the rest were made prisoners. Kosciusko was himself dangerously wounded, and fell into the hands of the conqueror. He had endeavoured to escape by the swiftness of his horse, but was overtaken by some of the Cossacs; one of whom, without knowing him, ran him through the back with his lance. Falling senseless from his horse, he was carried to a monastery; when it was intimated, by one of his officers, that he was the commander-in-chief. Surgical aid was immediately administered to him, and he was soon after conveyed to St. Petersburg.*

This disaster quite dejected the courage of the Poles. Their generals, Dombrowski and Madlinski, who were carrying on the war in Prussia and Great Poland, abandoned these provinces, and marched with their troops to the relief of Warsaw. Suwarow likewise directed his march towards that capital, and was there joined by a considerable body of Prussians, under Dorfhelden and Fersen, in conjunction with whom he commenced the blockade of that city (November 4). The Russians, who amounted to 22,000 men, prepared for an attack of the entrenchments of Praga, one of the suburbs of Warsaw. The Poles, who had a body of between 8,000 and 10,000 men, made a courageous defence; but nothing could withstand the ardour and impetuosity of the Russians, who were burning with rage to avenge the blood of their countrymen who were massacred at Warsaw.

Three batteries had been erected in the night; and the two first divisions, though harassed by a vigorous fire in every direction except the rear, bravely surmounted every obstacle. In the space of four hours they carried the triple entrenchment of Praga by main force. Rushing into the place, they pursued their adversaries through the streets, put the greatest part of them to the sword, and drove 1,000 into the Vistula. In this scene of action, a regiment of Jews made an obstinate defence, and at length were totally extirpated. Thirteen thousand of the Poles, it is said, were left dead on the spot; 2,000 were drowned in the Vistula, and between 14,000 and 15,000 were made prisoners.† The suburb of Praga was pillaged, and razed to the foundation. Terror seized the inhabitants of Warsaw, and they determined to capitulate. Suwarow made his triumphant entry into that capital, and was presented with the keys of the city (November 9). The Polish troops laid down their arms; the insurrection was quelled; and the greater part of those who had distinguished themselves in it were arrested by the Russians. The King of Poland retired to Grodno; and the

* Histoire des Campagnes de Suwarow, tome ii.

† Histoire de Suwarow, tome ii.

final dismemberment of that country was agreed upon by the three allied powers.

The court of Berlin having signified their intention of retaining Cracow and the neighbouring country, of which their troops had just taken possession, Austria, who was also desirous of procuring that part of Poland, took advantage of the discontent which the conduct of Prussia during the campaign of 1794, and her retreat from the ensuing coalition, had excited in the Empress of Russia, and entered into a separate negotiation with the court of St. Petersburg. They arranged privately between themselves as to the shares which were to fall to each. An act, in form of a declaration, was signed at St. Petersburg between these two courts (January 3, 1795), purporting that the cabinet of Berlin should be invited to accede to the stipulations therein contained; in consideration of the offer which the two courts made to acquiesce in the reunion of the remainder of Poland with the Prussian monarchy, and the engagement which they entered into to guarantee that acquisition.

A negotiation was afterwards set on foot with the court of Berlin, which was protracted to a great length; as that court, who were ignorant of the engagement which Catherine had come under to secure Cracow to Austria, had always entertained the hope of being able to retain it themselves. It was only when the act of the 3rd of January was communicated to them, that they agreed to a special convention with the court of Vienna, which was signed at St. Petersburg (Oct. 24, 1795). The city of Cracow was abandoned to Austria, who, on her side, resigned in favour of the King of Prussia a portion of the territory which the declaration of the 3rd of January preceding had secured to her. It was settled that the limits of the palatinate of Cracow should be regulated between these two powers, under the mediation and arbitration of the court of St. Petersburg. Stanislaus had then no other alternative left than to resign his crown into the hands of the Empress of Russia. The act of his abdication was dated at Grodno (November 25, 1795).

It was by these different conventions that Russia obtained all that remained of Poland and Lithuania, as far as the Niemen and the confines of Brzesci and Novogrodek. She likewise obtained the greater part of Samogitia, with the whole of Courland and Semigalia. She had besides, in Little Poland, that part of the territory of Chelm situated on the right bank of the Bug, and the remainder of Volhynia; in all, containing about 2,000 square miles, with 1,200,000 inhabitants.

To Austria were assigned, in addition to the principal part of Cracow, the palatinates of Sendomir and Lublin, with part of the district of Chelm, and the palatinates of Brzesci, Podolachia, and Masovia, which lay on the left bank of the Bug; comprising, in all, about 834,000 square German miles, with about 1,000,000 inhabitants.

To Prussia was assigned part of the palatinates of Masovia and Podolachia, lying on the right bank of the Bug; in Lithuania, she had part of the palatinate of Troki and of Samogitia, which lies on this side of the Niemen, as well as a small district in Little Poland, making part of the palatinate of Cracow; the whole consisting of about 1,000 square German miles, with a population of

1,000,000. Finally, by a subsequent convention which was concluded at St. Petersburg (January 26, 1797), the three co-participant courts arranged among themselves as to the manner of discharging the debts of the king and the republic of Poland. They agreed by this same convention to allow the dethroned monarch an annuity of 200,000 ducats.

At the commencement of this period it was not yet perceived of what importance it was for Russia to get possession of the Crimea; and it was not until the agriculture and industry of that country had begun to prosper under a wise administration that they began to apprehend it might one day have a powerful influence on the balance of trade. The Empress Catherine, who had been flattered in her youth by the eulogies of the philosophers so as to become a disciple of their new doctrine, was the first to perceive this danger. She declared herself a most implacable enemy to the French Revolution. She would gladly have armed all Europe to exterminate that sanguinary faction. Nevertheless, she did not take up arms herself, and only joined the first coalition in an indirect manner, and by concluding treaties purely defensive, such as that of Dronningholm with Sweden (October 19, 1791), that of St. Petersburg with the King of Hungary and Bohemia (July 12, 1782), and that which was concluded (August 7) in the same year with Prussia. Nevertheless, when Frederic had retired from the list, she resolved to send into the field the 60,000 men which England was to furnish into pay. The treaty was on the eve of being signed when the empress was suddenly cut off by death (November 17, 1796).

Paul, her successor, refused to sanction the treaty. We have already noticed the active part which that monarch took in the war of 1792 against France; and we have already mentioned the unsuccessful attempt which he made to revive the principle of the armed neutrality. This emperor, whose excellent qualities were furnished with want of steadiness and consistency, published his coronation (April 5, 1797) a fundamental law regarding the order of succession to the throne. This law, intended to prevent those revolutions which the unsettled state of the throne had produced in Russia, established a mixed line of succession, agreeably to the order of primogeniture, admitting females only in case of the total extinction of the male descendants of the male line of Paul; and defining with the most scrupulous exactness the order in which females and their descendants should succeed to the throne. But the prince, who was weak and narrow-minded, and incapable of discharging his imperial functions, had entailed upon himself the hatred of both nobility and the people. He met with a violent death, being murdered by a party of daring conspirators (March 24, 1801).

Alexander, who succeeded his unfortunate father, lost no time in restoring peace to his dominions; he entered into an arrangement with Great Britain (June 17), by which he abandoned the principle of free trade for neutral vessels; admitting that even a convoy should not protect the former from being subjected to a search or visitation when ordered by the captain of a vessel belonging to the navy of a belligerent state. He likewise concluded peace with France and Spain (October 4, 8).

Sweden had extricated from the war which Gustavus had commenced. That prince, the royal prerogative, and the fundamental laws, adopted the fundamental laws (March 29, 1792) which gave the power of making war and peace to the former order of the nobles, with the concurrence of the king, and an ardent and heroic monarch at the head of the army, had set on foot; but the conspiracy formed by the king's son a minor.

The regency of the king's son, the minority of Gustavus, the jealousies and intrigues of the nobles, which were under bad management, led to a state of disorder.

THE MILITARY

the period on which the war which Gustavus had commenced. That prince, the royal prerogative, and the fundamental laws, adopted the fundamental laws (March 29, 1792) which gave the power of making war and peace to the former order of the nobles, with the concurrence of the king, and an ardent and heroic monarch at the head of the army, had set on foot; but the conspiracy formed by the king's son a minor.

Notwithstanding the constitution of the year 1792, the legislative power was not long in breaking down an opposition was made, and no other than by secretly thwarting the king's intentions. There was, however, a party which appeared among the nobles, and which greatly attacked his power.

Gustavus III. assassinated.
Minority of Gustavus IV.
Christian VII. K. of Denmark.

PERIOD IX. A.D. 1802—1810.

Changes in France.
Bonaparte's ambition. 103
Italian Republic.

Sweden had extricated herself without loss from the war which Gustavus III. had imprudently commenced. That prince succeeded in extending the royal prerogative, and caused the diet to adopt the fundamental act of union and security (March 29, 1792) vesting in himself the right of making war and peace, which, according to the former order of things, he could only exercise with the concurrence of the states. Endowed with an ardent and heroic character, he proposed to march at the head of the armies which Louis XVI. had set on foot; but he fell the victim of a conspiracy formed by the discontented nobles, leaving his son a minor.

The regency of the Duke of Sudermania, during the minority of Gustavus IV., was infested by dissensions and intrigues; while the finances, which were under bad management, fell gradually into a state of disorder. The policy of the regent

was decidedly for the maintenance of peace. The young king assumed the reins of government (November 1, 1796). Although he had entered into the league of the North, formed by Paul I., for the maintenance of the maritime rights of neutral states, he acceded shortly after to the opposite system, to which Alexander I. had declared himself favourable.

Christian VII. had reigned in Denmark since 1766; but for the last twenty years, the Prince Royal and Count Bernstorff had been at the head of his councils. Under their administration, the kingdom flourished in profound peace which had not for an instant been interrupted, except in 1800, by the vexatious treatment which the Danish ships had met with on the part of England. Denmark was the first of the European powers that abolished the African slave trade (May 16, 1796).

PERIOD IX., continued.

THE MILITARY PREPONDERANCE OF FRANCE UNDER THE SWAY OF NAPOLEON BONAPARTE. A.D. 1802—1810.

the period on which we are now entering, and which comprehends eight years, we shall find Napoleon Bonaparte devoting his unremitting efforts to a threefold project, the object of which was to secure for himself the empire of the world. The first of these was to render the monarchical government hereditary in his family, preparatory to the introduction of an universal despotism; the next was to extend the boundaries of France; and the last to surround that country, not with a multitude of republics as the directory had done, but with a number of petty monarchies, the existence of which should be so amalgamated with his own dynasty, that they must stand or fall with it. We shall find him keeping these projects incessantly in view, so that every step which he took towards the accomplishment of the one, was calculated at the same time to advance the other two.

Before the end of the year 1801, a council, composed of 450 deputies of the Cisalpine republic, was assembled at Lyons, in order to deliberate as to the changes to be made in the constitution, which was assimilated more and more to the monarchical form. In the mean time, the presidency of the republic was conferred on Bonaparte (January 26, 1802), under the title of the *Italian Republic*.

Notwithstanding the easy triumph which the constitution of the year eight had gained, by dissolving the legislative body of France, dissension was not long in breaking out among its members; and an opposition was formed which, condemned to silence, had no other means of manifesting itself, than by secretly thwarting the views of the government. There was, however, another opposition which appeared among the members of the tribunate, and which greatly irritated Bonaparte, by openly attacking his projects of legislation. The

period had now arrived, when one-fifth part of the members of these two bodies were to retire. But the new constitution, in settling this partial alteration, were divided as to the mode of proceeding; or rather it was the general opinion, that the ex-members should be determined by lot. This temporary vacancy furnished Bonaparte with a pretext for getting rid of all those whose presence had laid him under any sort of restraint. A decree of the conservative senate, of the 22nd Vendémiaire, in the year ten (March 30, 1802), turned out twenty of the tribunes, and sixty of the legislators; and supplied their place with members taken from the lists formed by the electoral colleges of the departments.* Having thus discovered what advantages might accrue to him from an institution which Sieyès had contrived for balancing the authority of the government, from that moment he converted the senate into an instrument for sanctioning his own usurpations.

A notification from the French ambassador in Switzerland announced that the Valais should henceforth form an independent republic (April 3). The inhabitants had not requested this favour; it was granted to them because Bonaparte wished to get possession of the Simplon, preparatory to the union of that country with France. The second decree of the new constitution of the 6th Floreal (April 26) granted a general amnesty to all emigrants who should return within the space of three months, and take the oath of allegiance. All their property that remained unsold was restored to them, except the forests. About 1,000 individuals were excepted from this act of justice, which strengthened the authority of Bonaparte by conciliating the public opinion in his favour.

* Mignet, chap. xlv.

Immediately after this, Buonaparte submitted to the tribunate and the legislative body a plan for the institution of a Legion of Honour (May 10). This legion was to be composed of fifteen cohorts of dignitaries for life. The first consul was the chief of the legion; each cohort was to be composed of seven grand officers, twenty commandants, thirty officers, and 300 legionaries. The object of Buonaparte evidently was to establish a new aristocracy. But the minds of the council were so little prepared for this proposition, and so contrary was it to the republican ideas with which they were still imbued, that it passed but by a very small majority, and the first consul thought proper to delay carrying it into execution.*

For some time the first consul had been in negotiation with Pope Pius VII. on the affairs of religion. He had adjusted a concordat with his holiness, subjecting public worship to the superintendence of ten prelates of the highest rank, and fifty bishops. This famous concordat was signed at Paris (July 15), and ratified at Rome (August 15) 1801. It was afterwards submitted for the acceptance of the French nation, and adopted by a very great majority. The sabbath and the four grand festivals were restored; and from this date the government ceased to follow the decemviral system. This was the first abandonment of the republican calendar. Buonaparte hoped to attach to himself the sacerdotal party, the order most disposed for passive obedience; and in this manner to balance the clergy against the royalists, and the pope against the interest of the coalition. The concordat was ratified with great pomp in the church of Notre Dame by the senate, the legislative body, the tribune, and the public functionaries. The first consul appeared in the ancient court carriage, with all the circumstances and etiquette of royalty.†

Another law of the constitution of the 30th of Floréal (May 20) sanctioned the slave trade in the colonies restored to France by the treaty of Amiens, and in the French colonies situated beyond the Cape of Good Hope. By this law, however, slavery was not restored in St. Domingo. That colony was under the dominion of the negroes, who, after having massacred the whites, and committed barbarities which surpass even those of the French revolution, had succeeded in establishing their independence. After the preliminaries signed at London, Buonaparte had sent an expedition to that island, having on board 40,000 men, commanded by his brother-in-law, General Le Clerc. On their arrival at St. Domingo, the French took possession of the town of Cape François, which was the seat of government, as well as of several other places. Toussaint L'Ouverture, originally a slave, and raised to be chief of the blacks, then gave in his submission; but General Le Clerc, having afterwards arrested him, had him conveyed to France, where he died. This circumstance excited the blacks to a new revolt under the command of Christophe, the relative and friend of Toussaint; and after a bloody war, France lost this valuable colony, together with a numerous army and many commercial advantages.

After the conclusion of the peace of Amiens, the Tribunate, purged of its republican members,

* Mignet, chap. xiv.

† Ibid.

signified a wish that some pledge of national gratitude should be offered to General Buonaparte. The Conservative Senate then nominated him first consul for ten years. When this decree of the senate was announced to him, he could not conceal his chagrin; and that he might not be compelled to accept a favour which he disdained, he demanded that the decision of the senate should be submitted for the sanction of the people. The two other consuls were resolved to consult the nation (and this was the only occasion in which they ever acted on their own authority), not as to the decree of the senate, but on the question whether Buonaparte should be elected consul for life. Out of 3,577,379, of which the primary Assembly was composed, 3,568,885 voted in the affirmative, and only 8,494 in the negative. Agreeably to this expression of the public voice, the senate proclaimed Buonaparte first consul for life (August 2, 1802).

Two days after, the third decree of the senate of the 16th Thermidor brought the government still nearer the monarchical form, by granting to the first consul great influence over the Electoral Assemblies, with the power of ratifying treaties, granting pardons, nominating senators without presentation, appointing the presidents of the Electoral Assemblies, adding to the number of their members, and even proclaiming his own successor. The Tribunate, which still appeared somewhat formidable, was reduced to fifty members.

Such, in the space of two years, was the progress of usurpation and despotism. In the course of 1802, the reunion of three different countries to France was either accomplished, or in a state of preparation. The first was that of the island of Elba, to which the Kings of Naples and Sardinia had resigned their rights; the second was that of Piedmont, which France had occupied since the 9th of December, 1798; and lastly, on the death of Ferdinand, Duke of Parma, his estates were taken possession of by France, as having devolved to her in virtue of the treaty of Madrid (March 21, 1801), although they were not annexed to the country till 1808. These acquisitions were made on the political principle avowed by Buonaparte, which allowed everything to be done that treated did not expressly forbid.

The peace of Campo Formio had recognised the right of Switzerland to form a constitution for herself; and Aloys Reding, happening to be at Paris about the end of 1801, obtained the consent of the first consul for the re-establishment of democracy in the petty cantons. From that time two parties rose who had long been kept down by force; and Switzerland experienced a series of revolutions, in which the unionists or aristocratic party, and the Federalists or democratic, alternately had the ascendancy. At length a new constitution, more aristocratic in its principles, was submitted for the approbation of the people. It was accepted by 72,453 citizens, and rejected by 92,423; but as 167,172 individuals, who had a right to vote had disdained to exercise that privilege, the Helvetic Senate had the effrontery to reckon all the absentees among the acceptors; and the new constitution was introduced (July 3) as having been sanctioned by a majority of the people. Buonaparte had given the Swiss to understand, that he relied on their willingness to be united to

France; but, as the pretence of not being withdrawn his t 20). This was the democratic cantons of Schwyz, restored which most of the central government, have new cantons, and so in their own territory of the first consul.

command of Ney, established the government by the first consul himself an arbiter summoned a Helvetic (19, 1803), and proclaimed, known by the title of Switzerland to the public, composed of The constitution of the Helvetic; but the equality of them all. assemble in one of the cantons in rotation. The chief magistrate of the first Landammann nominated by Buonaparte played negotiations for independence had lost a part or the by the cession of the was he, in concert with who were the principal affair.

Buonaparte played negotiations for independence had lost a part or the by the cession of the was he, in concert with who were the principal affair.

Without here entering into negotiations, we shall mention the main obstacle which the cantons of Ratisbon by which France concluded the peace of Amiens came to a final termination of the *Recess* of the Diet (February 25, 1801), and the present regarding independent changes was brought about.

The war between France and Austria renewed in 1803. Prussia declared against the treaty, but she means favour the sacrifices which she has been obliged to make in the ministry repented for her part in the restoration of Malta and the Cape of Good Hope. The guarantees had no effect. The arbitration of Buonaparte had come to an end. Above all the annexation of the second republic was so important a matter, very spirited negotiations were entered into to restore Malta to its independence. It was acknowledged it as an independent form of ten years, however, the King of Naples was obliged to withdraw his French troops were to be replaced by Swiss republics. On the 1st of July, 1803, he recognised the Italian Republic of Etruria. Buonaparte had given the Swiss to understand, that he relied on their willingness to be united to Italy. The first consul

France; but, as the Helvetic government made a pretence of not comprehending that invitation, he withdrew his troops from Switzerland (July 20). This was the signal for a civil war. The democratic cantons, who were assembled at Schweitz, restored the ancient confederation, to which most of the old cantons acceded. The central government, having no other support than the new cantons, and seeing themselves attacked even in their own territories, impetunely the assistance of the first consul. A French army, under the command of Ney, entered Switzerland, and re-established the government which was recommended by the first consul. Buonaparte constituted himself an arbiter between the two parties, and summoned a Helvetic Council at Paris (February 19, 1803), and proclaimed the constitution of Switzerland, known by the name of the *Act of Mediation*. Switzerland thus became a federative republic, composed of nineteen sovereign cantons. The constitution of each was more or less democratic; but the equality of the citizens formed the basis of them all. Once a year, a diet was to assemble in one of the six principal cities in Switzerland in rotation. In these the *Landammann*, or chief magistrate of the district, was to preside. The first Landammann, M. Louis d'Affry, was nominated by Buonaparte.

Buonaparte played a conspicuous part in the negotiations for indemnifying those princes who had lost a part or the whole of their possessions, by the cession of the left bank of the Rhine. It was he, in concert with the Emperor Alexander, who were the principal arbiters in this important affair.

Without here entering into the details of these negotiations, we shall merely observe, that the main obstacle which had impeded the negotiations of Ratisbon being removed by the treaties which France concluded on this occasion, the negotiation came to a final conclusion, known by the name of the *Recess (or resolutions) of the Deputation* (February 25, 1803), by which the arrangements regarding indemnities and territorial exchanges was brought to a determination.

The war between France and Great Britain was renewed in 1803. Public opinion in England had declared against the peace of Amiens, which was by no means favourable to her, considering the sacrifices which she had made. The British ministry repented for having agreed to the surrender of Malta and the Cape of Good Hope. They decried the restoration of Malta under pretext that the guarantees had not been granted without reservation. The arbitrary and violent acts which Buonaparte had committed since the peace, and above all the annexation of Piedmont to France, furnished a second motive for not evacuating an island so important from its position. After a very spirited negotiation, Great Britain offered to restore Malta to its own inhabitants, and to acknowledge it as an independent state; only for the term of ten years, however, and on condition that the King of Naples would cede Lampedosa. The French troops were to evacuate the Batavian and Swiss republics. On these terms England would recognise the Italian and Ligurian republics, and the King of Etruria. His Majesty of Sardinia was to receive an adequate territorial provision in Italy. The first consul having rejected this ulti-

matum, war was declared (May 18, 1803), and Buonaparte violated the law of nations by arresting and detaining as hostages all the English who were travelling or residing in France.

Charles V., King of Spain, by the treaty of St. Idefonso, had ceded Louisiana to France. When this news arrived in America, it spread consternation in the republic of the United States. President Jefferson felt great reluctance in consenting to oppose, by a military force, the entry of the French into a country which would give them the command of the Mississippi. The party, who favoured a union and friendly alliance with England, and to which the president did not belong, was on the point of gaining the ascendancy. In that state of things, Buonaparte, who perceived that either the English or the Americans would prevent him from getting possession of Louisiana, sold it to the United States of America for 60,000,000 of francs, by a treaty signed at Paris (September 30, 1803).

A French army, which was assembled in the Batavian republic under the command of General Mortier, was despatched immediately after the declaration of war, to occupy the Electorate of Hanover, the patrimonial dominions of the King of Great Britain. The government of that country concluded a capitulation at Suhlingen (June 3), in virtue of which the native troops retired beyond the Elbe, while the French army were to occupy the country and its fortresses, and be maintained by the inhabitants. They likewise took possession of Cuxhaven and Retzebutel, belonging to the city of Hanburg. The German Empire, which had the mortification of seeing its interests regulated by two foreign powers, did not even protest against this violation of its territory. Buonaparte, deceived in his expectation of rendering the cabinet of London compliant, annulled the capitulation of Suhlingen, and ordered Mortier to attack Count Walmoden, who commanded the Hanoverian army. The latter, however, laid down their arms, in consequence of a convention which was signed at Artlenberg (July 5). After these proceedings, the mouths of the Elbe and Weser were immediately blockaded by an English squadron, which prevented the invaders from benefiting by the navigation of those rivers.

England had generously offered to acknowledge the neutrality of Holland, provided she could get the French troops to evacuate her territory. This measure, however, proved disastrous in its result for the republic. Buonaparte laid them under obligation to maintain a body of 34,000 men, both French and Batavians; and to furnish five ships of war and five frigates, with a number of transports and sloops of war, for conveying to England 61,000 men and 4,000 horses. After the conclusion of peace with the Emperor of Russia (October 8, 1801), Buonaparte had withdrawn his troops from the kingdom of Naples; but, by a forced interpretation of the treaty of Florence, he pretended that he had a right to send them back whenever he should happen to be at war with England. Ferdinand IV. was obliged to succumb; and in consequence of an arrangement with General St. Cyr (June 25, 1803), the French again took possession of Abruzzi.

The loss of Trinidad, and the selling of Louisiana to the United States of America, had created

no small coolness between the court of Madrid and Buonaparte. Already had he brought an army near to Bayonne, which, under the command of General Augereau, threatened Spain. She, however, succeeded in evading the storm. As it was of much importance for her to avoid war with England, and, on the other hand, as Buonaparte had more need of money than of ships, especially considering the nature of the attack which he meditated upon England, it was agreed by a secret treaty signed at Madrid (October 30), that Charles IV. should substitute money, instead of the succours which the nature of his former engagement bound him to furnish. The amount of this subsidy is not officially known. The hopes which this monarch had entertained of escaping from the war were sadly disappointed. He was dragged into it towards the end of the following year.

Portugal likewise purchased her neutrality, by a convention which was signed between General Lannes, Buonaparte's minister at Lisbon, and Don Manuel Pinto; the contents of which are not known with certainty.

From the breaking of the peace of Amiens to the second war with Austria, Buonaparte had employed himself about a project for effecting a landing in England, for which he had made immense preparations. All the ship-carpenters throughout France were put in requisition for the equipment of a flotilla intended to convey the hordes of the military despot to the English shores. A multitudinous army, called the *Army of England*, was assembled on the coasts, extensive camps were formed, and convoys prepared for protecting the transportation of these invaders. In England, under the ministry of Mr. Pitt, vigorous measures of defence were adopted, by setting on foot a regular army of 180,000 men. The English admirals frequently harassed the French shipping, and bombarded the towns situated upon the coasts. But from this there did not happen any result of importance.

St. Lucia, St. Peter, Miquelon, and Tobago, as also the Dutch colonies of Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice, fell into the hands of the English in the beginning of the year 1803. General Rochambeau, who had succeeded Le Clerc, concluded a capitulation at St. Domingo, with Dessalines the Black Chief, for the evacuation of Cape Francois; but as the English Admiral Duckworth blockaded it by sea, he was obliged to surrender with his whole army, which was transported to England. Dessalines, thus relieved from the French, proclaimed the independence of St. Domingo, or the island of Hayti, of which he assumed the government, under the title of governor-general, for life.

Meantime, the plan of Buonaparte for disengaging himself from those political restraints which fettered his ambition, was growing to maturity. Three parties divided France—the Royalists, the Systematic Republicans, and the Jacobins. Of the two first, the one had always entertained hopes that Buonaparte would recal the Bourbons; and the other, that the moment was approaching when true liberty would take the place of despotism. General Moreau was regarded as the head of this party, if his character had at all made him a proper person to play an active game in public affairs. Buonaparte, who desired neither king nor republic,

was convinced that he could only arrive at his purpose by attaching to himself the Jacobin party. In order to inspire them with confidence, he felt that it was necessary to give them a pledge; this was, to be continually at variance with the other two parties, which they equally detested.

Buonaparte resolved to ruin Moreau, whose principles he mistrusted, and whose glory eclipsed his own. By a tissue of intrigues and espionage, the police enticed Pichegru, George Cadoudal, and other royalist chiefs, into France; by making them believe that the time was now come for re-establishing royalty, and that Moreau would place himself at the head of the enterprise. Pichegru twice saw his old friend Moreau, who refused to take any part in a plot against the government; but he was reluctant to betray this excellent man, whom Buonaparte hated, and who had been excepted by name from the general amnesty. His silence was sufficient to entangle him in a pretended conspiracy, with which the tribunals resounded. Pichegru was strangled in prison; and though the innocence of Moreau was fully established, still Buonaparte demanded his death. By a kind of agreement, the judges consented to condemn him to two years' imprisonment; but the fermentation which this trial had caused among the people and in the army, convinced Buonaparte that the presence of his enemy, even in prison, might become dangerous to him; and he was extremely happy when Moreau preferred a voluntary exile. This great general, the most virtuous of all the republicans, betook himself to America.

The trial of Moreau incensed the republicans. But the commission of a second crime was necessary to render Buonaparte the object of execration to the royalists, and to every man of principle. He had made a proposal to Louis XVIII., and the princes of his house, to obtain their renunciation of the throne of France, in lieu of an establishment which he offered to them upon the coast of Barbary. The Bourbons replied to this strange proposal with dignity and moderation. One of them, the Duke D'Enghien, was living peaceably in the castle of Ettenheim in Suabia. Without respect to the law of nations, Buonaparte, violating the territory of the Elector of Baden and of the Germanic body, caused that young prince to be carried away by force (March 15, 1804). He was dragged to Vincennes, where he was tried by a commission, declared a conspirator, and shot (March 21). Murat, the brother-in-law of Buonaparte, and General Hullin, were the principal instruments in this foul deed. The Emperor Francis, Alexander, and the King of Sweden, protested with indignation against this outrage on the German Empire. The greater part of the Princes of Germany would not allow the French emigrant to sojourn longer in their states. Austria and Prussia alone afforded them an asylum.

This last crime paved the way for Buonaparte to ascend the throne. France had scarcely recovered from the stupor into which she had been plunged by the judicial murder of a Bourbon, when the Conservative Senate, who had perceived that the best way to please Buonaparte was not to wait till he should make his wishes known to them, presented an address, inviting him to complete the institutions necessary for tranquillizing the state (March 27). At this signal of flattery, many of

the orders of the st
desire that the pow
parte should be cor
title. One month
paring the public n
that the first consul
the senate, desired
elves more clearly
of anticipating this
establishment of h
Buonaparte and his
not wishing to be b
to the desire; and
Buonaparte Emper
conferring on him
hereditary in himse
sons, to the exclusio
the males, to his br
their male descende

The same decre
important changes
view of rendering i
naparte accepted th
ferred on him. It
should be consulted
ary right. Wishing
the eyes of the vu
pontiff to Paris to
took place in the ch
ber 2, 1804; and,
Buonaparte put the
which he placed it
weeks afterwards, i
Legislative Body, he
was satisfied with hi
more additions to th

The base transac
lowed by an exchan
tween the Russian a
minister of Buoinap
stitution which that e
of Alexander, and w
notes of the French
to diminish, there
of the non-executio
agreed to in the t
Alexander demand
should be withdraw
that Buonaparte sho
principles upon whic
be regulated; that
denify the King of
(July 27, 1804). T
plied by recriminatio
called their respectiv
did not wait for
means for setting bo
naparte. By the dec
the courts of St. Pet
24), it was agreed, t
French troops in G
frontier of Hanover
each of these two co
to repel such an atte
tion added, moreover
ute as to the count
Weser. Not conten
for the security of
eror Alexander imm
with Austria, with th

the orders of the state were eager to express their desire that the power which was vested in Buonaparte should be conferred on him by a hereditary title. One month was allowed to elapse, for preparing the public mind for the result. It was then that the first consul, in replying to the address of the senate, desired these orders to explain their motives more clearly. The Tribunal took the merit of anticipating this explanation, by voting the re-establishment of hereditary monarchy in favour of Buonaparte and his family (April 30). The senate, not wishing to be behind in complaisance, acceded to the desire; and a decree of that body declared Buonaparte Emperor of the French (May 18); conferring on him the Imperial dignity, to be hereditary in himself, and his lawful or adopted sons, to the exclusion of his daughters; and failing the males, to his brothers Joseph and Louis, and their male descendants.

The same decree of the senate made several important changes in the constitution, with the view of rendering it perfectly monarchical. Buonaparte accepted the dignity which had been conferred on him. He only asked, that the nation should be consulted upon the question of hereditary right. Wishing to legalize this usurpation in the eyes of the vulgar, he invited the sovereign pontiff to Paris to crown him. This ceremony took place in the church of Notre-Dame (December 2, 1804); and, contrary to the general custom, Buonaparte put the crown on his own head, after which he placed it upon that of his spouse. Some weeks afterwards, in opening the session of the Legislative Body, he solemnly declared, that, as he was satisfied with his grandeur, he would make no more additions to the Empire.

The base transaction of 21st March was followed by an exchange of very violent letters, between the Russian ambassador at Paris, and the minister of Buonaparte. In addition to the indignation which that event had excited in the mind of Alexander, and which the prevailing tone of the notes of the French minister were not calculated to diminish, there was dissatisfaction on account of the non-execution of many of the conditions agreed to in the treaty of 10th October, 1801. Alexander demanded, that the French troops should be withdrawn from the kingdom of Naples; that Buonaparte should concert with him as to the principles upon which the affairs of Italy were to be regulated; that without delay he should solemnify the King of Sardinia, and evacuate Hanover (July 27, 1804). To these, Buonaparte only replied by recriminations, when the two courts recalled their respective ambassadors. The emperor had not waited for this opportunity to employ means for setting bounds to the ambition of Buonaparte. By the declarations interchanged betwixt the courts of St. Petersburg and Berlin (May 3 and 24), it was agreed, that they should not allow the French troops in Germany to go beyond the frontier of Hanover; and that should this happen, each of these two courts should employ 40,000 men to repel such an attempt. The Prussian declaration added, moreover, that there should be no dispute as to the countries situated to the west of the Weser. Not content with having thus provided for the security of the north of Germany, the Emperor Alexander immediately concerted measures with Austria, with the view of opposing a barrier

to the usurpations of France. Declarations, in the shape of a convention, were exchanged between these two courts before the end of the year; and they agreed to set on an army of 350,000 men.

The maritime war, like that of 1803, was limited to threats, and immense preparations on the part of Buonaparte, and also by Sir Sidney Smith, to prevent the junction of the French fleets, or burn their shipping in their own ports. The English took possession of the Dutch colony of Surinam (May 4); and towards the end of the year commenced hostilities against Spain.

The first six months of the year 1805 were marked by the new usurpations of Buonaparte in Italy. 1. A decree of the estates of the Italian republic assembled at Paris (March 18), proclaimed Napoleon Buonaparte King of Italy; and it was stipulated that he should give that crown to one of his legitimate or adopted sons, so soon as the foreign troops should have evacuated the kingdom of Naples (where there were no foreigners except the French troops), the Seven Islands and Malta; and that henceforth the crowns of France and Italy should never be united in the same person. Buonaparte repaired to Milan (May 26), where he was crowned with the iron crown of the Emperors of Germany, who were kings of Italy. Eugene Beauharnais, son of the Empress Josephine, was appointed his viceroy. 2. Napoleon conferred the principality of Piombino, under the title of an hereditary fief of the French empire, on Eliza Bacciochi his sister, and her male descendants (May 25). This completed the spoliation of the House of Buoncompagni, to whom that title and estate belonged, together with the greater part of the isle of Elba. 3. The senate and people of the Ligurian republic demanded voluntarily, as was said, to be united to the French Empire. Their request was agreed to (June 5); and the territory of that republic was divided into three departments. 4. The republic of Lucca demanded from Buonaparte a new constitution, and a prince of his family. By a constitutional statute (June 23), that republic was erected into a principality, under the protection of France; and conferred as an hereditary right on Felix Bacciochi, and his wife Eliza Buonaparte. 5. The states of Parma seemed destined to be given up by way of compensation to the King of Sardinia, together with the territory of Genoa; but Buonaparte, finding himself involved with the Emperor Alexander, caused them to be organized according to the system of France.

It was impossible for the sovereigns of Europe not to unite against a conqueror who seemed to apply to politics that maxim of the civil law, which makes everything allowable that the laws do not forbid. We have already seen that Russia and Austria had concerted measures for setting bounds to these usurpations. But it was William Pitt, who was restored to the British ministry in the month of May 1804, who conceived the plan of the third coalition. Disdaining the petty resources which the preceding ministry had employed for harassing France, he conceived the noble idea of a grand European League, for the purpose of rescuing from the dominion of Buonaparte the countries which France had subdued since 1792, and for reducing that kingdom within its ancient limits. With regard to the territories which were

to be taken from France, he proposed arrangements, by means of which they might form a barrier against her future projects of aggrandizement; and finally, to introduce into Europe a general system of public right. In fact, the plan of Mr. Pitt, which was communicated to the Russian government (June 19, 1805), was the same as that which, ten years afterwards, was executed by the Grand Alliance; taking this additional circumstance into account, namely, the restoration of legitimacy, without which they would only have built their schemes upon the sand. If this plan failed in 1805, it was only because they calculated on the participation of Prussia, as an indispensable condition; which they did not give up when that power had declared her resolution to preserve her neutrality.

Here it will be proper to point out, in their chronological order, the treaties which composed, or were connected with, the third coalition. 1. A treaty in form of a declaration between the courts of St. Petersburg and Vienna (November 6, 1804), by which they engaged as follows:—Russia to fit out 115,000 men, and Austria 235,000; with the view, not of effecting a counter-revolution in France, but of preventing the further usurpations of Buonaparte, and obtaining the restoration of the King of Sardinia, the Grand Duke of Tuscany, and the heir of the House of Esté, to their own properties in Italy; or to obtain for them other settlements in lieu of these. 2. The convention of Stockholm, between Great Britain and Sweden (December 3), the object of which was, to enable the one to provide for the defence of Stralsund, and the other to form a body of Hanoverian troops in Pomerania. 3. A treaty of alliance between Russia and Sweden (January 14, 1805), the particulars of it are not known; but it is certain, that the debarkation of a body of Russians in Pomerania was reckoned on, which was to be under the command of the King of Sweden, in addition to the 12,000 men which he was himself to transport thither. It is probable, that by this treaty Gustavus Adolphus acceded likewise to the convention of November 6, 1804; but at the same time expressing his regret that they should have renounced the project of restoring legitimate monarchy in France. 4. The treaty of St. Petersburg between Russia and Great Britain (April 11), the object of which was to form a league for setting on foot an army of 50,000 men; independently of the force which Great Britain was to furnish for obtaining the evacuation of Hanover; for restoring independence to the republics of Holland and Switzerland; for re-establishing the King of Sardinia; for effecting the evacuation of Italy by the French; and for establishing in Europe an order of things which might oppose a barrier to any future usurpations. 5. Declaratory exchanged at St. Petersburg (August 9), between Austria, Great Britain and Russia; in lieu of a convention; by which Austria acceded to the treaty of the 11th April. 6. The convention of Helsingborg (August 31), between Great Britain and Sweden; being an extension of that of December 5, 1804. 7. The treaty of Beskaskog between the same powers (October 3); by which the King of Sweden joined the coalition.

By the treaty of April 11th, it was agreed that the Emperor Alexander should make another at-

tempt for arranging matters with Buonaparte, so as to prevent the war. M. de Novosilzoff, one of the Russian ministers, was sent to Paris. On his arrival at Berlin, he received the passports which the cabinet of Prussia had procured for him from Paris; but at the same time, he received an order from St. Petersburg not to continue his journey. The annexation of the Ligurian republic to France, at the moment when they were making conciliatory overtures to Buonaparte, appeared too serious an outrage for the emperor to prosecute further negotiations. War was consequently resolved on.

The preparations for the invasion of England had been carried on for some time with extraordinary vigour. Everything seemed to announce, that Buonaparte meant to attempt that perilous enterprise. Part of his troops had already embarked (August 27), when of a sudden the camp at Boulogne was broken up, and the army directed to move towards the Rhine, which river it passed within a month after. Austria had set on foot three armies. The Archduke Charles commanded that of Italy, where it was expected a decisive blow was to be struck; the second army, under the command of the Archduke John, was stationed in the Tyrol, to maintain a communication with the third army on the Inn, which was commanded nominally by the Archduke Ferdinand the emperor's cousin, but in reality by General Mack. The first Russian army under the command of General Kutusoff had arrived in Galicia, and was continuing its march in all haste. It was followed by another under Michelson. The Russian troops in Dalmatia were to attempt a landing in Italy.

The army of Mack passed the Inn (September 8). They had reckoned on the co-operation of the Elector of Bavaria; but that prince, who was always distrustful of Austria, abandoned the cause of the allies, and retired with his troops into Franconia. The Electors of Wurtemberg and Baden were desirous of concluding treaties of alliance with Buonaparte, after he had passed the Rhine; these treaties were signed at Ludwigsburg and Ettingen (October 4, 10). The plan of Buonaparte was to cut off the army of Mack who had entered Suabia, from that of Kutusoff which was marching through Austria. In this he succeeded, by presuming to violate the Prussian territory, Marmont, who had marched by way of Mayence, and Bernadotte, who had conducted the army into Franconia, where they were joined by the Bavarians, traversed the country of Anspach, and thus came on the rear of the Austrian army (October 6). From that date scarcely a day passed without a battle favourable to the French. Several divisions of the Austrians were obliged to lay down their arms. Mack, who had thrown himself into Ulm, lost all resolution, and signed a capitulation (October 17), by which he promised to surrender if assistance did not arrive within eight days. He did not, however, wait for this delay. By a second capitulation two days after, he surrendered with 25,000 men.

The army of Mack was thus totally dissipated, except 6,000 cavalry, with which the Archduke Ferdinand had opened himself a passage through Franconia; and 20,000 others with which Kienmayer had retired to Braunau, where he was met by the vanguard of Kutusoff. These two generals continued their retreat. The Russian army re-

passed the Danube directed their march days after (November 19) into the Danube Russians. In the with the second Russian (November 2) with the Emperor Alexander arrived themselves strong and immediately dis- battle of Austerlitz, (November 2) with the Emperor Alexander and Russian, favour.

Memtime Buonaparte which might be Archduke Charles had concentrated the sent supplies to Ge his retreat from Ital centre of hostilities effect, except by h with Masseua, who near Cilley he forme Duke John, who h (November 27). T princes amounted to marched towards V rose en masse to defe day after the battle received a reinforcement composed of Prussian on the point of pen some corps of Pruss Austrians, and English the north of German Moreover, the Engl preparing to effect a lan

It was in this crit of Vienna signed a which they engage army, and to quell Within twenty day Presburg between A (1805). The former tious which Buonap to him, on the part ancient states of Ve ania; and on the p Baden and the new emberg, the Tyrol a tions in Suabia.

The violation of t onia had excited t Berlin. The king venge this outrage Prussian troops oc French had just eva restored to its legit Russians, for whom and a passage t mission to traverse t of Kutusoff. The E arrived at Berlin (Archduke Anthony, Knights. A conven November 3) betw H. of Prussia. T coalition, with the r

Napoleon takes Vienna.
Battle of Austerlitz.
Conv. bet. Prussia & Russia.

PERIOD IX. A. D. 1802—1810.

Prussians occupy Hanover.
Admiral Calder's victory off 1799
off Finisterre.

passed the Danube near Grein (November 9), and directed their march towards the Morau. A few days after (November 13), Vienna, the capital of Austria, fell into the hands of the French. They passed the Danube near that city, and pursued the Russians. In the meantime General Buxhowden, with the second Russian army, having joined Kutsoff at Olmutz, on the same day that the Emperor Alexander arrived in the camp, they conceived themselves strong enough to encounter the enemy, and immediately discontinued their retreat. The battle of Austerlitz, which Buonaparte fought (December 2) with the combined army of the Austrians and Russians, decided the campaign in his favour.

Meantime Buonaparte found himself in a position which might become dangerous. When the Archduke Charles had perceived that the French had concentrated their forces on the Danube, he sent supplies to General Mack, and commenced his retreat from Italy, that he might be nearer the centre of hostilities. This retreat he could not effect, except by hazarding several engagements with Massena, who continued the pursuit. When near Cilley he formed a junction with the Archduke John, who had retreated from the Tyrol (November 27). The united armies of these two princes amounted to 80,000 men, with whom they marched towards Vienna; while the Hungarians rose en masse to defend their sovereign. The next day after the battle of Austerlitz, the Russian army received a reinforcement of 12,000 men. An army composed of Prussians, Saxons, and Hessians were on the point of penetrating into Franconia; and some corps of Prussians, Russians, Swedes, Hanoverians, and English, had joined a second army in the north of Germany, ready to invade Belgium. Moreover, the English and the Russians were preparing to effect a landing in the kingdom of Naples.

It was in this critical moment that the cabinet of Vienna signed an armistice at Austerlitz, by which they engaged to send back the Russian army, and to quell the insurrection in Hungary. Within twenty days after, peace was signed at Presburg between Austria and France (December 26). The former acknowledged all the usurpations which Buonaparte had committed, and ceded to him, on the part of the kingdom of Italy, the ancient states of Venice, with Dalmatia and Albania; and on the part of her allies the elector of Baden and the new Kings of Bavaria and Wurtemberg, the Tyrol and all her hereditary possessions in Suabia.

The violation of the Prussian territory in Franconia had excited the most lively indignation at Berlin. The king resolved, sword in hand, to revenge this outrage against his royal dignity. The Prussian troops occupied Hanover, which the French had just evacuated; and that country was restored to its legitimate sovereign. A body of Russians, for whom they had till then vainly demanded a passage through Silesia, obtained permission to traverse that province to join the army of Kutsoff. The Emperor Alexander had himself arrived at Berlin (October 25), as well as the Archduke Anthony, grand-master of the Teutonic knights. A convention was concluded at Potsdam (November 3) between Alexander and Frederic III. of Prussia. This latter prince joined the coalition, with the reservation of a preliminary at-

tempt to obtain the assent of Buonaparte to conditions extremely equitable. In case these were rejected, Frederic promised to take the field with 180,000 men, who, in fact, were put in a condition to march at the earliest notice. Count Haugwitz, who had been sent to Vienna as the bearer of overtures of peace to Buonaparte, accompanied with an energetic declaration, took it into his head that it would be prejudicial to the interests of Prussia were he to press the object of his commission; he resolved, therefore, to wait the course of events. After the truce of Austerlitz, he took it upon him to change the system of his government. Without having any sort of authority, he concluded an alliance with Buonaparte at Vienna (December 15), for the guarantee of their respective states, and for those of Bavaria and the Porte. Prussia was to cede the principality of Anspach to Bavaria; that of Neuchatel to France; and that of Cleves to a prince of the Empire, whom Buonaparte might name. In return Prussia was to get possession of the Electorate of Hanover.

When Count Haugwitz arrived at Berlin with the treaty, Frederic at first was inclined to reject it; but the minister having represented to him the danger to which this would expose him in the present state of affairs, the king reluctantly consented to ratify the treaty; provided a clause was added, that the occupation of the provinces mutually ceded should only be announced as provisional, until the King of England should give his assent, by a future treaty, to the cession of Hanover. It was in this manner that Prussia, in effect, got possession of that electorate (January 27, 1806). Meantime, Count Haugwitz, who had repaired to Paris, found it impossible to obtain the acceptance of Buonaparte to the ratification of the treaty so modified. He then signed a second convention (February 15), by which Prussia engaged to declare the occupation of Hanover definitive; and to shut the rivers in the north of Germany against the English. The King of Prussia, who had already disbanded his army, found himself in a situation that obliged him to ratify that arrangement.

Buonaparte had made prodigious efforts to revive the French marine. The fleet at Rochefort, commanded by Admiral Missiessi, had taken the opportunity of sailing from that port (January 11, 1805). They had set out with the intention of levying contributions in the Little Antilles, belonging to the English; and after throwing in supplies to General Ferrand, who still kept possession of St. Domingo, they had returned without accident to Rochefort. The fleet at Toulon, consisting of fourteen vessels of the line, commanded by Admiral Villeneuve, and having on board troops under the command of General Lauriston, probably destined for Ireland, had repaired to Cadiz (April 9), where they were joined by the Spanish fleet under Admiral Gravina. Next day the two combined fleets sailed from that port, but afterwards separated. That under Villeneuve had proceeded to Martinico; but being apprized of the arrival of Lord Nelson at Barbadoes, Villeneuve again joined the Spanish admiral, when the fleet returned to Europe. An engagement took place near Cape Finisterre (July 22), which was honourable to Sir Robert Calder, the English admiral, who captured two ships of the line. Being soon after consti-

derably reinforced, and amounting to thirty-five ships of the line, they set sail for Cadiz, where a partial blockade was maintained for some time by Calder and Collingwood. But Nelson, who had been invested with the command of the English fleet, induced the enemy, by means of a pretended retreat, to leave their station. An engagement took place off Cape Trafalgar (October 21), which cost the English admiral his life, but which ruined the combined fleet. Villeneuve was made prisoner, and Gravina fled towards Cadiz with ten ships. This glorious victory secured to England the command of the sea.

When Buonaparte had made preparations for marching against Austria, he resolved to reinforce his army in Italy by the troops which occupied a part of the kingdom of Naples. To ingratiate himself with Ferdinand IV., he concluded a treaty with that prince (September 21), by which the latter, on obtaining the evacuation of his own states, promised to remain neutral. He did not depend, however, on that monarch's fulfilling his promise. It was a part of the plan of the allies, that the Russian and English armies should land in the kingdom of Naples; the one by the way of Corfu, and the other from Malta. The plan was carried into execution, and the foreign troops were received as friends. A decree of Napoleon, dated from Schönbrunn (December 27), had declared that the dynasty of the Bourbons had ceased to reign at Naples. After the battle of Austerlitz, the Russians and English abandoned Italy; and Ferdinand IV. found himself without defence, exposed to a French army, who were approaching his capital. He embarked for Sicily, when the French entered Naples (January 1806), and Joseph Buonaparte, the brother of Napoleon, was created King of the Two Sicilies (March 30), although his sway never extended further than the kingdom of Naples.

Those are probably in a mistake who imagine they find in the conduct of Buonaparte, the gradual development of a great plan, conceived beforehand, and springing from his head, so to speak, like the fabled Minerva from the brain of Jupiter. The circumstances in which he was placed, the success of his arms, and the weakness of foreign cabinets, suggested to him one idea after another. It was when he was on his march against the Russians that he received the news of the battle of Trafalgar, which had completely destroyed the labour of three years, and annihilated his hopes of reducing England by planting his standard on her soil. His imagination then conceived the plan of opposing one combination of strength to another, and surrounding France with a number of states, independent in appearance, but subject to the direction of the head of the Empire.

After the peace of Presburg, he had repaired to Munich, where he adopted his stepson, Eugene Beauharnais, and declared him his successor in the kingdom of Italy. In announcing this elevation to the senate (January 12, 1806), he declared that he reserved to himself the right of determining the common tie which was to unite all the states composing the *Federative System of the French Empire*. This was the first time that this system was spoken of. In a short time after, he declared that the whole peninsula of Italy made part of the Grand Empire. Finally, a constitu-

tional statute of the Imperial family, which he published at that time (March 30), may be regarded as the fundamental law of the *Federative System* he had lately announced. That statute granted to the Emperor of the French an absolute supremacy over all the sovereigns of his family; and he no doubt had great hopes that the time would arrive when no others would be found in any of the adjacent states.

In annexing the Venetian provinces to the kingdom of Italy, Buonaparte detached from them Massa-Carrara and Carfagnana, which he bestowed on the Prince of Lucca. At the same time, he created within these provinces twelve duchies, and hereditary fiefs of the Empire, and three within the states of Parma; all of which he disposed of in favour of his generals and ministers.

The duchy of Cleves, ceded by Prussia, as well as that of Berg, which had been ceded to him by the King of Bavaria, were conferred, together with the hereditary dignity of Admiral of France, on his brother-in-law, Joachim Murat (March 30). Alexander Berthier was created Prince of Neuchâtel (June 5). At a later period he granted the duchy of Benevento to M. Talleyrand Perigord, under the title of Sovereign Principality; and the principality of Pontecorvo to Jean Baptiste Bernadotte, the brother-in-law of Joseph Buonaparte. He took these two territories from the states of the church, under the pretext that their sovereignty was an object of litigation between the courts of Rome and Naples; an allegation which was untrue.

The continuation of the History of Buonaparte presents us with a series of new usurpations and aggressions. Towards the end of January, the French troops entered into the free city of Frankfurt, where they levied 4,000,000, to punish the inhabitants for their connexion with the English. Buonaparte was living at that time in the most perfect peace with the German Empire, to which that city belonged, and which could not protect it. By the treaty of Presburg, the Bocca di Cattaro, in Dalmatia, was to be restored to the French; but the Russians, whose fleet was cruising off these coasts, immediately took possession of that place (February 4), at the moment when the Austrians were about to surrender it to the French. Buonaparte made this a pretext for refusing to give up to the court of Vienna the fortress of Braunau, which he was to evacuate according to the stipulations of that same treaty, and for leaving a part of his army in Germany. He did more; he ordered General Lauriston, who commanded the French army in Dalmatia, to occupy Ragusa (May 27), a republic placed under the protection of the Porte, with whom there subsisted a treaty of peace. It was not, however, until the 13th of August, 1807, that Ragusa was formally united to the kingdom of Italy.

The Elector of Baden and the Princes of Nassau were obliged to make cessions to France. The former surrendered Kehl, and the latter Cassel and Kosteheim, opposite Mayence. Wesel, a fortress in the duchy of Cleves, was likewise occupied by the French troops. All these were so many violations of the peace of Luneville, and the treaty of Vienna in 1805.

In order to promote this federative system, the States-General of the Batavian republic received a hint to petition Buonaparte for a king. A treaty

in consequence of which Louis, the created hereditary and the title to descend; the man accepted; he had never coveted such dignity.

William Pitt, who ground to call the ground that title to be beginning of the year his former antagonist; history. He immediately peace between a commission, on the part to Lord Yarmouth; Lauderdale. After the negotiations ended; any change in the r England; nevertheless among the important were the immediate of us shall have occu

The Emperor Alex-tempt for a reconcil-ment M. D'Oubril to-son of ten days, cor-Clarke; the French pri-ity which it was agr-should evacuate the French troops quit R- of the republic of the

acknowledged, as well-erity of the Porte French troops should- two parties should us-ure a cessation of the Sweden; that Buom-ation of Russia, in a A secret article sec- Balearic Isles, in co- of Naples. It thus-ardia was the gre- Alexander refused to- was that he consid- honourable, or that- conclusion of the con- took place at this tim-

The confederation- the most important- resburg. That eve- the state of Germany- of that Empire und- was prepared by the- required the sovereig- ed Wurtemberg, as- well as by several oth- took place after that- of the Elector Arch- himself the right of a- and nominating Card- Buonaparte's uncle. -line was conclude- between Buonaparte- princes, including the- ted from the Germ- particular union amo- tion of Buonapart-

• Marquis of Lucchesi- the Confederation of th-

...in consequence concluded at Paris (March 24), by which Louis, the brother of Napoleon, was constituted hereditary and constitutional King of Holland; the title to descend to his male issue. That young man accepted with reluctance a crown which he had never coveted, and which he wore with much dignity.

William Pitt, whom history would have been proud to call the great Pitt, had she not already given that title to his father, had died about the beginning of the year (January 23). Charles Fox, his former antagonist, succeeded him in the ministry. He immediately entered into negotiations for peace between France and England. This commission, on the part of the latter, was intrusted first to Lord Yarmouth and afterwards to Lord Lansdowne. After the death of Fox (Sept. 13), the negotiations ended without having produced any change in the relations between France and England; nevertheless they deserve to be placed among the important events of that year, as they were the immediate cause of the war with Prussia, to which we shall have occasion to mention.

The Emperor Alexander likewise made an attempt for a reconciliation with Buonaparte. He sent M. D'Oubril to Paris, who, after a negotiation of ten days, concluded a treaty with General Clarke, the French plenipotentiary (July 20, 1806), by which it was agreed that the Russian troops should evacuate the Bocco di Cattaro, and the French troops quit Ragusa; that the independence of the republic of the Seven Islands should be acknowledged, as well as the independence and integrity of the Porte; that in three months the French troops should evacuate Germany; that the two parties should use their joint influence to procure an cessation of the war between Russia and Sweden; that Buonaparte should accept the mediation of Russia, in negotiating a maritime peace. A secret article secured to Ferdinand IV. the Eolie Isles, in compensation for the kingdom of Naples. It thus appeared that the King of Sardinia was the greatest sufferer. The Emperor Alexander refused to ratify this treaty, whether it was that he considered the terms not altogether honourable, or that he was displeas'd with the conclusion of the confederation of the Rhine, which took place at this time.

The confederation of the Rhine was undoubtedly the most important consequence of the peace of Presburg. That event, which entirely changed the state of Germany, and placed so large a portion of that Empire under obedience to Buonaparte, was prepared by the article of the peace which recognised the sovereignty of the Kings of Bavaria and Wurtemberg, and the Elector of Baden; as well as by several other irregular transactions which took place after that time. Such was the conduct of the Elector Arch-Chancellor, in arrogating to himself the right of appointing his own successor; and nominating Cardinal Fesch as such, who was Buonaparte's uncle. The confederation of the Rhine was concluded at Paris (July 12, 1806), between Buonaparte and sixteen of the German Princes, including the Duke of Cleves, who separated from the Germanic Empire, and formed a particular union among themselves, under the protection of Buonaparte.*

* Marquis de Luchesi's Hist. of the Causes and Effects of the Confederation of the Rhine.

The declarations which the minister of France and those of the confederated estates remitted on the same day to the diet of Ratisbon, intimated to that assembly that the German Empire had ceased to exist. The chief of the Germanic body, who had been kept ignorant of all these intrigues, then published a spirited declaration (August 6), by which he resigned a crown which could only appear valuable in his eyes so long as he was able to fulfil the duties and exercise the prerogatives which were attached to it.

This transaction, which put an end to the German Empire, had been kept a secret from Prussia. Buonaparte, in announcing to Frederic William the result which it had produced, invited him to form a similar confederation in the North of Germany; but, at the same time, he negotiated privately with the Electors of Hesse and Saxony, to prevent them from entering into that union; and declared, that he could never permit the cities of Bremen, Hamburg, and Lubec, to become parties to it. In his negotiations with England, he proposed to make over these cities to Ferdinand IV., King of the Two Sicilies. He carried his perfidy even further. He several times offered to the English plenipotentiaries the same Electorate of Hanover, which, a few months before, he had almost compelled Prussia to claim as her own; and he offered to the Elector of Hesse the principality of Fulda, which had been granted to the House of Orange, then in strict alliance with that of Brandenburg. All these underhand manoeuvres opened the eyes of the cabinet of Berlin, which immediately resolved to declare war. Unfortunately for Prussia, she commenced hostilities without waiting the arrival of the supplies which Russia owed her, in virtue of the alliance between the two states by the treaty of Peterhoff (July 28, 1800); and she had to take the field against an active enemy, whose warlike troops were already in the heart of Germany.

General Knobelsdorff, whom the King of Prussia had sent to Paris, gave in the demands which were to be considered as his ultimatum:—Buonaparte treated his propositions as extravagant and insulting, and accordingly commenced hostilities. The campaign was decided by the battle of Jena, or rather by two battles which were fought on the same day (October 14, 1806). Buonaparte in person gained the one near Jena over Prince Hohenlohe; Marshal Davoust gained the other near Auerstadt over the Duke of Brunswick, commander-in-chief of the Prussian army. The route was complete. For a short time the troops retired without confusion. The approach of the enemy's cavalry, however, extinguished all remains of order, and the most precipitate dispersion of the vanquished army ensued. About 20,000 were killed and wounded in the battle and pursuit; and the prisoners formed at least an equal number.* The scattered remains of the troops who united after the action were either defeated or obliged to surrender as prisoners of war. The king, with the wreck of his army, marched back to Prussia. Berlin, his capital, fell into the hands of the conqueror. The carelessness, the unskillfulness, or the treachery of their commanders, and the want of means of defence, were the causes why several

* Cursory View of Prussia, from the death of Frederic II. to the peace of Tilsit.

fortresses, and whole battalions of troops, surrendered after a slight resistance. There were some who were even obliged to capitulate in spite of their bravery. At Erfurt, Field-Marshal Mellen-dorff capitulated with 14,000 men (October 16). Spandau fell on the same day that the enemy entered into Berlin (October 25). Prince Hohenlohe, after a brave defence, capitulated at Prentzlau (October 29), with a corps originally consisting of 16,000 infantry, and sixteen regiments of cavalry. Stettin and Custrin opened their gates after a slight resistance (November 1). At Lubec, 21,000 men, with General Blucher, laid down their arms (Nov. 7). Magdeburg capitulated next day with 22,000 men.

Immediately after the battle of Jena, Buonaparte took possession of the principality of Fulda. He had the unfeeling insolence to send a message to the old Duke of Brunswick, that none of his family should ever reign after him. That prince died of the wounds he had received at Auerstadt; and his brutal foe would not even permit his lifeless body to be deposited among the ashes of his ancestors. The Elector of Hesse, who had remained neutral, was declared an enemy to France, and his territories seized. Buonaparte, in return, granted neutrality to the Elector of Saxony, whose troops had fought against him at Jena.

The King of Prussia had tried to allay the storm which threatened his monarchy. The Marquis de Lucchesini and General Zastrow entered into a negotiation with Marshal Duroc at Charlottenburg (October 30). Buonaparte refused to ratify the preliminaries which were signed there, because the idea had occurred to him in the meantime of exciting the Poles to insurrection. An armistice was then signed (November 16), on conditions extremely rigorous, by which Breslau, Glogau, Colberg, Graudentz, and Dantzic, were delivered up to the French. Frederic, who had resolved to throw himself on Russia, whose forces were approaching in all haste, rejected that armistice. From Berlin, Buonaparte repaired to Posenia, where he concluded a treaty with the Elector of Saxony (December 11). That prince then assumed the title of king, joined the confederation of the Rhine, and got possession of the Circle of Coburg, belonging to Prussia. By a treaty signed at the same place (December 15), the Dukes of Saxony, of the race of Ernest, were likewise received into the Confederation of the Rhine.

A Russian army of 90,000 men had arrived in Prussia in the month of November. Frederic William, on his side, formed a new army of 40,000 men. Several actions took place without any decisive result; but after the battle of Pultusk (Dec. 26), where the victory was claimed both by the French and Russians, each party retired to winter quarters.

It was during Buonaparte's stay at Berlin that he conceived the idea of the continental system; or at least reduced its elements into shape. The purport of this system was to ruin the commerce, and by consequence the prosperity of England, by excluding from the continent of Europe the importation not only of her own manufactures, but the productions of her colonies; the use of which had become, through long habit, one of the necessities of life to all the nations of Europe; and for which, moreover, no substitute could be found in

home manufactures. This chimerical scheme, and the federative system, which we have already mentioned, were the two scourges which Buonaparte inflicted on the continent of Europe. The abuse it was alleged, which the English made of their superiority by sea, had provoked Buonaparte to this measure. The right of blockade, that is, the right of a belligerent power to station a force before a hostile port sufficient to prevent any neutral vessel from entering, is founded in principle. But England pretended, that if a port were declared to be under blockade, it must be considered as actually blockaded; and accordingly, she had declared all the ports between Brest and the Elbe under blockade (May 16). An order issued by Buonaparte, known by the name of the Decree of Berlin, declared the whole British islands in a state of blockade, by way of reprisals (November 21). He commanded all British subjects to be arrested, who might be found in the countries occupied by his troops, or those of his allies. He ordered their property, and every article of British or colonial produce on the continent, to be confiscated; and excluded from his ports all vessels which should come directly from Britain, or any of its dependencies. The development of this system we shall notice afterwards.

The repose of the armies did not continue longer than a month. General Bennigsen, who had the chief command of the Russians and Prussians, undertook to relieve the cities of Graudentz, Dantzic, and Colberg. After a number of petty engagements, which claim no particular notice, the campaign was terminated by the battle of Eylau in Prussia (February 8, 1807). Buonaparte, or rather Davoust, was successful against the left wing and the centre of the allies; but Lestocq, the Prussian general, having arrived on the field of battle, near the right wing of the Prussians, which had never been engaged, marched instantly to support the left wing which was giving way, and snatched the victory from the hands of Davoust. Bennigsen, who was in want of ammunition, retired towards Koningsberg, leaving Buonaparte on the field of battle, which was covered with 30,000 of the French slain, and 12,000 wounded. The Russians had lost 17,000 men. After this carnage, Buonaparte announced that he had defeated the Russians, and retired behind the Passarge. Hostilities were then suspended for some months.

In the month of February, negotiations for peace were renewed. Buonaparte, who was at Osterode, sent General Bertrand to the King of Prussia at Memel, to try to detach him from Russia. When the king had declined this proposal, some deliberation took place as to the terms of an armistice; but the Emperor Alexander, who had also arrived at Memel, saw that this was only a manoeuvre of Buonaparte, who merely wished to gain time to repair his losses. The negotiations accordingly were broken off. Baron Hardenberg, who had been placed by the King of Prussia at the helm of foreign affairs, then resumed the project of Mr. Pitt, which had failed in 1803, because Count Haugwitz, the former minister, had dissuaded Frederic William from entering into the alliance. The basis of a new coalition was laid by the convention of Bartenstein, between Russia and Prussia (April 21), in which Austria, Great Britain, Sweden and Denmark, were invited to

the same day. Sweden was likewise obliged to give up the consequence of which a number of troops to be sent to enter into a decision, she tried in the month of June were made, which were promised to be signed at London (circumstances prevailed). While the armies were engaged, Marshal Lefebvre. After several a general Kalkreuth on honourable terms (Tilsit, likewise capitulated. These were restored to the command in the month of July taking place, decided the campaign. Bennigsen defeated the French, when the Russians, as they no longer could bear their exertions; but the armistice arrived on the 25th and the corps of Mouton took advantage of the confusion in the Russian army to march on the route. In consequence Davoust opened her grand army and Prussia (June 18); and the armistice.

Meantime the negotiations were still suspended to the conference of General Stutterheim between the two monarchs, to form a new alliance; but this was without any vigour. Cabinets, and even a congress, were wished to prevent the success of their negotiations. It appeared at Tilsit on the 9th to create an armistice. The armistice was not (June 21), which was suspended for four days between Alexander and Napoleon. The object of the latter, who was to seduce the North German monarch and political views took place on the 1st of November. Each general and courtier was placed on opposite bank at the conference with all equality. They conversed, and the ambitious views of such glowing character and unlimited power and unlimited power were attractive prospects might derive from an alliance, that Alexander was a new adviser, an ambitious and disgraced field-marshal Kalkreuth part of Prussia. Interview, at which

mental System.
Lylau.
against Napoleon.

merical scheme, and
to have already men
which Buonaparte
Europe. The abuse
lish made of their
ked Buonaparte to
ockade, that is, the
station a force be
prevent any neutral
in principle. Bu
ort were declared to
considered as actu
y, she had decreed
and the Elbe unde
issued by Buona
e Decree of Berlin
ands in a state of
November 21). He
to be arrested, who
es occupied by his
He ordered their
British or colonial
e confiscated; and
vessels which should
ny of its dependen
is system we shall
not continue long
gsen, who had the
and Prussians, un
raudentz, Dantzi
r of petty engage
lar notice, the cam
battle of Eylau in
onaparte, or rather
the left wing and
stocq, the Prussian
field of battle, near
s, which had never
ly to support the
y, and snatched the
voust. Bennigsen
n, retired towards
o on the field of
0,000 of the French
e Russians had bot
re, Buonaparte an
the Russians, and
Hostilities were
negotiations for
parte, who was at
nd to the King of
detach him from
elined this propos
e as to the terms
uper Alexander,
saw that this was
arte, who merely
s losses. The ne
oken off. Baro
ed by the King of
airs, then resuave
ad failed in 1804,
mer minister, had
entering into the
lition was laid by
between Russia and
Austria, Great
were invited to

Siege of Dantzie.
Battle of Friedland.
Interview of Tilsit.

PERIOD IX. A.D. 1802—1810.

Peace of Tilsit.
The Ionian Republic. 203
Gustavus Adolphus IV.

The same day a convention with the King of Sweden was likewise signed at Bartenstein, in consequence of which Prussia promised to send a body of troops to Pomerania. Austria was dissuaded to enter into this project, but before coming to a decision, she tried the scheme of mediation; and in the month of March, new proposals for peace were made, which proved unsuccessful. Supplies were promised to Prussia by a convention signed at London (June 27), but which a change of circumstances prevented from being ratified.

While the armies continued in a kind of inaction, Marshal Lefebvre pressed the siege of Dantzie. After several attempts to blockade the place, General Kalkreuth took it by capitulation on very honourable terms (May 24). Neisse, Kozel, and Glatz, likewise capitulated in course of the following month. These two latter places were not to be restored to the French. Hostilities recommenced in the month of June. Skirmishes were daily taking place, until the battle of Friedland decided the campaign (June 14). General Bennigsen defeated the divisions of Lannes and Mortier, when the Russians, thinking the battle was joined as they no longer saw the enemy, slackened their exertions; but towards the evening Buonaparte arrived on the field of battle with guides, and the corps of Marshal Ney and Victor; and taking advantage of the confusion which appeared in the Russian army, he put them completely to the rout. In consequence of this defeat, Konigsberg opened her gates to the conqueror. The Russian and Prussian armies passed the Niemen (June 18); and next day Buonaparte entered Tilsit.

Meantime the cabinet of Vienna, with whom negotiations were still carrying on to obtain their accession to the convention of Bartenstein, held out General Stutterheim to the head quarters of the two monarchs, with power to sign a defensive alliance; but the war had then recommenced with new vigour. There was a party in both cabinets, and even among the allied generals, who wished to prevent this alliance; and this party succeeded in their designs. A Russian General appeared at Tilsit on the part of Bennigsen to negotiate an armistice, which was concluded on the spot (June 21), without including the Prussian army. Four days after, an interview took place between Alexander and Napoleon, on the invitation of the latter, who wished to exert all his address to seduce the Northern Autocrat from the paths of honour and political virtue. This memorable interview took place on a raft in the middle of the river Niemen. Each prince, accompanied by five generals and courtiers, reached the raft from the opposite bank at the same moment, and embraced each other with all the appearance of perfect cordiality. They conversed for two hours in a pavilion, and the ambitious despot of France displayed in such glowing colours the joys of arbitrary power and unlimited dominion, and held out such an attractive prospect of the advantages which he might derive from an union of councils and co-operation, that Alexander listened with pleasure to his new adviser, and was ready to rush into an honourable and disgraceful alliance. On the same day, Field-Marshal Kalkreuth signed an armistice on the part of Prussia. The next day he had a second interview, at which the King of Prussia assisted,

who, when he objected to some parts of the proposed treaty, was insulted with a hint of his not being entitled to the honour of consultation, as he had been so completely conquered. It was on this occasion that Buonaparte demanded that the Emperor Alexander should dismiss his minister Baron Budberg, and the King of Prussia Baron Hardenberg. The Prince Kourakin, and Count de Goltz were substituted in their place.

The treaty with Russia was first signed (July 7). The Emperor Alexander obtained from Buonaparte the spoliation of his former ally, or, according to the form which was given to it in that transaction, *That the King of Prussia should recover one half of his estates.* The provinces which Prussia had obtained by the second and third division of Poland were ceded to the King of Saxony, under the title of the duchy of Warsaw, with the exception of the fortress of Graudentz, which remained in the possession of Prussia, and the city of Dantzie, which was to regain its independence, with the exception of the department of Bialystock which was annexed to the Russian Empire. Alexander acknowledged the kings created by Buonaparte, including the King of Westphalia. He likewise acknowledged the confederation of the Rhine, and ceded to Buonaparte the seignory of Jever, which he inherited from his mother. He promised to withdraw his troops from Moldavia and Wallachia; and to make common cause with Buonaparte against England, should the latter refuse to make peace by submitting to the principles of free commerce by sea. It appears, moreover, by certain secret articles, that Alexander promised to surrender to Buonaparte the Bocca di Cattaro, and the isles of the Ionian republic; which took place in the month of August following. The peace which was signed between Russia and Buonaparte two days after (July 9), included nearly the same stipulations.

A special convention was required for executing the articles of the treaty, which related to the evacuation of the states of the King of Prussia. This was negotiated and signed at Konigsberg (July 12) with unpardonable precipitancy, by Field-Marshal Kalkreuth, who forgot to insert certain stipulations so essential and so obvious, that it must have appeared to him superfluous to mention them. Buonaparte showed a signal instance of bad faith in taking advantage of these omissions to ruin the provinces which were left in possession of Prussia. It may be justly said, that the convention of Konigsberg did nearly as much mischief to Prussia as the peace of Tilsit itself. It occasioned the necessity of signing a series of subsequent conventions, by each of which Prussia had to submit to some new sacrifice. Some of the more important of these we shall afterwards have occasion to mention.

The King of Sweden, who was attacked in Pomerania by Marshal Mortier, had concluded an armistice at Schlattkorf (April 18). Gustavus Adolphus IV. projected an attack on Marshal Bruue, while a body of 10,000 Prussians were to make a descent for blockading Colberg. To carry this project into execution, he was so eager to declare against the armistice, that, on the signature of the peace of Tilsit, he found himself alone under arms, and exposing his troops to great danger. This unseasonable zeal obliged him to evacuate

Stralsund and the whole of Pomerania (September 7).

In erecting the duchy of Warsaw, Buonaparte had given it a constitution modelled after that of France, without paying the least attention to the difference of manners, customs, and localities of the inhabitants. The King of Saxony was put in possession of that state; but the new duchy was nothing else than a province of the French Empire. The city of Dantzic was again plunged into a state of the most abject dependence; and until the year 1814, it remained under the orders of a governor-general appointed by the French. The throne of Westphalia was destined by Buonaparte for his younger brother Jerome. That monarchy was composed of the greater part of those provinces ceded by the King of Prussia; of nearly all the estates of the elector of Hesse and the Duke of Brunswick; of a district belonging to the electorate of Hanover; of the principality of Corvey, and the county of Rittberg—containing in all about 2,000,000 of inhabitants. Only a small part of this kingdom was situated in Westphalia; and it is not known by what chance the name of that country was selected for the new monarchy. Deputies from that kingdom were summoned to Paris where they received from the hands of Buonaparte a constitutional charter (November 15), in the construction of which they had never once been consulted. As to the other districts which Buonaparte had taken possession of in Germany, or of which he had deprived their rightful sovereigns, viz., the Elector of Hanover, the principalities of Erfurt, Fulda, Baireuth, and Munster, with the counties of Catzenelbogen and Hanau, they were governed entirely to his own interest, and disposed of at his convenience.

While the armies of Buonaparte were occupied in Prussia, Spain formed the resolution of shaking off the yoke which the tyrant of France had imposed upon her. Charles IV. solicited privately the mediation of the Emperor Alexander, to bring about a peace with England. By a proclamation of October 36, 1806, a levy of 40,000 men was ordered for the defence of the country, without mentioning against what enemy. This imprudent step, which they had not courage to prosecute, ruined Spain. At the commencement of 1807, a French army was assembled in the vicinity of Bayonne. A trap was laid for Charles IV.; and he had the misfortune to fall into it. According to a convention signed at Fontainebleau (October 27), between his plenipotentiary and that of Buonaparte, for the partition of Portugal, that kingdom was to be divided into three lots. The most northerly part was destined for the King of Etruria (who was to surrender up Tuscany to Buonaparte), and to be called the kingdom of Northern Lusitania. The southern part, comprising Algarves, was to form a principality for Don Manuel Godoy. The provinces in the middle part were to be disposed of at the general peace, when the King of Spain was to assume the title of emperor of the two Americas.

Immediately after the signing of this treaty, Buonaparte announced to the Queen-Dowager of Etruria, who was regent for her son Louis II., that the kingdom no longer belonged to him; and that a new destiny awaited him in Spain. In course of a few days, the French troops occupied

Tuscany. Maria Louisa resigned the government and retired to Madrid. All this took place after Buonaparte had obtained orders that the 15,000 Spaniards, who were in Etruria, should be sent to the islands of Denmark.

A decree of the French senate, of August 1807, though not published till a month after, suppressed the tribunate, and introduced other changes, intended to extinguish all traces of the republic. By a treaty signed at Fontainebleau Buonaparte made over to his brother Louis, the principality of East Friesland and the territory of Jever, in lieu of the city and port of Flushing.

In terms of the treaty of the 27th October 30,000 French troops, under the command of Junot, crossed the Pyrenees in two divisions; and took possession of Pampeluna, St. Sebastian, Figueras and Barcelona. The two divisions united again at Salamanca, and being reinforced by 13,000 Spaniards, they marched upon Lisbon; while 40,000 others assembled at Bayonne, under the pretence of supporting their companions if it were necessary. The Prince Regent of Portugal embarked with his treasures (November 29), and departed for Brazil. The whole of Portugal was taken possession of; and General Junot proclaimed that the House of Braganza had ceased to reign in Europe; but the French never executed their scheme of partition.

We have already observed, what progress the federative system of the French Empire had made in 1807, by the foundation of the kingdom of Westphalia and the duchy of Warsaw, and by the occupation of Portugal; and we shall next advert to measures adopted during the same year by Buonaparte, for consolidating the continental system, and by Great Britain for counteracting its effects. An order was issued by the British Cabinet (January 7), declaring that no neutral vessel would be permitted to trade with any port belonging to France or her allies, or occupied by her troops, or under their dependence. A decree published at Warsaw (January 25th), ordered the confiscation of all English merchandise in the Hansatic towns, which had been occupied by the order of Buonaparte. An order of the British Cabinet (March 11) again prescribed a rigorous blockade of the mouths of the Elbe, the Weser, and the Ems. A declaration was made by Buonaparte (October 14), in presence of the foreign ambassadors at Fontainebleau, purporting that he would permit no connexion, either commercial or diplomatic, between the continental powers and England. An order of the British Cabinet (November 11) declared, that all the ports and places in France, and the countries in alliance with them, or any other country at war with England, as well as all other ports and places in Europe where the British flag was excluded, though not actually at war with Great Britain; and all other ports and places of the colonies belonging to her enemies should henceforth be subjected to the same restrictions as if they were really under blockade and, consequently, that the vessels destined for these ports should be subjected to examination by the British cruisers; and required to stop at the British station, and pay a duty proportioned to the value of the cargo. Another order of the British Cabinet (November 25) modified the preceding declaration in favour of neutral vessels

which should come
merchandise or col
ports. A decree of
Milan, b
place, declared, tha
marched by a Brit
whatever at the recy
ment, should be de
English property; a
original and nationa
captured wherever
the British Is
with by sea and land
Having thus esta
Buonaparte used ev
continental powers a
altered to it, after t
was entered into
ceded to it (June
1808), and Sweden
for some years, the
other medium of com
by way of Constant
Christendom, wh
continental system,
sovereign Pontiff de
prohibited all inte
whom they had su
ary to religion. In
this resistance, C
occupy Rome (Febr
commencement of
attacks, by which Bu
that great personage
strip the states
posed at St. Cloud
rbino, Ancona, M
were annexed to the
In order to add
such his servants to t
interest, Buonaparte
oblesse—though th
he should not—but
which should pass in
descendants. These
akes, counts, barons
they were constitu
which be transmitt
rees of the senate
declaring the re-uni
sives of conscripts.
The spoliation o
trivial crime, compa
erty and cunning
men were deprived
second French arm
the Pyrenees about
under the command
sued slowly as if i
the capital. A pop
Madrid, directed a
peace; and Charles
ment of his reign,
affairs, abdicated th
the Prince of Astu
assumed the title
figues of the queen
but the throne, and
son embroiled the
French troops enter

which should come to discharge either English merchandise or colonial produce in the British ports. A decree of the 17th December, called the decree of Milan, because it was issued at that place, declared, that all ships which should be searched by a British vessel, or pay any tax whatever at the requisition of the English Government, should be denationalized, and regarded as English property; and having thus forfeited their original and national rights, they might be lawfully captured wherever found. The same decree declared the British Isles to be in a state of blockade both by sea and land.

Having thus established the continental system, Buonaparte used every endeavour to make all the continental powers accede to it. Prussia and Russia adhered to it, after the peace of Tilsit. Denmark soon entered into this French system. Spain acceded to it (January 8), Austria (February 18, 1806), and Sweden (January 6th, 1810); so that, for some years, the Continent of Europe had no other medium of communication with England than by way of Constantinople. There was one prince in Christendom, who refused his accession to the continental system, and that was Pius VII. This sovereign Pontiff declared, that an alliance which prohibited all intercourse with a nation from whom they had suffered no grievance, was contrary to religion. In order to punish his holiness for this resistance, General Miollis had orders to occupy Rome (February 2, 1808). This was the commencement of a series of aggressions and attacks, by which Buonaparte vainly hoped to bend that great personage. To gratify his resentment, he stripped the states of the church, by a decree issued at St. Cloud (April 2), of the provinces of Urbino, Aucona, Macerata and Camerino, which were annexed to the kingdom of Italy.

In order to add lustre to his crown, and to attach his servants to him by the ties of vanity and interest, Buonaparte resolved, not to restore the noblesse—though there was no reason known why he should not—but to create titles of nobility which should pass in hereditary succession to their descendants. These titles were those of princes, dukes, counts, barons, and chevaliers or knights. They were constituted by an Imperial statute, which he transmitted to the senate; for the decrees of the senate were seldom used except in declaring the re-union of territories or ordering series of conscripts.

The spoliation of the church appeared but a trivial crime, compared with that masterpiece of ferocity and cunning by which the House of Bourbons were deprived of the throne of Spain. The second French army formed at Bayonne, passed the Pyrenees about the beginning of the year, under the command of Joachim Murat, and advanced slowly as if it only waited an order to seize the capital. A popular insurrection broke out at Madrid, directed against Godoy, the Prince of Peace; and Charles IV., who, from the commencement of his reign, had been disgusted with state affairs, abdicated the crown in favour of his son, the Prince of Asturias (March 19, 1808), who assumed the title of Ferdinand VII. The intrigues of the queen-mother, who was unwilling to quit the throne, and the plots concerted by Murat, soon embroiled the royal family in disputes. The French troops entered Madrid (March 23). Taking

advantage of the inexperience and good faith of the young monarch, they inveigled him into an interview with Buonaparte at Bayonne, where Charles IV. and his queen, allured by promises of favour and friendship, likewise presented themselves. This weak prince there retracted his abdication, and ceded his dominions over to Buonaparte by a formal treaty (May 5). By threatening Ferdinand VII. with death, they extorted from him a similar declaration (May 10). Charles IV., his queen, and the Prince of Peace, were conveyed to Compiègne, and afterwards to Marseilles.

Ferdinand VII. and his brothers were imprisoned in the castle of Valençay. Buonaparte conferred the throne of Spain on his brother Joseph (June 6), who was then King of Naples. A Spanish junta, assembled at Bayonne, received a constitution from the hands of Napoleon. On obtaining the crown of Spain, Joseph made over the kingdom of Naples to his brother, who in his turn resigned it to Murat, by a treaty concluded at Bayonne. Murat then gave up the duchies of Cleves and Berg.

Buonaparte found himself deceived as to the character of the Spanish nation, when he supposed they would tolerate this outrage with impunity. A tumult of the inhabitants of Madrid was quelled by Murat, who ordered his troops to fire upon the crowd (May 2), when upwards of 1,000 people lost their lives. Towards the end of the same month, a general insurrection broke out in all those parts of Spain not occupied by the enemy. This was a great annoyance to Buonaparte during the rest of his reign, and prevented him from subduing that Peninsula. It served as an example and encouragement to other nations to shake off his yoke. The Portuguese rose, in imitation of their neighbours. The English sent supplies to both nations; and it was beyond the Pyrenees that Buonaparte experienced those first disasters which were the harbingers of his downfall.

One event, more remarkable for the pomp with which it was accompanied than for the consequences which it produced, was the interview which took place at Erfurt (September 27) between the Emperor Alexander and Buonaparte. What negotiations might have been agitated there are not known with certainty, but publicity has been given to the measures concerted in common between Buonaparte and Alexander for making overtures of peace to England, although they must have foreseen that the attempt would prove fruitless. From that time an intimate friendship subsisted for two years between the courts of Russia and France.

The inconsiderate haste with which Field-Marshal Kalkreuth had concluded the Convention of Konigsberg, and the defects or omissions of that act, furnished the agents of Buonaparte with numerous pretexts for oppressing the Prussian states by perpetual aggressions; and for continuing not only to occupy the country, but to impose taxes for the service of France, without deducting their amount from the usual contribution which that kingdom had to pay. To extricate themselves from so harassing a situation, Prince William, the king's brother, who had been sent to Paris to negotiate for the evacuation of Prussia, signed a convention there (September 8), by which the king engaged to pay, at stated terms, the sum of

July 30), of which they took possession, and made themselves masters of Flushing, after a siege of fifteen days. But Lord Chatham found it impossible to execute his commission with regard to Buonaparte on account of the activity of Marshal Bernadotte, who had formed there an army of 6000 men. The whole expedition was badly conducted, and in about four months Lord Chatham returned to England. The English destroyed the fortifications of Flushing, which they were unable to retain.

Russia, as the ally of Austria, likewise took part in this war. A body of troops, commanded by Prince Galitzin, had entered Galicia; but it was merely a display, by which Alexander meant to fulfil an engagement that he had contracted with Prussia. The peace between Austria and France was signed at Schönbrunn (October 14, 1809), which regulated the territorial cessions made by the former to Buonaparte, the King of Saxony, and the Emperor of Russia. The very day on which the peace was signed, Buonaparte united the territories which had been ceded to him directly to a single state, under the name of the *Illyrian Provinces*, which he governed on his own separate account, without annexing them to France.

A decree of the senate, of the 2nd March, 1809, elevated the government general of the Tuscan dominions into a grand dignity of the Empire, to be conferred on a princess of the imperial blood, under the title of Grand Duchess. This lady was Isabella, so styled, or Eliza Bacciocchi, Princess of Parma and Piacenza, who was next day decorated with the arch-ducal title. On the same day, Napoleon ceded the grand duchy of Berg to his nephew, the son of the King of Holland; taking the government on himself during the minority of that child.

No outrage had been able to overcome the perseverance of Pius VII. Buonaparte published a decree at Schönbrunn (May 7), by which the states of the pope were annexed to the French empire, and the city of Rome declared a free imperial city. The union of the states did take place, but Rome had no appearance of a free city. Then the decree was put in execution (June 11), the undaunted successor of St. Peter published a bull of excommunication against Buonaparte and his adherents, councillors, and coadjutors. From that moment the venerable captive was more closely imprisoned. On the night of the 5th July, the satellites of Buonaparte forced open the gates of his palace and carried him off. After having graded him through different cities, he was detained at Savona (August 9), where he passed three years under a rigorous surveillance.

The year 1809 proved disastrous for the French empire by sea. The captain of an English vessel, Lord Marques, a Portuguese colonel, took possession of the island of Cayenne and French Guiana (January 12). Lieutenant-General Beckwith and Rear-Admiral Cochrane took Martinico by capitulation (February 12). Admiral Gambier and Lord Cochrane destroyed a French fleet, commanded by the Vice-Admirals Villeneuve and L'Almand (April 11), in Basque Roads, by means of Congreve rockets. The French fort of Senegal fell into the hands of the English in the month of the following. General Carmichael, and a body of Spaniards who had arrived from Portorico, ex-

pelled the French from St. Domingo (July 7). Admiral Collingwood and General Oswald took possession of the Ionian Islands (October 8).

Buonaparte had now arrived at the summit of his grandeur, but Providence had denied him a family by his wife Josephine Tascher de la Pagerie. With the consent of both parties, a decree of the senate pronounced the dissolution of that marriage (December 16); while the official authorities of Paris annulled it, on the pretext of informality. Another decree of the senate (February 17, 1810) conferred on the eldest son of the French Emperor the title of King of Rome; and ordained, that the Emperor of the French should be crowned a second time at Rome within the first ten years of his reign. Buonaparte soon after (April 1) espoused the Archduchess Maria Louisa, eldest daughter of the Emperor of Austria.

By a treaty of peace concluded at Paris, between Buonaparte and Charles XIII. of Sweden, this latter prince regained possession of Swedish Pomerania, on condition of acceding to the continental system, though under certain modifications. Had Charles executed this engagement, his kingdom would have been ruined beyond resource. The part of the Hanoverian states belonging to the King of England which Buonaparte had still reserved in his own possession, was ceded by a treaty concluded at Paris (January 14), to his brother Jerome, to be incorporated with the kingdom of Westphalia. Besides the duchy of Lauenburg, Buonaparte reserved to himself a landed revenue of 4,559,000 francs, for bestowing in legacies and endowments.

Louis Buonaparte had reluctantly accepted the crown of Holland; but from the moment he had placed it on his head, he had nothing more at heart than the interests of the country; and resisted, as far as prudence would allow, the tyrannical orders of his brother, when he judged them prejudicial to the welfare of Holland. This gave rise to frequent broils, accompanied sometimes with threats. Buonaparte reproached the Dutch government, more especially for not earnestly and rigorously enforcing the continental system, so pernicious to their commerce. At the beginning of the year 1810, things had come to such a state that it was expected Napoleon, in a moment of chagrin, would cancel the kingdom of Holland from the list of European states. To avert this calamity, Louis signed a treaty at Paris (March 16), by which a body of 12,000 Dutch and 6,000 French were to be stationed at the mouths of all the rivers, to protect the swarms of French revenue-officers who were superintending the execution of Buonaparte's orders. Louis ceded to him Dutch Brabant, Zealand, and a part of Guelders, of which the Waal was henceforth to form the frontier. In vain did that excellent man hope, by so great a sacrifice, to repurchase the independence of his kingdom. Under pretext of certain insults which the French agents had received at the hands of this exasperated people, Buonaparte sent a French army to occupy the whole country. Then it was that Louis resigned a crown which he could no longer wear with honour; he abdicated in favour of his son (July 3). But Napoleon, indignant at a measure on which he had not been consulted, annexed the kingdom of Holland to the French Empire, by a decree dated at Rambouillet (July 9).

Some months afterwards, the republic of Valais, which, since the year 1802, had formed an independent state, was united to the French Empire by a decree of Buonaparte (Nov. 12). But the most important of the usurpations of Buonaparte in 1810, and that which was instrumental in working his downfall, was the reunion of the Hanseatic countries situated on the coasts of the North Sea, viz., certain districts of Westphalia, and the grand duchy of Berg, some possessions of the princes of Salm-Salm, and Salm-Kyrburg, part of the duchy of Oldenburg, the free cities of Bremen and Hamburg, as well as the city of Lubeck and the duchy of Lauenburg. By a decree of the senate (Dec. 13), these places were declared united to France; and the necessity of which Buonaparte had stated in a message addressed to that pliant and submissive body.

France still retained possession of Guadaloupe, the Isle of Bourbon, and the Mauritius. The year 1810, in which the greatness of Buonaparte in Europe reached its summit, deprived him of these possessions. General Beekwith and Admiral Cochrane attacked and seized Guadaloupe. An expedition sent by Lord Minto, the English Governor-General in India, and 1,000 men from the Cape, reduced the Isle of Bourbon (July 7th), and that of the Mauritius some months after.

It will now be necessary to point out some of the modifications which the continental system underwent. The English, in 1800, had taken the first step to put an end to that unnatural state of commerce which preceding measures had established. They first revoked the orders of 1807 regarding America; so that the Americans were permitted to carry on trade in all ports subject to French influence, which were not actually under blockade; and the law of blockade was even restricted to the ports of Holland and France, and those of the northern parts of Italy, between Pesaro and Orbitello. The clause in the decree of the 11th of November, relative to the payment of a compulsory duty in England, was abolished.

A new era in the continental system began with a decree of Buonaparte (August 7), known by the name of *The Decree or Tariff of Trianon*. A second, by way of supplement, was issued from St. Cloud (September 12). Making a distinction between the trade and the produce of the colonies; and availing himself of the universal custom which had rendered the latter among the necessities of life, he resolved to take advantage of this circumstance to replenish his treasury, by permitting their importation on paying an *ad valorem* duty of fifty per cent. A third decree, signed at Fontainebleau, ordered all English merchandise, found in France or her dependencies, to be seized and burnt. At that time, France, Switzerland, Italy, and Germany, were covered with bonfires, which destroyed the property of native merchants, and opened a new prospect for English manufactures one day to replace the articles that were thus wantonly consumed.

We shall now give a short outline of the most remarkable events that took place in the rest of Europe, during this period of French preponderance.

For more than six years Portugal, by means of the pecuniary sacrifices which she had made to the French crown, had maintained her neutrality be-

tween France and England. But as she had betrayed her predilection for England during the Prussian war, her ruin was determined on; and as she could no longer conceal from herself the danger of her position, the prince regent entered into a strict alliance with Great Britain, by a convention signed at London (October 22, 1807). General Junot had taken possession of the country after the royal family had embarked for Brazil, and solemnly declared, that the House of Braganza had ceased to reign in Europe (February 1, 1808). Following the example of the Spaniards, the Portuguese soon shook off the yoke of the Corsican oppressor. The city of Oporto gave the first signal of insurrection (June 6); an English army, commanded by Sir Arthur Wellesley, whom, by anticipation, we shall call Lord Wellington, landed in Mondego Bay (July 31), and defeated Junot at Vimero (August 21). The French general, whose army was reduced to a most distressing state, obtained from General Dalrymple, who had taken the command of the English troops, a capitulation on very honourable terms, which was concluded at Cintra (August 30). Junot and his troops were conveyed to France in English vessels.

The Russian admiral, Siniavin, was not so fortunate. He was then lying in the Tagus with a fleet of nine ships of the line, and a frigate, which had been employed in the war against the Turks in the Archipelago, and found himself under the necessity of surrendering his fleet to Sir Charles Cotton, the English admiral (September 3), which was not to be restored to the emperor until the conclusion of a specific treaty between Russia and Great Britain. The convention of Cintra, of which the true circumstances were not well known, excited so great a discontent in England, that Sir Hew Dalrymple and Lord Wellington were called home, that an investigation might be made into this unpopular measure.

During their absence, and after the affair of Corunna, Soult received orders to attempt the conquest of Portugal, where there were not more than 8,000 English troops, under the command of General Cradlock, and an army of the natives. At the head of 23,000 men he marched towards Chaves and took possession of that place (March 7), which is one of the frontier fortresses of the kingdom. But on his arrival at Oporto he encountered the Portuguese army, who for three days disputed with him the possession of the place. Here he remained a full month before he durst proceed on his march. Meantime Lord Wellington had landed at Lisbon with a new English army. He manoeuvred so well that, by the end of May, Soult was obliged to retire into Galicia, with the loss of his artillery and baggage. Next year the French sent a third expedition to Portugal, but as this belongs more properly to the war in Spain, we shall take occasion to notice it afterwards. After the retreat of Soult, the Portuguese acted a considerable part in the liberation of Europe. Lord Wellington, who was intrusted with very extensive powers, organized their army, and augmented it to 40,000 men, with the assistance of £600,000 sterling, which England furnished for that purpose.

The connexion between Great Britain and Portugal became still more intimate by the treaty of alliance which was concluded at Rio Janeiro (February 19, 1811). George III. therein promised

never to recognise any other and legitimate re-
Braganza. The regent
of building ships of wa-
themselves with timbe-
forests of that country
former stipulations, li-
ports as many British
The regent likewise vi-
England for the aboli-
this is the first exampl-
Together with this trea-
a treaty of commerce.
Portugal became the
observe when we com-
Charles IV., King
self that by submitting
to France, according
1803, he would be ex-
taking part in the war
between Buonaparte and
the faith of this that
menaced hostilities. In
to Europe, loaded w
merchandise from Sc
Cape St. Mary (Octo-
squadron. After that
for the negotiation t
have been regarded a
nations, Charles IV.
land (December 12);
had the mortification t
destroyed by the battle
Nelson gained over th
and Villeneuve.

In 1806, the English
possession of the Span
The expedition sailed
command of Admiral
troops were comman
Buenos Ayres captiv
there the English fou
were transported to
of the inhabitants, b
Puerdon, and L'nier
General Beresford t
troops prisoners of
Popham took posses
20), where he remain
plies which he expect
General Auchmuty l
beginning of the follo
of Monte Video by
reinforcements havin
General Whitelocke ag
and penetrated into
miners, at the head of
defence, that the En
tation, by which he o
British prisoners; an
evacuate Monte Vid
months.

Charles IV. and Pr
with Prussia, had she
yoke of Buonaparte.
the partition of Por
the French armies in
of St. Sebastian, Pan
ona, and were even
part of the Spanish

Reign of Charles IV.
Expedition to Buenos Ayres.
Treaty of Fontainebleau.

PERIOD IX. A.D. 1802—1810.

Spanish Patriots.
Ferdinand VII., K. Joseph. 209
Sir J. Moore's Retreat.

never to recognise any King of Portugal but the heir and legitimate representative of the House of Braganza. The regent granted Britain the right of building ships of war in Brazil, and of supplying themselves with timber for the purpose from the forests of that country; and by abrogating certain former stipulations, he agreed to receive into his ports as many British vessels as chose to enter. The regent likewise promised to co-operate with England for the abolition of the slave trade; and this is the first example of a stipulation of the kind. Together with this treaty there was also concluded a treaty of commerce. Towards the end of 1810, Portugal became the theatre of war, as we shall observe when we come to speak of Spain.

Charles IV., King of Spain, had flattered himself that by submitting to the payment of subsidies to France, according to the treaty of October 30, 1803, he would be exempted from the necessity of taking part in the war which had broken out between Buonaparte and England; and it was on the faith of this that the latter power had commenced hostilities. Four Spanish ships, returning to Europe, loaded with treasures and valuable merchandise from South America, were seized off Cape St. Mary (October 5, 1804), by an English squadron. After that act of hostility, which, but for the negotiation that had preceded it, might have been regarded as a violation of the law of nations, Charles IV. declared war against England (December 12); and the following year he had the mortification to see his marine totally destroyed by the battle of Trafalgar, which Admiral Nelson gained over the combined fleets of Gravina and Villeneuve.

In 1806, the English made an attempt to get possession of the Spanish colony of Buenos Ayres. The expedition sailed from St. Helena under the command of Admiral Sir Home Popham. The troops were commanded by General Beresford. Buenos Ayres capitulated on the 2nd of July; where the English found numerous treasures which were transported to Europe; but an insurrection of the inhabitants, headed by a Spaniard named Perdon, and L.niers, a native of France, obliged General Beresford to surrender himself and his troops prisoners of war (August 12). Admiral Popham took possession of Maldonado (October 23), where he remained in expectation of the supplies which he expected to come from England. General Auchmuty landed at Maldonado in the beginning of the following year, and took the town of Monte Video by assault (February 2). New reinforcements having arrived from England, General Whitelocke again attacked Buenos Ayres, and penetrated into the town (July 5); but L.niers, at the head of the Spaniards, made so able a defence, that the English general signed a capitulation, by which he obtained the restitution of all British prisoners; and the English promised to evacuate Monte Video within the space of two months.

Charles IV. and his minister, during the war with Prussia, had shown a desire to shake off the yoke of Buonaparte. By signing at Fontainebleau the partition of Portugal, they opened a way for the French armies into Spain, who took possession of St. Sebastian, Pampelma, Figueras, and Barcelona, and were even masters of Madrid; while one part of the Spanish army were occupied in Portu-

gal, and the other in Denmark. The consequences of these imprudences were, the conquest of Spain, and the dethronement of the Spanish family of Bourbon, as we have noticed above.

When the Spaniards rose in rebellion against the French intruder, they formed themselves into Juntas, or directorial committees, in every province. That of Seville, which was composed of enterprising men, took the lead in the insurrection, declared war against Buonaparte in the name of Ferdinand VII., and concluded an armistice with England. Their authority was not acknowledged by the provincial juntas, each of which had set on foot an army of their own. All these armies engaged the French troops wherever they met them, and were very often vanquished. The insurrection did not come to a head till after the battle of Baylen (July 20, 1808), where 14,000 French troops, under Generals Dupont and Vidal, laid down their arms. Castanos, to whom this success was owing, was then appointed generalissimo; and the junta organized a regency, at the head of which they placed the old Cardinal de Bourbon. There were two other events which greatly encouraged the Spaniards; the one was the expulsion of Le Febvre from Saragossa by General Palafox, and the other the arrival of the Marquis de la Romana at Corunna with 7,000 men, who had been conveyed to the island of Fuquen for invading Sweden, but had embarked, in spite of the French, to come to the assistance of their country.

Joseph Buonaparte having abandoned Madrid and retired to Burgos (August 1), a central junta was established at Aranjuez. This junta raised three armies: that of the North, under Blake and Romana; that of the centre, under Castanos; and that of Arragon, under Palafox. Immediately after the interview at Erfurt, Buonaparte placed himself at the head of his army, which had been increased to 180,000 men; and, after gaining several advantages over the enemy, he sent back his brother Joseph to Madrid. Meantime, two divisions of the English army, having arrived, the one from Lisbon and the other from Corunna, formed a junction in the province of Leon, under the command of Sir John Moore. Buonaparte marched against them, but they thought it prudent to retire. Having arrived at Astorga, he received intelligence of the preparations of the Austrians, when he set out for Paris, leaving the command of the army to Soult, who obliged the English to embark at Corunna, after a severe engagement in which Sir John Moore lost his life. A treaty of peace and alliance was signed at London between England and the Supreme Junta, acting in the name of Ferdinand VII. (January 14, 1809.) England sent into Portugal a new army, under the command of Lord Wellington. The second siege of Saragossa, which was undertaken first by Junot, and continued by Lannes, was one of the most extraordinary events in modern war. The garrison, commanded by Palafox, and the inhabitants of the place, who were completely devoted to him, performed prodigies of valour. When the French took the city (February 21), it presented nothing but a mass of ruins. It was calculated that above 100,000 men perished in that siege.

Marshal Victor defeated Cuesta at Medellin (March 28), and Suchet defeated General Blake

at Belchite (June 16): but Soult, who had penetrated into Portugal, was repulsed by Wellington, who fought the battle of Talavera with Marshals Jourdan and Victor, which turned to the disadvantage of the French. The misconduct of the army of Cuesta, which had been conjoined with that of Wellington in this battle, determined the latter henceforth to carry on a defensive war with the English and Portuguese alone; and to leave to the Spaniards the care of occupying the French by harassing their troops incessantly, destroying their convoys and magazines, and surprising their entrenchments. The battle of Ocaña (November 19), which Cuesta fought with General Mortier and lost, was the last pitched battle which the Spaniards fought. From that time they confined themselves to a guerrilla warfare, by which they did infinite damage to the enemy.

Since the commencement of 1809, the central junta had retired to Seville. Towards the end of the year, they were replaced by an executive directory of nine members; and next year these were superseded in their turn by a regency of five members, which was established at Cadiz. An assembly of the cortes was summoned to meet there, the members of which were nominated, not by the clergy, the nobility, and the cities, which composed the legitimate states of Spain, but by the great body of the inhabitants. That assembly, who could do no more for the defence of their country, employed themselves in establishing a democratic constitution in Spain, destroying by degrees all the institutions of the monarchy.

Soult, who was commander-in-chief of the army of the south, conquered the whole of Andalusia in 1810, with the exception of Cadiz, which Victor had in vain attempted to besiege. The principal efforts of the French were then turned towards Portugal; and on this occasion Massena was charged to undertake the reduction of that country, at the head of 70,000 men. Junot laid siege to Ciudad Rodrigo, which surrendered after a vigorous defence (July 10). Almeida was likewise obliged to capitulate a few weeks after (Aug. 27). These conquests were made without any apparent wish on the part of Wellington to prevent them. He had then begun to carry into execution the plan of defensive warfare which he had conceived after the battle of Talavera. In the spring he was stationed on the Coa, and began to retreat after the fall of Ciudad Rodrigo; nor did he stop till he had reached Torres Vedras. Four months were employed in effecting this slow retrograde march. Massena followed him every step, suffering from continual fatigue and daily skirmishes; and struggling against famine, as the English army had destroyed everything that lay in their way. Towards the end of October, Wellington took up an impregnable position, where for four months the French general found all his manœuvres unsuccessful. Wellington took advantage of this interval to secure considerable reinforcements which arrived from Lisbon. He was thus prepared to fall upon his adversary, when the impossibility of subsisting longer in an exhausted country should at length compel him to retreat.

When giving a summary of the history of France, we spoke of the renewal of hostilities between Buonaparte and Great Britain in 1803, as well as of the part which the latter took in the continental

wars of 1805, 1807, and 1809. The efforts which she had made to support these expenses added a frightful increase to her national debt; but the constantly increasing progress of her commerce furnished her with the means of meeting this enormous expenditure. In vain had Buonaparte expected to ruin the industry of England by the continental system. In the French, Spanish, and Dutch colonies which she conquered, she found new channels to supply the place of those which were shut against her on the continent of Europe. The empire of the sea still remained in the possession of the British; and, in 1807, they annihilated the marine of Denmark, the only kingdom which then retained any maritime power. But of this circumstance we shall speak hereafter.

The year 1806 is remarkable for the abolition of the slave trade in the English colonies. Since 1785, the Blacks had found zealous advocates in the British parliament, amongst whom Fox, Wilberforce, and Pitt, were the most distinguished. But the British government, too sagacious to enter precipitately into a measure which might endanger the fortune of the planters, and even the tranquillity of the colonies, wished first to consult experience on the subject, and to leave the proprietors time to prepare themselves for a different order of things. For twenty years they had refused to adopt the bill which Mr. Wilberforce regularly laid before the parliament, to demand restrictive laws against the trade. It was not until Mr. Fox and Lord Grenville entered into the ministry, that this question occupied their serious deliberations. An act of parliament, ratified by the king (May 16, 1806), forbade the exportation of slaves from the English colonies, and conveying them into foreign colonies. A bill of the 6th February, 1807, which was ratified by the king on the 17th March following, enacted, that the slave trade should totally cease from the date of May 1st ensuing; providing, however, that vessels already departed on the trade should be allowed to import slaves into the West Indies until the 1st of January, 1808.

Of all the countries which were brought under the yoke of Napoleon, the most unfortunate without dispute was Holland. Her commerce, the only resource of her numerous inhabitants, was annihilated by the continental system; her finances were in such a state of disorder, that, in spite of all their economy, the annual deficit was regularly about 20,000,000 florins; her inhabitants were harassed as much by the soldiers of Buonaparte as by his revenue officers; and as if nature, in concert with political oppression, had conspired her ruin, her soil was laid waste, and her industry destroyed, by periodical inundations, fires, and other calamities. Such is the picture which that wretched country presented up to the moment when Buonaparte extinguished the feeble remains of independence which it enjoyed. After various alterations that republic obtained a constitution similar to that which had existed in France since 1804. A Schimmelpennink was placed at the head of the government (April, 1805), under the title of Grand Pensionary, and vested with such powers as the last stadtholders had never exercised, even after the revolution of 1788. We have already observed how this power, together with the royal title, was rendered hereditary in favour of Louis Buonaparte

and how the Duke
of Napoleon.

Switzerland, with
commotions which
had remained tran-
quillity which Buon-
aparte of mediation (Fe-
deral system, and
greater part of Swi-
zerland their indu-
stry caused many of
the for the most part
North America.

had signed at Fribourg
the confederations be-
tween the Cantons of
Confederation, in a
that country than
Buonaparte was sa-
tisfied that the Swiss agree-
ment France their stock
had been in the habit of
This stock amounting
to more than 20,000
military capitulations
Buonaparte took into
consideration. It must ap-
pear, that the number of
warriors from misery in
number could not be
estimated at 16,000 men
the Swiss regiment
complaint with Buon-
aparte. The number of
actually diminishing
we now speak, that
affected to the influ-
ence nominally between
France and Italy; except
Marino, which presen-
ted a picture of the genera-
l public, which since
the title of the kingd...

enormous load of
to be supported
by payments for
his viceroys. That
impatience to the la-
bourers which was contrary
to the interests of the
inhabitants. It
was after the
cession of the Venetian
out of the four pro-
vinces; but these ac-
tually diminished
happiness. Eugene
the title of Prince of
the throne of Italy
Buonaparte.

The kingdom of Na-
ples the beginning of 18
to Sicily, and
place; but he
one longer than
for another still mo-
derating the king's
treat, who was appo-
inted, he wished to
bring a new constitu-
tion guaranteed by

enormous load of
to be supported
by payments for
his viceroys. That
impatience to the la-
bourers which was contrary
to the interests of the
inhabitants. It
was after the
cession of the Venetian
out of the four pro-
vinces; but these ac-
tually diminished
happiness. Eugene
the title of Prince of
the throne of Italy
Buonaparte.

The kingdom of Na-
ples the beginning of 18
to Sicily, and
place; but he
one longer than
for another still mo-
derating the king's
treat, who was appo-
inted, he wished to
bring a new constitu-
tion guaranteed by

enormous load of
to be supported
by payments for
his viceroys. That
impatience to the la-
bourers which was contrary
to the interests of the
inhabitants. It
was after the
cession of the Venetian
out of the four pro-
vinces; but these ac-
tually diminished
happiness. Eugene
the title of Prince of
the throne of Italy
Buonaparte.

The kingdom of Na-
ples the beginning of 18
to Sicily, and
place; but he
one longer than
for another still mo-
derating the king's
treat, who was appo-
inted, he wished to
bring a new constitu-
tion guaranteed by

enormous load of
to be supported
by payments for
his viceroys. That
impatience to the la-
bourers which was contrary
to the interests of the
inhabitants. It
was after the
cession of the Venetian
out of the four pro-
vinces; but these ac-
tually diminished
happiness. Eugene
the title of Prince of
the throne of Italy
Buonaparte.

The kingdom of Na-
ples the beginning of 18
to Sicily, and
place; but he
one longer than
for another still mo-
derating the king's
treat, who was appo-
inted, he wished to
bring a new constitu-
tion guaranteed by

abolish the
trade.
of Holland.

State of Switzerland.
Italy under Ber. Murat.
Naples under Murat.

The Recess of the Deputa-
tion of Ratisbon. 211
Egs. Bavaria & Wurtemberg.

The efforts which
expenses added a
and debt; but the
of her commerce
meeting this enor-
and Buonaparte ex-
England by the coun-
rich, Spanish, and
quered, she found
of those which
continent of Europe
ined in the posses-
7, they annihilated
ly kingdom which
power. But of this
reafter.

for the abolition of
the colonies. Since
alous advocates in
at whom Fox, Wil-
most distinguished,
so sagacious to en-
rich might endanger
t even the tranqui-
to consult expedi-
ave the proprietors
a different order of
they had refused to
ilberforce regular
demand restrictive
not until Mr. Fox
o the ministry, that
erious deliberations
by the king (May
tion of slaves from
veying them into
15th February, 1807,
on the 17th March
ave trade should ac-
May 1st ensuing
ls already departed
to import slaves
the 1st of January

were brought under
at unfortunate with
her commerce, the
as inhabitants, was
system; her finan-
ler, that, in spite of
deficit was regular
the inhabitants were
ers of Buonaparte
s if rare, in con-
had conspired be-
nd her industry de-
ons, fires, and other
which that wretche-
ment when Buon-
remains of independ-
various alterations
stitution similar to
ce since 1804. M
at the head of the
er the title of Grand
such powers as the
exercised, even after
ve already observed
the royal title, were
Louis Buonaparte

and how the Dutch monarchy vanished at the fiat of Napoleon.

Switzerland, with the exception of some partial commotions which are scarcely worthy of remark, had remained tranquil under the system of government which Buonaparte had prescribed in the act of mediation (February 19, 1803). The continental system, and the prohibitions laid on the greater part of Swiss commodities in France, paralyzed their industry and their commerce; and caused many of the inhabitants to emigrate, who for the most part directed their course towards North America. A treaty which General Ney had signed at Friburg (September 27), regulated the connexions between France and the Helvetic Confederation, in a manner more advantageous for that country than in the time of the Directory. Buonaparte was satisfied with a defensive alliance; but the Swiss agreed to import from the mines of France their stock of salt, which they had till then been in the habit of receiving partly from Bavaria. This stock amounted to 200,000 quintals per annum; and the revenue which France derived from furnishing this article was sufficient to support more than 20,000 troops. At the same time a military capitulation was signed, by which Buonaparte took into his service 16,000 Swiss volunteers. It must appear astonishing, that in this nation of warriors, who were seeking a refuge from misery in the deserts of America, a sufficient number could not be found to make up the complement of 16,000 men. The incomplete state of the Swiss regiments was a subject of perpetual complaint with Buonaparte.

The number of the Italian states had been perpetually diminishing; and about the time of which we now speak, that peninsula was entirely subjected to the influence of Buonaparte, and divided nominally between France, Naples, and the kingdom of Italy; excepting the small republic of St. Marino, which preserved its independence in the midst of the general convulsion. The Italian republic, which since the year 1805 had borne the title of the kingdom of Italy, was oppressed by the enormous load of contributions which were exacted for the support of the French troops, as well as by payments for the civil list of the king and his viceroy. That country submitted with great impatience to the law of the military conscription, which was contrary to the feelings and customs of the inhabitants. It obtained considerable aggrandisements after the peace of Presburg, by the reunion of the Venetian provinces in 1807, and by that of the four provinces of the Ecclesiastical States; but these accessions made no addition to its happiness. Eugene Beauharnais, dignified with the title of Prince of Venice, was proclaimed heir to the throne of Italy, failing the male descendants of Buonaparte.

The kingdom of Naples was overthrown about the beginning of 1806. Ferdinand IV. had retired to Sicily, and Joseph Buonaparte was put in its place; but he did not occupy that unstable throne longer than two years, when he exchanged for another still more insecure. But before surrendering the kingdom of Naples to Joachim Murat, who was appointed his successor (June 28, 1808), he wished to immortalize his name by giving a new constitution to that kingdom, which was guaranteed by Buonaparte. The attempts

which Murat made to conquer Sicily proved abortive.

Germany had experienced two complete revolutions in course of the nine years of which we have given a short summary. The constitution of the Germanic Empire was changed in several essential respects by the Recess, or Resolutions of the Deputation of Ratisbon. Of all the ecclesiastical princes that belonged to the Germanic body, three only were retained, viz., the Elector, Arch-Chancellor, who took the place of the ancient Elector of Mayence; the Grand Master of the Teutonic Knights; and the Grand Prior of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem. The territories of the rest, as well as the revenues of all ecclesiastical endowments, mediate or immediate, were employed either to indemnify the hereditary princes who had lost the whole or a part of their estates on the left bank of the Rhine, or to aggrandize those whom the policy of Buonaparte chose to favour. In place of the two ecclesiastical electors who were suppressed, four lay electors were appointed, one of whom only was a Catholic, that of Salzburg, who had formerly been the Grand Duke of Tuscany, and three were Protestants, those of Wurtemberg, Baden, and Hesse-Cassel.

The House of Orange obtained the bishopric of Fulda and other territories; Brisgau and Ortenau were ceded to the Duke of Modena, who left them at his death to his son-in-law the Archduke Ferdinand. The relation between the two religions was still more unequal in the College of Princes, where the Protestants had acquired so great a superiority that the head of the Empire refused to ratify that article of the Recess. The college of free cities was reduced to six, viz., Augsburg, Lubec, Nuremberg, Frankfort, Bremen, and Hamburg. The immediate nobility were retained; but those of them who were entitled to indemnity were disappointed, as nothing remained to be distributed. In place of the existing duties payable on the Rhine, a rate of navigation was established, the proceeds of which were to be divided between France and Germany; a part of the endowment of the arch-chancellor was founded on that revenue.

The execution of the Recess of the Deputation gave rise to several conventions among the states of the Empire, as well as to a great variety of claims. So many difficulties had arisen on this occasion, especially from the refusal of the emperor to sanction the Recess, without certain modifications, that the Empire was abolished before this new fundamental law could be carried into practice in all its bearings. The peace of Presburg had created two new kings in the centre of Germany, namely, the Electors of Bavaria and Wurtemberg, who assumed the regal dignity. These two princes, with the Elector of Baden, were declared sovereigns, and obtained territorial additions at the expense of Austria, the knights of St. John of Jerusalem, and the city of Augsburg. The King of Bavaria annexed that free city to his estates. The Elector of Salzburg exchanged all that the Recess of the Imperial Deputation had given him, for the principality of Wurtzburg, which was taken from the King of Bavaria, to which the electoral title was transferred. The grand mastership of the Teutonic knights was secularized in favour of a prince of the House of Austria. The heir of

the Duke of Modena lost Brisgau and Ortenau, which fell to the Elector of Baden.

The annihilation of the German Empire, the germ of which is to be found in that treaty, was effected by the Confederation of the Rhine, which the Kings of Bavaria and Wurtemberg, the Arch-Chancellor, the Elector of Baden, the Duke of Cleves and Berg, the Landgrave of Hesse-Darmstadt, the Princes of Hohenzollern, Salm, Isenburg, Lihtenstein, and Aremberg, and Count Leyen, concluded with Buonaparte (July 6, 1806), who was named *Protector of the League*, as they announced in their declarations to the diet. The act by which the Emperor Francis II. abdicated the crown of Germany (August 6) completed the dissolution of the Germanic body. The princes who had joined that confederation usurped the *sovereignty*, instead of the mere *superiority* which they had formerly enjoyed under the authority of the Empire. By overthrowing the barriers which the laws and institutions of the country, the most ancient customs, and the synallagmatic conventions, had opposed to the encroachments of absolute power, they set a fatal example of trampling under foot the well-acquired rights of their people. They carried their injustice still farther. They usurped dominion over the princes, provinces, and cities, their associates and coequals, who were unfortunately placed in their neighbourhood, and who had not been apprised in time that they might repair to Paris, in order to co-operate in that transaction, or counteract the intrigues by which it was accomplished.

The Elector Arch-Chancellor then assumed the dignity of Prince Primate; the Elector of Baden, the Dukes of Berg and Cleves, and the Landgrave of Hesse-Darmstadt, took the title of Grand Dukes; to which the act of the 12th of July attached the prerogatives of the royal dignity. The head of the House of Nassau took the dignity of Duke, and Count Leyen that of Prince. A federal diet, divided into two chambers, was to deliberate on the general interests of the union; but that assembly never met. Of the six free cities which the Recess of the Deputation had preserved, the King of Bavaria had Augsburg adjudged to him by the peace of Presburg; he afterwards obtained Nuremberg by an act of the confederation. Frankfort fell to the share of the prince primate; so that there remained only three of the Hanseatic towns.

Several other princes entered successively into the Confederation of the Rhine; but none of these accessions were voluntary. They all took place in consequence of the war with Prussia, which broke out in October, 1806. These princes, taken according to the order of accession, were the following:—The Elector of Wurtzburg, the old Elector of Saltzburg, who took the grand ducal title, the King of Saxony, the Dukes of Saxony, the Houses of Anhalt and Schwartzburg, the Prince of Waldeck, the House of Lippe and Reuss, the King of Westphalia, the House of Mecklenburg, and the Duke of Oldenburg. Thus all Germany, with a few exceptions, entered in succession into that confederation.

Several other changes occurred in the Rhenish Confederation, especially after the peace of Schonbrunn. The grand duchy of Berg received considerable accessions. The kingdom of Westphalia was augmented in 1810, by the re-union of the

states of the King of England in Germany, with the exception of the duchy of Lüneburg, as has been already mentioned. Within a short time after he had disposed of the territory of Hanover, Buonaparte erected the grand duchy of Frankfort, by adding the district of Fulda, and the greater part of the county of Hanan, to the possessions of the prince primate; with the deduction of the principality of Ratisbon, on condition that after the death of the prince primate, who had assumed the title of the Grand Duke of Frankfort, these territories should pass to Eugene Beauharnais and his male descendants; and falling these, they should revert to the crown of France. The grand duke ceded to Napoleon the principality of Ratisbon and his moiety of the navigation-dues on the Rhine.

The Elector of Bavaria had lost by the peace of Luneville that part of the palatinate situated on the left bank of the Rhine, with the duchy of Deux-ponts. The Recess of 1803 deprived him of the rest of the palatinate; but that act amply compensated him, by making over to him the bishoprics of Bamberg, Wurtzburg, Freisingen, Passau, and Augsburg, with several abbeys and free cities. By the peace of Presburg, Buonaparte took Wurtzburg from him; but he gave him in lieu of it a considerable part of the spoils of Austria, especially the county of Tyrol, which contained more than 700,000 inhabitants. To recompense that monarch for the zeal which he had displayed in 1809, Buonaparte put him in possession of the principalities of Breithut and Ratisbon, the duchy of Saltzburg, with Berchtolsgraden, and the part of Lower Austria which the emperor had renounced by the peace of Schonbrunn. In return the King of Bavaria ceded back a part of the Tyrol, containing about 305,000 souls, which was annexed either to the kingdom of Italy or the Illyrian provinces.

By the peace of Luneville, the Austrian monarchy had lost in point of extent and population but she had gained an addition of 6,000,000 of francs to her revenue. The government had to struggle incessantly against the ruinous state of the exchequer, and the over circulation of paper money. Neither loans nor economy could recover them. After the French republic was changed into an Empire (August 4, 1804), Francis II. took the title of Emperor of Austria, under the name of Francis I. The embarrassed state of his finances was still more increased by the disastrous war of 1803. The peace of Presburg cost the emperor the states that formerly belonged to the Venetians, the Tyrol, and all the possessions of his house in Suabia. He acquired nothing by that treaty, except the duchy of Saltzburg and Berchtolsgraden. His losses amounted to more than 1,000 square miles of territory, and nearly 3,000,000 of subjects. Besides Saltzburg and Berchtolsgraden, the old Grand Duke of Tuscany lost also Passau and Eichstett; but he obtained the principality of Wurtzburg. The heir of the House of Este was deprived of Brisgau and Ortenau.

At the commencement of the year 1807, Austria had made warlike preparations, which indicated that, but for the precipitancy with which the peace of Tilsit had been concluded, she would have made a powerful diversion on the rear of the French army. It was not till the convention of Fontaine-

bleau that she obtained which had remained and which she purchased on the side of the duke Charles made the army, in better discipline, repairing fortresses with an enthusiasm displayed. Many large pecuniary sacrifices.

The peace of Schoenbrunn, brought the third continuation of a population of 21,000,000, which was annihilated by which separated the quantity of paper showed back into the reduced the currency their nominal value Prussia, by the 1803, gained 426, 4,000,000 of francs, which she accepted, the continuation with the convention with the exchange of territory to the principalities that time occupied of a wise administration which wars an 11 levain had they to make him join to only the violation of troops, that at last p. We have all at Potsdam, by which become a party to attempt which he negotiation. When became involuntarily his minister gave to entrusted, the ally of war. Prussia, Vienna, the precarious of Hanover, in lieu of Cleves, and Neuchâtel the whole monarchy miles, with a population. The occupation of war with England France soon compelled. He had of the King of England the project of associating Hanseatic towns, in which wished to oppose the convention of Vienna, suffering new calamities. William renounced the peace which he Memel (January 28) cost the latter the loss of an extent of 2,657, 4,670,000 souls. The appease the resentment.

mean that she obtained the restitution of Braumau, which had remained in the possession of the French, and which she purchased by new territorial losses on the side of ...; from that moment the Archduke Charles made great exertions for reorganizing the army, introducing a new order and a better discipline, forming bodies of militia, and repairing fortresses. He continued to inspire the nation with an enthusiasm which it had never before displayed. Many wealthy individuals made large pecuniary sacrifices for the service of their country.

The peace of Schönbrunn, which terminated the war of 1803, brought Austria down to the rank of the third continental power. That monarchy comprehended a surface of 9471 square miles, and a population of 21,000,000; but her commerce was annihilated by the loss of Trieste and Fiume, which separated her from the sea. The immense quantity of paper money in the ceded provinces flowed back into the interior of the kingdom, and reduced the currency of these bills to one-fifth of their nominal value.

Prussia, by the Recess of the Deputation of 1803, gained 426,000 subjects, and more than 4,000,000 of francs to her revenue; and the provinces which she acquired, established, to a certain extent, the continuity of her Westphalian possessions with the centre of the kingdom. A convention with the elector of Bavaria respecting an exchange of territory, made considerable additions to the principalities in Franconia. The king, from that time occupied himself in applying the remedy of a wise administration to repair the calamities which wars and levies had inflicted on the country. In vain had they tried every means of persuasion to make him join the third coalition; and it was only the violation of his territory by the French troops, that at last prevailed with him to take that step. We have already spoken of the convention at Potsdam, by which he engaged eventually to become a party to that confederacy, and of the attempt which he made to restore peace by means of negotiation. We have already mentioned how he became involuntarily, and by the turn which his minister gave to the affair with which he was entrusted, the ally of him whom he wished to engage in war. Prussia obtained, by the treaty of Vienna, the precarious possession of the Electorate of Hanover, in lieu of which she ceded Anspach, Cleves, and Neufchatel. The superficial extent of the whole monarchy amounted then to 5,746 square miles, with a population of 10,658,000 souls.

The occupation of Hanover drew Prussia into a war with England; but the perfidy of Buonaparte soon compelled her to declare war against France. He had offered the Electorate of Hanover to the King of England, and opposed Prussia in the project of associating Saxony, Hesse, and the Hanseatic towns, in the confederation which Frederic wished to oppose to that of the Rhine. The convention of Vienna thus became the occasion of inflicting new calamities on Prussia. Frederic William renounced the territory of Hanover, by the peace which he concluded with George III. at Olmutz (January 28, 1807); but the treaty of Tilsit cost the latter the half of his German estates, viz. an extent of 2,657 square miles, and a population of 4,670,000 souls. This sacrifice was not sufficient to appease the resentment of Buonaparte. By mis-

interpreting the equivocal terms of the convention of Königsberg, he restored to the king only a part of his provinces on the east of the Vistula, which were desolated by the war, and reduced almost to a desert. After sixteen months of peace, he could not obtain repossession of his other provinces, until he engaged to pay 120,000,000 of francs, to leave three fortresses in the hands of Buonaparte by way of pledge, and to promise never to keep more than 40,000 men in the field.

Prussia was in a state of the greatest destitution at the time when Frederic William turned his attention to the administration of the country. The army had devoured the substance of the inhabitants; the population had suffered great diminution; while sickness and a complication of miseries were continually cutting them off in considerable numbers. The king submitted to the most painful privations, to fulfil the obligations he had contracted towards France, and thereby to obtain the final evacuation of the kingdom, as well as to leave those provinces which had suffered more severely than others by the sojourn of the French army. He did everything in his power to revive agriculture and industry among his subjects, and restore the resources of the army; and thus prepare the way for recovering the rank which the Prussian monarchy had formerly held.

Independently of the hardships which Buonaparte inflicted on Prussia, by protracting the stay of his army, and by the contributions which he imposed on her, this country was made the victim of a rapacity which is, perhaps, unprecedented in history. By a convention which the King of Saxony, as Duke of Warsaw, concluded with Buonaparte (May 10, 1808), while occupied at Bayonne in overturning the Spanish monarchy, the latter ceded to him, for a sum of 20,000,000 of francs, not only the pecuniary claims of the King of Prussia over his Polish subjects (for these he had abandoned by the peace of Tilsit), but also those of certain public establishments in Prussia, such as the Bank, the Society for Maritime Commerce, the Endowment of Widows, hospitals, pious foundations, universities, and schools; and, what may seem incredible, those of private individuals in Prussia over Polish subjects. These pecuniary claims were so much the more considerable, as the capitalists of the ancient provinces, since the introduction of the system of mortgage into Prussia, had advanced large sums to Polish proprietors for the improvement of their patri-monies. The sums thus taken from those who had furnished them, and transferred to the King of Saxony, were estimated at first at 43,000,000 and a half of francs, and 4,000,000 of interest; but the financial authorities of the duchy of Warsaw discovered that they amounted to 68,000,000. In vain did Frederic William offer to repurchase this pretended right of the King of Saxony, by reimbursing the 20,000,000 of francs which the latter had been obliged, it was said, to give to Buonaparte. The revolution of 1814 rectified this piece of injustice, as it did many others.

During this period the north of Europe was agitated by three different wars, that of England against Denmark, which occasioned a rupture between the cabinets of St. Petersburg and London; that of Russia against Sweden, in which Denmark was involved; and lastly, the war between Russia

and the Porte, in which England took an active part.

The expedition of the English against the Isle of Zealand in 1807 was an event which was censured at the time with great severity; and which cannot altogether be justified, since it is the nature of all preventive war to destroy the very arguments and evidences of its necessity. Nevertheless, if, on the one hand, we consider what was requisite to support the interests of Buonaparte after the peace of Tilsit, or, more properly speaking, to carry into execution the system he had organized; and if, on the other, we examine into his conduct a short time after, towards Spain and Portugal, it is impossible not to excuse England. The peace of Tilsit had excluded British commerce from all the southern ports of the Baltic, and it was but a small affair that Sweden, and especially Denmark, who had a communication with the continent by way of Jutland, should open their ports to her. Several appearances indicated that it was the intention of Buonaparte to seize Denmark also after the peace of Tilsit; and the British minister declared that he was in possession of proofs of a plan to that effect.

The British government accordingly fitted out an expedition for the purpose of preventing his designs, with an activity and a celerity such as they had never displayed in sending aid to their allies; and that difference in their conduct tended not a little to create an unfavourable opinion as to the enterprise which they undertook against Denmark in 1807. An English fleet, having an army on board, to which a Hanoverian legion of 7,000 men, then in the Isle of Rugen, was afterwards added, sailed from England about the end of July or beginning of August. It was divided into two squadrons, one of which, under Commodore Kents, took up their station in the Great Belt, which till then had been thought inaccessible to ships of war, and thus cut off the Isle of Zealand from the mainland, where the prince royal with the Danish army then was. The second division, under the command of Admiral Gambier, with troops on board commanded by Lord Cathcart, arrived off Copenhagen. Mr. Jackson was sent to Kiel to demand from the prince royal the surrender of the Danish fleet, which they alleged it was the intention of Buonaparte to seize.

After a fruitless negotiation, Copenhagen was invested by the army of Lord Cathcart on the land side, bombarded for three days (September 2, 3, 4), and a great part of the city destroyed. At length General Peymann, the commander-in-chief of the Danish forces, demanded an armistice to treat for a capitulation. Sir Arthur Wellesley, the same officer who soon after so distinguished himself in Portugal, signed the capitulation on the part of Great Britain. The citadel was given up to the English. The Danes surrendered their fleet, with all the naval stores in their arsenals and dockyards. The English stipulated for a delay of six weeks to prepare for departure, after which they promised to surrender the citadel, and evacuate the Isle of Zealand.

In this manner the Danish marine, consisting of eighteen ships of the line, fifteen frigates, six brigs, and twenty-five sloops of war, fell into the hands of the English. During the six weeks stipulated for, the court of London offered Denmark

the alternative either of returning to a state of neutrality, or of forming an alliance with England. The prince regent having refused both of these, England declared war against him (November 4); but she did not violate the capitulation of Copenhagen, as the evacuation of that city and the island of Zealand took place at the term specified. This event added Denmark to the French system. Her minister concluded a treaty of alliance at Fontainebleau, the tenor of which has not been made public; but if, we may judge by the events which followed, it was agreed that the Danish islands should be occupied by French troops destined to act against Sweden. It was in the month of March 1808, that 32,000 French, Dutch, and Spanish troops (the last brought from the kingdom of Etruria), under the command of Marshal Bernadotte, arrived in Zealand, Funen, and the other islands of the Baltic; but the defection of the Spanish troops, and the war with Austria, prevented the projected invasion of Sweden. The English took possession of the colonies of Denmark, and ruined the commerce of her subjects. Frederic VI., who had succeeded his father Christian VII. (March 13, 1808), after having been at the head of the government as regent since 1784, strictly executed the continental system; especially after the commencement of the year 1810, when the two Counts Bernstorff had retired from the ministry. He even went so far as to arrest all the English subjects found in Denmark.

The expedition of the English against Copenhagen induced the Emperor Alexander to declare war against them (November 7). That monarch entered decidedly into the continental system, and demanded of the King of Sweden, that, agreeably to the conventions as to the armed neutrality of the North, he should enforce the principle by which the Baltic was declared a shut sea. The King of Sweden replied, that the principles established by the conventions of 1780 and 1800 had been abandoned by that of June 17, 1801; that circumstances were entirely changed since Denmark, on whose co-operations he had formerly reckoned, had lost her fleet; and since, independently of the South, the English had effected another entrance into the Baltic, through the Great Belt; these objections, however, did not prevent him from incurring a ruinous war.

A Russian army entered Finland (February 21, 1808). General Buxhowden, who had the command, announced to the inhabitants of that province that the Emperor Alexander had thought it necessary to occupy that country, in order to have a pledge that the King of Sweden would accept the proposals of peace which France had made to him. Although the Swedish troops in Finland were but few in number, and defended it bravely, they were compelled to yield to the superior force of the Russians, and to retire into East Bothnia, Sueaborg, the bulwark of Finland, and deemed impregnable, surrendered (April 6) after a siege of a few days by Vice-Admiral Kronstadt. A manifesto of the Emperor Alexander (March 28) had already declared the grand duchy of Finland to be incorporated with his Empire. This unexpected attack excited the most lively indignation in Gustavus IV., who so far forgot himself as to cause M. d'Allopeus, the Russian minister at his court, to be arrested. Denmark having also

declared war against an army of 20,000 men and Arnfeldt, undertook this expedition. The Danes even made Field-Marshal C. the head of the Sw. began to act on the land; while a second General Vegeesack. The war was carried on with equal brill. the commanders of Finland troops, commanded who, a few months had arrived in the but as the Swedish agreement as to the pris, nor even as to permit the troops to General Moore, who to be arrested. Bu escape, Moore returned. Mr. Thornton, the stated against this was recalled.*

Admiral Chanik twenty-four ships of the Swedish fleet, c. off, in Virgin Bay of an English fleet Baltic Port, where ment of some Engl Admiral Hood, k two months. In F concluded (Septem *Ubi Possidetis*; bu faced to ratify it.

Ukioki (November army engaged to ev behind the Keml. The English cabinet to make peace, whi been demanded add war with vigour.

lined to grant th was on the point of with that court. Bu he agreed, soon after

tion at Stockholm t Britain engaged to p quarterly instalment. Meantime a revolution, which was to the haughtiness o which he carried e him many enemies. in a most extraordin imposts, which Gus without regard to severity with which only when they ha when they were u lands of the soldier guards. A conspir which was Lieute Colonel Skioldebra

* Sketch of the

en England and
S. conquer Finland.

War between Russia and
Sweden.
Gustavus IV. deposed.

PERIOD IX. A.D. 1802—1810.

Charles XIII. K. of Sweden.
Emperor Alexander con-
tinues the war. 215

ing to a state of
ence with England,
sed both of these,
im (November 4).
tulation of Copen-
city and the island
in specified. This
the French system,
tary of alliance at
hich has not been
udge by the events
l that the Danish
y French troops
u. It was in the
00 French, Dutch,
brought from the
the command of
n Zealand, Funen,
tic; but the defece-
war with Austria,
n of Sweden. The
olonies of Denmark,
subjects. Frederic
ther Christian VII.
been at the head
since 1784, stric-
n; especially after
r 1810, when the
red from the minis-
s to arrest all the
mark.
ish against Copen-
Alexander to declar-
). That monarch
inental system, and
ien, that, agreeably
rmed neutrality of
inciple by which
sea. The King of
ples established by
00 had been aban-
that circumstances
enmark, on whose
reckoned, had lost
ntly of the Sound,
ther entrance into
it; these objections,
from incurring a
land (February 28),
who had the com-
bitants of that pro-
der had thought it
in, in order to have
Sweden would accept
France had made to
troops in Finland
defended it bravely
the superior force
into East Bothnia,
nland, and deposed
il 6) after a sieg-
ral Kronstadt. Alex-
ander (March 28)
duchy of Finland
Empire. This un-
most lively indigna-
far forgot himself
ussian minister at
enmark having also

declared war against him (February 29), a Swedish army of 20,000 men, under the command of General Arnfeld, undertook the conquest of Norway. But this expedition was repulsed with loss; and the Danes even made incursions into Sweden. Field-Marshal Count Klincksop being placed at the head of the Swedish army, then at Uleaburg, began to act on the offensive in the north of Finland; while a second army, under the command of General Vegesack, disembarked at Abo (June 8). The war was carried on with variable success, but with equal bravery on both sides. At the end of the campaign, the Russians were again masters of Finland. A body of 10,000 English troops, commanded by the same General Moore who, a few months after, fell at Corunna in Spain, had arrived in the roads at Gottenburg (May 17); but as the Swedish king could not come to an agreement as to the employment of these auxiliaries, nor even as to the command, he refused to permit the troops to disembark. He even ordered General Moore, who had repaired to Stockholm, to be arrested. But having soon found means to escape, Moore returned to England with his troops. Mr. Thornton, the British envoy, who had remonstrated against this arbitrary conduct of the king, was recalled.* Admiral Chanikoff, with a Russian fleet of twenty-four ships of war, made an attempt to burn the Swedish fleet, commanded by Admiral Nauckhoff, in Virgin Bay (August 18); but the arrival of an English fleet under Sir James Saumarez in Baltic Port, where Nauckhoff was, with a reinforcement of some English ships under the command of Admiral Hood, kept them in blockade for nearly two months. In Finland an armistice had been concluded (September 1829), on the footing of the *Ut Possidetis*; but the Emperor Alexander refused to ratify it. Another was then concluded at Olkioki (November 19); by which the Swedish army engaged to evacuate Uleaburg, and to retire behind the Kemi. Towards the end of the year, the English cabinet advised the King of Sweden to make peace, which he obstinately refused, and even demanded additional supplies to continue the war with vigour. The British cabinet having declined to grant them unconditionally, Gustavus was on the point of coming to an open rupture with that court. But his indignation having abated, he agreed, soon after, to conclude a new convention at Stockholm (March 1, 1809), when Great Britain engaged to pay in advance £300,000 sterling by quarterly instalments. Meantime a revolution was fermenting in Sweden, which was to change the aspect of affairs. The haughtiness of the king, and his firmness, which he carried even to obstinacy, had created him many enemies. The people were oppressed in a most extraordinary manner by burdens and imposts, which Gustavus increased arbitrarily, and without regard to constitutional forms. The severity with which he punished the troops, not only when they had committed faults, but even when they were unsuccessful, had alienated the minds of the soldiers from him, and especially the guards. A conspiracy was formed, at the head of which was Lieutenant-Colonel Adlersparre, and Colonel Skioldebrand, and which was joined by

the army of the West, or of Norway, and the troops that were stationed on the islands of Aland. Adlersparre and the army of the West marched on Stockholm. They had arrived at Orebro, when Field-Marshal Klincksop, who had been disgraced, advised the king to avert the storm by changing his conduct. On his refusal, General Adlererouitz arrested him in the name of the people (March 13). The Duke of Sudermania, the king's uncle, was proclaimed regent. Gustavus was conveyed to Drottningholm, and thence to Gripsholm, where he signed a deed of abdication, which he afterwards declared on various occasions to have been voluntary. The revolution was terminated without commotion and without bloodshed. The regent immediately assembled the Diet at Stockholm. Not content with accepting the abdication of Gustavus, such as he had given it, they excluded all his descendants from the throne of Sweden. They offered the crown to the regent, who declared his willingness to accept it when they had revised the constitution. This revision, by which the royal authority was limited without reducing it to a state of humiliation and dependence, having been adopted by the Diet, the Duke of Sudermania was proclaimed king (June 5, 1809), under the title of Charles XIII., according to the common but erroneous method of reckoning the kings of Sweden. As the new monarch had no family, they elected as his successor to the throne, Prince Christian Augustus of Holstein-Augustenburg, who commanded the Danish army in Norway, and who had procured the esteem even of his enemies. Gustavus and his family were permitted to leave the kingdom; and towards the end of the year a new fundamental law was published, regulating the order of succession to the throne. At Stockholm the people flattered themselves that the dethronement of Gustavus would speedily bring peace to Sweden; but it was not so. Alexander I. refused to treat with a government so insecure as a regency, and hostilities accordingly continued. General Knorring, who had passed the Gulf of Bothnia on the ice with 25,000 Russians, took possession of the islands of Aland (March 17), when the Swedish troops stationed there retired to the continent of Sweden. Knorring granted the Swedes a cessation of hostilities, to allow them time to make overtures of peace. Apprized of this arrangement, Count Barclay de Tolly, who had crossed the Gulf with another body of Russians on the side of Vasa, and taken possession of Umea, evacuated West Bothnia, and returned to Finland. A third body of Russians, under the command of Schouvaloff, penetrated into West Bothnia by the route of Tornea, and compelled the Swedish army of the north, which was commanded by Gripenberg, to lay down their arms at Seiwis (March 25). This sanguinary affair occurred entirely through ignorance; because in that country, lying under the 66th degree of north latitude, they were not aware of the armistice granted by Knorring. On the expiry of the truce, hostilities recommenced in the month of May, and the Russians took possession of the part of West Bothnia lying to the north of Umea. The peace between Russia and Sweden was signed at Frederichsham (September 17). The latter power adhered to the continental system,

* Sketch of the Reign of Gustavus IV., Part II.

reserving to herself the importation of salt and such colonial produce as she could not do without. She surrendered Finland with the whole of East Bothnia, and a part of West Bothnia lying to the eastward of the river Tornea. The cession of these provinces, which formed the granary of Sweden, and contained a population of 900,000 souls, was an irreparable loss to that kingdom, which had only 2,344,000 inhabitants left. The peace of Fredericsham was speedily followed by that of Jonkoping with Denmark (December 10), and that at Paris with France (January 6, 1810). By the first, everything was re-established on its ancient footing between these two states. But by the peace of Paris, Sweden renounced the importation of colonial produce, and only reserved the privilege of importing salt as an article of absolute necessity. It was on this condition alone that she could obtain repossession of Pomerania.

The Prince Royal of Sweden having died suddenly, a diet assembled at Orebro, and elected John Baptiste Julius Bernadotte, Prince of Ponte Corvo, his successor to the throne (May 28). The election was unanimous; but out of more than 1,000 of the nobility who had a right to appear at the Diet, only 140 were present. Bernadotte accepted an offer so honourable. On his arrival at Elsinore, he professed, as his ancestors had done before him in France, his adherence to the Confession of Augsburg, which was then the established religion in Sweden. King Charles XIII. having adopted him as his son, he was proclaimed at Stockholm (November 5), eventual successor to the throne, under the name of Charles John. Twelve days afterwards, Sweden declared war against Great Britain.

In Russia, the Emperor Alexander, since his accession to the throne, had occupied himself incessantly in improving every branch of the administration. The restrictive regulations which had been published under the last reign were abrogated; by gradual concessions, the peasantry were prepared for a liberty which they had not yet enjoyed. The number of universities, and what is still more essential to civilisation, the number of schools, was augmented. The senate, the ministry, and the civil authorities were re-organized, and new improvements adopted, tending to abolish arbitrary power, to accelerate the despatch of business, and to promote the distribution of fair and impartial justice to all classes of society. Canals were dug, new avenues were opened for industry, and commerce flourished, especially the trade of the Black Sea. The only point in which the government failed, was in its attempts to restore the finances; but the four wars of the preceding seven years in which Russia had been engaged, rendered these attempts unavailing.

We have already related the origin, events, and termination of two of these wars, viz., that of 1806, which ended with the peace of Tilsit, and procured Russia the province of Bialystock; and that of Sweden, which annexed the province of Finland to the Russian Empire. The war against England continued after the peace of Fredericsham, but without furnishing any events of great importance. The two other wars were those against Persia and the Porte. At the beginning of his reign, Alexander had annexed Georgia to his Empire, which had till then been the prey of continual

disturbances. This accession drew him into a war with Persia, which did not terminate till 1813. The principal events of that war were the defeat of the Persians at Etschmiazin, by Prince Zizianoff (June 20, 1804); the conquest of the province of Shirvan by the same prince (January 1806); the taking of Derbent by the Russians (July 3); and the defeat of the Persians by Paulucci, at Alkhalakwalaki (September 1, 1810).

Before speaking of the war between Russia and the Porte, it will be necessary to take a brief retrospect of the Ottoman Empire. The condition of that Empire, badly organized and worse governed, was such, that everything then presaged its approaching dissolution; or in other words, the expulsion of the Turks from Europe. Everywhere the authority of the Grand Seigneur was disregarded. Paswan Oglou, the Pacha of Widdin was in open revolt. Ali Pacha of Janina was obedient only when it suited his convenience. The Servians had taken up arms under their leader Czerni George, and threatened to possess themselves of Sabacz and Belgrade. Djezzar, the Pacha of Syria, without declaring himself an enemy to the Porte, enjoyed an absolute independence. The sect of the Wahabites was in possession of Arabia. Egypt was distracted by civil wars. Selim III. who had reigned there since 1789, convinced that the Porte could never re-establish its authority except by better organizing the army, had endeavoured to model it on the European system. This attempt afterwards cost him his throne.

Such was the situation of the Ottoman Empire when Buonaparte, in order to prevent Alexander from sending supplies to Prussia, resolved to embroil him in a quarrel with the Porte. General Sebastiani, French envoy at Constantinople, contrived to obtain so great an influence over the divan, that for some time it was entirely under his direction. Subjects of dissension were not wanting between Russia and the Porte; and these were of such a nature, as to furnish each party with plausible reasons for complaining of the infraction of treaties. The French minister was not slow to fan the spark of discord. He even induced the divan to refuse to renew their treaty of alliance with England, which was then on the point of expiring. The Emperor Alexander, foreseeing that there would be no redress to his complaints, gave orders to General Michelson to enter Moldavia and Wallachia. The Porte then declared war against Russia (December 30); but deviating for the first time from a barbarous custom, she allowed M. d'Italinski, the Russian minister, to depart unmolested.

A few days after, Mr. Arbutnot, the English minister, quitted Constantinople, after having repeatedly demanded the renewal of the alliance and the expulsion of M. Sebastiani. Within a few weeks, an English fleet of nine ships of the line, three frigates, and several fire-ships, commanded by Vice-Admiral Duckworth, forced the passage of the Dardanelles, and appeared before Constantinople. Duckworth demanded of the divan, that the forts of the Dardanelles and the Turkish fleet should be surrendered to him; that the Porte should cede Moldavia and Wallachia to Russia and break off alliance with Buonaparte. But instead of profiting by the sudden panic which his appearance had created, he allowed the Turk

time to put them
Encouraged and
made their prepara
ess, that in the ce
vice-admiral found
than weigh anch
On his arrival at
troops, under the
conveyed them to
cession of Alexan
course of six month
to surrender that
venor of Egypt.

The campaign
any very decisive
received orders to
the French in Pol
of the revolted Se
and Nissa, penetra
reinforced by som
divers signal advan
self was victorious
without, however,
that place. The
success on the fron
The Sceraskier of
by General Gudov
was an event so r
prevented the Pers
sion in favour of
event in the camp
Lemnos, where the
mand of Vice-Ad
Capitan Pacha, w
nelles after the ret
When the Ottom
Selim III. had cea
rendered himself o
roduction of the
known by the nam
connexion with th
circumstance, regard
according to whic
seven years without
garded as unworth
text for the militar
finding it impossib
published voluntar
consin, Mustapha
nesty which that p
the right of the Ja
legiance from the
from the establish
ing his successor.

The Emperor A
peace of Tilsit, to
lachia, on conditio
should not occupy
the conclusion of a
General Guillemin
to negotiate an arm
effect was signed
evacuation of the
arrangement neve
Russia refusing to
certain articles wh
his dignity; so th
former footing. T
pretexs which Bu
to occupy Prussia.

LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

time to put themselves in a posture of defence. Encouraged and instructed by Sebastiani, they made their preparations with such energy and success, that in the course of eight days the English vice-admiral found that he could do nothing better than weigh anchor and repossess the Dardanelles. On his arrival at Malta, he took on board 5,000 troops, under the command of General Fraser, and conveyed them to Egypt. The English took possession of Alexandria (March 20); but in the course of six months, they found themselves obliged to surrender that city by capitulation to the governor of Egypt.

The campaign of 1807 was not productive of any very decisive result, as General Michelson had received orders to detach 80,000 men to oppose the French in Poland. Czerni George, the leader of the revolted Servians, took Belgrade, Sabacz, and Nissa, penetrated into Bulgaria, where he was reinforced by some Russian troops, and gained divers signal advantages. General Michelson himself was victorious near Guirdesov (March 17), without, however, being able to get possession of that place. The war was conducted with more success on the frontiers of the two Empires in Asia. The Seraskier of Erzerum was entirely defeated by General Gudovitch (June 18); and that victory was an event so much the more fortunate, as it prevented the Persians from making a bold diversion in favour of the Turks. The most important event in the campaign was the naval battle of Lemnos, where the Russian fleet, under the command of Vice-Admiral Siniavin, defeated the Capitan Pacha, who had sailed from the Dardanelles after the retreat of Sir John Duckworth.

When the Ottoman navy sustained this defeat, Selim III. had ceased to reign. That prince had rendered himself odious to the troops, by the introduction of the European discipline and dress, known by the name of *Nizamî gaidî*, and by his connexion with the French emperor. One circumstance, regarded as a fundamental law, and according to which a sultan who had reigned seven years without having any children was regarded as unworthy of the throne, served as a pretext for the military to have him deposed. Selim, finding it impossible to quell or allay the revolt, abdicated voluntarily (May 29), and placed his cousin, Mustapha IV., on the throne. In the amnesty which that prince published, he recognised the right of the Janissaries to withdraw their allegiance from the grand seignor who should depart from the established customs, and that of appointing his successor.

The Emperor Alexander had promised, by the peace of Tilsit, to evacuate Moldavia and Wallachia, on condition, however, that the Turks should not occupy these two provinces till after the conclusion of a definitive peace. The French General Guilleminot was sent to the Turkish camp to negotiate an armistice on these terms, which in effect was signed at Slobozia (August 24). The evacuation of the two provinces stipulated by that arrangement never took place, the Emperor of Russia refusing to ratify the treaty, as it contained certain articles which he judged incompatible with his dignity; so that matters remained on their former footing. That circumstance was one of the pretexts which Buonaparte alleged for continuing to occupy Prussia.

In the midst of these political quibblings, the time arrived when a new system of things took place. The cabinets of St. Petersburg and Paris were making mutual advances; and it is probable that the fate of the Porte, and especially of the provinces beyond the Danube, was one of the subjects which were discussed during the interview at Erfurt. France lost her influence at Constantinople, when they saw her enter into an alliance with Russia; and from that time England directed the politics of the divan.

Mustapha IV. had in the mean time been hurled from the throne. Mustapha, styled *Bairactar* or the *Standardbearer*, the Pacha of Rudschuk, a man of extraordinary courage, and one of the most zealous abettors of the changes introduced by Selim, which he regarded as the sole means of preserving the state, had marched with 35,000 men to Constantinople, with the view of reforming or seizing the government, and announced to Mustapha IV. (July 28, 1808), that he must resign, and make way for the ancient and legitimate sultan. Mustapha thought to save his crown by putting Selim to death; but Bairactar proclaimed Mahmoud, the younger brother of Mustapha, who was then shut up in the seraglio. Bairactar, invested with absolute power, re-established the corps of the *Scimens*, or disciplined troops, on the footing of the Europeans, and took vigorous measures for putting the empire in a condition to resist the Russians. These patriotic efforts cost him his life. After the departure of a part of the Scimens for the army, the Janissaries and the inhabitants of Constantinople revolted. At the head of a body of newly organized troops, Mustapha defended himself with courage; but seeing the moment approach when he must yield to the superior number of his assailants, he put to death the old sultan and his mother, whose intrigues had instigated the insurrection. He retired to a fortress or strong place, where he had deposited a quantity of gunpowder. The Janissaries having pursued him thither, he set fire to the magazine, and blew himself and his persecutors into the air. The young Sultan Mahmoud had the courage to declare that he would retain the European discipline and dress; but after being attacked in his palace, and learning that the city was filled with carnage and conflagration, he yielded to necessity, and restored the privileges of the Janissaries. It is probable they would not have spared his life, but for the circumstance that he was the last scion of the race of Osman.

The ministers of the divan, whom General Sebastiani had gained over to the interests of France, finding themselves entirely discarded by the last revolution, Mr. Adair, the new English minister at Constantinople, concluded a treaty of peace (January 5, 1809), by which the Porte confirmed to England the commercial advantages which the treaty of 1675 had granted them, as well as the navigation of the Black Sea, which Mr. Spencer Smith had obtained (August 3, 1799).

Immediately after the return of the Emperor Alexander from Erfurt, an order was given to open negotiations with the Turks. The conference took place at Jassy; but it was immediately broken off, after the Russian plenipotentiaries had demanded, as preliminary conditions, the cession of Moldavia and Wallachia, and the expulsion of the British minister from Constantinople. Hostilities then

recommenced. The Russians were commanded by Prince Proseroffski, and after his death by Prince Bagration. Having passed the Danube, they took possession of Ismael, and fought a sanguinary battle at Tartaritzza, near Silistria (September 26), which compelled them to raise the siege of that place. The grand vizier, without taking advantage of his good fortune, retired to winter quarters.

The campaign of 1810 was more decisive. General Kamenskoi, the second of that name, had taken the chief command of the Russian army; his brother of the same name, and General Markoff, opened the campaign by the taking of Bazardjik (June 4); the capture of Silistria (June 11) by the commander-in-chief and Count Langeron, opened the way to Shumla, where the grand vizier, Yussuff Pacha, occupied a strong position, while General Sabaniëff defeated a body of Turkish troops near Rasgard (June 14), the remains of which were obliged to surrender. The grand vizier then demanded an armistice for negotiating a peace. The reply was, that it would be concluded immediately on his recognising the Danube as the limit of the two empires, and promising to pay a sum of 20,000,000 of piastres; the Russians remaining in possession of Bessarabia until it was paid. The grand vizier, at the instigation of the British minister, rejected these conditions. Yussuff Pacha still occupied his camp near Shumla, the rear of which was protected by the Hemus. Kamenskoi, the elder, attacked him in his entrench-

ments, but was repulsed with loss (June 23); he left his brother at Korgali Dere, about five leagues from Shumla, at the head of a corps of observation while he attempted himself to take Rudschuk by main force, but was again repulsed. The younger brother then found himself obliged, by the approach of a superior force, to abandon his position at Kargali Dere (August 15). Yussuff, being determined to save Rudschuk, detached Mouchtar Pacha with a body of 40,000 troops, who took up a formidable position at the place where the Jartars runs into the Danube. Kamenskoi, leaving to Count Langeron the care of the siege of Rudschuk, and ordering Sass to invest Guirdesov, which was situated on the other side of the Danube opposite Rudschuk, immediately directed his march against Mouchtar, and attacked him in his entrenchment at Batine. After a terrible carnage, the Russians took possession of the Turkish camp by main force (September 7), when Mouchtar escaped with a small detachment. Within a few days after, Count St. Priest took Sczistov, with the whole Turkish fleet. Rudschuk and Guirdesov surrendered on the same day (September 27), and Nicopoli and Widdin in a short time after; so that by the end of the campaign the Russians were masters of the whole right bank of the Danube. The grand vizier had continued all this time in his strong camp at Shumla. The Servians, assisted by a body of Russians, had taken possession of the last fortresses in their country which the Turks had still maintained, such as Cladova, Oreuva, and Praova.

PERIOD IX., concluded.

THE DECLINE AND DOWNFALL OF THE EMPIRE OF BUONAPARTE. A.D. 1810—1815.

We have already traced the power of Buonaparte to its greatest height; we shall now witness its downfall. Nevertheless, an event happened in 1811 which might have given stability to his authority, had it been legitimate; and that was the birth of a son (March 20), to whom he gave the title of *King of Rome*.

The differences that had arisen between Buonaparte and the head of the church, became this year a subject of public discussion. The will of a despot, whom no power could resist, was made to recoil more than once before the inflexible firmness of an old man, disarmed and in captivity. Ever since Buonaparte had deprived the church of her patrimony, and had been laid under the ban of excommunication, Pius VII., faithful to his principles, had refused confirmation to every bishop nominated by a man who was excluded from the Catholic communion. Buonaparte thought it might be possible to make a shift without the confirmation of the pope. With this view, he assembled a national council at Paris (June 17, 1811), composed of French and Italian bishops, and in which Cardinal Fesch, the Archbishop of Lyons, presided. He soon found, however, that despotic authority was of little avail against reli-

gious opinions. The prelates, on whose compliance he had calculated with too much confidence, declared that the council had no power to grant that confirmation which was refused by the Pope; but the arrest of three of the most refractory prelates, who were imprisoned at Vincennes (July 12), having given rise to a negotiation, the emperor adopted a modified scheme which the government had communicated to them; on condition, however, that it should be submitted for the approbation of the Pope. But his holiness, who had still remained at Savona, refused to treat with the council, which he declared null and void, as having been convened without his authority. The project of Buonaparte thus completely failed; the council was dismissed, and twenty of the sees of France and Italy were left without bishops.

Before proceeding to detail the grand event which overturned the dominion of Buonaparte, it will be necessary to advert to what took place in Spain and Portugal in 1811 and 1812. Sicknes and the want of provisions, had at length compelled Massena to effect his retreat from Santarém (March 1), during which he sustained considerable loss by the pursuit of Lord Wellington. Thus, for the third time, was Portugal released from the in-

PATRIMONY OF THE CHURCH

...ion of the French
...ossible, within the
...re confined, to c
...unter-marches of
...which they were
...of the principal ac
...anner.
... Marshal Soult re
... Lord Wellington
... Torres Vedras, whi
...ce to go in pursu
... of Badajoz was
... Lord Wellington
... Marshal Marmont,
... the command of th
... Marshal Soult, who
...ligned him to dise
... Portugal, where
...ning the rest of t
... of the campaign
... chet. After a des
... capitulation (J
... ain force (June 2
... Montserrat in t
... a signal victory
... ke (October 25)
... mium, he prepar
... alencia, which su
... ar 9, 1812).
... at the commen
... of Spain an
... consisted of
... and
... 1800 guerrillas. L
... obrigio (January 1
... to Portugal, whe
... early five months.
... ok that city (Jun
... the famous battle
... July 21), where C
... am a complete ro
... Madrid. Soult gav
... alia, which had c
... reated Andalusia
... lancia. Wellingt
... sions to get poss
... ace, the acquisi
... s safety. But Sou
... ant, and Soult ha
... save the town, t
... Portugal, and J
... Madrid (November
... At this time the I
... reatre of great eve
... ship between the ec
... cloud had been g
... ons of Buonaparte
... brought about a cor
... of the French Emp
... coming a subject of
... der. The manna
... ken possession of
... patrimony of his f
... person. The fir
... he exhibited was t
... stem, although in
... mber 13, 1810), w
... of colonial produc
... rance, wine only
... ganizing a force

loss (June 23); in
e, about five leagues
corps of observation
to take Rudschuk
alsed. The younger
obliged, by the ap
abandon his positio
Yussuff, being de
detached Mouchat
troops, who took in
ce where the Jaxtr
muskoi, leaving the
siege of Rudschuk
Guidesov, which in
the Danube opposi
al Soult, who had
n his entrenchment
riage, the Russian
camp by main force
tar escaped with
few days after, Com
the whole Turkish
sov surrendered to
, and Nicopoli and
so that by the end
were masters of the
oe. The grand vic
his strong camp
sted by a body
of the last fort,
orks had still main
a, and Praova.

BUONAPARTE.

on whose counsil
no much confidence
no power to grant
refused by the Pope
most refractory pre
at Vincennes (July
negotiation, the res
rich the government
on condition, how
re for the approb
liness, who had still
to treat with the
and void, as having
authority. The pro
pletely failed; the
venty of the sees
out bishops.
l the grand event
of Buonaparte,
what took place in
1812. Sickness
and at length com
treat from Santarem
stained considerable
Wellington. Thus, fo
released from the in

tion of the French army. It would be im-
possible, within the narrow limits to which we are
confined, to detail the various marches and
counter-marches of the generals, or the operations
in which they were engaged. We can only point
out the principal actions in a detached and cursory
manner.
Marshal Soult retook Badajoz (March 10), while
Lord Wellington still retained his position at
Torres Vedras, which he had quitted with reluc-
tance to go in pursuit of Massena. As the posses-
sion of Badajoz was of importance for the English,
Lord Wellington determined to besiege it; but
Marshal Marmont, who had replaced Massena in
the command of the army of the North, and Mar-
chal Soult, who had formed a junction with him,
obliged him to discontinue the siege. He retired
to Portugal, where he remained on the defensive
during the rest of the campaign. The advantages
of the campaign of 1811 belonged to General
Marmont. After a destructive siege, he took Tortosa
by capitulation (January 1), and Tarragona by
main force (June 28). He made himself master
of Montserrat in the same manner (August 19).
By a signal victory which he gained over General
Murviedro (October 25) at Murviedro, the ancient Sa-
mutium, he prepared the way for the conquest of
Valencia, which surrendered by capitulation (Janu-
ary 9, 1812).
At the commencement of 1812, the French
army in Spain amounted to 150,000 men. The
army consisted of 52,000 English troops, 24,000
Portuguese, and 100,000 Spaniards, including
10,000 guerrillas. Lord Wellington reduced Ciudad
Rodrigo (January 19), and then retired once more
to Portugal, where he kept on the defensive for
nearly five months. He then attacked Salamanca,
and took that city (June 28), and defeated Marmont
in the famous battle of Arcopoles, near Salamanca
(July 21), where Clausel saved the French army
from a complete rout. Joseph Buonaparte quitted
Madrid. Soult gave orders to raise the siege of
Saliz, which had continued for two years. He
recovered Andalusia, and joined King Joseph in
Alicia. Wellington, now master of Burgos, was
desirous to get possession also of the citadel of that
place, the acquisition of which was necessary for
his safety. But Souham, who had succeeded Mar-
mont, and Soult having approached on both sides
to save the town, the British general retired again
to Portugal, and Joseph Buonaparte returned to
Madrid (November 1).
At this time the North of Europe had been the
theatre of great events. For some time, the friend-
ship between the courts of St. Petersburg and St.
Louis had been growing cool. The last usurpa-
tions of Buonaparte, during the course of 1810,
brought about a complete rupture. The extension
of the French Empire towards the Baltic was be-
coming a subject of suspicion and anxiety to Alex-
ander. The manner in which Buonaparte had
taken possession of the duchy of Oldenburg, the
patrimony of his family, was an outrage against
his person. The first symptom of discontent which
he exhibited was by abandoning the continental
system, although indirectly, by an Ukase (Decem-
ber 13, 1810), which permitted the importation
of colonial produce, while it interdicted that of
France, wine only excepted. Under pretext of
organizing a force for the maintenance of these

regulations, he raised an army of 90,000 men.
A rupture with Buonaparte appeared then un-
avoidable.
In Sweden also there arose new subjects of
quarrel. Buonaparte complained, that in that
country the continental system had not been put
in execution with sufficient rigour. He demanded,
that Charles XIII. should put 2,000 sailors into
his pay; that he should introduce the tariff of
Trianon, and admit French revenue-officers at
Gottenburg. In short, Sweden, Denmark, and
the duchy of Warsaw, were to form a confeder-
ation, under the protection of France. During these
discussions, Marshal Davoust, who commanded in
the north of Germany, took possession of Swedish
Pomerania and the Isle of Rugen (January 27,
1812). Buonaparte offered, however, to surrender
that province to Sweden, and to compel Alexander
to restore Finland to her, if Charles XIII. would
agree to furnish 30,000 troops against Russia.
Sweden, on the contrary, was on terms of con-
ciliation with that power. By an alliance, which
was signed at St. Petersburg (April 5), Alexander
promised to procure her Norway. A body of be-
tween 25,000 and 30,000 Swedes, and between
15,000 and 20,000 Russians, were then to make a
diversion against France on the coasts of Germany.
This design was afterwards changed, in a confer-
ence which the emperor had at Abo (August 30),
where it was arranged that the Russian troops,
destined to act in Norway, should be transported
to Riga for the defence of Russia; and that they
should not, till a later period, undertake the con-
quest of Norway. Charles XIII. was also recon-
ciled to England, while he had always pretended
to be ignorant of the declaration of war of No-
vember 17, 1810. A treaty of peace was signed
at Orebrog (July 12), where they agreed, though
in general terms, on a defensive alliance.
Buonaparte, seeing the moment approach when
a rupture with Russia would take place, hesitated
for some time as to the part he should take with
regard to Prussia, in the very centre of which he
still possessed three fortresses. He determined at
last to preserve that state, and to make an ally of
it, on which the principal burden of the war should
fall. Four conventions were concluded at Paris,
on the same day (February 24), between these two
powers. By the principal treaty, an alliance purely
defensive was established; but, according to certain
secret articles, that alliance was declared offensive;
on such terms, however, that Prussia was not to
furnish any contingent beyond the Pyrenees in
Italy, or against the Turks. By the first con-
vention, which was likewise to be kept secret, the
alliance was expressly directed against Russia; and
the King of Prussia promised to furnish a body of
20,000 auxiliary troops. Glogau, Stettin, and
Custring, were to be still occupied by the French.
The two other conventions related to the sums still
due by Prussia, and the supplies which she had to
furnish.
A few days after, there was also signed at Paris
a defensive alliance against Russia. The reci-
procal supplies to be furnished by the contract-
ing parties were 30,000 men; and the court of
Vienna was given to hope, that she might again
be restored to the possession of the Illyrian pro-
vinces. From that moment, Buonaparte began to
make the most active preparations. By a decree

of the senate, the whole male population of France, between the ages of twenty and sixty years, was divided into three *Bans* or bodies, summoned by proclamation; the first of these contained 100,000 men, to be placed at the disposal of the government. The princes of the confederation were to furnish their contingent as follows:—Bavaria 30,000 troops, Westphalia and Saxony each 20,000, Wurtemberg 14,000, and the kingdom of Italy 40,000. Negotiations were at that time in progress between Buonaparte and Alexander, apparently with a view of adjusting their mutual complaints. But matters had recently taken a turn, which left little reason to hope that they would come to any satisfactory result. These conferences were continued at Dresden, whither Buonaparte had gone, and where he broke faith with the Emperor of Austria, the King of Prussia, and a great number of the princes of the Rhenish Confederation. This was the last moment of Buonaparte's greatness. He waited the return of Count Narbonne, whom he had sent to Wilna with his last proposals to the Emperor Alexander. Immediately after the arrival of the Count, war was declared (June 12, 1812).

The army of Buonaparte amounted to 587,000 men, of which 73,000 were cavalry. It was separated into three grand divisions; the main army was composed of the divisions of Davoust, Oudinot, and Ney. It contained also the troops of Wurtemberg, at the head of whom was the prince royal. The second army, commanded by Eugene Beauharnais, consisted of the divisions of Junot and St. Cyr; the Bavarians, under the command of Deroy and Wrede, made a part of it. The third army, commanded by Jerome Buonaparte, consisted of the Poles under Prince Poniatowski, the Saxons under Regnier, and the Westphalians under Vandamme. The Austrian auxiliaries, at the head of whom was Prince Schwartzberg, formed the extreme right wing. The corps of Marshal Macdonald and the Prussians were placed on the extreme left. To oppose this immense mass, Alexander had only 260,000 men, divided into two armies, which were called the first and second armies of the West. The former, under the command of Count Barclay de Tolly, extended as far as Grodno, and communicated on the north side with Count d'Essen, Governor of Riga; and on the south, with the second army of the West, at the head of which was Prince Bagration. But independently of these forces, there were bodies of reserve and armies of observation formed with all expedition, and ultimately joined with the main armies.

Of the great number of battles fought during this memorable campaign, we must content ourselves with selecting the more important, without entering into a detail of the various movements of either party. The inferiority of numbers which Alexander had to oppose to Buonaparte seemed to render a defensive plan advisable, according to which, by destroying all the means of subsistence in the districts which they abandoned, they might allure the enemy into countries desolated and destitute of every resource. Buonaparte allowed himself to be duped by feint retreats; his scheme was to place himself between the two Russian armies, and, after having destroyed both, to penetrate into the interior of the Empire, where he reckoned on

finding immense riches, and to dictate the terms of peace, as he had twice done at Vienna.

The passage of the Niemen, by the French army, was the commencement of hostilities (June 22); the Russians immediately began their system of retreat. Buonaparte, at first, succeeded in penetrating between the two armies; but after several battles fought by Prince Bagration, more especially that at Mohiloff (July 23), the two armies effected a junction at Smolensko. Jerome Buonaparte and Vandamme, to whom Buonaparte attributed that check, were ordered to quit the French army, while he himself advanced as far as Witepsk.

Buonaparte engaged Barclay de Tolly, and fought a bloody battle with him at Smolensko (August 17). He took possession of that city by force, after it had been set on fire by the inhabitants. He found no provisions in it, and secured a shelter to cover his sick and wounded. On the news of the progress which the French were making, a general enthusiasm seized the Russian nation. Alexander had encouraged and excited this patriotic spirit by repairing to Moscow. The nobles armed their peasantry, and prepared to fight with desperation to the last. The two armies of the West were combined into one, of which Prince Kutusoff took the command. He engaged Buonaparte, and fought the famous battle of Moscow (September 7). Although 65,000 men, including Russian, French, and allies, were left dead on the field of battle, that action was by no means decisive; but Kutusoff, whose army was reduced to 70,000 men, while Buonaparte, out of 150,000, had still 120,000 left, resolved to continue his retreat, and to leave Moscow at the mercy of the enemy. The French entered that place seven days after the battle (September 14). They found that ancient capital entirely abandoned, but still containing immense wealth, which the inhabitants had not been able to carry with them. Within two days, a conflagration, which broke out in 500 places at once, reduced that immense city to a heap of ashes. The precautions of the incendiaries had been so well taken that all the efforts of the French to arrest the progress of the flames proved ineffectual; and, out of 9158 houses, they could only save 2041. They perished irrevocably the means of subsistence, which had for a moment revived the courage of the invaders.

In a short time famine began to make its appearance in the army of Buonaparte. Dissatisfied the real state of his affairs, he twice offered peace, which Alexander refused to treat at a time when the war had so recently commenced; and told the Russian generals, that he was resolved to continue his retreat. Napoleon also commenced his retreat after six weeks' occupation of Moscow. Mortier, who commanded the rear-guard, had orders to set fire to the Kremlin, the palace of the ancient czars of Russia. Buonaparte directed his march towards Smolensko through a country reduced to an entire desert. He was incessantly harassed by the Russians, whose troops, marching at a convenient distance, attacked both his flanks. On arriving at Smolensko (November 9), after having lost 40,000 men, the army was assailed by the rigours of winter, which added to their other misfortunes. Kutusoff having advanced before them, and taking post at Krassno, they were obliged to force a passage with the loss

of 15,000 men, a
days after, 11,000
of his arms; 35,000
without horses, we
terior of Moscow
This exhausted
negues to march,
Persina, where of
assage of that riv
Michajloff, amount
arrived from Moh
under Count Witte
orth to join the
dy of reserve, w
intercepted them
ble to prevent the
not, and Dombrov
Buonaparte of 35,
and famine. The
rred with admir
ut it cost France
berty of more th
At this point, t
ased to pursue th
rie's army; neve
ere continually b
as besides a fri
nd clothing, so th
sacrifice to these p
This was the first
y; all the other
the miserable ren
December 9) wen
ditions; but the C
in the enjoyment of
they were obliged
down, from whi
owards the Vistu
of Macdonald, wh
command, and of
and Saxons, none
ute, only 18,800
4,000 Poles and
from Russia.
Buonaparte hin
privately on the 5
and of the army
espatch had he c
Sh of the same n
Prince Schwartz
deynie who com
several engagements
one of which had
fair of the Beres
now and Pultusk.
engagements, althou
owner, had taken
hein and the left
tially towards the
the Marshals O
Macdonald. On
and rendered ver
ment General
auxiliaries, had b
Buonaparte, he t
from any political
are avowed, but
which he had been
with the Russian
whole forces from

the campaign.
taken.
retreats from Moscow.

Passage of the Beresina.
Misfortunes of French army.
General Yorke deserts them.

to dictate the terms
at Vienna.
men, by the French
of hostilities (June
rst, succeeded in peac
ies; but after sever
agration, more espe
23), the two armie
sko. Jerome Buona
om Buonaparte attr
to quit the French
ced as far as Witeps
relay de Tolly, and
h him at Smolensk
ession of that city b
n fire by the inhabi
ons in it, and scare
nd wowed. On the
h the French were
n seized the Russian
courage and excite
ng to Moscow. The
, and prepared to fight

The two armies of
o one, of which Prus
He engaged Buona
s battle of Moskow
om Moscow (Septem
n, including Russian
dead on the field of
means decisive; bu
duced to 70,000 men
000, had still 120,00
retreat, and to leave
enemy. The French
after the battle (Sep
at ancient capital of
containing immens
s had not been able
two days, a conflagr
places at once, reduce
of ashes. The pre
ad been so well taken
uch to arrest the pro
effective; and, out of
ly save 2041. Thus
means of subsistence
eived the courage of

egan to make its ap
Buonaparte. Dissemb
e twice offered peace
a time when the war
and told the Russian
to continue his re
need his retreat af
scow. Mortier, wh
and orders to set fire
ancient czars of Russi
t towards Smolensk
an entire desert. H
the Russians, wiso
ent distance, attack
g at Smolensko (No
st 40,000 men, the
urs of winter, whic
nes. Kutusoff havin
king post at Krast
passage with the los

of 13,000 men, and 70 pieces of canon. Two days after, 11,000 men of Ney's division laid down their arms; 35,000 men, and twenty-five cannons without horses, were all that remained to the commander of Moscow.

This exhausted and dispirited army had fifty leagues to march, before they could reach the Beresina, where other dangers awaited them. The passage of that river was occupied by the army of Chichagoff, amounting to 50,000 men, who had arrived from Moldavia. Another Russian army, under Count Wittgenstein, was marching from the north to join the former; but Marshal Victor's body of reserve, which had arrived from Prussia, intercepted them for a while, without having been able to prevent their final junction. Victor, Oudinot, and Dombrowski, brought a reinforcement to Buonaparte of 35,000 men, exhausted with cold and famine. The passage of the Beresina was covered with admirable bravery (November 27, 28); but it cost France, or the allies, the lives or the liberty of more than 30,000 men.

At this point, the main body of the Russians ceased to pursue the unfortunate wreck of Buonaparte's army; nevertheless, as far as Wilna, they were continually harassed by the Cossacs. There was besides a frightful deficiency of provisions and clothing, so that upwards of 25,000 men fell a sacrifice to these privations in their route to Wilna. This was the first city or town that fell in their way; all the others had been completely destroyed; the miserable remnant who reached that place (December 9) were at length supplied with provisions; but the Cossacs did not leave them long to the enjoyment of repose. On the following day they were obliged to commence their retreat to Kovno, from which they directed their march towards the Vistula. Independently of the corps of Macdonald, who had the Prussians under his command, and of the auxiliary body of Austrians and Saxons, none of which took any part in that route, only 18,800 French and Italians, and about 23,000 Poles and Germans, found their way back from Russia.

Buonaparte himself had taken his departure privately on the 5th December, leaving the command of the army to Joachim Murat. With such despatch had he consulted his safety, that on the 8th of the same month he arrived at Paris.

Prince Schwartzemberg, being joined by General Beynier, who commanded the Saxons, had fought several engagements with the army of Chichagoff, one of which had proved decisive; and after the affair of the Beresina he had retired towards Warsaw and Pultusk. Several most sanguinary engagements, although not more decisive than the former, had taken place between Count Wittgenstein and the left wing of the French army; especially towards the commencement of the campaign, when Marshals Oudinot and St. Cyr had joined Macdonald. On these occasions the Prussians had rendered very important services; but the moment General Yorke, who commanded these auxiliaries, had been informed of the retreat of Buonaparte, he thought himself authorized, not from any political motives, which he would never have avowed, but from the destitute condition in which he had been left, to conclude a capitulation with the Russians, by which he withdrew his whole forces from the French army (December 29).

That event was of little importance in itself, although it produced a very great sensation in Prussia, and served as a pretext for Buonaparte to demand new levies, without being obliged to acknowledge the whole extent of the losses he had sustained. One of his ministers, Regnault d'Angely, had even the effrontery to speak, in his official report, of the *Glorious Retreat of Moscow!* Moreover, a decree of the senate, issued at the commencement of the following year (January 11), placed a new conscription of 350,000 men at the disposal of the government. In order to raise the necessary funds for this new armament, Buonaparte seized the revenues of all the communes in France; their properties were sold to promote his schemes; and he promised to make them ample reimbursement, by assigning to them annuities on the civil list.

Nothing annoyed Buonaparte so much as the incessant resistance and opposition of Pope Pius VII. In the hope of gaining a more easy victory, by bringing that respectable old man nearer his person, he had ordered him to be conveyed to the Palace of Fontainebleau, about the middle of the year 1812. After his return from Moscow, he repaired thither himself, and succeeded in extorting the Pope's consent to a new concordat; on condition, however, that the stipulations should be kept secret, until they were examined by a consistory of cardinals. But Buonaparte took an early opportunity of publishing this new concordat, as a fundamental law of the state—a circumstance which induced Pius VII. to disavow it, and to declare it null and of none effect.

Meantime a new and formidable league was preparing against Buonaparte. After the campaign of 1812, the King of Prussia had demanded, agreeably to the convention of February 24, that Buonaparte should reimburse him for the 93,000,000 which he had advanced in furnishing supplies to the French army, beyond the sum which he owed as his contingent for the war. The refusal of Buonaparte to pay that debt served as a pretext for Frederic William to shake off an alliance so contrary to the true interests of his kingdom. An appeal which he made to the nation excited a general enthusiasm; and as every thing had been for five years preparing in secret, in the twinkling of an eye, the Prussian army, which had been reduced to 42,000 men, was raised to 128,000. This defection of Prussia furnished Buonaparte with a plea for demanding new levies. A decree of the senate (April 3, 1813) ordered him 180,000 additional troops.

The treaty which was signed at Kalisch and Breslau (February 27, 28) laid the foundation of an intimate alliance between Russia and the King of Prussia. Alexander promised to furnish 150,000 men, and Prussia 80,000, exclusive of the troops in garrisons and fortresses. Alexander moreover engaged never to lay down arms until Prussia should be restored to her statistical, financial, and geographical position, conformably to the state of that monarchy, such as it had been before the war of 1806. Within a few days after, these two monarchs had an interview at Breslau, where a more intimate friendship was contracted, which subsisted between them for a long time.

Prince Kutusoff issued a proclamation, dated from Kalisch (March 23, 1813), which announced

to the Germans that the confederation of the Rhine must henceforth be regarded as dissolved. The House of Mecklenburg, without waiting for that annunciation, had already set the first example of abandoning that infamous league. The allies had flattered themselves that the King of Saxony would make common cause with them; but that monarch declared that he would remain faithful to his system. This obstinate perseverance of a respectable prince, whose country abounded with resources, did much injury to the common cause. A later date, it cost the King of Saxony the half of his estates, without taking into account the city of Warsaw, which could never be regarded but as a precarious possession.

The King of Sweden had engaged with Alexander to make a diversion on the rear of Buonaparte, on condition that he would secure him the possession of Norway, or at least the province of that kingdom called the Bishopric of Drontheim. Great Britain was desirous that that arrangement should be made with the consent of the King of Denmark, who was offered a compensation on the side of Holstein, as well as the whole of Swedish Pomerania. Frederic VI. having given an absolute refusal, a treaty between Great Britain and Sweden was concluded at Stockholm (March 3, 1813), by which the latter engaged to employ a body of 30,000 troops on the continent in active service against France. It was agreed that this army should act in concert with the Russian troops, placed, in consequence of other arrangements, under the command of the Prince Royal of Sweden. Great Britain promised to employ every necessary means of procuring Sweden the possession of Norway, without having recourse to force; unless the King of Denmark should refuse to accede to the alliance of the North. She promised to furnish supplies to Sweden, and ceded to her the island of Guadaloupe. After this alliance with England, Sweden entered likewise into a league offensive and defensive with Prussia, by a treaty which was signed at Stockholm (April 22). Frederic William promised to despatch 27,000 troops to join the army which the prince royal commanded in Germany.

Joachim Murat, to whom Buonaparte had intrusted the command of the few troops which he had brought back from Moscow, abandoned his commission, and retired to Naples. Eugene Beauharnais then assumed the command, and arrived with 16,000 men on the Elbe (March 10); but after being joined by the French troops from Pomerania, the Bavarians, the Saxons, and a corps which General Grenier had formed, his army by the end of the month amounted to 87,000 men; extending along the left bank of the river from Dresden to Hainburg. In a short time, the whole disposable force of Buonaparte in Germany was again augmented to 308,000 men.

The Prussian army consisted of 128,000 troops, including garrisons and bodies of reserve; but the three battalions of Blucher, Yorke, and Bulow, who had taken the field, did not amount to more than 51,000 combatants. The main army of the Russians, which, since the death of Kutusoff, had been commanded by Count Wittgenstein, amounted to 38,000 men; although the whole of the Russian forces on the Vistula and the Oder, and between the Oder and the Elbe, amounted to 166,000 men.

The first action, which took place in Germany was the battle of Luneburg (April 2), where the Russian general Dorenborg obliged general Morand's division, on their route from Pomerania, to lay down their arms.

On the 5th of April, Buonaparte took the command of his army in person; and on the 2nd of May, with 115,000 men, he engaged 169,000 Prussians and Russians, under the command of Wittgenstein. The advantage in that action was on the side of the French. The loss on both sides was equal. The Prussians took 1,000 prisoners with ten pieces of cannon, without themselves losing one. The scene of this battle, so glorious for the Prussians, was in the neighbourhood of Gross-Gerschen, to which the vinity of Buonaparte has given the name of Lutzen, in commemoration of the famous Gustavus Adolphus. In his bulletins he represented that battle, which was by no means decisive, as a complete victory, because the allies did not renew the combat, and next day commenced their retreat to the right bank of the Rhine, to advance nearer to their reinforcements.

They took up a position at Bautzen. The numbers there amounted to 36,000 men, who engaged 148,000 French, under the command of Buonaparte (May 21, 1813). The allies had determined not to expose themselves to a defeat, but to terminate every battle the moment they saw it could not turn to their advantage. Within five days after that engagement, to which the French gave the name of the battle of Wurthen, Blucher gained a decided advantage at Haynau over the division of General Maison, and captured the whole of their artillery. An armistice was concluded between the two parties at Poischwitz.

This measure was at the request of Buonaparte as it was necessary for him to await the arrival of his reinforcements; especially since he found himself menaced on the north by an invasion of the Swedes. It is probable he would not have taken this step had he penetrated the views of Austria, but Count Metternich had dexterously contrived to conceal these from him, in the several interviews which he had with him at Dresden, so that the sagacity of that great commander was completely at fault. The allies had no wish for an armistice, which could only make them lose time as their armaments were in a state of readiness; but they consented to it at the request of Austria who had need of some delay to complete her preparations, although she was at first actuated by a different motive. She had still hopes to avoid the war, by inducing Buonaparte to accept these moderate conditions of peace to which the allies had given their consent by the treaty of June 27, of which we shall have occasion to speak immediately. At the time when the armistice was signed, Count Metternich, who had apprized Buonaparte of these conditions, had already certain information that the two monarchs were not deceived in predicting that they would be refused. All hopes of peace had now vanished; but there still remained another motive, which made the court of Vienna anxious for further delay.

By a convention signed at Dresden (June 30), Buonaparte accepted the mediation of Austria for a peace, either general or continental; and the armistice, which was to expire on the 20th July

was prolonged to the
request of Francis I.,
Prague. Buonaparte
never supposed
against him. The allies
knew well the dispo-
sition, the only cal-
culating given up all hope
any reasonable ter-
mination on the auspices of
Prague was opened.
them in which the negotia-
tion the 10th of Au-
gust, Russia and Prussia
of the armistice had
that their diplomatic
Within two days
against Buonaparte;
they met at Prague
main army, which
Prince Schwarzenberg
led.

It will not be im-
probable that the
and procured the acc-
cession to the cause of the
Prussia. The fa-
vourable power, with
ing, for the mainte-
nance of the same
augmentation of
into by the treaty
Russia promised to
obtain a certain por-
tion of the principality of H-
annover, in the
negotiation of between
The treaty of Reichen-
bach and Russia (June
promised to pay to the
year, £1,333,333
160,000 men. 3.
between Austria, Prussia
first engaged to
state, if at the conclu-
sion of the war, it
accepted the condi-
tions of the armistice.
The allies, which we have already
on behalf, demanded
Austrian provinces, un-
der the name of the
duchy of Salzburg,
edges of her sincere
Europe. Prussia was
of her part of the
Austria, and the evacuated
by the French;
visions on the left bank
they allowed the king to
remain, and they deplored
usurpations in the
other article of the
these conditions were
given, they should not
that Austria ar-
rived on the footing
of 1813; that the Confed-
eration dissolved; the im-
perial crown secured; and the
throne of Spain
between Great

was prolonged to the 10th of August. At the request of Francis I., a sort of congress was opened at Prague. Buonaparte had no wish for peace, as he never supposed that Austria would declare against him. The allies had no wish for it, as they knew well the disposition of that power; while Austria, the only cabinet which had pacific views, had given up all hope of ever bringing Buonaparte to any reasonable terms of accommodation. Such were the auspices under which the congress of Prague was opened. They were discussing the terms in which the negotiations were to proceed, when the 10th of August arrived. The ministers of Russia and Prussia then declared that the term of the armistice had expired, and consequently that their diplomatic powers were at an end.

Within two days after, Austria declared war against Buonaparte; and the three monarchs, who were met at Prague, resolved to accompany the main army, which was under the command of Prince Schwartzberg, during the whole campaign.

It will not be improper here to give a summary of the treaties which constituted the sixth coalition, and procured the accession of Austria, so decisive for the cause of the allies. 1. The treaty of Reichenbach (June 14), between Great Britain and Prussia. The former bound herself to pay to the latter power, within six months, £668,666 sterling, for the maintenance of 80,000 troops; and under the same engagement with regard to the augmentation of Prussia, that Russia had entered into by the treaty of Kalisch. The King of Prussia promised to cede to the Elector of Saxony a certain portion of territory, including the principality of Hildesheim, and containing a population of between 300,000 and 400,000 souls. The treaty of Reichenbach between Great Britain and Russia (June 15), by which the former promised to pay to the other, before the expiry of the year, £1,331,334 sterling, for the maintenance of 160,000 men. 3. The treaty of Reichenbach, between Austria, Prussia, and Russia (June 27); by which the first engaged to declare war against Buonaparte, if at the conclusion of the armistice he had not accepted the conditions of peace which they offered him. The following are the proposals to which we have already alluded. Austria, on her behalf, demanded only the restitution of the Silesian provinces, and the territory which she had ceded to the duchy of Warsaw. Such were the objects of her sincere desire for restoring peace to Europe. Prussia was content to obtain the restitution of her part of the same duchy, and that of Dantzic, and the evacuation of the fortresses occupied by the French; thus abandoning all her possessions on the left bank of the Rhine. Moreover, they allowed the kingdom of Westphalia still to remain, and they deprived Buonaparte only of his usurpations in the north of Germany. By another article of the treaty, it was stipulated, that these conditions were rejected, and war once again, they should never make peace but on condition that Austria and Prussia were to be again placed on the footing in which they had been in 1805; that the Confederation of the Rhine should be dissolved; the independence of Holland and Belgium secured; and the House of Bourbon restored to the throne of Spain. 4. The treaty of Petersburgh between Great Britain and Russia (July

6), by which the former undertook to support a German legion of 10,000 men for the service of Russia. 5. A definitive alliance signed at Toplitz (September 9), between Austria, Prussia, and Russia, by which these powers were to assist each other with 60,000 men. It was agreed to reconstruct the Austrian monarchy upon the plan approaching as near as possible to that of 1805, to dissolve the Confederation of the Rhine and the kingdom of Westphalia; and to restore the House of Brunswick-Luneburg. 6. The treaty of alliance signed at Toplitz between Austria and Great Britain.

Buonaparte, on his side, likewise acquired an ally at this important crisis. The Danes had already entered into Hamburg with the French, when Marshal Davoust compelled General Tettenborn to evacuate that city (May 36), which he had got possession of in the month of March. An English fleet having appeared off Copenhagen (May 31), and demanded the cession of Norway in favour of Sweden, the King of Denmark concluded a treaty with Buonaparte at Copenhagen, by which the former engaged to declare war against Sweden, Russia, and Prussia, and the latter against Sweden. Immediately after, an army of 12,000 Danes, under the command of Frederic Prince of Hesse, was joined to that of Davoust.

The plan of the campaign for the allies had been settled in the conference held at Trachenberg by the Emperor of Russia, the King of Prussia, the Prince Royal of Sweden, and the plenipotentiaries of Austria and Great Britain. The forces of the coalition amounted to 264,000 Austrians, 249,000 Russians, 277,000 Prussians, and 24,000 Swedes; but not more than 700,000 men were engaged in the campaign; of which 192,000 were occupied with the sieges of Dantzic, Zamosez, Glogau, Custring, and Stettin. These 700,000 men were divided as follows:—

The Army of Bohemia, composed of Austrians, Russians, and Prussians, under the command of Prince Schwartzberg, amounted to 237,700 men, with an enormous park of artillery.

The Army of the North, composed of Prussians, Russians, and Swedes, under the command of the Prince Royal of Sweden, amounting to 154,000 men, with 387 pieces of cannon.

The Army of Silesia, composed of Prussians and Russians, under the command of Blucher, 95,000 strong, with 356 pieces of cannon.

The Austrian Army of Bavaria, commanded by Prince Reuss, containing 42,700 men, with 42 pieces of cannon.

The Austrian Army in Italy, under Hiller, 50,000 strong, with 120 pieces of cannon.

The Austrian Army of Reserve, stationed between Vienna and Presburg, under the command of Duke Ferdinand of Wurtemberg, 60,000 strong.

The Russian Army of Reserve in Poland, under the command of Bennigsen, 57,000 strong, with 198 pieces of cannon.

To these forces Buonaparte opposed an army of 462,000 men, including 50,000 who occupied thirteen fortresses; besides the army of Bavaria, which watched the movements of the Prince of Reuss, and 40,000 men which Eugene Beauharnais had in Italy.

Hostilities recommenced immediately after the termination of the armistice; Silesia, Saxony, and

sometimes the frontiers, became the theatre of war. The Prince Royal of Sweden covered Herlin, which was threatened by Marshal Oudinot. The battle of Gross-Beeren (August 23), which was gained by the Prussian General Blücher, saved the capital. In Silesia, Blücher, pressed hard by Buonaparte, had retired as far as Jauer; but the latter, having intelligence of the march of the allies on Dresden, retraced his steps with a part of his army, while Blücher attacked Marshal Maedonald at the river Katsbach, and gained a signal victory (August 26), in which he took 10,000 prisoners, and 103 pieces of cannon. General Pathou, who commanded a detachment of 8,000 men, was obliged to surrender at Plagwitz to Count Langeron (August 29). The army of Bohemia attacked Dresden a few hours after Buonaparte had arrived with his reinforcements. The battle was bloody, and lasted two days (August 26, 27). Thirteen thousand Austrians being cut off on the left wing, were obliged to lay down their arms; the allies retired in good order, leaving 6,000 men killed and wounded on the field of battle, and 26 pieces of cannon in the hands of the French, who had lost 18,000 men by that victory. General Moreau, who had come on the invitation of the Prince Royal of Sweden to take a part in the struggle against France, was mortally wounded.

Before the battle, Vandamme had been detached with 30,000 men to cut off the retreat of the allies. He encountered Count Ostermann Tolstoy, who was at the head of 8,000 Austrians, and repulsed him as far as the valley of Culm. The King of Prussia, who was at Toplitz, apprized the Russian general, that unless he made haste to arrest the march of Vandamme, the latter would succeed in cutting off the Emperor Alexander from his army. The Russians fought the whole day (August 29), with the most heroic determination; Count Ostermann having had his left arm carried off by a shot, the command was taken by Marshal Milloradowich. At length they were reinforced by several Austrian and Russian corps, which the King of Prussia had sent to their assistance, and which enabled them to maintain their position. During the night, Barclay de Tolly had arrived with new reinforcements, and next day (August 30), the famous battle of Culm was fought, which was decided by the arrival of General Kleist on the heights of Nollendorf, lying behind the position of Vandamme. The latter finding himself thus intercepted, a part of his cavalry forced their passage, by cutting their way through a regiment of recruits. Vandamme then surrendered himself prisoner, with 10,000 men and 81 pieces of cannon.

The grand object of Buonaparte was to get possession of Berlin. Ney, at the head of 80,000 men, was charged with the execution of this enterprise. But he sustained a complete rout at Denewitz (September 6), by the Prince Royal of Sweden; and another by Bülow at Tanzenien. The French there lost 20,000 made prisoners, with 80 pieces of cannon and all their baggage. The plan of the allies to withdraw Buonaparte from Dresden, and allure him into the plains of Saxony, where they could unite all their forces against him, succeeded entirely to their wish. He quitted Dresden (October 7), at the head of 125,000 men, with the hope of defeating the enemy in separate armies. But the latter had manœuvred so skilfully, that the

armies of Bohemia, the North, Silesia, and the Russian army of reserve, were ready to effect junction on a given signal. The plains of Leipsic decided the fate of Buonaparte. His army there amounted to 171,000 combatants. The allies would have had 301,000, namely, 78,000 Austrians, 69,500 Prussians, 130,000 Russians, and 18,000 Swedes, if they had been able to form a union at the commencement of the battle.

Several different engagements had preceded the great battle. On the 16th October, the army of Bohemia alone fought three several actions at Wachau, Comewitz, and Lindenau. None of these were productive of any decisive result; but Blücher had encountered Marshal Marmont on the same day, and defeated him at Mockern. On the following day, there were some engagements, but without any decisive result; they were fought by the three armies of Sweden, Blücher, and Bernigsen, who were on their march to the field of battle at Leipsic. Buonaparte then began to be aware of the danger of his position. For the first time he foresaw the possibility of a defeat, and sent General Bertrand to Weissenfels to secure the bridge over the Saal. On the 18th, at day-break, he made proposals of an armistice and peace through the Austrian General Meerfeld, who had fallen into his hands; but both the one and the other were disregarded. This was the first day of the battle of Leipsic; the French army resisted with great heroism, and it was not till after the arrival of Blücher and the army of Sweden, that they were compelled to abandon part of the position, and to retire to the very gates of Leipsic. Several bodies of Saxons and Wurtembergers passed over on that day to the ranks of the allies. During the night, the French army effected their retreat by Leipsic to Weissenfels. Maedonald and Poniatowski had orders to defend the city. It was attacked by the allies next day. The French made a vigorous resistance. At ten o'clock in the morning, Buonaparte escaped among the fugitives, with cannon, and the equipage which encumbered the gate of Altranstadt. The Elster, which runs by the city, had only one bridge, which they caused to be blown up as soon as Buonaparte had passed. Thus Maedonald and Poniatowski found themselves fairly enclosed with their divisions. The latter was drowned in attempting to swim across the Elster. Maedonald was made prisoner, as was the King of Saxony, who had remained at Leipsic. Buonaparte, on these two days, lost 16,000 killed, wounded, and prisoners, 70,000 men, and 300 pieces of cannon. The allies also purchased the victory dearly.

Buonaparte directed his flight with all haste towards Mayence, closely pursued by the Cossacks, who made a great many prisoners, besides a rich booty in cannon and baggage. When he arrived at Hanau, he found his passage intercepted by the enemy which he did not expect. Since the month of August, a negotiation had been set on foot by the King of Bavaria, for inducing him to abandon the cause of Buonaparte. To this measure he length agreed, by a convention, which was signed at Ried (October 8), which secured to Bavaria the possession of absolute and independent sovereignty, and complete indemnity for the restitutions which she was, in that case, to make to Austria.

Immediately after the battle of Leipsic, the Bavarians, a body of between 100,000 and 150,000 men, and the Prussians, under the command of Marshal Bülow, proceeded to the city of Erfurt, which had been in the possession of Buonaparte since the battle of Jena. He encountered the Prussians at the battle of the Red Bank, which took place on the 15th of October. Buonaparte lost 2,000 men, but he forced a passage through the lines of the Rhine. Marshal Bülow had left at Dillenburg, and he had to negotiate with 27,000 Prussians, with 20,000 men, and in the month of October, he was taken the command of the army, and occupied the Illyria. He was obliged to return by the city of Erfurt, who, having been taken by the Prussians, was threatened with a siege. The campaign, nevertheless, never terminated.

After the battle of Leipsic, the Prussians marched against the former of whom they had the command, and the Danes had an armistice was granted to them at Blackstadt and Friedland. They had capitulated to the allies. Frederic VII. of Denmark, who had all haste entered into the alliance, had all occasion to regret his concessions, that were made the same day Denmark to the Prussians. She promised to be the field again, and she engaged to pay a contribution of peace was at the battle of Bornhöved (February 8); and the city of Berlin (April 20). Meantime Buonaparte had fled from Spain to France, and Wellington, the Duke of Wellington, defeated the French at the battle of Waterloo (June 18), where 15,000 French were killed, and 3,000 taken prisoner. The whole of his army was finally abandoned to the mercy of the Prussians, and the Prussian army of Marshal Wellington, who had undertaken the campaign, was defeated at the battle of Pampeluna (April 20). The French army was pursued to Bayonne. South of Bayonne, the means of reinforcements were cut off, and 100,000 men.

The Prussians, the Duke of Brunswick, and the Duke of Brunswick, were obliged to the possession of the kingdom of the Netherlands. The Elector of Baden, by means of the Prussians, was to be the Rhenish Confederation.

defeat at Leipsic.
to Hamau.
sets him.

Napoleon defeated by Wrede.
Denmark joins the Allies.
Battle of Vittoria.

PERIOD IX. A.D. 1810—1815.

Restoration of Hanover.
French Conscription,
The Allies invade France. 225

th, Silesia, and the
ready to effect
the plains of Leipsic
e. His army then
ants. The allies
ly, 78,000 Austrian
ussians, and 18,000
to form a union a
le.
ts had preceded the
ctober, the army of
several actions a
ndenaau. None of
decisive result; but
arshal Marmont on the
Mockeru. On the
ne engagements, bu
they were fought by
Blucher, and Ber
march to the field
e then began to
dition. For the fir
ity of a defeat, an
ssenfelds to secure the
18th, at day-break
armistice and peace
Meerfeld, who had
both the one and the
s was the first day
French army resist
was not till after the
army of Sweden, the
undon part of the
very gates of Leipsic
Wurtembergers pass
of the allies. Durin
effected their retro
Macdonald and Pon
the city. It was a
The French made
o'clock in the morn
ing the fugitives, the
which encumbered the
ster, which runs be
, which they cause
Bonaparte had pass
atowski found them
their divisions. Th
tempting to swim acro
made prisoner, as w
who had remained c
ese two days, lost
ers, 70,000 men, an
allies also purchas
flight with all has
rsued by the Cassin
onors, besides a ne
e. When he arriv
age intercepted by
ect. Since the m
been set on foot
uching him to aban
o this measure h
on, which was sign
e Dukes of Brunsw
h secured to Bavari
nd independent sov
nity for the restit
at case, to make

Immediately after the signing the convention at
Erd, the Bavarian General Wrede, at the head of
a body of between 45,000 and 50,000 Austrians
and Bavarians, began his march by Neuburg,
Ampach, and Wurtzburg; and after taking this
inter city, proceeded to Hamau, of which he took
possession (October 24) with 36,000 or 40,000
men. He encountered the French, who in their
retreat had arrived at Gelnhausen; there a battle
took place, which lasted for several successive days.
Bonaparte lost 25,000 men in killed, wounded,
and prisoners; but, with the 35,000 that were left,
he forced a passage and retired to the left bank
of the Rhine. Marshal St. Cyr, whom Buona-
parte had left at Dresden, saw himself obliged to
negotiate with 27,000 men. Dantzic surrendered
with 20,000 men, and Torgau with 10,000.
In the month of May, Eugene Beauharnais had
taken the command of the army of Italy, which
occupied the Illyrian provinces. But he was ob-
liged to return beyond the Adige, before General
Miller, who, having made himself master of the
Tyrol, was threatening to cut off his retreat. This
campaign, nevertheless, did honour to the French
generals.
After the battle of Leipsic, the Prince Royal of
Sweden marched against Davoust and the Danes,
the former of whom was blocked up in Hamburg,
and the Danes had retired into Sleswick. An
armistice was granted them, from which however
Stockstadt and Fredericsort were excepted, as
they had capitulated during the cessation of hos-
tilities. Frederic VI. concluded a peace at Kiel
with all haste (January 14, 1814); and Denmark
entered into the alliance against Buonaparte. We
shall have occasion to speak afterwards of the mu-
tual concessions that were made by this treaty. On
the same day Denmark signed a peace with Great
Britain. She promised to furnish 10,000 men to
take the field against Buonaparte, and Great Bri-
tain engaged to pay them £33,333 per month.
Peace was at the same time established between
Denmark and Russia, by the treaty of Hanover
(February 8); and between Denmark and Prussia
that of Berlin (August 25).
Meantime Buonaparte had recalled Marshal
Soul from Spain with a part of his troops. Lord
Wellington, the Generalissimo of the Spanish
armies, defeated Jourdan at Vittoria (June 21,
1813), where 15,000 French were left on the field
battle, and 3,000 made prisoners. Jourdan lost
the whole of his artillery. Joseph Buonaparte
at last abandoned the throne of Spain. The
bravery of Marshal Suchet defeated an expedition
at sea, undertaken by Sir John Murray against
Marragona. Lord Wellington took St. Sebastian
and Pampeluna (August 31), and compelled the
French army to pass the Bidassoa, and to retire
to Bayonne. Soul again took the command, and
means of reinforcements increased the army to
60,000 men.
In Germany, the Confederation of the Rhine
and the kingdom of Westphalia had both been
dissolved. The Electors of Hanover and Hesse,
the Dukes of Brunswick and Oldenburg, were re-
turned to the possession of their patrimonies, and
renewed the alliance. The King of Wirtemberg and
the Elector of Baden made their peace with the
Allies, by means of special treaties. All the princes
of the Rhenish Confederation entered into the

Grand League, except the King of Saxony, the
Grand Duke of Frankfort, and the Princes of
Isenburg and Leyen, who were excluded from it,
and their territories treated as conquered pro-
vinces.
On his return to Paris, Buonaparte announced
his intention of continuing the war, and caused the
senate to grant him a new conscription of 300,000
men. Nevertheless he appeared willing to bring
to a conclusion the negotiations which the allies
on the continent had set on foot. They had
departed, however, from the terms agreed on at
Toplitz, according to which the Rhine was to form
the frontier of France, and the kingdom of Holland
was to be given to a brother of Buonaparte; but
the chicanery of Napoleon, and the warlike pre-
parations which he had ordered, gave England an
opportunity of changing the sentiments of these
monarchs, and they determined to adopt the
scheme which Mr. Pitt had contrived in 1805.
The decree of the senate, of November 18, 1813,
completed the immense number of 1,260,000 men;
all of whom, independently of the existing army,
had been sacrificed to the restless ambition of Buona-
parte. The forces with which the allies invaded
France were divided into three armies.
The *Army of Bohemia*, commanded by Prince
Schwarzenberg, and composed of 261,000 men,
Austrians, Russians, Prussians, and Germans, was
destined to enter France by way of Switzerland.
The *Army of Silesia*, under the command of
Blucher, consisting of 137,000 men, Prussians,
Russians, and Germans, were to pass the Rhine
near Mayence.
The *Army of the North*, composed of 174,000
Prussians, Russians, Germans, Swedes, Dutch, and
English, were to occupy Holland and the Nether-
lands. They were to be commanded by the Prince
Royal of Sweden, and, in his absence, by the Duke
of Saxe-Weimar.
Independently of these three armies, the allies
had an army of reserve of 255,000 men, and the
Austrians had an army of 80,000 men in Italy.
About the end of December, 1813, and the begin-
ning of the year 1814, the two first armies entered
France. We can only advert to the principal
events of that short campaign. After some actions
of minor importance, Blucher attacked Buona-
parte at Rothiere with a superior force, and in
spite of the vigorous resistance which he met
with, he gained a complete victory (February 1).
Thirteen days afterwards, Buonaparte returned
him the compliment at Etoges or Vauchamp.
Being enclosed by Grouchy, Blucher had to
cut his way at the point of the bayonet, and
lost 6,000 men.
The allies, after having received various checks,
combined their two armies at Troyes (February
21); but Prince Schwarzenberg, not wishing to
give battle in that position, began to retreat. Blucher
then separated from him to continue on the
defensive, after being reinforced, however, by the
divisions of Bulow and Winzingerode, which had
arrived from Belgium; their junction took place at
Soissons (March 3). Blucher took up position
behind the Aisne. Buonaparte having passed that
river, defeated two bodies of Russians, under Wo-
ronzoff and Saken, at Craone (March 7), and at-
tacked Blucher at Laon (March 10). He was there
totally defeated; and that victory induced Schwart-

zenberg to abandon the defensive, and march on Paris. He engaged Buonaparte at Arcis-sur-Aube, where the battle, although bloody, was not decisive. They were in expectation of seeing the engagement renewed next day, when Buonaparte suddenly resolved to march to St. Dizier, to cut off the allies from their communication with the Rhine, as well as to draw reinforcements from the garrisons of Lorraine and Alsace, and thus transfer the theatre of war to Germany.

But before bringing the sketch of this campaign to a close, it will be necessary to take notice of the Congress of Châtillon, which was opened on the 5th of February, and which was a continuation of the negotiations that had taken place in the end of 1813. The allies consented to allow Buonaparte to retain the crown of France, but the limits of that kingdom were to be reduced to what they had been in 1792. Buonaparte at first seemed willing to treat on these terms, but his real object was to gain time. Whenever his troops had gained any advantage he immediately heightened his tone; and in the course of six weeks the allies broke off the conference. During the sitting of the Congress of Châtillon, Austria, Britain, Prussia, and Russia, signed the famous Quadruple Alliance at Chaumont (March 1), which forms the basis of the public rights of Europe at the present time. Each of the allies engaged to maintain an army of 150,000 men constantly in the field against the common enemy. Great Britain promised to furnish to the three other powers a subsidy of £5,000,000 sterling for the year 1814; in such a way, however, that she was only to pay them proportionally until the end of the month in which the peace should be concluded, adding to these two months for the return of the Austrian and Prussian troops, and four for those of the Russians. The main object of this alliance was the re-establishment of an equilibrium of power, based upon the following arrangements:—Germany to be composed of sovereign princes united by a federal bond;—The Confederation of Switzerland to be restored to its ancient limits and its former independence;—Italy to be divided into Independent States, lying between the Austrian possessions in that peninsula and France;—Holland to be a free and Independent State, under the sovereignty of the Prince of Orange, with an increase of territory.

Blucher had made himself master of Chalons and Château Thierry, when the allies learned, by an intercepted letter, what were the plans of Buonaparte. In order to persuade him that they had taken the alarm at his march, and were resolved to follow him, they sent Count Winzingerode after him at the head of a body of 8,000 cavalry, which he might easily mistake for the vanguard of the allies. By this manoeuvre he was deceived, and continued his route eastwards while the allies directed their march on Paris. Schwartzenberg attacked and beat the two divisions of Marmont and Mortier, at Soude St. Croix (March 25), while the army of Silesia compelled Puthod and Amey to surrender near Laferre Champenoise. This double encounter cost the French 5,000 killed, 10,000 prisoners, and eighty pieces of cannon. Marmont and Mortier retreated to Paris, but they were defeated at Montmartre and Belleville (March 30). The heights, which on that side overlook Paris, were taken by the allies, who purchased that vic-

tory by the loss of 9,000 men. A capitulation for Paris was signed the same night.

The entrance of the allies into the capital of France took place next day. The wishes of the people were so loudly and unequivocally expressed, that the Emperor Alexander did not hesitate to declare, in his own name, and in the names of his allies, that they could treat no more with Napoleon, or with any of his family. He invited the senate to establish a provisional government,—a measure which was necessary, as the Count D'Artois, who was appointed the king's lieutenant-general, had not yet arrived. He likewise invited that body to prepare a constitution, that is to say, to submit their counsel and advice to the king, as to the modifications to be made in the government for the French constitution, which is based on the Salic law, has been in existence for centuries. It is engraven on the hearts of the French nation; and, should circumstances require certain modifications in its forms, these cannot emanate but from the free will of the king. The Emperor Alexander made that proposal to the senate, as being the only order of the state then in existence; but that monarch did not know that the senate was the last authority to which the public opinion would have granted any influence, as to the settlement of the condition of France. The voice of the people was expressed through a purer channel by the General Council of the Department of the Seine, and by the Municipal Council of Paris, who demanded the return of Louis XVIII., their legitimate sovereign (April 1). In pronouncing the deposition of Buonaparte next day, the senate exercised a right which did not belong to them. As the creatures and accomplices of Buonaparte, that body ought to have been banished and annihilated with him.

It was on the seventh day of his march that the Emperor of the French discovered his error. He then returned in all haste towards Fontainebleau. After several unsuccessful attempts, either to regain his power or to transmit it to his son, he was obliged to sign his abdication (April 10). Next day Austria, Prussia, and Russia, drew up a convention with his delegates, Ney, Macdonald, and Calincourt, by which they secured him the possession of the Island of Elba, with full sovereignty, and the States of Parma for his wife and son. Great Britain acceded to that arrangement, to which the King of France yet remained a stranger. Buonaparte soon after embarked at St. Raphael, to repair to his place of exile.

The narrow space to which we must confine our observations, obliges us to pass in silence over the military events which took place in Holland and Belgium, and on the side of Lyons. But we must say a word or two on the war in the Pyrenees and in Italy. Anticipating the resolutions of the allied sovereigns, Lord Wellington, with whom the Duke D'Angouleme then was, invited the French, by a proclamation dated January 27th, to replace Louis on the throne. Within a month after, he defeated the army of Soult at Orthez (February 27), and compelled that General to retire to Tarbes. To satisfy the wishes of the inhabitants of Bourdeaux, Marshal Beresford conducted the Duke D'Angouleme to that place, which was the first city in France that proclaimed Louis XVIII. (March 13). The allies had already entered Paris

Murat King of
Bourbonnais
Convention s
and Buonaparte
Lord Wellington,
fought the last b
at Toulouse (Apr
fruitless engage
In Italy, an eve
happened. Joach
on his benefact
dust to encircle
the commencement
of Austria. After
doned the contri
please England, a
Kingdom to all so
into a negotiatio
Vienna, with a vic
alliance; at the sa
of 34,000 men, w
their march towa
an alliance with
guaranteed to him
of Naples, with t
for the King of Si
announced the c
He blockaded the
tion of Florence, w
duchess, escaped to
far as Modena. I
the British forces
armistice with Mur
had supposed that
come to his succor
obliged to retreat o
battle with Field-
manded the Austri
bruary 8). Fouch
misery-general of
vention with the N
Tuscany was restor
himself pressed on
and on the other h
received intelligence
to Paris, negoti
signed at Schiarin
days after, his frien
proclaimed King o
But the hatred w
French prevailed ov
ny, who wisely ad
tering all the place
Austrian troops, a
Germany.
The senate of F
completed and publ
April 6), in which
the opinion of the
authors of that pro
continuance of the
means thereto atta
first principle of mo
nality, by arrogatin
conterring the crow
belonged by birth
nouncing it, had tak
personal protestatio
count D'Artois, the
red in Paris, and
the allies (April 23
space. They engag

and Buonaparte had abdicated his crown, when Lord Wellington, who was ignorant of these events, fought the last battle of this campaign with Soult at Toulouse (April 10). In that sanguinary but fruitless engagement, the French were defeated.

In Italy, an event not a little extraordinary had happened. Joachim Murat had turned his back on his benefactor, who had raised him from the dust to encircle his brow with a diadem. From the commencement of the year 1813, he had endeavoured to have his title acknowledged by the House of Austria. After the battle of Leipsic, he abandoned the continental system, from a wish to please England, and throw open the ports of his kingdom to all sorts of merchandise. He entered into a negotiation with the courts of London and Vienna, with a view to be admitted into the grand alliance; at the same time, he set on foot an army of 33,000 men, who entered Rome, and directed their march towards Ancona. Austria concluded an alliance with him (January 11, 1814), which guaranteed to him the possession of the kingdom of Naples, with the reservation of an indemnity for the King of Sicily. Immediately after, Murat announced the change in his political conduct. He blockaded the citadel of Ancona, took possession of Florence, where his sister-in-law, the grand duchess, escaped to save her life, and pushed on as far as Modena. Lord Bentinck, who commanded the British forces in Sicily, then concluded an armistice with Murat. Eugene Beauharnais, who had supposed that the Neapolitan army would come to his succour, was at length undeceived, and obliged to retreat on the Minico; but he fought a battle with Field-Marshal Bellegarde, who commanded the Austrians in the room of Hiller (February 8). Fouché, who was at Lucca as commissary-general of Buonaparte, concluded a convention with the Neapolitans, in virtue of which Tuscany was restored to them. The viceroy, seeing himself pressed on the one hand by the Austrians, and on the other by the Neapolitans, and having received intelligence of the entrance of the allies into Paris, negotiated an armistice, which was signed at Schiarino Rizzino (April 16). A few days after, his friends made an attempt to have him proclaimed King of Italy by the people of Milan. But the hatred which the Italians had for the French prevailed over their attachment to the viceroy, who wisely adopted the resolution of surrendering all the places in the kingdom of Italy to the Austrian troops, and retired with his family to Germany.

The senate of France had, with all expedition, completed and published a pretended constitution (April 6), in which two things especially shocked the opinion of the public, viz., the care which the authors of that production had taken to secure the continuance of their own authority with the remedies thereto attached, and the violation of the first principle of monarchy of which they had been guilty, by arrogating to themselves the right of conferring the crown of France on him to whom it belonged by birth-right, and who, far from renouncing it, had taken care to secure his rights by general protestations. Within six days after, the Count D'Artois, the king's lieutenant-general, arrived in Paris, and concluded a convention with the allies (April 23), as a prelude to a general peace. They engaged to evacuate the territory of

France, and they settled the terms on which the places possessed by the French troops, not within their own territories, were to be delivered up. The King of France had landed at Calais (April 25), and was slowly approaching his capital. A declaration, which he published at St. Ouen (May 2), annulled the constitution of the senate, and promised the nation a charter, the principles of which were announced in that same declaration. Next day Louis XVIII. made his solemn entry into Paris.

The first care of Louis was to conclude peace with the allies. A military convention was first signed (May 28), regulating different points regarding the maintenance and march of the troops, hospitals, magazines, &c.; and immediately treaties of peace were concluded with the four grand powers (May 30), to which the others acceded. France was to return to her ancient limits of January 1, 1792, with an augmentation of territory on the north side. She likewise retained Avignon and the county of Venaisin. Louis XVIII. adhered to the principles of the alliance of Chaumont, as to the political system to be established in Europe. England retained Malta, but surrendered up the French colonies, with the exception of Tobago, St. Lucia, and the Isle of France, with their dependencies. Guiana, which had been taken from Portugal, was restored. Certain secret articles pointed out the manner in which the allied powers were to dispose of the territories surrendered by France; and annulled the endowments and donations made by Buonaparte in these territories. Certain special articles were added with regard to Prussia, which annulled the peace of Tilsit and all its consequences.

In the month of June, the Emperor Alexander, the King of Prussia, and Prince Metternich, repaired to London, where they concluded a new quadruple alliance, by which the four contracting powers engaged to keep on foot an army of 75,000 men each, until the restoration of order in Europe. The sovereigns agreed also, during their stay in London, that Belgium should be united to Holland, with which it was to form one and the same state.

Immediately after the conclusion of the peace, Louis XVIII. published the charter or constitution which he granted to the nation. This was not a constitution in the sense which had been attached to that word since the year 1789; that is to say, a body of laws or regulations, fully and finally settling the prerogative of the king, and the powers of the different authorities, as well as the rights and privileges of the citizens. It was a declaration by which the king, in conformity with the principles which had prevailed for a century, modified the royal power in certain respects, and promised never to exercise it in future except according to the established forms. Thus the royal authority, which Louis XVIII. derived from his ancestors, and which was founded on the ancient order of succession, remained inviolate and entire in all its branches, which have undergone no modification. Neither had that charter aught in common with those metaphysical conventions, which rebellious subjects have sometimes compelled their captive or intimidated sovereigns to subscribe. It was an emanation of the royal authority; a free spontaneous act. The legitimacy of its origin, which is

verified by the very date it bears, guaranteed its duration and its inviolability.

The peace of Paris gave rise to a multitude of treaties between the different powers of Europe. Of these we can only notice a small number, which we shall do when we come to speak of the history of these countries. Meantime, we must confine our remarks to general affairs, and more particularly to those in which France is concerned.

An article in the treaty of Paris, of May 30th, had stipulated that within the space of two months the plenipotentiaries of all the powers who had taken part in the late events, France included, should meet in a general congress at Vienna, to concert the necessary arrangements for completing the conditions and regulations of the treaty. The reconstruction of Germany into a body politic; the replacing of Prussia and Austria on a footing analogous to the power which they had enjoyed in 1806 and 1805; the fate of Poland; the establishment of an independent state between France and Germany; the neutrality of Switzerland; the organization of Italy, which had been completely subverted by Buonaparte; the regulating of the indemnities which might be claimed by the different states who had taken a part in the war; and the settling of the territorial exchanges to which these claims might give rise, were the important objects about which the plenipotentiaries were necessarily to be employed. To these England added one subject which might appear foreign to the business of that congress, viz. the question as to the abolition of negro slavery; another was the most unexpected event of Napoleon's return, which compelled the sovereigns of Europe again to take arms, and to conquer France a second time.

Owing to different causes, the opening of the congress did not take place till towards the end of the year. We may mention, with regard to the form of the congress, that although it was composed of the plenipotentiaries of all the allies, great and small, they never held any general session. The affairs of Germany were kept distinct from those of the rest of Europe; the latter, consisting of the plenipotentiaries of the five great powers, namely, Austria, France, Great Britain, Prussia, and Russia; and the other of the plenipotentiaries of the remaining eight powers; Spain, Portugal, and Sweden being added to the first five. The questions relating to Germany were discussed at first by Austria, Prussia, Bavaria, Hanover, and Wurtemberg; although, afterwards, all the sovereigns of Germany were called into these deliberations. There were certain affairs which were prepared and discussed by special commissions.

The subject which occasioned the greatest difficulty, and which was even on the point of disturbing the unanimity of the cabinets, was the reconstruction of the Prussian monarchy. Prussia was to be restored to all that she had possessed in 1805, except the principalities of Franconia, which were in the possession of Bavaria; the district of Bialystock, which was annexed to Russia; and the grand duchy of Posenania, which Alexander had declared his intention of comprehending in the kingdom of Poland, which he proposed to restore. Frederic William promised to cede to Hanover a territory inhabited by between 300,000 and 400,000 souls. For these losses he claimed an indemnity;

and as Saxony was the only kingdom which could offer him compensation, Great Britain, Russia, and Austria had consented to an acquisition which seemed to be justified by the conduct of the King of Saxony, who in 1807 had shared the spoils of Prussia, and in 1813 had made common cause with Buonaparte. The Emperor Alexander thus put Prussia in possession of Saxony, which her troops had till then occupied. The manner, however, in which public opinion in England had expressed itself against the designs of Prussia, and the insinuations of the French minister at Vienna, induced Austria and the cabinet of London to oppose the execution of this plan, not only by interesting themselves for the preservation of Saxony, but by disputing the claims advanced by Prussia, and refusing to allow the duchy of Warsaw to fall entirely into the hands of Russia. The Emperor Alexander, who concurred entirely with Prussia, supported it with all his efforts. Being apprized, however, that Austria, France, and Great Britain had just concluded an alliance or agreement which appeared to have some reference to the fate of Saxony, and wishing to remove every ground of misunderstanding, he offered to augment the portion of Prussia on the side of Poland, and advised her to be content with the moiety of Saxony which was offered her, and to accept the provinces beyond the Rhine, which were also destined for her.

The five powers having come to an agreement on these points (February 12), Frederic Augustus was invited to come to the neighbourhood of Vienna. Ever since the battle of Leipsic, that prince had remained in a kind of captivity at Fredericsheldt near Berlin. He accepted the invitation and repaired to Vienna, but he refused to consent to the cessions which they demanded of him. His obstinacy induced the five great powers to go to greater excess; they ordained that, until the king should have come to a determination, Prussia should remain in possession of the whole of Saxony. Frederic Augustus was obliged to yield to the course of events, and ratified a treaty which was signed at Vienna (May 18). That part of his kingdom which was ceded to Prussia was named the duchy of Saxony.

The organization of Germany into a confederacy, to be composed of sovereign states, was, next to the settlement of Prussia, the object which occasioned the greatest embarrassment. But as France and Russia took no direct part in it, and as for that reason it can scarcely be said to belong to the class of general affairs, we shall pass it over in silence. The same must be done with regard to all the negotiations concerning Switzerland and Italy, of which we shall speak elsewhere.

Great Britain had introduced the question as to negro slavery, of which, in the name of humanity and religion, she demanded the entire abolition, by a decree of all Europe. Denmark had prohibited that traffic long before England. Neither Austria, Russia, Prussia, nor Sweden, had any motive for favouring it; but it was not the case with Portugal, Spain, and France, who referred with reason, to the example of England herself for resisting the introduction of any sudden change which would be pernicious to the state of their colonies, and might ruin the fortune of their subjects. These powers readily agreed to combine with England for the abolition of the trade; but

they wished that to fix the terms most advantage, subject of discuss the eight power demanded, in the that all the powe to the general pri trade, and their effect with the sh position was unan proposal which h ability of an imm the period when c to fix its ultimate be wished to obt of that traffic, me ance on the part reign colonies. A right to interfere states, the declar lished (February) cognised by them of the period when should be left to t ing powers.

Europe was in a quillity, when Bu with 1,000 advent (March 1), invited and deceiving the supported by Au which he entered landing. The ki again obliged to rived in that city; banding the army troops had already Finding himself in to Ghent (March new constitution The Additional A pire. One of the nounced the perpet In order to flatter people, this act was and Buonaparte s ordinary deputies, He likewise summ representatives, or legi the Champ de Mai a chamber of peer chamber of peers opened their sessio

So soon as the r parte in France was contracting power porting, that as Bu convention which Elba, he had des which his existence felt all relations sovereigns refused he announced to possession of the th tion that the time engagements they ha our powers who h renewed their enga nce (March 25).

LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF
CAMBRIDGE

they wished that it should be left to each of them to fix the term on which they could do so to the most advantage. This question was made the subject of discussion in the conferences between the eight powers at Vienna. Lord Castlereagh demanded, in the name of the British government, that all the powers should announce their adhesion to the general principle of the abolition of the slave trade, and their wish to carry that measure into effect with the shortest possible delay. This proposition was unanimously adopted; but the other proposal which he made, to inquire into the possibility of an immediate abolition, or at least, into the period when each of the powers might be able to fix its ultimate abolition; and a third, by which he wished to obtain an immediate partial abolition of that traffic, met with the most decided resistance on the part of the three states who had foreign colonies. As the four other powers had no right to interfere in the internal legislation of these states, the declaration which the congress published (February 8) proclaimed the principle recognised by them all, viz., that the determination of the period when the trade was to cease generally should be left to the negotiations of the contracting powers.

Europe was in the enjoyment of apparent tranquillity, when Buonaparte quitted Elba, landed with 1,000 adventurers on the shores of France (March 1), invited his former friends to join him, and deceiving the inhabitants by pretending to be supported by Austria, marched towards Paris, which he entered within twenty days after his landing. The king and the royal family were again obliged to retire to Lille. When Louis arrived in that city, he signed an ordonnance for disbanding the army; but the greater part of the troops had already sworn allegiance to the usurper. Finding himself insecure at Lille, the king retired to Ghent (March 30). Buonaparte published a new constitution (April 22), under the title of *The Additional Act to the Constitution of the Empire*. One of the articles which it contained, pronounced the perpetual banishment of the Bourbons. In order to flatter the partisans of the sovereign people, this act was submitted for their acceptance, and Buonaparte summoned an assembly of extraordinary deputies, to meet in the Champ de Mai. He likewise summoned a chamber of the representatives, or legislative body. The meeting of the Champ de Mai was held; and two days after, a chamber of peers, created by Buonaparte, and a chamber of the representatives of the nation, opened their sessions.

So soon as the news of the landing of Buonaparte in France was received at Vienna, the eight contracting powers published a declaration, importing, that as Buonaparte had thus broken the convention which had placed him in the island of Elba, he had destroyed the only legal title on which his existence depended, and had thus forfeited all relations, civil and social. The allied sovereigns refused to receive the letters by which he announced to them that he had again taken possession of the throne of France. Being of opinion that the time was come for executing the engagements they had contracted at Chaumont, the four powers who had participated in that treaty renewed their engagements by new treaties of alliance (March 25). They promised to combine all

their forces for maintaining the treaty of Paris of May 30th, 1814, and to set on foot, each of them, an army of 180,000 men. By an additional convention, Great Britain undertook to pay to the three others subsidies to the amount of £3,000,000 sterling *per annum*. All the princes of the Germanic Confederation,—Portugal, Sardinia, the Netherlands, Switzerland, and Denmark, acceded to this alliance; and Great Britain granted subsidies to them all, proportioned to the forces which they might send into the field. Of all the powers having plenipotentiaries at Vienna, Spain and Sweden only declined entering into this alliance. The King of Spain refused his accession, as being contrary to his dignity; he would have had no objections to have become a principal party, and he co-operated as such in the war. As for Sweden, she was too much occupied with the conquest of Norway to take any part in the deliverance of France.

There was still another monarch who had not joined the alliance of Vienna, and that was Joachim Murat. The King of France had refused to acknowledge him as King of Naples, and Lord Castlereagh had declared at Vienna that Great Britain could not treat with Murat, as he had not fulfilled his engagements; and, therefore, that it depended on the congress to decide as to the fate of the kingdom of Naples. These declarations induced Murat to take arms; nevertheless, he continued to dissemble, until he learned that Buonaparte had arrived at Lyons. Then it was that he threw off the mask. He marched at the head of his army towards the Po, and issued a proclamation (March 30), by which he proclaimed liberty to all the inhabitants of Italy. The Austrian army in that peninsula immediately put themselves in motion to oppose him. Being defeated at Tolentino by General Bianchi (May 2), he retreated first to Naples, and, after a short stay there, he took refuge in France. The government of Ferdinand IV. was again restored.

Meantime, as the partisans of Buonaparte, and the revolutionists everywhere, were at great pains to propagate and cherish doubts as to the determination of the allied sovereigns to follow up the act of the 13th of March, which had been adopted at a time when it was hoped that France would have no more need of foreign aid; the allied sovereigns deemed it necessary to make known the expression of their principles by a solemn act; to which they gave the form of a *process verbal*, or edict, signed by the plenipotentiaries of the eight powers. The publication of that act was equivalent to a declaration of war against Buonaparte. It opened the eyes of those credulous followers on whom the usurper had till then imposed the belief that Austria and Russia were on friendly terms with him.

All the negotiations of the Congress of Vienna being terminated by the signing of the Act of the Germanic Confederation, which took place on June 8th, the plenipotentiaries of the eight contracting powers next day signed the *Act of Congress*, which was a recapitulation or abstract of all their preceding regulations, either by particular treaties or by declarations and edicts (or protocols, as they are sometimes called at Vienna), relative to Poland, the territorial arrangements in Germany, the Germanic Confederation, the kingdom of the Netherlands, Switzerland, Italy, Portugal,

the navigation of rivers, the rank of diplomatic agents, and the form of accessions and ratifications of the act itself. Thus did the most august assembly which had ever taken place terminate its labours.

An army of 1,305,000 men was preparing to invade France, but the struggle against Buonaparte was decided by about 200,000; and not more than 500,000 foreigners set foot on the soil of France. The allies had formed four armies, viz.

The Army of the Netherlands, commanded by Lord Wellington, consisting of 71,000 English, Hanoverians, and Brunswickers, with the troops of the Netherlands and Nassau.

The Army of the Lower Rhine, consisting of 140,000 Prussians, under the command of Blucher.

The Army of the Upper Rhine, commanded by Schwartzberg, and consisting of 130,000 Austrian and 124,000 German troops.

The Army of the Middle Rhine, 168,000 strong, under the command of Barclay de Tolly. They were to be stationed between the two preceding armies, but they were unable to arrive in time at the scene of action, and the campaign was decided by the first two armies alone.

The forces of Buonaparte amounted to 213,000 men, exclusive of 147,000 of the national guard to be employed in garrison. He had divided them into eight armies. That of the north, which he commanded himself, consisted of 108,000 men.

Buonaparte opened the campaign on the 15th June, by detaching a second corps across the Sambre, to attack the Prussian General Zieten, who was obliged to yield to the superior strength of the enemy, and retire towards Fleurus. Next day the Duke of Brunswick, who had left Brussels at the head of 12,000 men to support the Prussians, was killed at Quatre Bras, although Marshal Ney, who commanded the French, sustained a considerable loss; on the same day Marshal Blucher was defeated at Ligny, but he retired in the greatest order to Brieg. Buonaparte from that moment resolved to attack Wellington, who gave him battle at Waterloo, or Mont St. Jean. The combat was continued, with various success, from morning till four o'clock, when the Prussians, consisting of General Bulow's division, and commanded by Blucher in person, approached the field of battle, and fell suddenly on the right wing of the French, while Buonaparte supposed that the whole Prussian army was engaged with Grouchy, whom he had sent against them with a detachment of 40,000 men. On the first appearance of the Prussians, Buonaparte supposed that it was General Grouchy, who, after having defeated the Prussians, was marching to the support of his right wing. The fact is, that General Thielmans having been attacked by Grouchy near Wavre, Blucher had sent him word to defend himself in the best way he could, and did not allow himself to be diverted from his original plan of falling upon the right wing of Buonaparte. When Buonaparte at length discovered his error, he lost all resolution. His army were panic struck, and fled in all directions. He was himself nearly taken prisoner, having escaped with great difficulty. The Germans have given this battle the name of *Belle Alliance*, from the house where Blucher and Wellington met after the action. Of 120,000 French, 60,000 were either taken or killed in the two days of the 16th

and 18th June 1815; 64,000 English, and 50,000 Prussians were engaged in the battle. The English lost 14,000 men on the 18th, and the Prussians 33,000 in the two engagements of the 16th and 18th.

Buonaparte made his escape to Paris, but the Chamber of Representatives, composed of the partisans of the revolution of 1789, and of republicans who had no wish to promote the interest of Buonaparte, except as an instrument for the execution of their own plans, determined to take advantage of the contempt into which he had fallen to get rid of his presence. They required him to give in his demission (June 22), and he abdicated in favour of his son. The Chambers appointed a government commission, at the head of which they placed Fouché, who sent deputies to Heidelberg, where the head-quarters of the allied sovereigns then were, with a commission to treat with them on the basis of the national independence, and the inviolability of the soil of France. But as there was no mention made in these propositions about the restoration of the king, the allies refused to treat until Buonaparte should first be delivered up to them.

Buonaparte had demanded of Wellington and Blucher passports for quitting France; and on being refused, the government commission conveyed him to Rochefort, where he was to embark on board a frigate and go to America. But Captain Maitland, who was cruising off that port with an English vessel, prevented him from leaving the place unless he would surrender to the English, on which condition he promised to guarantee his life. The danger becoming every day more pressing, he at length saw himself compelled to submit. The Bellerophon, with Buonaparte on board, arrived in Torbay (July 24), but the English government would not permit the general to set foot on land. By a convention signed by the allies at Paris (August 2), England took upon herself the charge of keeping guard over him at St. Helena. He was accordingly transported to that island, where he remained till his death, which happened May 5th 1821.

After the battle of the 18th June, Wellington and Blucher marched immediately to Paris, as did also the army of Schwartzberg by way of Nancy. Davoust had joined the fugitives; and as Grouchy had had the good fortune to save his division, they were enabled to form a new army of 60,000 men, which made some attempts to defend Paris. Several engagements took place at Sevres and Issy; after which Marshal Davoust announced to the two field-marsals that Paris was on the point of surrendering. A capitulation was signed at St. Cloud (July 3), and the French army retired behind the Loire.

The allies occupied Paris on the 7th July, and Louis XVIII. entered on the following day. Within two days after the allied sovereigns arrived. An ordonnance of 24th July declared twenty-nine individuals, named in 1814, unworthy of their country, as having sat in the chamber of Buonaparte, and sworn the banishment of the Bourbon. Nineteen persons accused of having betrayed the king before the 23rd March, were remitted to the tribunals; thirty-eight other individuals were ordered to quit Paris. These latter were in general relapsed regicides, that is, persons who, after having

obtained pardon
banishment of th
broke his word
regicides, to leav
their own consci
ary 12, 1816), th
changed into a l
the relapsed regi
soil of France. C
the tribunals, ty
Ney and Colonel
was saved by th
meny of the ki
crimes.

The army of th
but the war conti
on the frontiers o
plan of the allies
the greater part
receive them. Th
that, in order to s
it was necessary t
than they had dor
the month of Sept
ciently matured to
tions with France
encounter; and th
allies was not sig
According to the
territorial cession
Austria, Bavaria,
Sardinia.

It was agreed,
allies a pecuniar
frances; and that I
occupy certain pl
and that they sho
France. By an a
reciprocally to cor
entire and final ab

The same day,
and Russia, concl
purposes:—1. Th
and conventions w
And, 2. The per
Buonaparte and h
France; the main
country; and the
principles, so that
France, or threat
this twofold obje
their contingents a
Chaumont; final
personal confere
1818.

Prior to this qu
during the mainte
on the throne of F
the new political s
of Austria and Rus
signed at Paris (Se
the name of the F
second basis of the
regins thereby dec
no take no other r
precepts of the Cl
to continue in th
union, and to be r
places, to succour
sider themselves

obtained pardon in 1814, had, in 1815, signed the banishment of the Bourbons; for the king never broke his word of honour given to the primary regicides, to leave them to the remonstrances of their own conscience. Some months after (January 12, 1816), the ordonnance of July 24th was changed into a law; with this modification, that the relapsed regicides were to be exiled from the soil of France. Of the individuals arraigned before the tribunals, two only were executed, Marshal Ney and Colonel Labedoyère; a third (Lavalette) was saved by the courage of his wife. The clemency of the king threw a veil over all other crimes.

The army of the Loire submitted to the king; but the war continued, nevertheless, for some time on the frontiers of France, as it was a part of the plan of the allies to occupy all the fortresses; and the greater part of the commandants refused to receive them. The allies were at length convinced, that, in order to secure the tranquillity of France, it was necessary to take more vigorous measures than they had done in 1814; but it was not until the month of September that their plan was sufficiently matured to enable them to open negotiations with France. They had many difficulties to encounter; and the treaty between France and the allies was not signed until the 20th November. According to that treaty, France made several territorial cessions to the Netherlands, Prussia, Austria, Bavaria, Switzerland, and the king of Sardinia.

It was agreed, that France should pay to the allies a pecuniary indemnity of 700,000,000 of francs; and that 150,000 of the allied troops should occupy certain places in France for five years; and that they should be paid and maintained by France. By an additional article, they engaged reciprocally to concert measures for obtaining the entire and final abolition of the slave trade.

The same day, Austria, Great Britain, Prussia, and Russia, concluded an alliance for the following purposes:—1. The maintenance of the treaties and conventions which had just been concluded; and, 2. The perpetual exclusion of Napoleon Buonaparte and his family from the sovereignty of France; the maintenance of tranquillity in that country; and the suppression of revolutionary principles, so that they might never again distract France, or threaten the repose of Europe. For this twofold object, the allies agreed to furnish their contingents as determined by the alliance of Chaumont; finally, they agreed to have another personal conference in the course of the year 1818.

Prior to this quadruple alliance, which, by securing the maintenance of the Bourbon dynasty on the throne of France, forms one of the bases of the new political system of Europe, the Emperors of Austria and Russia, and the King of Prussia, signed at Paris (September 26), an Act, known by the name of the *Holy Alliance*, which forms the second basis of the same system. The allied sovereigns thereby declared their firm determination to take no other rule for their conduct than the precepts of the Christian religion. They promised to continue in the indissoluble bonds of brotherly union, and to be ready on all occasions, and in all places, to succour and assist each other—to consider themselves but as members of the same

Christian nation, and as delegated by Providence to govern three branches of the same family; and finally, to receive into the same alliance all other powers who were willing to profess the same principles which had dictated that act. All the Christian powers in Europe acceded to the treaties and conventions of the 20th November 1815, except Sweden, who had taken no share in the war. They all entered into the Holy Alliance, except the King of Great Britain, who, while he fully sanctioned the principles set forth in that Act, was prevented from signing it, because, according to the constitutional custom of England, the sovereign signs nothing without the countersigning of a responsible minister.

Here it will be necessary briefly to point out the more important events which happened since 1811 in the other European states, and the changes which were produced in others by the congress of Vienna.

Portugal seemed destined to be nothing more in future than a dependency of Brazil, in a political point of view, as she already was of England with respect to agriculture, industry, and commerce. The latter power attached so great an importance to the abolition of the slave trade, that, by a treaty signed during the conferences at Vienna, she had purchased the effective co-operation of Portugal in this measure, by giving up all the advantages which she had reserved to herself by the treaty of Rio Janeiro of February 19, 1810, which she consented to annul; nevertheless, Portugal only prohibited her subjects conditionally from carrying on the slave trade in that part of Africa lying to the north of the equator.

In Spain, the extraordinary Cortes then assembled at Cadiz, after having published a decree, January 1, 1811, importing that they could make no treaty with France until the king enjoyed full liberty, and that he could not be regarded as at liberty until he had taken the constitutional oath, finished the work which they pretended had been intrusted to their hands. Their constitution, which was founded on the principle of the sovereignty of the people, intrusted the legislative power to a popular assembly, and the execution of the laws to a functionary without influence or authority, although decorated with the title of a king, was published on the 18th of March 1812. Contrary to all history, that production of revolutionary fanaticism was announced to the world as the genuine ancient constitution of Spain. The Cortes terminated their session on the 20th September 1813. The new or ordinary Cortes, convened in the constitutional form, at the rate of one deputy for every 70,000 inhabitants, without distinction of fortune or estate, transferred their sitting to Madrid towards the end of the year. It was this extraordinary meeting of the Cortes that concluded a treaty of friendship and alliance (July 28, 1813) with the Emperor of Russia at Weliki-Louki, where he had then his head-quarters. Alexander there acknowledged the Cortes and their constitution. That acknowledgment was extremely simple. Alexander could not treat except with the government then established. That government acted in the name of Ferdinand VII., and their actions were to be regarded as legitimate so long as that prince had not disavowed them. The Emperor of Russia had neither the will nor the power to lend

his sanction to an order of things which had not the approbation of a king in the full enjoyment of liberty. It was in this same sense that the King of Prussia entered into an alliance with the Spanish government, by a treaty which was signed at Basle (January 20, 1814).

After returning from the campaign of 1813, Buonaparte, considering Spain as lost, resolved to set Ferdinand VII. at liberty; but in the hope of turning that tardy act of justice to his advantage by making that prince his friend, he represented Spain as overrun with Jacobinism, which was labouring to overturn the throne, and to substitute a republic in its place; and he accused England as having favoured that project. Ferdinand VII. demanded that a deputation of the regency should be admitted to a personal interview with him, who might inform him as to the real state of matters. Buonaparte, who executed with despatch whatever he had once resolved, found this mode of proceeding too slow. He empowered M. de la Forêt, whom he had sent to Valençay, to conclude a treaty with his captive, by which the latter was acknowledged king of Spain; and promised, on his part, to cause the English troops to evacuate the whole of that kingdom.

Ferdinand VII. sent his minister, the Duke of San Carlos, to Madrid, for the ostensible purpose of communicating that treaty to the regency, but in reality to take cognizance of the state of affairs. The regency refused to acknowledge the treaty of Valençay, because the king was not at liberty. Buonaparte being apprized of this difficulty, immediately released Ferdinand (March 7, 1814). He set out on his return to his dominions, but performed his journey slowly, that he might have leisure to obtain personal information as to the spirit which reigned among the Spaniards. He was soon convinced, that the people, attached to their religion, and to the family of their lawful prince, were very indifferent about the constitution of the Cortes, and that that assembly enjoyed very little influence or authority. Sixty members of the Cortes had even protested against an act which, by degrading the royal dignity, was preparing the way for establishing a democracy. On his arrival at Valencia, Ferdinand abrogated the constitution of 1812, and directed his course towards Madrid, which he entered on the 17th May. The people every where expressed their attachment to a prince, whose arrival they hailed as the return of justice and order; though it is foreign to our purpose to narrate why that hope has not been realized.

Great Britain was the power which acted the most conspicuous part during the era of which we have given the preceding historical sketch. The fortitude and perseverance with which she had prosecuted her system of policy, after the breaking of the peace of Amiens, was crowned with the most complete success; and the plan conceived by Mr. Pitt, but which that great statesman had despaired ever to see carried into execution, became the corner-stone of the future policy of Europe. Great Britain was the mainspring of the alliance, which in 1813 undertook the deliverance of Europe. She made the most extraordinary efforts in raising armies, and granting supplies for maintaining the troops of the continental nations.

A mental calamity, with which George III. had been afflicted towards the end of the year 1810,

obliged the Parliament to establish a regency. That important charge belonged of right to the heir apparent; but as the ministry were apprehensive that the Prince of Wales might in some respects change the system of the existing government, the parliament passed an act (December 31), which restricted the authority of the regent to one year. The Prince Regent submitted to these modifications. He exercised the regency at first with a limited power; but after the year 1812, when the prospects of his majesty's recovery were considerably diminished, he continued to exercise the royal authority until his father's death, which happened January 29, 1820, when the prince then assumed the title of George IV. The regent found the kingdom at war with Russia and Sweden; but it was only in appearance, and without effective hostilities. Lord Castlereagh, who, since the year 1812, had been at the head of foreign affairs, listened with eagerness to the first advances which these two powers made towards an accommodation. Peace was signed at Orebro (July 12), first with Sweden, and a few days after with Russia. The former, in indirect terms, abandoned the principles of the armed neutrality of the North. We shall have occasion hereafter to revert to the stipulations of the treaty signed with Russia.

Another and a more remote enemy had at that time made their appearance. Since the year 1803, there had existed a misunderstanding between Great Britain and the United States of America, whose lucrative commerce with France was fettered by the principles maintained in England as to the freedom of navigation. The Americans, on their side, published several acts against the commerce of the English, such as that of 18th April, 1806, which prohibited the importation of English merchandise. From an apprehension that the continental system might involve the republic in a war either with France or with England, the congress passed a law, known by the name of the *Non-intercourse Act* (April 26, 1808), which prohibited the Americans from all trade with foreign ports, and forbade foreigners to carry on trade between one port of the United States and another. In the following year, they proceeded farther. An act of Congress (March 1) interdicted all commerce after the date of May 20, 1809, between the Americans and Great Britain, France, and her dependencies.

The negotiations which were set on foot with England, instead of bringing them to a better understanding, only set them more at variance. A new act of Congress (March, 1, 1810) forbade any French or English vessel to enter the ports of the United States. Within two months after, the Congress published another act, which removed the embargo of April 26, 1808, but left in force the act of March 1; declaring, that if France or Great Britain would modify their decrees as to the commerce of neutral states before the month of March, 1811, and that if, when one of these powers had set an example of such modification, the other did not do the same within the space of three months, the original *Non-intercourse Act* would be again put in force against that power.

In a short time there arose other subjects of complaint on the part of the Americans. They disputed with the English the right of impressing seamen born in the British isles, wherever they

found them; a right of a fundamental individual, born to liberty of depriving another country. had been committed United States declared 18, 1812. That time when the child to exist; for Great which Buonaparte some time the of Americans complained. That war, so u American governm The American sh commerce of the fought with great particularly in Can they could neither capital, which was ral Cochrane and C me, and destroy congress and the commencement of 18 interposed his me this war, which di for effecting the The peace which v 21, 1814), restored the two parties, wi to the two princip the English to take

The financial sys an essential altera presented by Mr. Exchequer, introdu tive to the accumul expenditure of the to £77,337,475 st £651,335 sterling debt amounted to £13,182,510 were a Britain paid to the £11,400,000 sterli 24,107 ships, and in commerce. In mented one-seven their navy consiste sailors, and 32,60 amounted to 302,4

Holland, and anciently formed th ices, after having France, resumed ependence. After troops of Generals roached that coun of Orange at the at their head, moun ished a provision and invited the hec rnm and place hir ent. The French weak to defend th allies and against t departure. The P Amsterdam (I overeign Prince

Regent.
Orebro
intercourse Act.

War with North America.
National Debt of England.
William Sovereign of Holland.

PERIOD IX. A.D. 1810—1815.

The Dutch Colonies.
New Cantons of Switzerland. 233
Second Treaty of Paris.

publish a regency,
of right to the
stry were appre-
les might in some
e existing govern-
nt act (December
ity of the regent
ntly submitted to
sent the regency at
fter the year 1812,
ty's recovery were
ntinued to exercise
her's death, which
en the prince then
IV. The regent
with Russia and
earance, and with
Castlereagh, who,
the head of foreign
to the first advances
towards an accom-
Orebro (July 12),
days after with-
t terms, abandoned
rality of the North
er to revert to the
with Russia.
enemy had at that
ince the year 1803,
standing between
States of America,
France was fettered
England as to the
mericans, on their
ainst the commerce
18th April, 1806,
on of English mer-
on that the coun-
e republic in a war
land, the congress
ame of the Non-
, which prohibited
with foreign ports,
on trade between
d another. In the
l farther. An act
cted all commerce
1809, between the
, France, and her
e set on foot with
hem to a better un-
re at variance. A
(1810) forbade any
enter the ports of
o months after, the
ct, which removed
8, but left in force
that if France of-
their decrees as to
before the month
hen one of these
such modification,
within the space of
on-intercourse Act
ainst that power.
e other subjects of
mericans. They
right of impressing
les, wherever they

found them; a right which they exercised in virtue of a fundamental law which does not allow any individual, born the subject of one country, the liberty of depriving himself of that quality, or denaturalizing himself, by becoming a resident in another country. Already several acts of violence had been committed, when the President of the United States declared war against England, June 18, 1812. That declaration took place at the very time when the chief motive for the war had ceased to exist; for Great Britain, imitating the example which Buonaparte had set her, revoked at the same time the obnoxious orders of which the Americans complained.

That war, so unseasonably undertaken by the American government, did them little honour. The American shipping annoyed and injured the commerce of the English; and the Americans fought with great bravery both by sea and land, particularly in Canada. But as they had no fleet, they could neither protect their coasts nor their capital, which was taken by assault. Vice-Admiral Cochrane and General Ross entered the Potomac, and destroyed Washington, the seat of the congress and the government. From the commencement of 1813, the Emperor Alexander had interposed his mediation for putting an end to this war, which diverted the efforts of the English for effecting the deliverance of the Continent. The peace which was signed at Ghent (December 24, 1814), restored friendship and amity between the two parties, without coming to any decision as to the two principal complaints which had induced the English to take up arms.

The financial system of Great Britain underwent an essential alteration, by the adoption of a plan presented by Mr. Vansittart, Chancellor of the Exchequer, introducing certain modifications relative to the accumulation of the sinking fund. The expenditure of the government in 1815 amounted to £77,337,475 sterling, of which Ireland cost £8,651,335 sterling. The interest of the national debt amounted to £36,607,128 sterling, of which £13,182,510 were applied to the sinking fund. Great Britain paid to the states of the continent, in 1813, £11,400,000 sterling, under the name of subsidies; 24,107 ships, and 105,030 seamen, were employed in commerce. In 1814, these numbers were augmented one-seventh more. At this latter period, their navy consisted of 1044 ships of war, 100,000 sailors, and 32,600 marines; the land forces amounted to 302,400 men, including 63,000 militia.

Holland, and the other powers which had recently formed the republic of the United Provinces, after having been for two years united to France, resumed once more their national independence. After the battle of Leipsic, when the corps of Generals Bulow and Winzingerode approached that country, the partisans of the Prince of Orange at the Hague, with M. de Hogendorp at their head, mounted the ancient cockade, established a provisional government (Nov. 17, 1813), and invited the heir of the last Stadtholder to return and place himself at the head of the government. The French troops, finding themselves too weak to defend the country at once against the allies and against the inhabitants, quietly took their departure. The Prince of Orange having arrived at Amsterdam (December 1), was proclaimed sovereign Prince of the Low Countries; but he

accepted that dignity, on the condition that his power should be limited by a constitution; a plan of which he caused to be drawn up, which was adopted and sworn to in an assembly of the representatives.

During the sojourn of the allied sovereigns in England, it was agreed, that in order to oppose a barrier to France on the side of the North, Holland and Belgium should be united under the same government. A treaty, concluded at the same time in London (August 13, 1814), restored to the Dutch all their ancient colonies, with the exception of the Cape of Good Hope, Essequibo, Berbice, and Demerara. According to the regulations of the treaty of Vienna, the bishopric of Lucca and the duchy of Luxemburg were ceded to the sovereign prince, on condition that he should make a part of the Germanic Confederation. It was at this time that he received the title of King of the Netherlands. By the second treaty of Paris, this new kingdom obtained a slight increase of territory, and a sum of 60,000,000 of francs, for constructing a line of fortresses. The superficial extent of that kingdom, with the duchy of Luxemburg, amounted to 1164 square miles, with a population of 5,460,000 souls; besides the population of its colonies, amounting to 1,726,000 inhabitants.

As it had been found impossible to complete the number of troops which Switzerland was to furnish to Buonaparte, according to the convention of September 27, 1803, a new capitulation was concluded in 1812, which reduced them to 12,000 men. When the allies approached the Rhine, about the end of 1813, Switzerland vainly flattered herself, that they would grant her the privilege of neutrality. The allied troops had to traverse the territory of the confederacy, in order to enter France. The public opinion then declared itself, by annulling the Act of *Mediation* which united Switzerland to France; but this opinion was not unanimous as to the future constitution of the country. Of the thirteen ancient cantons, eight concluded a confederation, on the principle which granted an equality of rights to every component part of the union; and to this the new cantons gave in their adherence. Berne, Friburg, and Underwalden, refused to take a part in it. The Grisons re-established their ancient form of government. The intervention of foreign powers quashed the civil war with which that country was threatened; and after many difficulties, a new confederation of the nineteen cantons was signed at Zurich (September 8, 1814). There still remained, however, several litigated points to be decided, which were settled by the congress of Vienna, who declared that the perpetual neutrality of Switzerland should be acknowledged by all the other powers; and that the Valais, in the territory of Geneva, and the principality of Neuchâtel, should make a part of the confederation, as three additional cantons. The Swiss states having acceded to this declaration (May 27, 1815), it was renewed, confirmed, and sanctioned by the allied powers, in a second declaration signed at Paris (November 20).

In consequence of a convention concluded at Turin with Prince Borghese, governor-general of the French provinces beyond the Alps, Field-Marshal Bellegarde had taken possession of Pied-

impossible to over-
VII., had set him
of the year 1814
to his estates
of the people, and
ting in which they
a of the French
of his political
uits, suppressed in
a necessary barrier
revolution. The
to the Sovereign
ines, with the ex-
y situated to the
exed to the king
The ecclesiastical
ce of 500 square
000.
achim Murat pro-
Bourbons to the
ected by the ex-
spatched in 1815
of the alliance offen-
ourt had concluded
(April 29, 1815).
on the 17th June
e head of a small
imitating the ex-
e landed at Pizo-
e he hoped to be
ents; but the pe-
he was arrested
shot (October 10).
sses has an extent
inhabitants.
red into Sicily, that
ion of the English
0,000 men, with
ord Bentinck, who
sed all his influ-
stitution into that
at the head of the
leave her family
e remained master
st peace of Paris
ns of government
s, he annulled the
onian islands which
the English, was
ion of Paris (April
islands was decided
ame place between
ussia and Russia,
and independent
ame of the United
d placed under the
tection of Great
1813 and 1814, the
ession of all that
before or in conse-
Formio. A small
th of the Po, was
line, Bormio, Châ-
ic of Ragusa. The
possessions into a
nder the title of
hardy. Independ-
ed the Illyrian pro-

ities, of which she also formed a distinct king-
dom. By a treaty signed at Vienna with Russia,
she likewise gained possession of the part of
western Galicia which she had ceded to Alexander
in 1809, and the exclusive property of Wieliczka,
which was then divided between her and the duchy
of Warsaw. The Austrian monarchy, in its pre-
scent state, contains a surface of 12,000 square miles,
and a population of 29,000,000.

It was a more difficult matter to re-organize the
monarchy of Prussia. We have mentioned the
negotiations, in consequence of which she acquired
about a half of the kingdom of Saxony. The Con-
gress of Vienna restored to her not only a part of
Prussia, now called the Grand Duchy of
Pomerania, and all the other possessions which she
had lost by the convention of Vienna (December
25, 1805), and the peace of Tilsit (with the excep-
tion of Bialystock, Anspach, Baireuth, Westfries-
land, and Hildesheim), but also a considerable
territory on the left bank of the Rhine, the Grand
Duchy of Berg, the Duchy of Westphalia, Swedish
Pomerania, and the sovereignty of several other
principalities and counties. These territorial ar-
rangements were not concluded till 1819. The
Prussian monarchy contains a surface of 5,028
square miles, and a population of nearly 11,000,000.

The sovereign princes and free cities of Ger-
many were united by an Act, signed at Vienna,
under the name of the Germanic Confederation.
All the members of the confederacy enjoy full
sovereignty, and all take part in the deliberations
of the diet in matters relating to the general in-
terests of the union. The thirty-nine members,
however, in ordinary cases, have only seventeen
votes; eleven of the states having each a vote,
while six collective votes belong to the other twenty-
eight. Nevertheless, in constitutional questions,
the thirty-nine members have in all seventy votes;
each state having at least one, and several of them
two, three, and four votes. The members have
the right of concluding every kind of alliance, pro-
vided these are not directed against the safety of
the union or of its constituent members. The
equality of civil and religious rights was secured to
all who professed the Christian religion.

Various states, forming the Germanic confede-
ration, underwent certain changes in their terri-
torial possessions; but the negotiations by which
they were definitively settled did not take place
till 1819. The kingdom of Bavaria received in-
demnities for the various restitutions which had
been made to the court of Vienna. Its superfi-
cial extent amounts to 1,505 square miles, and
3,000,000 inhabitants. The grand duchy of Hesse
obtained considerable augmentations on the left
bank of the Rhine, and has a surface of 214 square
miles, and 630,000 inhabitants. The Grand Duke
of Oldenburg, the Duke of Saxe Cobourg, and the
Landgrave of Hesse-Homburg, and the House of
Orange-Nassau, obtained territorial indemnities on
the Rhine. The Elector of Hesse obtained the
grand duchy of Fulda; his dominions consisted of
900 square miles, and 540,000 inhabitants. The
king of Hanover lost Lauenburg, and obtained
Hildesheim and Westfriesland. That kingdom
contains 750 square miles, and 1,300,000 inhabi-
tants. The grand duchy of Saxe-Weimar, with
several additional districts, contains sixty-six square
miles, and 193,000 inhabitants.

Such is the composition of the German confede-
ration, an association which was formed, as we
have mentioned, by the act of June 8, 1815. In
1820, it was declared a fundamental law of the
union; but these events, which are posterior to
the time of which we treat, do not fall within our
history.

As Russia and Austria were not likely to come
to an agreement as to the possession of the city of
Cracow, the former demanding it as an appurte-
nance of the ci-devant duchy of Warsaw, while the
latter claimed it as having been deprived of it by
the peace of Schönbrunn; it was agreed by the
treaty of Vienna (May 13, 1815), that that city,
with the territory which had been assigned it,
should form an independent and neutral republic,
under the protection of Austria, Prussia, and
Russia. Besides the city of Cracow, a district
containing 8,000 or 9,000 inhabitants was dis-
membered from the duchy of Warsaw, which was
conferred on Prussia, under the title of the Grand
Duchy of Posenania. The remainder was united
to the Empire of Russia as a distinct state, under
the name of the kingdom of Poland, having its own
constitution and a separate administration. That
state contained 2,000 square miles, with a popula-
tion of 2,500,000.

We have already observed, by what fatal mis-
chance Denmark had been dragged into the war
of Napoleon against the allies. The treaty of peace
at Kiel (January 14, 1804), deprived her of Nor-
way, in lieu of which she obtained the paltry com-
pensation of Swedish Pomerania; and even that
acquisition proved nugatory. According to arrange-
ments agreed on at Vienna with Prussia, the King
of Denmark accepted the duchy of Lauenburg
instead of Pomerania, which was abandoned to
Prussia. The Danish monarchy thus lost one-third
of its subjects, and was reduced to an extent of
2,420 square miles, and 1,700,000 inhabitants.

The Norwegians, who cherished a national ha-
tred against the Swedes, refused to submit to their
destiny. They chose for their king, Prince Chris-
tian Frederic, who was their governor-general and
heir to the throne of Denmark (May 17, 1814),
and they published a representative constitution at
Eidsvold. The King and the Prince Royal of
Sweden marched at the head of an army to re-
duce them to submission. After some hostile
manœuvres, the Prince of Denmark resigned the
sovereignty by a convention, which was signed at
Moss (August 16). The National Assembly, con-
vened at Christiania (October 20), decreed the re-
union of Norway to the crown of Sweden, as an
independent kingdom, under one monarchy, and
with a representative constitution. They adopted
the order of succession as established in Sweden
in 1819. Charles XIII. was proclaimed King of
Norway (November 4); and the relations between
Sweden and Norway were sealed, by an act signed
between the two kingdoms (July 31, 1815). By
the treaty of Vienna, Sweden ceded to Prussia her
part of Pomerania, and thus was separated from
Germany, of which she had been a constituent
member since the time of Gustavus Adolphus.
The Swedish monarchy contains an extent of
13,850 square miles, with 3,330,000 inhabitants.

Russia acted so conspicuous a part during the
period of which we have spoken, that we can
scarcely mention any event of general interest in

which she was not concerned. She was at war with Great Britain, Turkey, and Persia, when Buonaparte commenced hostilities against her in 1811. The Russians acted on the defensive against the Turks; Prince Kutuzoff, who had the command, having been obliged to send five divisions of his army into Poland, caused Silistria to be demolished, preserving only Rudschuk, on the right bank of the Danube. The indolent Jusuff Pacha, who had never stirred from his camp at Schumla, was replaced by Achmet Aga, an active and enterprising general, who sent for a reinforcement of 35,000 men, mostly composed of excellent cavalry, and supported by a formidable artillery, served by French officers. Achmet marched against Kutuzoff, and their first encounter took place two leagues from Rudschuk (July 4). Eight thousand Russians, who were opposed to the vanguard of the Ottomans, under the command of Ali Pacha, were driven back to their entrenchments. Two days after, the grand vizier attacked the Russian entrenchments and dislodged the troops, who threw themselves into Rudschuk. It was chiefly the infantry of the Russians that suffered in that battle, owing to the superiority of the Turkish cavalry, who would have cut them to pieces but for a bold manoeuvre of Count Langeron, who sallied from Rudschuk, at the head of the garrison, and protected the fugitives. The grand vizier advanced under the very cannon of the fortress. He attempted three times in one day to carry it by force, but was repulsed each time (July 9). During the following night the Russians quitted Rudschuk and passed the Danube. But the Turks having got intelligence, entered the town, and prevented them from carrying off all their artillery and ammunition.

The army of Kutuzoff, weakened by disease, was unable to prevent the grand vizier from taking possession of the islands of the Danube. A body of 15,000 troops, commanded by Ismael Bey, took up a post on the right bank, so that the grand vizier passed the river at the head of the main body of the forces (August 3). But the face of affairs soon changed. General Ouwaroff having brought a reinforcement of 50,000 men to Kutuzoff, the latter detached Markoff, with a considerable body, who passed to the right bank of the Danube, marched in all haste against the Turkish reserve before Rudschuk, seized their camp, and thus cut off the retreat of the grand vizier. The latter found means to enter Rudschuk in a small bark, leaving his army in Wallachia, under the command of Seraskier Tehaban-Oglou, who was blockaded at Slobosia by Kutuzoff; and, after being reduced to 25,000 men, they were obliged to capitulate and lay down their arms (December 8).

The grand vizier then demanded a suspension of arms, which was signed at Guirdesov. Negotiations were opened at Bucharest, but the Turk refused for a long time to make the smallest cession of territory. At length the mediation of England, Sweden, and Russia, overcame the obstinacy of the divan, and peace was signed (May 28, 1812). The Porte ceded to Russia about one-third of Moldavia, as far as the Pruth, the fortresses of Choczin and Bender, and the whole of Bessarabia with Ismael and Kolia; an amnesty was granted to the Servians.

Although England had appeared at Bucharest as a mediating power, nevertheless her treaty of peace with Russia was not definitively signed, although actual hostilities had long ceased between the two powers. The treaty was at length concluded at Orebro (July 18), the stipulations of which are not all known. The peace with Persia was signed in the Russian camp, near the river Seiva, under the mediation of England, and confirmed the following year at Teflis (September 18, 1814). Persia ceded to Russia, Daghistan, Shirvan, Derbent, and in general the whole western coast of the Caspian sea, renounced her pretensions on Georgia, Imirete, Guriel, and Mingrelia, and recognised the exclusive right of Russia to the navigation of the Caspian Sea.

At the Congress of Vienna, the Emperor of Russia had obtained the kingdom of Poland, which we have already noticed. Independently of this acquisition, the Russian Empire had an extent of 345,000 square miles, 80,000 of which are in Europe, the population of which amounts to 38,000,000. The population of the whole Empire is estimated at 46,000,000.

A concurrence of fortunate circumstances has saved the Ottoman Empire from that ruin which it has more than once been threatened, and for which the total dissolution of social order in the provinces has a long time prepared the way. If it still survives these evils, its preservation is perhaps, to be ascribed to that Holy Alliance which has sometimes been the object of terror to the Porte, as individuals addicted to revolution have persuaded her that that Christian league was directed against Mahometanism. It is this suspicion, the offspring of ignorance and weakness, which at a recent date had nearly precipitated her into imprudent measures. The Porte, enlightened as to her true interest by Austria, Great Britain, and her other allies, must now feel that she cannot prolong her existence, except by substituting the reign of justice, and the principles of humanity, for those of despotism and cruelty.

THE END.

INT

1 Diplomats ought
Diplomacy, which
interests of differ-
foreign courts, &
envoys, consuls, &
2 The first that un-
a university was t-
fessor at Helmst-
spectus was pu-
ACHENWALL, a p-
regarded as the in-
Before his time,
attention to the re-
letter which he w-
VIII. of England
"Fœdera," vol. v.
From the year 1
French, by a decr-
of the 5th of Octo-
puting by what th-
It began at midni-
viz. the 21st or 22-
vided into twelve
followed by five
This innovation,
December, 1805.
It is to this circ-
owes its origin.
was first used by
the initials or first
Augusto. T.
This calculation,
much as nineteen
only to 6,939 da-
six minutes, fite-
lunations, contain
years, only give 6,
one minutes, for
cycle, consequent
revolutions by tw-
seconds. This e-
formation of the c-

NOTES

The name *Alemanni*
wards to all the G-
restricted to a pa-
designate by the r-
distinguish them from
mands).
The *Guttones* of H-
of Tacitus, and th-
these authors plac-
cient Germany,
probably one an-
Goths; and ought
the *Getae*, a peopl-

NOTES.

INTRODUCTION.

1 Diplomats ought not to be confounded with *Diplomacy*, which means a knowledge of the interests of different states, and the policy of foreign courts, &c., by means of ambassadors, envoys, consuls, &c.

2 The first that undertook to teach this science in a university was the celebrated CONRING, a professor at Helmstadt. His programme or prospectus was published in 1660. GODFREY AGNEWALL, a professor at Gottingen, 1748, is regarded as the inventor of the name.

3 Before his time, Pope Leo X. had paid some attention to the reformation of the calendar. A letter which he wrote on the subject to Henry VIII. of England may be seen in Rymer's "Fœdera," vol. vi. p. 119.

4 From the year 1793 to the end of 1805, the French, by a decree of the National Convention of the 5th of October, adopted a method of computing by what they called the *Republican year*. It began at midnight of the autumnal equinox, viz. the 21st or 22nd of September. It was divided into twelve months of thirty days each, followed by five or six supplementary days. This innovation, however, ceased on the 31st of December, 1805.

5 It is to this circumstance that the term *ÆRA* owes its origin. It is not a classical word, but was first used by the Spaniards; and is merely the initials or first letters of *Anno Erat Regnante Augusto*. T.

6 This calculation, however, was incorrect, inasmuch as nineteen exact solar revolutions amount only to 6,939 days, fourteen hours, twenty-six minutes, fifteen seconds; while 235 true lunations, contained in the cycle of nineteen years, only give 6,939 days, sixteen hours, thirty-one minutes, forty-five seconds. The lunar cycle, consequently, exceeded the nineteen solar revolutions by two hours, five minutes, thirty seconds. This error was corrected at the reformation of the calendar, by Gregory XIII.

NOTES TO PERIOD I.

The name *Alemanni*, erroneously applied afterwards to all the German nations, was originally restricted to a particular tribe, which we here designate by the name of the *Alemanns*, to distinguish them from the modern Germans (*Alemanni*).

The *Guttones* of Pliny, the *Gothones* or *Gotones* of Tacitus, and the *Gythones* of Ptolemy, whom these authors place in the northern part of ancient Germany, near the Vistula, were most probably one and the same nation with the *Goths*; and ought not to be confounded with the *Getae*, a people of ancient Dacia.

3 We find a Gothic bishop, named Theophilus, among the bishops who signed the acts of the first council of Nice. Ulfilas, a Gothic bishop, towards the middle of the fourth century, translated the Bible into the language of his nation, making use of the Greek and Roman characters. His *Four Gospels*, preserved in the Codex Argenteus, in the library at Upsal, is the most ancient specimen we have of the German language, of which the Gothic is one of the principal dialects. Vide *Fragments of Ulfilas*, published by M. Zahn. 1805.

4 The identity of the Franks with these German tribes may be shown from a passage of St. Jerome, as well as by the *Table Peutingeriene*, ou *Théodosienne*, so called because it is supposed to have been drawn up under the Emperor Theodosius, about the beginning of the fifth century; though M. Mannert, in his treatise *De Tab. Peuting. ætate*, has proved that it is as old as the third century; and that the copy preserved in the library at Vienna, and published by M. de Scheyl, is but an incorrect copy, which he attributes to a monk of the thirteenth century. From this *Table* it appears that, in the third century, the name *Fracia* was given to that part of Germany which is situate in the Lower Rhine in Westphalia; and that the Bructeri, the Chauci, Chamavi, Cherusci, Ampsivarii, &c. were the same as the Franks. The names of *Saliens* and *Ripuarians*, evidently taken from the situation of some of these tribes on the Rhine, the Yssel, or Saal, appear to have been given them by the Romans, and were afterwards retained by them.

5 Ammianus Marcellinus, Lib. 31, c. 2. *Jornandes De Rebus Geticis*, cap. 35. This latter historian gives the following portrait of Attila, King of the Huns:—"His stature was short, his chest broad, his head rather large, his eyes small, his beard thin, his hair grey, his nose flat, his complexion dark and hideous, bearing evidence of his origin. He was a man of much cunning, who fought by stratagem, before he engaged in battles."

6 We may judge of the extent of the kingdom of the Burgundians by the signatures of twenty-five bishops, who were present at the Council of Epao, held by Sigismond, King of Burgundy, in 517. These bishops were the following: Besançon, Langres, Autun, Châlons, Lyon, Valence, Orange, Vaison, Carpentras, Cavillon, Sisteron, Apt, Gap, Die, St. Paul-trois-Châteaux, Viviers, Vienne, Embrun, Grenoble, Geneva, Tarantaise, Avanche, Windzich, Martigny in the Bas-Valais, Taurentum in Provence. Vide Labbei, *Acta Concil.* vol. iv. p. 1573, 1581.

7 Many kings and chiefs of different nations marched under his command. Jornandes (cap. 38) observes—"As for the rest, a rabble of kings, if they may be so called, and leaders of

- divers nations, they waited like satellites the orders of Attila; and if he gave but a wink or a nod, every one attended with fear and trembling, and executed his commands without a murmur. Attila alone, like a king of kings, had the supreme charge and authority over them all."
- 8 The Salian Franks are distinct from the Ripuarian, who formed a separate kingdom, the capital of which was Cologne. There were also, about the end of the fifth century, particular kings of the Franks at Terouane, Marns, and Cambay, all of whom were subdued by Clovis, shortly before his death in 511.
- 9 Clovis took from the Alemanns a part of their territories, of which he formed a distinct province, known afterwards by the name of *France on the Rhine*. They retained, however, under their hereditary chiefs, Alsace, with the districts situated beyond the Rhine, and bounded on the north by the Oos, the Entz, the Necker, the Muhr, the Wernitz, and the Jagst. Vide Schœpflin, *Alsatia Illust.* vol. i. p. 630.
- 10 The Visigoths then retained no other possessions in Gaul than Septimania, or Languedoc. Their territories between the Rhone, the Alps, and the Mediterranean, passed to the Ostrogoths, as the reward for services which the latter had rendered them in their wars with the Franks.
- 11 Scheidingen, on the left bank of the Unstrut, about three leagues from Naumburg on the Saal, is supposed to have been the residence of the ancient kings of Thuringia. Venantius Fortunatus, the friend of Queen Radegonde, a princess of Thuringia, gives a poetical description of it in his Elegy "De Excidiis Thuringie."
- 12 Belisarius was recalled from Italy by the Emperor Justinian, in 549. He afterwards incurred the displeasure of the court of Constantinople; but what modern writers have asserted, that he was blind, and reduced to beg his bread, is destitute of foundation.—Mascow, *Geschichte der Teutschen*.
- 13 Agathias, Lib. 1, p. 17, asserts, that the Goths abandoned the nation of the Alemanns to the Franks, in order to interest the latter in their cause against the Greeks. The same was the case with that part of Gaul situate between the Alps, the Rhone, and the Mediterranean, which pertained to the Ostrogoths, and which they ceded to the Franks, on condition that they would never furnish supplies to the Greeks.
- 14 The name of the Bavarians does not occur in history before the middle of the sixth century, when Jordanes, *De Reb. Geticis*, and Venantius Fortunatus, in his poems, speak of them for the first time. Mannert, *Geschichte Bajuvariens*, p. 108, reckons the Bavarians an association of several German tribes; the Heruls, Rugians, Turellingians, and Seyrians, all originally emigrating from the shores of the Baltic. The new settlements which they formed in Upper Germany comprehended that part of ancient Rhetia, Vindelicia, and Noricum, which lies between the Danube, the Lech, and the Noce in Pannonia, and the Tyrol. They were governed by kings or chiefs, who, from the year 595, were dependants on the Frankish crown.
- 15 Clovis left the Alemanns, after their defeat, a considerable part of their territories under hereditary chiefs, who acknowledged the superiority of the Frankish kings. Such of the Alemanns as Theodorie, King of Italy, then received into a part of Rhetia and Noricum, continued dependants on the kingdom of the Ostrogoths, till the decay of that monarchy, near the middle of the sixth century, when they became subject to the dominion of the Franks.
- 16 Tacitus *De Moribus German.*, cap. 2. It was the prerogative of freemen to have the honour of bearing arms. Even bishops and ecclesiastics, when admitted into the national assemblies, and to the rights and privileges of freemen, never failed to claim this military dignity, and occupied, like others, their ranks in the army.
- 17 We find among the German nations, from the remotest times, the distinction into *nobles, freemen*, and *serfs*: a distinction which they still preserved, in their new settlements in the Roman Empire.
- 18 Called Ordeals. Besides the trial by *single combat*, there were others by *hot iron, boiling or cold water, the cross*, &c. Vide Ducan's Gloss.
- 19 The Goths, Vandals, Suevi, and Alans, were already Christians, when they settled within the bounds of the Western Empire. They followed the doctrines of Arius, which they had imbibed in the East; and which the Suevi of Galicia abandoned for the orthodox creed, under their King Cariaric, about 551; and the Visigoths of Spain, under their King Recarole, in 489. The Lombards of Italy were, at first, Arians, but became Catholics, under their King Agilulphus, in 602. The Vandals and Ostrogoths, on the contrary, having persisted in Arianism; this perseverance may be numbered among the causes that hastened the destruction of their monarchy both in Italy and Africa. As to the Burgundians, they did not embrace Christianity till after their establishment in Gaul. Their example was soon followed by the Franks, who likewise protected the dissemination of the orthodox faith among the German nations, settled in their dominions beyond the Rhine. The Christian religion was introduced about the end of the sixth century among the Anglo-Saxons in Britain, by some Benedictine monks, whom Pope Gregory I. had sent there. Ethelbert, King of Kent, was the first of the Anglo-Saxon kings that embraced Christianity, by the persuasion, it is said, of his queen, Eorltha, daughter of Charibert I., King of Paris.
- 20 The possessions of the Ostrogoths in Gaul, lying between the Rhine, the Alps, and the Mediterranean, were ceded to the Franks about 536.
- 21 Eginhard, *Vita Carol. Mag.* cap. 11. It seems then an error in history, to designate these princes as a race of kings, who had all degenerated into a state of imbecility or idiocy. Of this opinion was the Abbé Vertot, who endeavours to rescue these monarchs from this generally received imputation. Vide "Mém. de l'Académie," vol. iv. T.)
- 22 This same St. Boniface, in 744, induced the

Archbishops of
ample, the papal
knowledging that
the Roman see
Bonish supremacy
England in 601
of Canterbury
palliva. Vide
It is alleged t
share in favour
emperors reck
weaken the ex
domineered ov
regarded also
worship as the
sections which
against the Chr
treated as idola
tion for images
The name *Exa*
province of Ra
Pentapolis, wa
each us gover
parts of Grecian
gates, who rule
the exarch.
It was during
Stephen II. gav
Simondi, *Conc*
(in Muratori, v
Chiers) as the p
also says was s
This prospectiv
letter which St
and his sons,
Rome, exhortin
ments without c
The pope, in hi
natiou an augm
tion; an extens
Cenni, vol. i. p.
duchy of Rome
former grants
church. The sa
original of Pepp
in the archives
recorded the pla
Different interp
the word Sarace
them the Latins
Some explain it
others by *Orien*
Casiri, Bibl. Ar
pretend to der
Arabic word *S*
which means, m
We may judge o
this time, from
author, in Cushi
p. 322). Muza
Tarce to be ba
continued to ex
Caliph, to aveng
basinadoed in
mascus to lay at
Spain. His son
of Spain, was k
Such was the fat
Spain.
The Abassides

Archbishops of France to receive, after his example, the pallium from Pope Zacharius, acknowledging the jurisdiction and supremacy of the Roman see. This acknowledgment of the Romish supremacy had already taken place in England in 601 and 627, when the Archbishops of Canterbury and York received the pontifical pallium. Vide Bede, Hist. Eccles.

It is alleged that state politics had no small share in favouring this zeal. Not only did the emperors reckon, by abolishing images, to weaken the excessive power of the monks who domineered over the Byzantine court; but they regarded also the destruction of this heretical worship as the only means of arresting the persecutions which the Mahometans then exercised against the Christians in the East, whom they treated as idolaters, on account of their veneration for images.

The name *Exarchate* was then given to the province of Ravenna, because it, as well as the Pentapolis, was immediately subject to the exarch as governor-general; while the other parts of Grecian Italy were governed by delegates, who ruled in the name and authority of the exarch.

It was during his sojourn at Chiersi that Pope Stephen II. gave the decisions that we find in Sismondi, *Concil. Gall.* vol. ii. 16. Anastasius (in Muratori, vol. iii. p. 168—186) mentions Chiersi as the place of this donation, which he also says was signed by Pepin and his two sons. This prospective grant is even attested by the letter which Stephen II. addressed to Pepin and his sons, immediately on his return to Rome, exhorting them to fulfil their engagements without delay.

The pope, in his letters to Pepin, calls this donation an augmentation of the Romish dominion; an extension of the Romish territory, &c. Ceani, vol. i. p. 85, 124. Besides the city and duchy of Rome, Anastasius mentions various former grants of territories to the Romish church. The same author informs us, that the original of Pepin's donation existed in his time in the archives of the Romish see, and he has recorded the places gifted to the church.

Different interpretations have been given to the word Saracens, which the Greeks, and after them the Latins, have applied to the Arabs. Some explain it by *robbers* or *brigands*, and others by *Orientalis*, or natives of the East. Casiri, *Bibl. Arab. Hist.* Vol. II., p. 19. Some pretend to derive this appellation from the Arabic word *Sarrag*, or its plural *Sarrogin*, which means, men on horseback, or cavaliers.

We may judge of the ferocity of the Arabs at this time, from a passage of Rasis, an Arabic author, in Casiri, (*Bibl. Arab. Hist.* Vol. II., p. 322). Muza, in a fit of jealousy, had caused Tarec to be bastinadoed at Toledo, and yet continued to employ him as general. The Caliph, to avenge Tarec, caused Muza to be bastinadoed in his turn, when he came to Damascus to lay at his royal feet the spoils of all Spain. His son, whom he had left governor of Spain, was killed by order of the Caliph. Such was the fate of the Arabic conquerors of Spain.

The Abassides took their name from Abbas,

the paternal uncle of Muhomet, of whom they were descended. The Omniades were descended from Omniah, a more distant relation of the prophet.

30 Don Pelago, the king whom the Spaniards regard as the founder of this new state, is a personage not less equivocal than the Pharamond of the Franks. Isidorus Pugnensis, a Spanish author of that time, published by Sandoval in his collection in 1634, knew nothing of him. He extols, on the contrary, the exploits of Theodenir, whom the Visigoths, according to the Arabic authors quoted by Casiri, had chosen as their king after the unfortunate death of Roderic. The Chronicle of Alphonso III., and that of Albayda, which are commonly cited in favour of Don Pelago, are both as late as the beginning of the tenth century, and relate things so marvellous of this pretended founder of the kingdom of Leon, that it is impossible to give credit to them.

31 This dynasty, after the year 827, effected the conquest of the greater part of Sicily from the Greeks; but they were deprived of it, in 940, by the Fatimites, who were succeeded in the following century by the Zeirides in Africa. (Vide Period IV. under Spain).

32 The celebrated Gerbert, born in Auvergne, and afterwards Pope Silvester II., was among the first that repaired to Spain, about the middle of the tenth century, to study mathematics under the Arabs. Numbers afterwards imitated his example.

33 There is preserved in the library of the Escorial in Spain, 1581 Arabic MSS. which escaped the conflagration of 1671, and which have been amply described by Casiri in his *Bibl. Arab. Hisp.*

NOTES TO PERIOD II.

1 The immense intrenchments or fortifications of the Avars, called *Rhingos* by the Franks, were destroyed by Charlemagne, to the number of nine. A part of Pannonia and the territory of the Avars he left in possession of the native chiefs, and the Slavian princes, who acknowledged themselves his vassals and tributaries. The Slavi, the Moravians, and Bulgarians, seem to have then seized on a part of the territories of the Avars lying beyond the Danube and the Theyss. It was on account of this war that Charlemagne established the Eastern March (Austria) against the Avars, and that he conceived also the project of joining the Danube and the Rhine, by a canal drawn from the river Altmühl to Rednitz.

2 Charles took the oath in the Teutonic language, Louis in the Romance language; the forms of which have been preserved by the Abbé Nithard, a cousin of these princes. We may observe, that this is the most ancient monument of the Romance language; out of which has sprung the modern French.

3 This treaty, which has been preserved by the author of the *Annals of St. Bertin*, mentions all the countries and principal places assigned to each of the brothers. It forms a valuable document in the geography of the middle ages.

- 4 As an example of this, it is said that a nobleman of Suabia, named Etichon, brother to the Empress Judith, quarrelled with his own son, and refused to see him, because, in his estimation, he had debased himself by receiving as fiefs, from Louis the Gentle, a certain number of his own lands, situated in Upper Bavaria.
- 5 The Danes and the Swedes dispute with each other the honour of these pretended heroes, who signalized themselves in the Norman piracies. It is without doubt that all the tribes of ancient Scandinavia, in their turn, took part in these expeditions. According to the Monk of St. Gall, it was not till about the end of the war of Charlemagne with the Avars, *i. e.* 796, that the Normans began to infest the coasts of the Frankish empire. In order to stop their incursions, Charles constructed a fleet, and stationed in the harbours and mouths of rivers troops and guard-ships;—precautions which were neglected by his successors.
- 6 The beautiful palaces which Charles had constructed at Nimeguen and Aix-la-Chapelle, were burnt to the ground by the Normans in 881-2. At the same time, they plundered Liege, Maestricht, Tongres, Cologne, Bonn, Zulpich, Nays, and Treves.
- 7 Nestor, a monk of Klovja, and the first annalist of Russia, about the end of the eleventh century, says the Russians, whom he calls also *Waregues*, came from Scandinavia, or the country of the Normans. He assures us that it was from them that the state of Novogorod took the name of Russia. The author of the annals of St. Bertin, the first that mentions the Russians (*Rhos*), A. D. 839, assigns Sweden as their original country. Luitprand also, bishop of Cremona, in the court of Constantinople by Otho the Great, attests, in his history, that the Greeks gave the name of *Russians* to the people, who in the West were called Normans. The Finns, Laplanders, and Estonians, at this day, call the Swedes, *Roots*, *Ruotzi*, or *Rootslane*. It is likely that from them, being nearest neighbours of the Swedes, this name passed to the Slavonian tribes. Hence it would seem, that it is in Sweden we must look for Russia, prior to the times of Ruric; in the same way as ancient France is to be found in Westphalia and Hesse, before the days of Clodion, and the founding of the new monarchy of the Franks in Gaul.
- 8 The Orkney Isles, the Hebrides, the Shetlands, and the Isle of Man, passed, in course of time, from the dominion of the Norwegians to that of the Scottish kings, while the Faroe Isles remained constantly annexed to the kingdom of Norway.
- 9 Olaus II., King of Norway, had rendered the Icelanders tributaries, but they soon renewed their independence; and it was not till the time of Haco V. and Magnus VII., in 1261 and 1264, that they submitted to the dominion of Norway, when the republican government of the island was suppressed. Iceland, when a republic, furnished the first annalists of the North. The most distinguished of these is SNORRE STURLESON, who wrote a history of the kings of Norway about the beginning of

the thirteenth century. This celebrated man died in 1241.

- 10 The Chazars, a Turkish tribe, ruled, at the time we now speak, over the northern part of the Crimea; as also the vast regions lying to the north of the Euxine and Caspian Seas. The Onogurs or Ugurs, supposed to be the same as Hungarians, were subject to them. These Chazars having embraced Christianity in the ninth century, adopted a sort of syncretism, which admitted all sorts indifferently. Hence the name of *Chazars* or *Ketzers* has been given, by the German divines, to every species of heretics. Their power vanished about the beginning of the eleventh century.
- 11 The *Patzinacites* or *Kanglians*, also a Turkish and wandering tribe, originally inhabited the borders of the Jaik and the Volga, between these two rivers. Expelled from these countries by the Uzes or Cumans, who combined with the Chazars against them, they attacked the Hungarians, whom they strip of their possessions, lying between the Tannais, the Dnieper, and the Dniester (A. D. 884).
- 12 The Moravians were the first of the Slavonian tribes that embraced Christianity. The Greek Emperor Michael, at their own request, sent them, in 863, Cyril and Methodius, two learned Greeks of Thessalonica, who invented the Slavonian alphabet, and translated into their language the sacred books, which the Russians still use.
- 13 The Patzinacites possessed all the countries situated between the Aluta, the Dnieper, and the Donez, which, near its source, separated them from the Chazars. They gradually disappeared from history about the end of the eleventh century, when they were dispossessed or subdued by the Cumans.
- 14 Historians have commonly ascribed to this prince the division of England into counties, hundreds, and tithes, as also the institution of juries.
- 15 From the occupation of Greenland and Finland by the Normans, we may infer that North America was known to them several centuries before it was discovered by the English.

NOTES TO PERIOD III.

- 1 The Hungarians having made a new invasion under Otho the Great, advanced as far as Augsburg, to which they laid siege, but Otho, in a battle which he fought with them in the vicinity of that city (955), routed them with such slaughter that they never dared to return.
- 2 On this oath, which was taken in 963, the Emperors of Germany founded the title by which they claimed the right to confirm, or to nominate and depose the popes. Lawyers generally allege the famous decree of Leo VIII., published 964, as establishing the rights of the emperors over Rome and the popes. But the authenticity of this decree has been attacked by the ablest critics, and defended by others. It would appear that there is no necessity for this to justify these rights. Otho, after having conquered Italy and received the sub-

mission of the easily claim for some rights of Frank emperor. He was duke obtained that d He transmitted last prince of t in 1006.

4 The principal Capua were g who held of the doms of Naple Apulia and Ca Eastern emper the greater par and Tarento in

5 From this trea salage which th present time ov

6 The first invasi in 1000. Pale power in 1072 the whole islan

7 The first seeds Denmark and Louis the Ger bishop of Has the North. E was extremely countries. Th an Icelander n about the begi The most emir a monk named about 1187, a that kingdom. grammarian, w ia beautiful L preceding the for its first ann who wrote abo no national his in *Forse*, the f lived in the tin the middle of

8 Olaus s nt, in Iceland, who c country adop fugitive, nam Greenland, a there, about th braced Christi way. With th King Olaus g Greenland, an his fellow co the first Norw lost about the tury. The so it were again was not till 1 settlements th

9 The Polabes i the principal vine of Schw beyond the B of Eutin, and

10 Henry, Duke ringen, and

his celebrated man
 ve, ruled, at the time
 orthern part of the
 egions lying to the
 Caspian Seas. The
 d to be the same
 to them. These
 Christianity in the
 sort of syncretism,
 differently. Hence
Ketzers has been
 es, to every species
 vanished about the
 century.

tians, also a Turkish
 ally inhabited the
 the Volga, between
 l from these coun-
 ins, who combined
 them, they attacked
 hey strip of their
 the Tanais, the
 (A. D. 884).

first of the Slavonic
 ianity. The Greek
 own request, sent
 rhodius, two learned
 o invented the Sla-
 into their lan-
 which the Russians

d all the countries
 s, the Dnieper, and
 s source, separated
 They gradually dis-
 out the end of the
 y were dispossessed

y ascribed to this
 land into counties,
 so the institution of
 enland and Finland
 y infer that North
 in several centuries
 the English.

MOD III.

ude a new invasion
 dvanced as far as
 id siege, but Otho
 ight with them in
 955), routed them
 ey never dared to

ten in 963, the Em-
 the title by which
 nfirm, or to nomi-
 Lawyers generally
 f Leo VIII., pub-
 the rights of the
 e popes. But the
 has been attacked
 efended by others.
 re is no necessity
 ights. Otho, after
 received the sub-

mission of the Romans and the pope, could easily claim for himself and his successors the same rights of superiority which the Greek and Frank emperors had enjoyed before him.

3 He was duke of Lower Lorraine, and had obtained that dukedom from Otho II. in 977. He transmitted it to his son Otho, who was the last prince of the Carolingian line, and died in 1006.

4 The principalities of Benevento, Salerno, and Capua were governed by Lombard princes, who held of the German emperors. The dukedoms of Naples, Gaeta, Analfi, and part of Apulia and Calabria, were dependent on the Eastern emperors; while the Arabs, masters of the greater part of Sicily, possessed also Bari and Tarento in Apulia.

5 From this treaty is derived the right of vassalage which the popes have exercised till the present time over the kingdom of Naples.

6 The first invasion of the Normans in Sicily was in 1060. Palermo, the capital, fell under their power in 1072, and in 1090 they conquered the whole island.

7 The first seeds of Christianity were planted in Denmark and Sweden by St. Ansgar, whom Louis the Gentle created, in 834, first archbishop of Hamburg, and metropolitan of all the North. But the progress of Christianity was extremely slow in those semi-barbarous countries. The first annalist of the North was an Icelander named Are Frode, who flourished about the beginning of the eleventh century. The most eminent historian of Denmark was a monk named Swend Aageson, who digested, about 1187, an abridgment of the history of that kingdom. He was followed by Saxo the grammarian, whose history of Denmark, written in beautiful Latin, is full of fables in the times preceding the twelfth century. Norway had for its first annalist a monk named Theodoric, who wrote about 1160. As to Sweden, it has no national historian anterior to the *Chronicles in Verse*, the first anonymous editor of which lived in the time of King Magnus Smeck, about the middle of the fourteenth century.

8 Olaus saint, in 996 and 1000, missionaries into Iceland, who succeeded in making the whole country adopt Christianity. An Icelandic fugitive, named Eric le Roux, discovered Greenland, and formed the first settlements there, about the year 982. His son, Leif, embraced Christianity during his sojourn in Norway. With the aid of some ecclesiastics whom King Olaus gave him, he returned in 1000 to Greenland, and there converted his father and his fellow countrymen. The knowledge of the first Norwegian colonies of Greenland was lost about the beginning of the fifteenth century. The southern and western districts of it were again discovered about 1576; but it was not till 1721 that the Danes formed new settlements there.

9 The Polabes inhabited the duchy of Lauenburg, the principality of Ratzenburg, and the province of Schwerin. The Wagrians were settled beyond the Bille in Wagria, in the principality of Eutin, and a part of Holstein.

10 Henry, Duke of Saxony, Conrad, Duke of Zähringen, and Albert, Margrave of the North,

headed an army of these crusaders against the Slavi in 1147.

11 The right of hereditary succession in the eldest son of every ducal family was not introduced into Bohemia till 1055. This was the ancient usage in Sweden, Denmark, Poland, Russia, and Hungary.

12 No writer of this nation is known anterior to the thirteenth century. The most ancient is Vincent Kadlubeck, Bishop of Cracow, who died in 1223. He wrote *Historia Polona*, first published in 1612.

13 This *crown*, singularly revered in Hungary, contains Greek ornaments and inscriptions, which give us to understand that it was manufactured at Constantinople. There is a probability that it was furnished by the Empress Theophania, mother of Otho III., to Pope Sylvester II., whom she had lately raised to the pontificate.

14 The Greeks upbraided the Latins with fasting on Saturdays—permission to eat cheese, butter, and milk, during the first week of Lent—the celibacy of their priests—the repetition of the unction of baptism in confirmation—the corrupting of the Confession of Faith—the use of unleavened bread in the Eucharist—permission to eat the blood of animals strangled—and the prohibition against the priests wearing their beards.

15 The difference of rank and pre-eminence of these two patriarchs became one of the principal subjects of dispute between the two churches. There was a warm debate as to the title of *Ecumenical Patriarch*, or *universal bishop*, which the patriarchs of Constantinople had assumed since the time of the patriarch John II. in 518. The Roman pontiffs, Pelagius II. and Gregory I., haughtily condemned that title as proud and extravagant. They even went so far as to interdict all communion with the patriarchs of Constantinople; and Gregory I., wishing to give these patriarchs an example of Christian humility, in opposition to this lofty title of Universal Bishop, adopted that of *Servant of the servants of God*.

16 The Bulgarians, newly converted to Christianity by Greek and Latin missionaries, had priests and bishops of both churches; and each pontiff claimed the sole jurisdiction over that province. This affair having been referred by the Bulgarians themselves to the judgment of the Greek emperor, he decided in favour of the see of Constantinople. In consequence of this decision, the Latin bishops and priests were expelled from Bulgaria, and replaced by the Greeks in 870.

17 This terrible fire, reckoned among their state secrets, was exploded from tubes of copper, or thrown with cross-bows and machines for the purpose. Fireships were likewise filled with them, which they despatched among the enemies' ships to burn them. These could not be extinguished by water, or any other way than by the help of vinegar or sand.

18 The name of *Tartar*, in the sense in which it is commonly taken, appears to be of Chinese origin. The Chinese pronounce it *Tha-tha*; and designate by this name all the nations that dwell to the north of the great wall.

- 19 The first that employed this military guard was the Caliph Montassem, who succeeded to the caliphate in 833, or 218 of the Hegira.
- 20 *Sultan* or *Solthan* is a common name in the Chaldean and Arabic languages, to designate a sovereign, ruler, king, or master.
- 21 Syria was conquered by the Seljukides, between 1074 and 1085. They were masters of Palestine since 1075, which they had conquered from the Fatimite caliphs of Egypt.
- 22 The most powerful of these Emirs dared not assume the title of Sultan, but were content with that of *Atabek*, which signifies, in the Turkish language, *Father of the prince*.

NOTES TO PERIOD IV.

- 1 He was the first of the Roman pontiffs that assumed the title of *Pope* (Papa), to the exclusion of the other bishops and prelates who had formerly made use of that denomination.
- 2 Pope Urban II., one of the immediate successors of Gregory VII., went so far as to recommend to all secular princes, that they should make slaves of such of the priests' wives as lived with their husbands after they had received holy orders. In Denmark and Sweden, the celibacy of the clergy was not introduced till near the middle of the thirteenth century.
- 3 Pope Nicholas I. and Adrian II., in the ninth century, and John IV. and Gregory V., about the end of the tenth, appealed to the False Decretals in their disputes with the Kings of France, on the subject of supremacy and legislative power over the whole church.
- 4 This House, which succeeded the Salic dynasty, occupied the throne of the Empire from the year 1138 to 1254.
- 5 Gregory VII., in 1080, confirmed the election of the Anti-Emperor Rodolph. Innocent III. claimed the right to arbitrate in the disputes between Philip of Swabia and Otho of Brunswick (1198), on the subject of their election. The contested election of Richard de Cornwall and Alphonso of Castile, to the throne of Spain, was submitted to the judgment of the pope.
- 6 The popes derived their claims to these estates from a donation of them, which the countess had made in 1077 to Pope Gregory VII., and which she renewed in 1102 to Pascal II.
- 7 The Order of St. Anthony was founded about 1095, and that of Chartreux was founded, in 1080—86, by Bruno of Cologne; and that of Grandmont, by Stephen de Thiers, a native of Auvergne.
- 8 The Arabs took possession of Palestine, under the Caliph Omar, A.D. 637. It fell into the hands of the Fatimite Caliphs of Egypt, A.D. 968.
- 9-10 There is an amusing description of the crusaders in the Chronicle of Conradus Urspergensis, and the sensation which their first appearance made in Germany.
- 11 One of these first divisions was conducted by Peter the Hermit in person. A contemporary author gives the following description of that ghostly general: "His appearance was rude in the extreme, of a short stature, but of a most fervid zeal. His face was meagre, his feet bare,

and his dress of the meanest and most squalid sort. On his journey, and wherever he went, he used neither horse, mare, nor mule, but only a vehicle drawn by asses." Peter intrusted a part of his army to a French gentleman, named *Walter the Pennyless*, who marched before him. A numerous body, commanded by a German priest, followed him. Nearly the whole of them perished, to the amount of 200,000 men.

12 The Republic of Venice having refused, in spite of the thundering bulls launched against them, to surrender up the city of Ferrara, Pope Clement IV. published a crusade against them (1309), and thus compelled them to sue for peace.

13 There were properly no armorial bearings before the twelfth century. We do not meet with the *Fleurs-de-lis* on the crown or the robe of the French kings, until the time of Louis VII., A.D. 1104.

14 The crusades were the means of spreading leprosy in Europe, as also the plague, which, in 1347 and the following years, made dreadful havoc. From Italy it spread over all Europe, and occasioned a violent persecution against the Jews.

15 For these, see the accounts of Spain, Italy, and Portugal.

16 This is the common opinion as to the origin of the Hansatic League, although Sartorius disputes it. The word *Hanse*, in Low German, means any association or corporation. We find this word used, for the first time, in a letter which Edward II. of England wrote in 1315 to the King of France, in favour of the Germanic merchants.

17 The Parliament of 1342 is generally cited as the first in which we find the division into two Houses.

18 Hence the names of *Pfahlburger* and *Ussburger*, i. e. burgess within the precincts, and without the city.

19 It should be observed, however, that the Roman Law, and especially the Theodosian Code, still remained in Italy to a certain extent, even in the midst of the darkness that covered Europe prior to the twelfth century.

20 In the *Truce of God*, challenges or duels were prohibited on Thursdays, Fridays, Saturdays, and Sundays, under pain of excommunication. They were also forbidden between Septuagesima Sunday and Easter week, and between Advent Sunday and Epiphany.

21 Hugolinus, a famous lawyer under Frederic I., is generally regarded as the first that digested the Two Books of Piefs, at the end of the *Corpus Juris*.

22 Several other universities were founded in the following century:—such as that of Prague, in 1347; Vienna, in 1305; Heidelberg, in 1386; Cologne, in 1389; Erfurt, in 1380, &c.

23 This Confederation of the Rhine was originally concluded between the cities of Mayence, Cologne, Worms, Spire, Strasburg, Berlin, for the protection of their commerce on the Rhine.

24 These grand officers were seven in number, although formerly other princes were admitted to these elections.

25 There appeared

26 After the death

27 The famous

28 De Guignes

29 After the death

30 The first six

31 The States of

32 By the definit

33 The first origin

34 Dominico, sub

35 The Irish were

36 he founded th

37 The sup

38 Drogheda, 115

39 the celibacy of

40

41

42

43

44

45

46

47

48

49

50

51

52

53

54

55

56

57

58

59

60

61

and most equal
whenever he went,
nor mule, but only
Peter entrusted a
gentleman, named
o marched before
commanded by a
him. Nearly the
to the amount of

having refused, in
is launched against
ty of Ferrara, Pope
usade against them
d them to sue for

memorial bearings be-
e do not meet with
rown or the robe of
time of Louis VII.,

ms of spreading le-
e plague, which, in
ars, made dreadfil
ad over all Europe,
persecution against

ts of Spain, Italy,

as to the origin of
ough Sartorius dis-
e, in Low German,
orporation. We find
rst time, in a letter
nd wrote in 1315 to
our of the Germanic

generally cited as
e division into two

hburger and Uss-
the precincts, and

ver, that the Roman
odosian Code, still
in extent, even in
at covered Europe

nges or duels were
Fridays, Saturdays,
excommunication.
between Septage-
reek, and between
ny.

nder Frederic I.,
e first that digested
at the end of the

ere founded in the
that of Prague, in
eidelberg, in 1386;
1389, &c.

Rhino was origi-
cities of Mayence,
Strasburg, Beclin,
commerce on the

seven in number,
ces were admitted

25 There appears some reason to doubt this statement of Dandolo, the historian of Venice.

26 After the downfall of the Roman Empire, in the fifth century, Corsica was conquered in turn by the Vandals, Greeks, Franks, and Arabs. The latter settled there in the ninth century, and were expelled in the eleventh. Sardinia experienced nearly the same revolution as Corsica. It fell successively into the hands of the Vandals, Greeks, Arabs, Genoese, and Pisans. Pope Boniface VIII. vested the King of Arragon, in Sardinia, in 1297, as his vassal and tributary, who expelled the Pisans in 1324—26.

27 The famous Castilian hero, Don Rodrigo Diaz de Vivar, surnamed the *Cid*, had already seized the kingdom of Valencia, about the end of the eleventh century; but the Arabs took possession of it after his death, in 1099.

28 De Guignes fixes the entire destruction of the Almohades in the year 1296.

29 After the defeat of the Mahometans, Alfonso, having assembled the bishops, declared on his oath that Jesus Christ appeared to him on the evening before the battle, promised him certain victory, and ordered him to be proclaimed king on the field of battle, and to take for his arms the five wounds inflicted on his body, and the thirty pieces of silver for which he was sold to the Jews.

30 The first six of these were the ancient lay peers of the crown. They were established in the reigns of Louis VIII. and IX., as well as six ecclesiastical peers.

31 The States of Germany, in order to preserve the feudal system, passed a law, which forbade the princes to leave the grand fiefs of the Empire vacant more than a year.

32 By the definitive peace concluded at Paris, in 1259, between Louis IX. and Henry III., Normandy, Lorraine, Maine, Anjou, and Poitou, were ceded to France, who then surrendered to England, Limousin, Perigord, Querey, &c., on condition of doing fealty and homage to the Kings of France, and to be held under the title of Duke of Aquitaine and Peer of France.

33 The first origin of the Inquisition may be dated from a commission of Inquisitors, in 1212, which Innocent III. established at Toulouse against the Albigenes. Gregory IX. entrusted the Inquisition to the Dominicans, who erected it into an ordinary tribunal, before which they cited not only those suspected of heresy, but all who were accused of sorcery, magic, witchcraft, judaism, &c.

34 Dominico, sub-prior of the church of Osma, in Spain, conjointly with Diego d'Azebez, bishop of that church, undertook, in 1206, the mission against the heretics in Languedoc. Innocent VIII., in 1208, established a perpetual commission of preachers for that country, of which Dominico was declared chief. Hence the origin of the order of Preaching Friars.

35 The Irish were converted to Christianity in the fifth century. St. Patrick was their first apostle; he founded the archbishopric of Armagh, in 472. The supremacy of the pope was not acknowledged in that island till the Council of Drogheda, 1152, when the pope's pallium and the celibacy of the priests were introduced.

36 In Denmark, the throne was elective in the reigning family. It was equally so in Norway, where, by a strange custom, natural sons were admitted to the crown, and allowed the privilege of attesting their descent from the royal line by the ordeal of fire.

37 The power of the clergy in the North was considerably increased by the introduction of Metropolitans. The archbishopric of Lund was erected in 1152, and that of Upsal in 1163.

38 The introduction of tithes met with great opposition in all the North; nor were they generally received till near the end of the thirteenth century. Canute IV. was put to death in Denmark, principally for having attempted to introduce tithes.

39 Except Sigurd I., King of Norway, who undertook a crusade to the Holy Land, in 1107, at the head of an army of 10,000 men, and a fleet of 60 sail.

40 Tacitus, and the writers of the middle ages, before the tenth century, seem to have included the Prussians, and the people inhabiting the coasts of the Baltic eastward of the Vistula, under the name of Estonians.

41 It is alleged this city took its name from Ottokar II., King of Bohemia, who headed an army of crusaders, and encouraged the building of it.

42 In the Mogul language, *Zin* or *Tgin*, signifies *Great*, and *Kis*, *very*; so that the word means *Most Great Khan* or *Emperor*. According to others, who quote the constant tradition of the Moguls, this new name was taken from the cry of an extraordinary and divine bird, which sat on a tree during the assembly in question, and uttered the word *Tschingkis*. This name was adopted as a special and favourable augury from heaven, and applied to the new conqueror.

43 The Igours were dependent on this latter Empire, a Turkish people to the north-west of China. It is alleged that they cultivated the arts and sciences, and communicated letters and the alphabet to the other Turkish and Mogul tribes.

44 The former of these events took place in 1279, and the latter in 1243. The caliphs of Bagdad were annihilated by the Moguls, under the reign of Mangou Khan, A.D. 1258.

45 It is related, that the Emperor Frederic II., when summoned by the Great Khan to submit, and offered an office of high trust at his court, replied to this singular message by way of pleasantry, that he knew enough of fowling to qualify him for grand falconer.

46 The dynasty of the Moguls in Persia ended in 1410; that of the Zagatai fell into the hands of usurpers in the fourteenth century. This dynasty produced the famous Timour.

47 Batou Khan was in the habit of ascending the Wolga, with his whole tribe, from January till August, when he began to descend that river in his way to the south.

48 *Horde*, in the Chinese or Tartar language, means a tent or dwelling-place.

49 These tribes dwelt to the north of the Caspian Sea, between the Jaik, the Wolga, and the Tanais.

50 The Moguls of Kipzac, who ruled over Russia,

are known rather by the name of Tartars than Moguls, as they adopted, by degrees, the language and manners of the Tartars among whom they lived.

- 51 An author who wrote in the twelfth century, remarks, that the Hungarians still lived in tents, in summer and autumn; that few houses in that kingdom were built of wood or of stone; that the grandees, when they went to court, brought their seats or chairs with them; and that the same thing was practised by those who went to visit their neighbours in winter.
- 52 The invasion of Dalmatia became a source of troubles and wars between the Kings of Hungary and the republic of Venice; and it was not till the fifteenth century that the Venetians succeeded in getting possession of the maritime towns of Dalmatia.
- 53 The Cumans established one of their colonies in a part of ancient Dacia, now Moldavia and Wallachia, which took from them the name of Cumania.
- 54 Baldwin was succeeded by his brother Henry; and he by his brother-in-law, Pierre de Courtenay, grandson of Louis VI. of France. That prince left two sons, Robert and Baldwin, who both reigned at Constantinople, and were the last of the Latin emperors.
- 55 They took the name of *Baharites*, which in Arabic signifies *maritimes*, or dwellers near the sea.

NOTES TO PERIOD V.

- 1 This jubilee, which, according to the Bull of Boniface VIII., was to be celebrated only once in a hundred years, was reduced to fifty by Clement VI., to thirty by Urban VI., and twenty-five by Paul II. and Sixtus IV.
- 2 Martin V., Nicholas V., and Calixtus II., gave to the Portuguese all the territories which they might discover, from the Canaries to the Indies. Adrian IV., who adjudged Ireland to Henry II. in 1155, had claimed that all islands in which Christianity was introduced should belong to St. Peter.
- 3 The kings of France maintained the exercise of that right, in spite of the efforts which the Court of Rome made to deprive them of it.
- 4 The king even sent to Italy the Chevalier William Nogaret with a body of troops, who surprised the Pope at Anagni, made him prisoner, and pillaged his treasures, as well as those of the cardinals in his suite.
- 5 If we can believe an Arabic author from Mecca, of the thirteenth century, paper, of cotton most probably, was invented at Mecca by one Joseph Amru, about the year 706. According to others, the Arabs found an excellent paper manufactory at Samarcand, when they conquered that country in 704. The invention of paper among the Chinese is very ancient.
- 6 M. de Mehel mentions three pictures in the Gallery of Vienna, one of the year 1297, and the other two of 1357, as having been painted in oil colours on wood.
- 7 The first cards were painted and designed, which rendered them very dear. Great variety

of cards are found among different nations. *Piquet* became the national game of the French, *taroc* of the Italians; the Spaniards invented *ombre* and *quadrille*, and the Germans *lanquenent*.

- 8 One of the oldest of these folios is that found in the library of Buxheim, near Meningen. It represents the image of St. Christopher illumined, with a legend, dated 1423. Printing by blocks of wood was practised in China since the year 950.
- 9 Gutenberg, who still kept his art a secret, on the death of Drizehn, sent different persons into his house, and charged them to unscrew the press, and take it to pieces, that no one might discover how or in what he was employed.
- 10 Schœpflin dates the invention of the font about the year 1452. The honour of it is commonly ascribed to Peter Schœffer, the companion of Faust.
- 11 In a deed made by Gutenberg and his brother in 1459, he took a formal engagement to give to the library of the convent of St. Claire at Mayence, the books which he had already printed, or might print; which proves that Gutenberg had printed books long before 1459, and that he still intended to print.
- 12 According to Casiri, there can be no doubt as to the existence of cannon among the Moors in the years 1342-44. The first undoubted proof of the employment of cannon in France is of the year 1345. The Genoese, it is alleged, employed mines for the first time at the siege of Seranessa, against the Florentines, in 1487; and the Spaniards against the French at the siege of the Castle of Oeuf in 1503.
- 13 The first cannons were constructed of wood, iron, or lead. Gustavus Adolphus used cannons made of leather. They could not support nearly the quantity of powder of those in modern times.
- 14 Guiot de Provins, who wrote a satirical poem called the Bible, about the end of the twelfth century, speaks most distinctly of the mariner's compass, which was used in his time in navigation.
- 15 The herring fisheries on the coasts of Scania, in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, proved a mine of wealth for the Hanseatic trade; so much the more gainful, as all Europe then observed Lent.
- 16 William Tell is commonly regarded as the first founder of the Swiss liberty.
- 17 The Grand Duke Michael Joroslawitz was executed by the Horde in 1318. Demetrius Michaelovitz met with the same fate in 1328. The Russian princes, on going to an audience with the khan, were obliged to walk between two fires to purify themselves and the presents which they brought. They were even compelled to do reverence to an image which was placed at the entrance of the khan's tent.
- 18 The first mention which the annals of Nestor make of the Livonians, and their wars with the Russians, is about the year 1040.
- 19 Various contracts were made before that sale was accomplished. The first was in 1341, and the price was 13,000 marks of silver. In 1346, the Margrave Louis sold his rights over

Esthonia to marks.

- 20 Livonia did not become a part of the Order of St. Benedict. Riga was independent where he resided.
- 21 Before Uladislaw the first, the sovereigns of dignity; and the uninterruption of the evidence to the kings to Bols.
- 22 The conversion of the nation to Christianity was resented by the nation because of the ceremony who were ignorant of the gello became which he practised for the force of reason.
- 23 The Lithuanians, till the time of that rite, imported from those who were Lithuanians of that rite. Christianity a mixture of a mixture of colonies of a and Goths.
- 24 Philip Callimachus was descended from Italy produced Casimir IV., persecution of his tary.
- 25 The conquest of the years 1357 were huge towers he had cut from these after the
- 26 In the short time the Turks had cl inhabitants.

NOTES

- 1 Las Casas is advised the empires of the Antilles, instead of being zealously suppressed; and Charles V., merchants to islands, which slave trade.
- 2 The kings of similar commonwealths in the East, from Ptolemy to Sixtus V.
- 3 The Philippines in 1521, were 1564. After

- Esthonia to the Teutonic Order for 6000 marks.
- 20 Livonia did not belong exclusively to the Teutonic Order at this time. The Archbishop of Riga was independent, and master of the city where he resided.
- 21 Before Uladislaua, there were only some of the sovereigns of Poland invested with the royal dignity; and the tradition, which carries back the uninterrupted succession of the Polish kings to Bolislaus in the year 1000, is contrary to the evidence of history.
- 22 The conversion of the Lithuanians to Christianity was resolved on in a general assembly of the nation held in 1387. It consisted simply of the ceremony of baptism. The Polish priests, who were employed on this mission, being ignorant of the Lithuanian language, King Jagello became himself a preacher. One custom which he practised succeeded better than all the force of reasoning or argument. The Lithuanians, till then, had used only clothes of skins or linen. The king caused woollen dresses, of which he had ordered a large quantity to be imported from Poland, to be distributed to all those who were baptized. Thousands of the Lithuanians then flocked to the administration of that rite. The Samogitians embraced Christianity about the thirteenth century.
- 23 The Wallachians, as their language proves, are a mixture of the descendants of the Roman colonies of ancient Dacia with the Slavians and Goths. They adhered to the Greek Church in the ninth century.
- 24 Philip Callimachus, the historian of Uladislaua, was descended of an illustrious family in Tuscany, and one of those fine geniuses whom Italy produced in the fifteenth century. Being persecuted at Rome, he retired to Poland, to Casimir IV., who entrusted him with the education of his children, and made him his secretary.
- 25 The conquest of Indostan by Timour is fixed to the years 1398, 1399. His dearest trophies were huge towers, formed of the heads which he had cut from his enemies. He raised 120 of these after the taking of Bagdad in 1401.
- 26 In the short space of six or seven hours, the Turks had cleared the city entirely of all its inhabitants.

NOTES TO PERIOD VI.

- 1 Las Casas is generally reproached for having advised the employing of African slaves in the Antilles, instead of the natives, while he was zealously supporting the liberty of the Americans; and that it was by his advice that Charles V., in 1517, authorised the Belgian merchants to import 14,000 Africans into these islands, which gave rise to the treaty on the slave trade.
- 2 The kings of Portugal had already obtained similar commissions for their discoveries in the East, from Pope Nicholas V., Calixtus III., and Sixtus V.
- 3 The Philippine Isles, discovered by Magellan in 1521, were occupied by the Spaniards in 1564. After several fruitless attempts to find a

- north-east or north-west passage, the English doubled the Cape of Good Hope before the end of the sixteenth century.
- 5 Magellan, in his voyage, discovered a new route to India by the Straits, to which he gave his name. The Moluccas and the Philippines were then visited by him. He was killed in the Isle of Matan, one of the Philippines, April 27, 1521.
- 6 Henry IV. conceived the project, and concerted with Elizabeth of England, for securing the equilibrium and the peace of the continent, by humbling Austria.
- 7 The assassin was called Balthazar Gerardi. He is said to have bought the pistols with which he committed the deed with the money which the prince had given him a few days before.
- 8 The first alliance of the Swiss with France was in 1453. It was renewed in 1474 and 1480. In virtue of this latter treaty, the Swiss engaged to furnish for that prince a body of 6000 auxiliaries, the first regular Swiss troops that had been received into the service of France, with consent of the confederation.
- 9 That war was terminated in 1603, a little before the death of Elizabeth.

NOTES TO PERIOD VII.

- 1 The first of these medals represented the United Provinces under the figure of a woman trampling on Discord, with an inscription a little haughty, but by no means outrageous for France. The other medal was more piquant; it offered the crown of France to M. Van Buntingen, the ambassador of Holland, under the figure of Joshua, who commanded the sun to stand still.
- 2 This bull, the source of many theological disputes, was issued in 1713, in which Clement XI. condemned 101 propositions, extracted from the New Testament, as false, and infected with the errors of Jansenism.
- 3 In 1713. In this same year was concluded the famous treaty of Methuen, by which Portugal engaged to receive English woollen cloths, on condition that England would admit the wines of Portugal at one-third less duty than those of France.
- 4 The national liberty gained under Charles II. by the famous *Habeas Corpus* Act, passed in 1679.

NOTES TO PERIOD VIII.

- 1 Among the means which the regent employed for clearing off the debts of the State, which amounted to three millions, one was the famous scheme of Law, a Scotchman, and the establishment of a bank, which completely failed after having great success, and ruined a number of families.
- 2 Alberoni, a man of vast and enterprising genius, was at first only a simple priest in a village near Parma. He insinuated himself into the favour of the Duke of Vendôme, when he com-

- manded the French army in Italy. The duke took him to Spain, and recommended him to the Princess des Ursins, who was then all powerful at the court of Philip V. There he was elevated to the rank of cardinal and prime minister.
- 3 This famous adventurer was descended of a noble family in the province of Groningen. In 1715, he was appointed ambassador for Holland at the court of Madrid. There he insinuated himself into favour with Philip V., who sent him, in 1724, to the court of Vienna, to treat with the Emperor Charles VI. On his return, he was raised to the rank of duke and prime minister of Spain. Being disgraced for his imprudences, he was imprisoned in the Castle of Segovia, whence he made his escape in 1728, and, after wandering over several countries, he passed to Morocco, where it is alleged he became Mahometan, as he had turned Catholic at Madrid. Being obliged to quit that new retreat, he repaired to Tetuan, where he died.
- 4 The trade which the English carried on in Spanish America, in virtue of the *Asiento*, having given opportunities for contraband, it was agreed by a subsequent convention, signed at Madrid in 1750, between these two courts, that England should entirely renounce that contract, in consideration of a sum of £100,000 sterling, which Spain promised to pay the English company engaged in that trade.
- 5 On the death of Joseph I. in 1777, and the accession of his daughter Mary, the grandees of Portugal avenged themselves for the indignities which the Marquis de Pombal had subjected them to.
- 6 The principal actions which took place between the French and the Hanoverians, with their allies, were those of Hastenbeck in 1757; Crevelt, 1758; Bergen and Minden, 1759; Clostercamp, 1760; Villinghausen, 1761; Grebenstein, 1762.
- 7 The battles fought by the King of Prussia in that war were the following: that of Lowositz in 1756; Prague, *Kolin*, *Jagerndorff*, Rosbach, Breslau, and Liessa, 1757; Zorndorff and *Hockkirchen*, 1758; *Zulichau* and *Kunnersdorff* or Frankfort on the Oder, 1759; Liegnitz and Torgan, 1760; Fryburg, 1762. The King gained them all, except those marked in Italics.
- 8 New differences having arisen between Spain and Portugal in Brazil, which occasioned hostilities, a treaty of peace, concluded March 24, 1778, put an end to these differences, and finally regulated the limits between the two nations in America.
- 9 This prince perished at the siege of Seringapatam, his capital, which the English took in 1799.
- 10 It appears by the overtures which the Empress of Russia made to the King of Poland in 1771, and 1775, that she was averse to the partition of Poland, which, in effect, appeared to be in opposition to the true interests of Russia.
- 11 The Austrian division was estimated at about 1300 square German miles, with 700,000 inhabitants.
- 12 These countries were estimated at 4157 square miles, with 3,050,000 inhabitants.
- 13 The portion of the King of Prussia comprised 1061 square miles, with 1,150,000 inhabitants. It contained 262 cities, and 8274 villages.
- 14 It was in this revolution that Counts Struensee and Brandt were executed—the former being prime minister of Sweden. For the lives of these two persons, see *Converts from Infidelity*, vol. II., by the translator of this Work.

NOTE TO PERIOD IX.

- 15 The first act of the confederation is dated October 4, 1776. It then comprehended only eleven states. South Carolina and Maryland were not included till 1781.

Prussia in
Lowositz
Rosbach,
and Hoch-
sundersdorf
egnitz and
The king
in italics.
een Spain
ioned hos-
March 24,
and finally
vo nations

f Seringa-
sh took in

Empress
d in 1771,
artition of
be in op-
a.

at about
,000 inha-

157 square

comprised
nhabitants.
ages.

Struensee
ner being
e lives of
Infidelity,
k.

ed October
nly eleven
t were not

